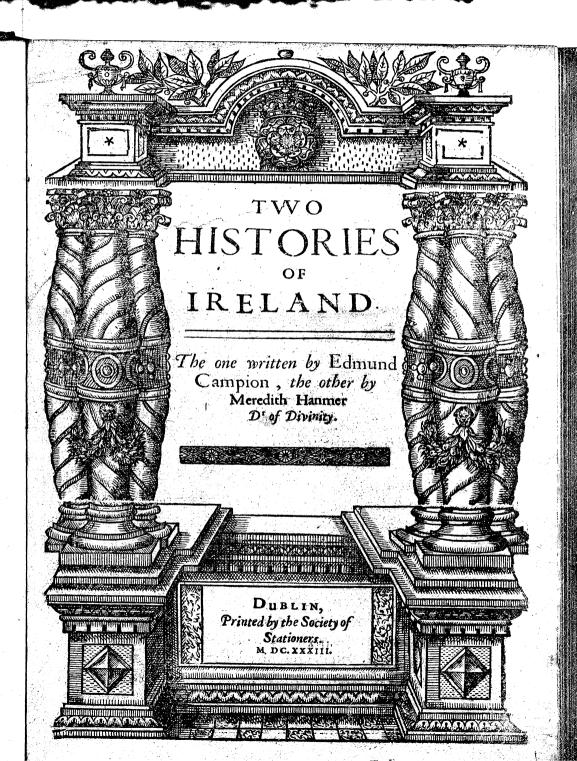
C 25067 79469- Fol.

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE

HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION



The Epistle Dedicatory.

els-where these Histories doe affoord to the knowledge of former times, and the good use which may be made of them by any who have leisure, desire, and ability to erect and polish a lasting structure of our Irish affaires, I am embouldned to present them to your Lordships patronage, whose government I beseech the Almighty so to blesse; that it may bee a long happines to this land,

Your Lordships ever humbly at commandement.

IAMES WARE.

PREFACE TO THE SUBSEQUENT HISTORIES.



Hat varietie of choyse matter the affaires of this Kingdome doe affoord to an Historian, especially since the middle of the raigne of King Henry the VIII. any one that is but meanely versed in our Histories can testifie:

But if we consider how little hath hetherto bin published, wee cannot but blame the slownes of our learned men, who have (for by-respects) forborne to take paines in so worthy a subject. England hath had the happines that some parts of her Historie have bin lately excellently performed, by the right honorable Francis late Viscount St. Alban, the right Reverend Francis Lo. Bishop of Hereford, the most learned VV illiam Camden and others. Some will hereafter, I hope, doe the like for Freland: In the meane while we are to accept of these tastes, the one left unto us by Edmund Campion, and the other by Doctor Hanmer, who died (of the plague at Dublin in the yeare M. DC. IIII.) before he had finished his

¶ 3

intended

The Epistle Dedicatory.

elf-where these Histories doe affoord to the knowledge of former times, and the good use which may be made of them by any who have leisure, desire, and ability to erect and polish a lasting structure of our Irish affaires, I am embouldned to prefent them to your Lordships patronage, whose government I beseech the Almighty so to blesse; that it may bee a long happines to this land,

> Your Lordships ever bumbly at commandement.

IAMES WARE.

$TH\varepsilon$ PREFACE TO THE SVBSEQVENT HISTORIES



Hat varietie of choyse matter the affaires of this Kingdome doe affoord to an Historian, especially since the middle of the raigne of King Henry the VIII. any one that is but meanely versed in our Histories can testisse:

But if we consider how little bath betherto bin published, wee cannot but blame the slownes of our learned men, who have (for by-respects) forborne to take paines in so worthy a subject. England hath had the happines that some parts of her Historie have bin lately excellently performed, by the right honorable Francis late Viscount St. Alban, the right Reverend Francis Lo: Bishop of Hereford, the most learned VVilliam Camden and others. Some will hereafter, I hope, doe the like for Freland: In the meane while we are to accept of these tastes, the one left unto us by Edmund Campion, and the other by Do-Hanmer, who died (of the plague at Dublin in the yeare M. DC. IIII.) before he had finished his intended

THE PREFACE.

intended worke: out of whose collections, what now beareth his name hath bin preserved by our most Reverend and excellently learned Primate. Other helpes (to passe by those which are already divulged) may be plentifully had by him who will undertake this taske, out of the auncient and moderne recordes, both in this Kingdome and in England, as also out of diverse manuscript Annales and Chartularies, which are yet extant among us, besides those authors of English birth, as Iohn VV allingford a Monke of Ss Alban, Thomas VVike a Canon of Ofney, and others, (which I have seene) in that excellent library and treasury of MSS. antiquities, gathered by Sir Robert Cotton knight and Baronett deceased, who doe onely obiter touch upon our affaires. An intention there was not long since by Sir Iames Ley knight then Lord chiefe Justice of the Kings Bench in freland, (afterwards Lord high Treasurer of England and Earle of Marleburgh to have published some of our country writers in this kinde, for which end hee caused to be transcribed and made fit for the Prese, the Annales of John Clynne a Friar minor of Kilkenny, (who lived in the time of King Edw. the 3.) the Annales of the Priory of S. John the Evangelist of Kilkenny, and the Annales of Multisernan, Rosse and Clonmell, &c. But his weighty occasions did afterwards divert his purpose. The copies are yet preserved, and I hope ere long with other Annales and fragments of the same nature will be divulged. Wee come now to the Authors in band.





RIGHT HONOVRABLE

ROBERT DUDLEY, Baron of Denbigh,
Earle of Leicester, Knight of the noble Order of the garter, and S. Michaels, Master of the Queenes Majesties horse, and one of her Privy Councell,
high Chauncellour of the Vniversity of
Oxford, my singular good Lord.

Hat my travaile into Ireland, might seeme neither causeffe, nor fruitlesse, I have thought it exhonorable charge to yeeld you this poore book, as an accompt of my poore voyage, happily nor the last, nor the most beautifull present that is intended to your Honour by me, but furely more full of unfavoury toyle for the time, then any plot of worke that ever I attempted, which I write, not of vanity to commend my diligence; but of necessitie to excuse mine imperfection. For whereas it is well knowne to the learned in this land, how late it was ere I could meet with Gerald of Wales, the onely Author that ministreth some indifferent furniture to this Chroniele, and with what fearch I have beene driven to piece out the rest by helpe of sorreine Writers (incidently touching this Realme) by a number of briefe extracts of rolles; records and icattered papers. Thefe things (I fay) confidered, I trust this little volume shall seeme great enough in such barren shift, & my defect in penning the fame shalbe imputed partly to my haste, who must needes have ended all before I should leave the land, and am now even upon point of my departure. So as to handle and lay these things

The Epistle Dedicatory.

things together, I had not in all the space of ten weekes. Such as it is, I addresse and bequeath it to your good Lordship, for two causes. First that by the patronage of this Booke you may be induced to weigh the estate and become a patron to this noble Realme, which claimeth kindred of your eldest auncestors, and loveth entirely your noble vertues: The fame whereof is now carried by those strangers that have felt them into many forraine countryes that never favy your person. Secondly because there is none that knoweth mee familiarly. but he knoweth vvithall how many vvayes I have beene beholding to your Lordship. The regard of your deserts and of my duty hath easily wonne at my hands this testimony of a thankefull minde. I might be thought ambitious, if I should recount in particular the times & places of your severall curtesies to mee. How often at Oxford, how often at the Court, how at Rycot, how at Windsore, how by letters, hove by reportes, you have not ceased to further with advice and to countenance with authority, the hope and expectation of mee a single Student. Therefore in summe it shall suffice mee to acknowledge the generall heape of your bounties, and for them all to serve your honour frankely, at least wise with a true heart: Let every man esteeme in your state and fortune. the thing that best contenteth and seedeth his admiration. But furely to a judgement setled and rectified, these outward felicities which the world gazeth on, are there, and therefore to be denied, praiseable when they lodge those inward qualities of the minde, which (faving for suspition of flattery) I was about to say are planted in your breast. Thirteene yeares to have lived in the eye and speciall credit of a Prince, yet never during all that space to have abused this ability to any mans harme, to be enriched with no mans overthrow, to be kindled neither with grudge nor emulation, to benefit an infinite resort of dayly sutors, to let downe your calling to the neede of meane subjects, to retaine so lowly a stomacke. such a facility, so milde a nature in so high a vocation, to undertake the tuition of learning and learned men. These are indeede the kirnels for the which the shell of your nobilitie feemeth

The Epistle Dedicatory.

seemeth faire and sightly; This is the sap, for whose preservation the barke of your noble tree is tendered. This is the substance which maketh you worthy of these Ornaments wherevith you are attyred, and in respect of these good gifts as I for my part have ever bin desirous to discover an officious and dutifull minde towards your Lordship, so will I never cease to betake the uttermost of my power and skill to your service, nor to begge of Almighty God your plentifull increase in godlines, wisedome and prosperity. Fare you well: From Dublin 27. May, 1571.

to reduce at they believe the district of this belief

of the first of the second of

รางอาร์จ ควาร์อนที่สี คราทีมอังโรยทธา

्र १ . १ . १ १४४ ः निर्मादेखं केर्न्यानिकंत्रे हैं।

े में हुआ है। ये विवर्धक है कि किसून है कि निर्माण के लिए

न्त्रीतीय के विकास के बीटी बोर्स के के किया के कार्य का कार्य के कार्य का कार्य के किया है।

THE RESERVE OF THE PROPERTY AND A SECURE OF THE PROPERTY OF TH

. V vo dreid the bered .

Your Lordships humbly to commaind.

EDMUND CAMPION.

To the Reader.



To the loving

Reader

Tmy times of leifure from ordinary fludies, I have fince my first arrivall hither, enquired out an iquityes of the land, wherein being holpen by diverse friendly Gentlemen, I have given th'adventure to frame a Story, which I bring from the very first originall untill th'end of this last

yeare 1570. I follow the se Authors, Giraldus Cambrensis, who devideth his worke into two parts, from the first (which is stuffed with much impertinent matter) I borrow so much as serveth the turne directly, the second which containeth two bookes, and discourfeth the conquest of Henry Fitz Empresse, I abridge into one Chap. ter: where Cambrensis endeth, there beginneth a nameles Author. who in certaine short notes containeth a Chronologie untill the years of Christ 1370. From thence to Henry the Eight, because nothing is extant orderly written, and the same is time beyond any mans memory, I scamble for ward with such records as could be fought up, and am enforced to be the briefer. From Henry th'eight hitherto, I tooke instructions by mouth, what soever I bring besides these helpes, either mine owne observation hath found it, or some friend hath enformed me, or common opinion hath received it, or I reade it in a pamphlet, or if the Author be worthy the naming I quote him in the margent . Scottish Histories I used these twaine, famous in their times, John Major, and Hector Boethius. For English, wherein the state of Ireland is oft implyed, because I am not in place to examine the auncient, I have credited these late writers, Fabian, Polidore, Cooper, Hall, Grafton, and Stowe: diligent and thankefworthy collectors. Touching the rest of all sorts, from whose bookes I picke matter to my purpose, they are mentioned as they fall in

ure, which here I list not to reckon, being loath to fill the page with a ranke of empty names. Irish Chronicles, although they be reported to be full fraught of lemde examples, idle tales, and genealogies: Et quicquid Græcia mendax audet in historia, yet concerning the state of that wilde people specified before the conquest. I am persivaded that with choice and judgment, I might have sucked thence some better store of matter, and gladly would have sought them, had I found an interpreter, or understood their tongue. th' one jo rare, that scarcely five in five hundred can skill thereof, th'other so hard, that it asketh continuance in the Land, of more yeares then I had moneths to spare about this busines, my speciall meaning was to gather so much as I thought the civill subjects could bee content to reade, and withall to give a light to the learned Antiquaries of this Countrey birth, who may hereafter at good leifure Supply the want of this foundation, and pollish the stone rough kemed to their hand. Not with standing as naked and simple as it is, it could never have growne to any proportion in such post-haste, except I had entred in-10 Juch familiar societie, and daylie table-talke with the worshipfull Esquire lames Stanihurst, Recorder of Dublin. VVho beside all curtesie of Hospitality, and a thousand loving turnes not heere to be recited, both by word and written monuments, and by the benefit of his owne Library, nourished most effectually mine endeavour. It remaineth that I request my Countrymen to bend their good liking to my good will, and the English of Ireland to favour the memory of their noble auncestors both traine to deliver me from all undue and wrong suspicions, how soever the priviledge of an history hath tempered mine inke with speet or sowre ingredients. Verily as touching the affaires and persons heere deciphered , how little cause I have with any blind and corrupt affection, either wayes to be miscarryed, themselves know best that heere be noted yet living, and other by enquiring may conjecture. Farewell. From Droghedah the 9. of Iune. 1571.



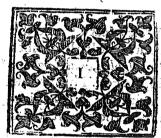
CAMPIONS HISTORIE

OF IRELAND.

The First Booke.

CAP. I.

The Site and speciall parts of Freland.



A COMPLEX CONTRACTOR AND A SERVICE OF THE SERVICE SAND

contanto de la composição de la composição

Trodis ell a collegio de le delle dellegione de la collegion de la dellegion de la collegione

and the state of the second property of the s

Sugar Stage of the Stage of Sugar Berg Single Stage

heligidist in majores been at elephant , here that energith a

- การที่เกิด เพิ่งการเลย**เลย (เ**ลโลโกเลย**ที่ก็ว**ังกับความคู่จากเป็นต่ำ ให้เลือ จึงเป็

वर्धर्मित्यक विरोधक है। है हो है है है है है के **सबदर्ध पूर्व प्रियम्बर्ड** अस्त है असे है

RELAND lieth a loofe in the This Booke in West Ocean, and is deemed by the first part of later Survey, to be in length well-devided by nigh three hundred miles north & him into 3, difouth : broad from Eaft to West Whichwasde one hundred and twentie. In pro- lames Staniportion it resemblethan egge, blunt and plaine on the sides, not reach-

ing forth to Sea, in nookes and elbowes of Land, as Brittaine doth askodam virasusam sangilija viras कि उर्दे ए या वर्त औ

Long fince it was devided into foure regions, Leinster East, Connaght West, Vister North, Mounster South, and Conatia. Hultonia. into a fift plot defalked from every fourth part, lying together in the heart of the Realme, called thereof Media, December beauty in a product william Euror, Oftharty.

Each of these five (where they are framable to civility; and answere the writts of the Crowne,) be sundred into Thires and counties, after this manner.

An. Philip &c

Mar. 30. & 40.

Leinster.

In Leinster lye the counties of Dublin, Kildare, Weixford, Catherlagh, Kilkenny, King & Queenes couties, these two lately so named by Parliament in the raignes of *Philip* and *Mary*, having Shire-townes accordant, Philipstown and Marryborrow.

Irifh families taken out of S. Henry Sidneys collections.

Septes, Irish of name planted in these quarters, they reckon, the Birnes, Tooles, Cauanaghes, which is the nation of Macmurrow, Omores, Oconnores, Odempsyes, Odun.

Dublinum.

Lib.fl.

Citties of best account, Dyvelin: the beauty and eye of Ireland, fast by a goodlyriver which Cambrensis calleth Avenlisius. Ptolomy Libnius, they call the Lyssie. The seat hereof is in many respects comfortable, but lesse frequented of marchant strangers, because of the bard haven. Kildare hath Kildare and the Naass. Weixford hath Weixford and Ross. Kilkenny hath Kilkenny the best dry towne in Ireland on the Southside of the river Suirus, also Callan and Thomastowne.

Suir fl.

Meath. Irith families, Meath is devided into East and West Meath, and the counties of Longford. Here dwelleth ancient Irish families (Sometime Princes & Potentates) Omalaghlen, Mac-Coghlan Obrien, Omulloy, Omadden, Macgoghigan, the Fox. This whole part, and the veyne of Finegale in Leinster, are best imployed with hulbandry, and taken to be the richest soyles in Ireland.

Connaghe. Galvia.

Irith fam.

Orgricke.

Connaght hath as yet but the county Clare, the town of Athenry: & Galway, a proper neat city at thesea side. Herein Turlogh More Oconner was a peere, & parted the whole betwixt his two Sonnes, Cahal, and Bryen Oconnor. In it are now cheise Irish, Breni Oreli, Breni Oruarke, Oconnor Sligo, Odoude, Ohara, Macphilippin, Mac-dermot, Oconnordonn, Oconnor-Roe, the O-kellies, Macglomore, of Langues, L. Bermingham, Omaly, Mac-william Euter, Oslaherty, Clanricarde.

Vider.

Vister wherin Oneale & Odonil are cheife Irish, contayneth the couties, Louth, Down, Antrim, one moity of Droghdah

(for the rest is in Meath) cheise town of Louth Dundalk, of Down, Down, & Carlingford, of Dreghdagh, Droghdaghe, of Antrim, Cnocksergus called also Cragsergus.

This part is differered from Meath and Leinster by Boyn.fl.
the river Boandus, which breaketh out beside Logh-soyle, Lacus soilus.
a bogg betweene Ardmagh, and S. Patrickes Purgatorie.
Cambrensis reputeth the bogge at 30. miles in length, and Dist. I. halfe so much in breadth, and the same once sirme Land, to have beene suddenly overslowen, for the bestiall incesses committed there, unsit to be told.

In Mounster lye the counties of Waterford, Limericke, Mounster. Cork, counties Pallatine of Tipperary, Kerry, and exempt from priviledge the Crosse of Tipperarie.

Waterford hath Dongarvon, and Waterford full of traffique with England, France, and Spaine, by meanes of their excellent good Haven.

Limericke hath Kilmallocke lately fackt by Tames Fitz
Morice, and the Citie Limiricum, coasting on the sea, hard
upon the river Shannon, whereby are most notably sevesed Mounster and Connaght.

Corke hath Kinsale, Yowghall, and the Cittie Corke, Tipperary hath Tipperary, Clonmell, Fidderstown, Cassell. Mounster was of old time devided into East Mounster, Ormond, West Mounster, Desmond, South Monster, Thomond. Here dwell Obrenes, Macnemarraes, Mack-ma-kopnes, and one sept of the Offlherties.

In these quarters lyeth the Countryes of O-Carroll, O-Magher, the white Knight, Mac-Ibrine, O-Gaunaghe.

Waterford contayneth the Powers, and Deces.

Corke the Barries Lands, Imokillie, Carbarrie, Maccarty-

ills families

Maccarty-more, Maccarty-reagh, L. Roches lands, Ofulivan, Musery, L. Courcy, and diverse more, some of Irish blood, some degenerate and become Irish.

Limericke hath in it the Knight of the valley, VVilliam Burcke, Mac-Ibrine Ara, part of the white Knights Lands, Cosmay, Obrenes, and upon the edge of Kerrie the greene knight, alids the knight of Kerrie,

Leinster butteth upon England, Mounster and Connaght upon France and Spaine, Vlster upon the Scottish Ilands (which face with Hebrides) scattered between both realmes; wherein at this day, the Irish Scot Successour of the old Scythian Pict or Redshancke dwelleth.

Bishops in Ireland. Bern in vita

The spiritual Iurisdiction is ordered into 4. Provinces whereof the primacy was euer given (in reverence toward Saint Patricke their Apostle) to the Archbishoppe of Ardmagha, now called Ardmagh, which custome was fince confirmed by Eugenius the 3. who sent withal 3. other prelates to be placed, one at Dublin, one at Cashell, & the last at Tuam. To these are suffraganes in right 29. and all they inferiour to the Primate of Ardmaghe: under his province are the Bishopprickes of Meath, Derry, Ardagh, Kilmore, Clogher, Downe, Coner, Clonmacknoes, Rapho, and Dromore.

Province of Ardmagh.

Dublin. an. 1212. S. Pat. booke of Recorden

Vnder Dublin (whereunto Innocentius 3. united Glandelagh) are the Bishop of Elphine, Kildare, Fernes, Osforie and Laighlein.

Cashella

Vnder Cashell are B. of Waterford, Lysmore, Corke, & Clone, Rosse, Ardigh, Limericke, Emely, Killalo, Ardserte

Tuam.

Vnder Tuam the B. of Kilmaco, Olfine, Anaghdoune, Clonfert, Mayo. In this recount some diversities have happened by reason of personall and reall union of the Seas and for other alterations and another income

English pale.

An old distinction there is of Ireland into Irish & English pales, for whethe Irish had raised cotinual tumults against the English planted heere with the Conquest. At last they coursed them into a narrow circuite of certaine shires in Leinster, which the English did choose as the fattest soyle, most desensible, their proper right, and most open to receive helpe from England. Hereupon it was termed their pale, as whereout they durst not peepe. But now both within this pale, uncivill Irish and some rebells doe dwell, and without it, Countreyes and cities English are well governed.

The temporall Nobility.

Y conference with certaine gentlemen, attendants upon Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Deputie, (who excelleth in that knowledge) I tooke notice of the most noble English families in Ireland, which heere ensue with their surnames as they

stand at this present.

Gerald Fitz Gerald Earle of Kildare, this house was of the nobilitie of Florence, came thence to Normandie, and fo with earle Strangbow his kinsman, (whose Armeshee giveth) into Wales, neere of bloud to Rice ap Griffin Prince of Wales, by Vesta the mother of Morice Fitz Gerald, and Robert Fitz Stephens: with the said Earle it removed into Ireland, one of the speciall conquerors thereof. One record Flaubury. that I have seene, nameth a Geraldine the first Earle of Kildare, in anno 1289. But another saith, there dyed a Geraldine the fourth Earle of Kildare in anno 1316. the family is touched in the sonnet of Surrey, made upon Kildares sister, now Lady Clinton.

From Tuscane came my Ladyes worthy race, Faire Florence was sometime her ancient seace, The westerne Isle whose pleasant shore doth face, Wilde Cambres cliffes did give her lively heate.

Lis

His eldest sonne Lord Gerald, Baron of Ophalye, I reade

the Geraldine Lord of Ophalye, in anno 1270.

Sir Thomas Butler, Earle of Ormond and Offorye; the Butlers were ancient English Gentlemen, preferred to the Earledome of Ormond in the first of Edward the 2. Anno 1327. which fell upon heires generall, lastly upon Sir Thomas Butler Earle of Wilshire, after whose disfavour it reversed to the name of Pierce Butler, whom little before King H. 8. had created Earle of Offorye. Theo. Butler was Lord of the Carricke. An. 1205. And Earle of Tipperarie 13 00.00 soner: the Latine History calleth him Dominum de Pincerna, the English Le Bottiller, whereby it appeareth that hee had some such honour about the Prince, his very surname is Becket, who was advanced by H. le 2. in recompence of the injurie done to Thomas of Canterburie their kinsman.

His eldest some Lord Butler, Viscount Thurles.

Gerald Fitz Gerald, Earle of Desmond, Morice Fitz Thomas a Geraldine, was created Earle of Desmond the same yeare: soone after that the Butler became Earle of Ormond. The Irish say, that the elder house of the Geraldines was made Earle of Desmond, though Kildara be the more ancient Earle.

His eldeft sonne L. Fitz Gerald of Desimond, Baron of

Infhycoin.

б

Stowe.

Flatsbury.

Sir Richard Burcke, Earle of Clanriccard, a braunch of the English family, de Burge Lord Burgh, who were noble men before their arrivall into Ireland.

His eldeff fonne Vlinke Burghe Baron of Donkeline.

Conegher Obrene, Earle of Turnond: the name of Earle given to Marroughe Obrene for terms of life, and after to Donoghe Obrene, An. 5. Edw.6. now confirmed to the heires male.

His eldest sonne Lo. Obrene, Baron of Ibrecane.

Mac Cartimore, Earle of Clarcar, created An. 1565.

His eldest sonne Lo: Baron of Valentia.

Viscount Barrie.

Viscount

Viscount Roche.

Preston, Viscount of Gormanston, whereunto is lately annexed the Barony of Lounders, their auncestour Preston, then cheife Baron of the Exchequer, was made Knight in the field by Lionell Duke of Clarence, Lieutenant of Ireland.

Eustace alias Powere, Viscount of Baltinglasse, Lord of Kilkullen, to him and his heires male An.H.8.33. Their ancestour Robert le Powere was sent into Ireland with commission, and in his Off-spring hathrested heere since An. 1175. Powere alias Eustace is written Baron of Domvile An. 1317.

Sir Richard Butler, Viscount Mongaret, to him and his

heires males An. Edw. 6. 5.

Viscount Deces.

Lord Bermingham, Baron of Athenrye, now degenerate and become meere Irish, against whom his auncestors served valiantly in An. 1300.

Sir Richard Bermingham vyas Lord of Athenrye. 1316. Baron of Any. John Bermingham Baron de Atrio dei Anno 1218.

Mac Morice alias Fitz Gerald, Baron of Kerye.

Lord Courcye a poore man, not very Irish, the auncient descent of the Courcyes planted in Ireland with the Conquest.

Lord Flemmynge Baron of Slane, Simon Flemmynge was

Baron of Slane in Anno 1370.

Plonket, Baron of Killyne: this family came in with the Danes, whereof they have as yet speciall monuments.

Nugent, Baron of Delvin.

Saint Laurence, Baron of Hothe.

Plonker, Baron of Doonesawny.

Barnewall, Baron of Trimleston: they came from little Brittaine, where they are at this day a great surname, upon their first arrivall they wonne great possessions at Beirnhaven, where at length by conspiracie of the Irish, they were all slaine, except one yong man, who then studied the com-

mon

of IRELAND.

Ireland of En-

mon Lawes in England, who returning, dwelt at Dromnaghe besides Divelin, and his heires are there at this day: from thence a second brother removed to Sirestone, and so to Trimlestone, and married the Lady Bruns, who caufed him to be made Baron.

This writeth the Lord of Donsany.

Edward Butler, Baron of Donboyne, given to Edmund Butler esquire, and his heires males, An. 23. H.8.

Fitz Patricke, Baron of upper Offory, given to Barnabie Mac Gilpatricke, and his heires males, An 32. H.8.

Donnate clonnaghe Mac Gilpatricke, was a peerelesse ware

riour in Anno 1219.

Plonket Baron of Louthe, to Sir christopher Plonket and his heires males, An. 33. H.8. This Barony was an Earles dorne in An.13 16. appertaining to Bermingham.

Oneale, Baron of Dongannon, to whom the Earledome

of Terone was entayled by gift of H.8.

Powere, Baron of Curraghmore.

Mac Suretan Lord Deferet, whom Sir Henry Sidney called lordan de Exeter. This was Lord in the time of Linell Duke of Clarence, An 1361. now very wilde Irish.

Murroghe Obrene, Baron of Infickeyne, to him and his

heires males, An.35. H.8.

Mac costilaghe, L. Nangle, whom Sir Henry Sidney called de Angulo, now very Irish.

Mac William Burcke, Lord of eighter Connaght, nove ve-

ry Irish.

Baronetso

Seintleger, Baronet of Slemarge, meere Iriffi. Den, Baronet of Por man ston, waxing Irish. Fitz Gerald, Baronet of Burnehurch. Welleflye, Baronet of Narraghe. Husee, Baronet of Galtrim. S. Michell, Baronet of Reban. Marwarde, Baronet of Scryne. Nangle, Baronet of the Navan

English

English gentlemen of longest continuance in Ireland are mest anciencia the race of those which at this day, either in great povertie, or perill, doe keepe the properties of their auncestors lands in Vifter, being then companions to Courcy the conquerour and Earle of that part. These are the Savages, lordanes, Fitz Symonds, Chamberlaines, Ruffels, Benfons, Audleyes, Whites, Fitz Urfulyes, now degenerate, & called in Irish, Mac Mahon the Beares sonne.

CAP. III.

Nature of the Soyle, and other incidents.

He soyle is low and waterish, & includeth diverse little Ilands, invironed with bogges and marishes: Highest hilles have standing pooles in their toppe, Inhabitants (especially new come) are subject to distillations, thumes and flixes, for remedy whereof they use an ordinary drinke of Aqua. Aquavies, vitæ, so qualified in the making, that it dryeth more, and in-Hameth leffe, then other hoteconfections. The aire is wholsome, not altogether to cleare and subtle as ours of England. Camb.part. 1. Of Bees good Rote, no vineyards, contraty to the opinion Lo. Bohemlib! of some writers, who both in this and other errours ton- Munn, lib. r. ching the land, may eafily be excused, as those that wrote of hearefay.

Cambreiffs in his time, complaineth that Ireland had Diass excelle of wood, and very little champaigne ground, but now the English pale is too naked! Turffe and Sea-coales is their most fuell: it is stored of kyne, of excellent horses, & hawkes, of fifth and fowle. They are not without wolves, and grey-hounds to hunt them, bigger of bone and limme then a colt. Their kyne, as also their cattle, and commonly what els soever the Countrey ingendreth (except man) is much leffe in quantity then ours of England. Sheepe few, and those bearing course fleeces, whereof they spinne no-

His eldest sonne Lord Gerald, Baron of Ophalye, I reade

the Geraldine Lord of Ophalye, in anno 1270.

Sir Thomas Butler, Earle of Ormand and Offorye: the Butlers were ancient English Gentlemen, preferred to the Earledome of Ormond in the first of Edward the 3. Anno 1327. which fell upon heires generall, lastly upon Sir Thomas Butler Earle of Wilshire, after whose disfavour it reversed to the name of Pierce Burler, whom little before King H. S. had created Earle of Offorye. Theo. Butler was Lord of the Carricke. An. 1205. And Earle of Tipperarie 1300.or sooner: the Latine History calleth him Dominum de Pincerna, the English Le Bottiller, whereby it appeareth that hee had some such honour about the Prince, his very surname is Becket, who was advanced by H. le 2. in recompence of the injurie done to Thomas of Canterburie their kiniman.

His elder forme Lord Butler, Viscount Thurles. Gerald Fitz Gerald, Earle of Defmond, Morice Fitz Thomas a Geraldine, was created Earle of Defmond the same yeare: foone after that the Butler became Earle of Ormond. The Irish say, that the elder house of the Geraldines was made Earle of Delmond, though Kildare be the more ancient Earle.

His eldeft some L. Fitz Gerald of Desimond, Baron of

Inflycoin.

Sir Richard Burcke, Earle of Clanriccard, a braunch of the English family, de Burge Lord Burgh, who were noble men before their arrivall into Ireland.

His eldell fonne Vlioke Burghe Baron of Donkeline.

Conegber Obrene, Earle of Turnond: the name of Earle given to Murroughe Obrene for terme of life, and after to Donoghe Obrene, An.5. Edw.6. now confirmed to the heires male.

His eldest sonne Lo. Obrene, Baron of sbrecane. Mac Cartimore, Earle of Clarcar, created An. 1565.

His eldert fonne Lo: Baron of Valentia.

Viscount Barrie.

Viscount

Viscount Roche.

Preston, Viscount of Gormanston, whereunto is lately annexed the Barony of Lounders, their aunceftour Preston. then cheife Baron of the Exchequer, was made Knight in the field by Lionell Duke of Clarence, Lieutenant of Ireland.

Enstace alias Powere, Viscount of Baltinglasse, Lord of Kilkullen, to him and his heires male An. H. 8. 32. Their ancestour Robert le Powere was sent into Ireland with commission; and in his Off-spring hath rested heere since An 1175. Powere alias Eustace is written Baron of Domvile Ap.1317.

Sir Richard Butler, Viscount Mongaret, to him and his

heires males An. Edw. 6. 5.

Viscount Deces.

Lord Bermingham, Baron of Athenrye, now degenerate and become meere Irish, against whom his auncestors ferved valiantly in An. 1300.

Sir Richard Bermingham Was Lord of Athenrye, 1216. Baron of Any. John Bermingham Baron de Arrio dei Anno 1218.

Mac Morice alias Fitz Gerald, Baron of Kerye.

Lord Courcye a poore man, not very Irish, the auncient descent of the Courcyes planted in Ireland with the Conquest.

Lord Flemmynge Baron of Slane, Simon Flemmynge was

Baron of Slane in Anno 1270.

Plonket, Baron of Killyne: this family came in with the Danes, whereof they have as yet speciall monuments.

Nugent, Baron of Delvin.

Saint Laurence, Baron of Hothe. Plonket, Baron of Doonesawny.

Barnewall, Baron of Trimleston: they came from little Brittaine, where they are at this day a great surname, upon

their first arrivall they wonne great possessions at Beirnhaven, where at length by conspiracie of the Irish, they were all flaine, except one yong man, who then studied the com-

mon Lawes in England, who returning, dwelt at Dromnaghe besides Divelin, and his heires are there at this day: from thence a second brother removed to Sirestone, and fo to Trimlestone, and married the Lady Bruns, who caufed him to be made Baron.

This writeth the Lord of Donsany.

Edward Butler, Baron of Donboyne, given to Edmund Butler esquire, and his heires males, An. 23. H.8.

Fitz Patricke, Baron of upper Offory, given to Barnabie

Mac Gilpatricke, and his heires males, An. 33. H.8.

Donnate clonnaghe Mac Gilpatricke, was a peerelesse ware

riour in Anno 1219.

Plonket Baron of Louthe, to Sir christopher Plonket and his heires males, An. 22. H.8. This Barony was an Earle dome in An.13 16. appertaining to Bermingham.

Oneale, Baron of Dongannon, to whom the Earledome

of Terone was entayled by gift of H.8.

Powere, Baron of Curraghmore.

Mac Suretan Lord Descret, whom Sir Henry Sidney called lordan de Exeter. This was Lord in the time of Lionell Duke of Clarence, An. 1361. now very wilde Irish.

Murroghe Obrene, Baron of Infickeyne, to him and his

heires males, An.35. H.8.

Mac costilaghe, L Nangle, whom Sir Henry Sidney called de Angulo, novo very Irish.

Mac William Burcke, Lord of eighter Connaght, now ve-

ry Irish.

Baronetso

Seintleger, Baronet of Slemarge, meere Iriffi. Den, Baronet of Por man ston, waxing Irish. Fitz Gerald, Baronet of Burnehurch. Wellestye, Baronet of Narraghe. Husee, Baronet of Galtrim. S. Michell, Baronet of Reban. Marwarde, Baronet of Scryne. Nangle, Baronet of the Navan

English

English gentlemen of longest continuance in Ireland are the race of those which at this day, either in great povertie, or perill, doe keepe the properties of their aunceftors lands in VIster, being then companions to Courcy the conquerour and Earle of that part. Thefe are the Savages, lordanes, Fitz Symonds, Chamberlaines, Ruffels, Benfons, Audleyes, Whites, Fitz Urfulyes, now degenerate, & called in Irish, Mac Mahon the Beares sonne.

CAP. III.

Nature of the Soyle, and other incidents.

He soyle is low and waterish, & includeth diverse little llands, invironed with bogges and marishes: Highest hilles have standing pooles in their toppe, Inhabitants (especially new come) are subject to distillations, rhumes and flixes, for remedy whereof they use an ordinary drinke of Aqua- Aquavica; vitæ, so qualified in the making, that it dryeth more, and in-Hameth leffe, then other hoteconfections. The aire is wholsome, not altogether so cleare and subtle as ours of England, Camb.pare.t. Of Bees good ftore, no vineyards, contrary to the opinion 10. Bohemlib! of fome writers, who both in this and other errours to ... Muntilibre ching the land, may easily be excused, as those that wrote of hearefay.

Cambreiffs in his time, complaineth that Ireland had Diass excelle of wood, and very little champaigne ground, but now the English pale is too naked! Turffe and Sea-coales is their most fuell: it is stored of kyne, of excellent horses, & hawkes, of fifth and fowle. They are not without wolves, and grey-hounds to hunt them, bigger of bone and limme then a colt. Their kyne, as also their cattle, and commonly what els soever the Countrey ingendreth (except man) is much lesse in quantity then ours of England. Sheepe few, and those bearing course fleeces, whereof they spinne no-

Ireland of En-

: anciene : Hb. (20, 32, a),

Barnacles.

table rugge mantle. The country is very fruitefull both of corne and grasse, the grasse for default of Husbandrie (not for the cause alleaged in Polychronicon,) groweth so ranke in the north parts, that oft times it rotteth their Kyne. Eagles are well knowne to breed heere, but neither. so bigge nor somany as Bookes tell. Cambrensis reporteth of his owne knowledge, and I heare it averred by credible persons, that Barnacles, thousands at once, are noted along the shoares to hang by the beakes, about the edges of putrified timber, shippes, oares, anchor-holdes, and such like: which in processe taking lively heate of the Sunne, become water-foules, and at their time of ripenesse either fall into the sea, or fly abroad into the ayre. Eneas Sylvius (that after was Pope Pius the second) writeth himselfe, to have perceaved the like experiment in Scotland, where

he learned, the truth hereof, to be found in the llands

Orchades. Horses they have of pace easie, in running won-

derfull swift. Therefore they make of them great fore, as

wherein at times of need they repose a great peice of safe-

tie. This broode, Raphael Volateranus faith, to have come

at hift from Arturia the country of Spaine, betweene Gal-

Theard it verified by Honourable to Honourable, that

licea and Portugall, whereof they were called Afturcones

a Nobleman (offered and was refused) for one such horse. an hundred kyne, five pound Lands, & an Airy of Hawks yearely during seven yeares. In the plaine of Kildare stood

that monstrous heape of stones brought thither by Gy-

ants from Affrique and removed thence to the plaine of Sarilbury at the instance of Aurel. Ambrose King of Brit-

taine. No venemous creping beaft is brought forth or nourished, or can live here, being sent in, and therefore the

a name now properly applyed to the Spanish Jennet.

Anseres arborei

Volat lib.

de grege.

. r.dil Amark

Cambadift.1.

lib. t. Anglor. bift cap. I.

4 dest

Onely because a frogge was found living, in the Meadowes of Waterford, somewhat before the conquest, they construed it to import their overthrowe, S. Bede writeth

spider of Ireland is well knowne not to be venemous.

that Serpents conveyed hither did presently die being touched with smell of the land; and that what soever came hence was then of Soveraigne vertue against poyson. He exemplifieth in certaine men stung with Adders, who dranke in water the scrapings of Bookes that had beene of Ireland and were cured.

Generally it is observed, the further West the lesse annoyance of pestilent creatures. The want whereof is to Ireland so peculiar, that whereas it lay long in question, to whether Realme, (Brittaine or Ireland) the Ile of 11cof Man. Man should pertaine, the said controversie was decided, that forfomuch as venemous beafts were knowne to breed therein, it could not be counted a naturall peice of Ireland.

Neither is this propertie to be ascribed to S. Patrickes bleffing (as they commonly hold) but to the originall blefa fing of God who gave such nature to the situation and foyle from the beginning. And though I doubt not, but it fared the better in many respects for that holy mans prayer, yet had it this condition notified hundred of yeares ere he was borne

great. Some weight in the set of the election decimal and gas finding it is not to obtain a AAS week at the

Of the frish tongue and the name and unit Hibernia, freland. It colleges to

neither build noon that conjecture nor a Finde it solemnely avouched in some of their pamphlets, that Gathelus, and after him Simon Gathelus Simon Brecke, divised their language out of all other tongues then extant in the world. But considering the course of enterchanging and blending speeches together, not by invention of Arte, but by use of talke, if am rather led to beleeve (seeing Ireland was inhabited within one yeare after the devision of the tongues) that Bastolenus a braunch of Lapheth who first seased upon lie-Last

Lamberdall.

of IRELAND.

Munft.1.2.

Irish tongue.

land, brought hither the same kinde of Speech, some one of the seventie two Languages that to his family befell at the diffolution of Babell, unto whom fucceeded the Scirhians, Grecians, Egyptians, Spaniards, Danes: of all which this tongue must needes have borrowed part, but specially retaining the steps of Spanish then spoken in Granado, as from their mightiest aunceftors. Since then to Henry Fitz Empresse the Conquerour, no fuch invalion happened them, as whereby they might be driven to infect their narive language, untouched in manner for the space of 1700. yeares after the arrival of Hiberius The tongue is sharpe and sententious, offereth great occasion to quicke apothegmes and proper allusions, wherefore their common lesters, Bards, and Rymers, are faid to delight pallingly those that conceive the grace and propriety of the tongue. But the true Irifh indeede differeth forhich from that they commonly speake, that fearce one among five score, can either write,

Bebernia.

Irlamale Fab. part.r.cap.32.

Hiberus.

in Cign, cant.

Pliny writeth it luuernia. Ibernis. Juerland. Imland.

read, or anderstand it. Therefore it is prescribed among certaine their Poets, and other Students of Antiquitie. Touching the name Ibernia, the learned are not yet agreed. Some write it Hibernia, and suppose that the strangers finding it in an odde end of the world, wet and frofly, tooke it at the first for a very cold country, and accordingly named it, as to lay, the winter land: Another bringeth a guesse of Irlamal, of whom because I read nothing. I neither build upon that conjecture, nor controll it. Thirdly, they fetch it from Hiberus the Spaniard. Most credibly it is held that the Spaniards their founders for devotion toward Spaine called then Iberia, vand the rather for that themselves had dwelled besides the famous liver Iberus, named this land Iberia cfor to long Deland, and many for raine Chroniblers writeit, Jordbernia, adding the lettern. for difference take, therebeing a rich City which Prolome recounteth called then Ibernis, & from Ibernix Broceedeth lberland obluerland, from lugiland by contraction free .bmsl land.

land for so much as in corruption of common talke, wee finde that v, with his vowell, are easily lost and suppress. sed. So wee say ere for ever, ore for over, ene for even, nere for never, shoole for shovell, dile for divell. At the same time it was also named Scotia in reverence of . Scota, the wife of Gathelus, auncient Capitaine of those Iberians, that flitted from Spaine into Ireland. And the faid Scota was olde grandame to Hiberus and Hirimon after the Scottish Chronicles, who in any wise will Io-Ma.Sco.l.r. have their Countrymen derived from the Irish, and not from the Brittaines.

ering de sie eine ein **zerste** ein gladt ook voord L CAP. W. an accordance of the qui Total Er wai, alway as vos planer.

Dispositions of the People.

HE People are thus inclined; religious franke, amorous, irefull, sufferable, of paines infinite, very glorious, many forcerers, excellent horsemen, delighted with Warres

The first the properties which we will

great almes-givers, passing in hospitalitie: the lewder fort both Clarkes and Lay-men, are sensuall and loose to leachery above measure. The same being vertuously bred up or reformed, are such mirrours of holinesse and austeritie, that other Nations retaine but a shewe or shadow of devotion in comparison of them. As for abstinence and fasting which these dayes make so dangerous, this is to them a familiar kinde of chastilement: In which vertue and diverse other, how farre the best excell, so farre in gluttonie and other hatefull crimes the vitious they are worse then too badde. They follow the dead corpes to the grave with howlings and barbarous out-cryes, pittyfull in apparance, whereof

14

grew (as I suppose) the Proverbe, to weepe Irish. The uplandish are lightly abused to believe and avouche idle miracles and revelations vaine and childish, greedy of prayle they bee, and fearefull of dishonour. And to this end they esteeme their Poets who write Irish learnedly, and penne their sonnetts heroicall, for the which they are bountifully rewarded. But if they send out libells in disprayse, thereof the Gentlemen, especially the meere Irish, stand in great awe. They love tenderly their foster children, and bequeathe to them a childes portion, whereby they nourish sure friendshippe, so beneficiall every way, that commonly five hundreth kyne and better are given in reward to winne a noble mans childe to foster. They are sharpe-witted, lovers of learning, capable of any studie whereunto they bend themselves, constant in travaile, adventerous, intractable, kinde-hearted, secret in displeasure.

Hitherto the Irish of both sortes meere, and English, are affected much indifferently, saving that in these, by good order, and breaking the same, vertues are farre more pregnant. In those others, by licentious and evill custome, the same faults are more extreame and odious, I say, by licentious and evill custome, for that there is daylie tryall of good natures among them. How soone they bee reclaymed, and to what rare gifts of grace and wisedome, they doe and have aspired. Againe, the very English of birth, conversant with the brutish fort of that people, become degenerate in short space, and are quite altered into the worst ranke of Irish Rogues, such a force hath education to make or marre. It is further to bee knowne, that the simple Irish are utterly another people then our Englishe in Ireland, whome they call despitefully boddai Sassoni's, and boddai Ghalt, that is, English and Saxon churles, because of their English auncestors planted heere with the Conquest, and sithence with descent hath lasted now 400. yeares. Of this people people therefore severally by themselves I must intreate. Yet none otherwise then as they stand unfiled, and serve their accustomed humours, with whom I joyne all such as either by living neere them, or by liking their trade are transformed

Of the meere frish.

Ouching the meere Irish, I am to advertise my Reader, that hee impute not to them the faults of their Auncestors, which heere I have noted for two causes. First, that when the same are reade in Cambrensis, Solinus, or others, he confounds not the times, but may be able diffinctly to confider their manners, then different from these dayes. Secondly, that it may appeare how much Ireland is beholding to God for suffering them to be conquered, whereby many of these enormities were cured, and more might be, would themselves be plyable.

In some corners of the land they used a damnable supersti- old customes tion, leaving the right armes of their Infants males unchristened (as they tearmed it) to the intent it might give a more ungracious and deadly blow.

I found a fragment of an Epistle, wherein a vertuous Epistle of an Monke declareth, that to him (travailing in VIster) came a Irish Monke. grave Gentleman about Easter, desirous to be confessed and howfeled, who in all his life time had never yet received the bleffed Sacrament. When he had faid his minde, the Priest demaunded him, whether he were faultlesse in the sinne of Homicide? Hee answered, that hee never wish the matter to bee haynous before, but being instructed thereof, hee confessed the murther of five, the rest hee

left wounded, so as he knew not whether they lived or no. Then was he taught that both the one, and the other were execrable, and verie meekelie humbled himselfe to repentance.

Solinus writeth that they woonted (because they would seeme Terrible and Martiall,) to embrue their faces in the bloude of their Enemyes slaine. Strabo the famous Geographer, who flourished under Augustus and Tiberius Casar, more then fisteene hundred yeares agoe, telleth (without affeveration) that the Irish were great Gluttons, eaters of mans flesh: and counted it Honourable for Parents deceased, to bee eaten up of their Children, and that in open fight they medled with their Wives, Mothers, and Daughters: which is the leffe incredible, confidering what Saint Hierome avoucheth of the Scots their Of-spring and Allies, and what all Histories doe witnesse of the Scithians their auncient founders. See Strabo lib. 4. Geograph.

Although fince the time of Saint Patricke, Christia= nitie was never extinct in Ireland, yet the governement being hayled into contrarie factions, the Nobilitie lawlesse, the multitude willfull, it came to passe that Religion waxed with the temporall common fort cold and feeble, untill the Conquest did settle it, especiallie in cases of restrainte and Discipline. The Honourable state of Marriage they much abused, either in contracts, unlawfull meetings, the Leviticall and Canonicall degrees of prohibition, or in divorcementes at pleafure, or in ommitting Sacramentall solemnities, or in retayning either Concubines or Harlots for Wives. Yea even at this day, where the Cleargie is fainte, they can bee content to Marrie for a yeare and a day of probation, and at the yeares end, to returne her home uppon any light quarrells, if the Gentlewomans friendes bee weake and unable to avenge the inju-

rie. Never heard I of so many dispensarions for Marriage, as those men shewe, I pray God graunt they bee all authentique and buylded uppon sufficient war-

Covenant and Indent with them never so warilie, never so preciselle, yet they have beene sounde saithlesse and perjured. Where they are joyned in colour of surest Amitie, there they intended to kill. This ceremon'e reporteth Cambrensis. The parties to bee coupled in League, meete at Church, become God-septes, or Allies, beare each other on his backe certaine paces in a Ring, kisse together holy reliquees, take bletsing of the Bishoppe, offer each to other a droppe of his owne bloude, and drinke it up betweene them: Even in the doing hereof, they practife mutuall destructi-

They have beene used in solemne controversies, to protest and sweare by Saint Patrickes Staffe, called Bachal efu, which oath, because upon breach thereof heavy plagues enfied them, they feared more to breake, then if they had Iworne by the holy Evangelist.

In VI fer thus they used to Crowne their King, a white cow was brought forth, which the King must kill, and seeth in water whole, and bathe himselse therein starke naked, then sitting in the same Caldron, his people about him, together with them, he must eat the flesh, and drinke the broath, wherein he sitteth, without cuppe or dish or use of his hand. So much of their old Customes. Now a few words of their trade at this present.

Cleare men they are of Skinne and hue, but of themselves carclesse and bestiall. Their Women are well fauoured, cleare coloured, faire handed, bigge and large, suffered from their infancie to grow at will, nothing curious of their feature and proportion of body.

Their infants of the meaner fort, are reither swadled, nor lapped in Linnen, but foulded up starke naked into a Blankett till they can goe, and then if they

get a piece of rugge to cover them, they are well sped. Linnen Thirts the rich doe weare for wantonnes and bravery, with wide hanging sleeves playted, thirtie yards are little enough for one of them. They have now left their Saffron, and learne to wash their shirts, soure or five times in a yeare. Proud they are of long crifped glibbes, and doe nourish the same with all their cunning: to crop the front thereof they take it for a notable peece of villany Shamrotes, Water-creffes, Rootes, and other hearbes they feede upon: Oatemale and Butter they cramme together. They drinke Whey, Milke, and Beefe broth, Flesh they devoure without bread, corne such as they have they keepe for their horses. In haste and hunger they squese out the blood of ravy flesh, and aske no more dressing thereto, the rest boyleth in their stomackes with Aquavitæ, which they swill in after such a surfeite, by quarts & pottles. Their kyne they let blood which growen to a jelly they bake and over-spread with Butter, and so eate it in lumpes.

One office in the house of great men is a tale-teller, who bringeth his Lord on sleepe, with tales vaine and frivolous, whereinto the number give sooth and credence. So light they are in beleeving whatsoever is with any countenance of gravitie affirmed by their Superiours, whom they esteeme and honour, that a lewd Prelate within these sew yeares needy of money, was able to perswade his parish: That S. Patricke in striving with S. Peter to let an Irish Galloglass into Heaven, had his head broken with the keyes, for whose releise he obtained a Collation.

Without either precepts or observation of congruity they speake Latine like a vulgar language, learned in their common Schooles of Leach-craft and Law, whereat they begin Children, and hold on fixteene or twentie yeares conning by roate the Aphorismes of Hypocrates, and the Civil Institutions, and a few other parings of those two faculties. I have seene them where they kept Schoole, ten in some one Chamber, groveling upon couches of straw, their Bookes at their noses, themselves lying flatte prostate, and so to chainte out their lessons by peece-meale, being the most part lustic sellowes

lowes of twenty five yeares and upwards.

Other Lawyers they have, liable to certaine families which after the custome of the country determine and judge causes. These consider of avrongs offered and received among their neighbours, be it murder, or fellony, or trespasse, all is redeemed by composition, (except the grudge of parties seeke revenge:) and the time they have to spare from spoyling and proyning, they lightly bestow in parling about such matters. The Breighoon (so they call this kind of Lawyer) sitteth him downe on a banke, the Lords and Gentlemen at variance round about him, and then they proceede.

They honour devoute Fryars and Pilgrimes, suffer them to passe quietly, spare them and their mansions, whatsoever outrage they shew to the country besides them. To robbe and prey their enemies, they deeme it none offence, nor seeke any meanes to recover their losse, but even to watch them the like turne. But if neighbours and friends send their Cators to purloyne one another, such Actions are judged by the

Breighoones aforefaid.

Toward the living they are noysome and malicious, the same being dead they labour to avenge eagerly and siercely. They love and trust their Foster Brethren more then their owne. Turlogh Leinagh Oneale that now usurpeth, is said to

repose in them his greatest surery.

Strumpets are there too vile and abominable to write of, which not onely without feare, but also without remorse doe advance themselves in numbring what noblemen have had liking to their bodies. Hee that can bring most of his name into the field, base or other, triumpheth exceedingly. For increase of which name, they allow themselves not onely whoores, but also choise & store of whoores. One I heard named which hath (as he calleth them) more then ten wives, in twentie places.

There is among them a brother-hood of Carrowes that professe to play at Cards all the years long, and make it their onely occupation. They play away Mantle and all to the bare skinne, and then stusse themselves in strawe or in leaves,

hey

they waite for passengers in the high way, invite them to a game upon the greene, and alke no more but companions to hold them sport, for default of other stuffe they pawne portions of their glibbe, the nailes of their fingers and toes, their privie members; which they lose or redeeme at the curtefie of the winner.

Where they fancie and favour, they are wonderfull kinde, they exchange by commutation of wares for the most part, and have utterly no coyne stirring in any great Lords houses. Some of them be richly plated: their Ladies are trimmed rather with mallie lewels, then with garish apparell, it is counted a beautie in them to be tall, round and fat.

The inheritance descendeth not to the Sonne, but to the Brother, Nephew, or Cousin germaine eldest and most valiant: for the Childe being oftentimes left in nonage or otherwise young and unskillfull, were never able to defend his patrimonie, being his no longer then he can hold it by force of armes. But by that time he grow to a competent age, and have buryed an Vncle or two, he also taketh his turne, and leaveth it in like order to his Posterity. This custome breedeth among them continual! Warres and treasons.

CAP. VII.

The most auncient Inhabitants of Freland.

In præfat. i.v. dec.r.

He honourable Historian Titus Livius, yeeldeth certaine priviledge to antiquitie, and will have it held excused, if percase for advancement of their Citties, they straine a point of truth, and derive a first foundation from one or other, of their supposed Gods: wherefore though I can no lesse doe then reject a fable concerning the arrivall of Noes Neece into this Island, yet this kinde of forgery being somewhat universall, seeing every Chronieler paineth himselfe, to setch his reckoning with the farthest let him hardly be pardoned, who led by relation of his elders, committed first to writing so dull a tale. As for

the multitude of writers that agree thereon, they are in effect but one writer, seeing the latest ever borrowed of the former, and they all of Cambrensis, who affirmeth it not, but onely alleadgeth the received opinion of Irish Histories, yearather in the foote of that Chapter, he seemeth to mistrust it, and posteth it over to the credit of his authors: so then if the greatest weight hereof doe confist in Irish antiquities, which the learned here confesse to be stuffed with such implements, notoriously felt to be vaine and frivolous, I trust I shall not seeme contentious, nor singular in damning such a fable, not onely falle, but also impossible. Thus they say, In the yeare of the world, 1536. The Patriarch Noe began to preach vengance upon the people for their accurfed lives, to builde his Arke, o enforme his kindred and speciall friends severally, that within few yeares the earth should be sunke in waters, it they amended not. This did he before the generall flood one hundred and twentie yeares, when every man foreslept the monitio, onely a Neece of his named Cefara mildoubting colors the worst, and hearing her Vncle prophesie that all should be drowned for sinne, determined with her adherents, to seeke adventures into some forraine Island, perswaded that if shee might happely finde a Countrie never yet inhabited, and so with sinne undefiled, the generall sentence of Gods anger should there take no place. Whereupon she furnished a navy, and fled into Ireland, with three men, Bithi, Laigria, Fin= tan, and fifty women, left unto her after many shipwrackes. The shore where she landed, & where she lyeth entombed, is at this day called Navicularum littus. The very stones wherein the memorie hereof hath beene preserved from the violence of waters, were faid to be seene of some. Within forty dayes after her footing in Ireland, the deluge prevailed univerfally, and all this coast was cast away . Now to ommit An Dom. 16,6 that part of this device, which is too flat, and ridiculous, if we consider that before the flood, no part of the Earth was knowen, nor touched beside Syria, where the sirst age dwel- Rab. Vanc. in led, that failing was then utterly unheard of in the world, the first vessell being by Gods owne direction wrought, that she might

Anno mundi which make betweene Noes floud and Ba-Basiolenus.

might have sped at home, would she repent with more ease and surety, that lapheth with the Hebrewes, and lason with the Greekes, were the first pilots: that the Records hereof graven in stone, is but a borrowed invention from Iosephus. These things I say considered, it wilbe no hard matter to descry the falshood, wherin I would be more exquisite, were it worth my labour. We need not so ambitiously runne to Cesara, to begge a forged evidence, seeing without her helpe, Ireland must be confessed to have been knowne and peopled with the same kinred, even with the first Ilands of the world. For within three hundred yeares after the generall Floud, immediately after the confusion of tongues, when Japheth and his posterity, imboldened by the example of Noe, adventured by ship into divers West llands, there was in his retinew one 1917. after the of his progeny, Bastolenus, who conceiving stomack and coulrage at the late successe of Nemrodus, Ninus his kinsman (then newly intruded upon the Monarch of Assyria) & wandred so farre West, intending to rule without compeeres, till Fortune cast him and his people upon the coast of Ireland. There Ciem, recogn. he settled with his three sonnes, Languinus, Salanus, Ruthurgus, active and flour gentlemen, who searching the Land through & through, left their owne names by three notable places, Languini stagnum, mons Salangi, fince named S. Dominicks hill, and Ruthurgi stagnum. Of Bastolenus is little remema bred, save that in short space with many hands working at once, he plained a great part of the Country, then overgrown with woods and thickets. This posterity kept the Land under the government of these three sonnes & their off-spring, about 300. yeares. Together with Bastolenus, arrived in Ireland certaine godlesse people of the stocke of Nemrod, worthily tearmed a gyant, as one that in bodily shape exceeded proportion, & used his strength to winne soveraigntie, & to oppresse the vveake with rapine and violence: That linage (Chams breed) greve to great numbers, & alvvay bethought them of getting mastery, wheresoever they tarryed. One clem recognit, cause vvas their bodily force answereable to their hugenesse of quantity: another the example of cham Zoroastes, that magi-

Giants firft in

tian, and Nemrodus, Ninus his Nephevy, which two in themfelves and their progenies, were renowned throughout the world, as victorious Princes over two mighty Kingdomes Ægypt and Affyria. Thirdly they maligned the bleffings beflowed upon Sem and lapheth, counting it necessary for them? selves, to stirre, and prevent Dominions, lest the curse of slavery prophelied by Noe should light upon them, as notwith-

standing it did at last.

Thus irked, they began to kicke at their Governours, and taking head, set up a King of their owne faction, nourishing the same, and annoying the Subjects incessantlie, the successe on both sides was variable, quarrels increased, the enemie caught handfast, & every day bred a new skirmish. It seemed intolerable, & very necessity copelled them to try their whole force in one Battle, either utterly to weede out the Gyants, or to die free. Peace therefore concluded among themselves, for any private grudge hitherto maintayned, all forts brake truce and amity with the Gyants, and straited them up so, that from all corners of the land, they must needes assemble into one field and fight for the better, maynelie they tugged certaine houres, but in conclusion the lawfull Kings prevayled, the miscreants done to death. See now the mockery of Fortune, Victors they were, and promised themselves a security: Anger & insolencie over-turned all, for what with spoiling the dead carcases, what with murthering the remaynder of that generation, man, woman, and childe, in all parts of the Realme, vouchsafing them no buryall, but casting them out like a fort of dead dogges, there enfued through the stench of Anno mundi those carryons such a mortall pestilence, infecting not onely the places where they lay, but the ayre round about by contagion, that beside those few which by sea returned homeward, few escaped alive, and heereby hangeth a tale, From this plague (say the Irish) was preserved Ruanus the Gyant, who from time to time kept true record of their histories, is of some else utterly done away by fundry casualties of death, warre, thought to be spoyle, fire, forraine victories, and he (for sooth) continued till the yeare of Christ 430 and told S. Patrick all the newes of

the

Gen.5.

the country requiring of him to bee baptized, and so died, when he had lived no more but two thousand and forty one yeares: which is above twice the age of Methusalem . Had it beene my channce in Ireland, to meete & conferre with this noble Antiquarie, hee might have eased me of much travell. These things I note for no other purpose, but that the simple stumbling upon such blinde legends should be warned to esteeme them as they are, idle fantasies, wherewith some of their Poets, dallyed at the first, and after through error and rudenes it was taken up for a sad matter. at which will be the committee of the party and

bearing, the CAP. VIII.

The severall finhabitants of freland fince Bastolenus.

F an infinite number of Gyants slaine, certaine hid families lurked and escaped the common mischiefe, whom at length penury constrayned to for sake their dennes, and to pilfer for meate,

when they perceived the murraine of men and beafts, and that none gave them resistance, they waxed hardie, & searching the land, found it wel-nigh desolate, wherefore they harboured themselves in the clearest coast: and easily subduing the poore soules remaining, revived their blood, and became Lords of the whole lland 60. yeares.

Arro Mundi 2:17. Nemodus.

Among the Sonnes of lapheth, Genesis recounteth Magog who had now planted his people in Scithia within Tanaris, from whom at this day the Turkes are descended. They hearing the hard happe of their fathers lyne, cast out by the collaterall braunches of Cham, the late King of the Bactrians, their odious neighbours, sent into Ireland Nemodus with his foure sonnes, Starius, Gerbavel, Amimus, Fergusius, captaines o. . ver a faire company, who passing by Greece and there taking up such as would seeke fortunes, finally landed here, held the country, multiplyed, but not without continuall warre upon

the Gyants aforesaid, who in th'end vanquished and chased them thence againe into Greece, aster 216. yeares, from Anno mundi 2533. from which time untill the comming of Dela his sonnes, the Gyants possessed it peaceably without forreine invasion. But themselves being disordered, and measuring all things by might, seditiously vexed each other, nor were they ever able to frame a common-wealth.

That espyed five brethren, sonnes to Dela the Grecian, no- Ann mudi torious Pilots, named Gaudius, Genandius, Sagandius, Ruthera- 2714.
The sennes of gius, Slanius, the posterity of Nemodus expulsed successors, who Dela. fortified their navyes, and finding the Countrey but weake, wanne it entirely, rooted out the old enemy, divided the Iland into five parts, & in each of them severally raigned, for better contentation of all fides, they agreed to fixe a meare stone in in the middle point of Ireland, to which stone every of their Kingdomes should extend, and be partakers of the commodities then chiefly found in that soile. These are also supposed to have invented the distribution of shires into Cantredes, every Cantrede or Barony, conteining an hundred Towneships, wherewith the name and use of hundreds, well knowne in England, might seeme to accord.

Variance for the chiefty set the foure brethren at a lovve ebbe, and then Slanius perched over them all, encroached eve-1y vvay round about the middle stone certaine miles for provision and furniture of his ovene houshold, which plott in time obtained the name of one generall part, and nove maketh up the fift, Media. Meth it was called either for Media moytie of Cantredes, being but sixteene, vvhereas the rest comprised thirty two apeece, or for the site thereof in the navell of Ireland. This hee assigned to the Monarch a surplus over and above his Inheritance, vehich notvvithstanding grevv to a severall Kingdome, and allowed thereof certaine parts by composition. Not long after dyed Slanius, & vvas buryed in a mountaine of Meth that carrieth his name. Thirty yeares the Monarchy vvas possessed in this order, but shortly the Princes ovving fealty, beganne to stomack the Intrusion of Slanius, & vvhen he vvas once rid,

of IRELAND.

27

2860.

Bremmis.

they disdained his successour, whereupon ensued everlasting Battels. The Monarchy was laide downe, then fell they at debate for the land of Meth, which strife could never be appeafed. In the necke of those troubles came over a new army of Scithians, who claymed also from Nemodus their fore-father. and they tooke parts, and made parts, set all in uproare with sword, and havocke. To be short, they spent themselves one upon another so fiercely and furiously, that now they reckoned not what nation or what fouldiour they received in to keepe up or beate downe a fide. By which occasion the Britraines also put in a foot, who discovering the state of the land to their Princes, opened a gappe for Brennus the brother of Belinus, to direct his course thither with the same Navy which he had furnished to serve Signimius then King of Ly. ons amid the Galles in France. But Brennus took small effect. Before him also divers Kings of Brittaine had scope in Ireland. Informuch that Gurguntius the sonne of Beline, reputed the same by lineall descent among his ovene Dominions. Notwithstanding they never injoyed it longer then they could keepe possession perforce, and often vvere they repelled and vvearyed with feeking after it, as wherein they found small fruite, and blovves enough. Lastly came the Spaniards from Biscaye, conducted by source Captaines, of vvhose arryvall before I speake, I must repeate their original somewhat farther, and so give a light to the affoyling of a controversie, that is, whether the Irish came from Ægypt, or from Spaine. It shall appeare they came from both.

CAP. IX.

The arrivall of the Spaniards, then called fberians, into Ireland.

N the yeare of the World 2436. after the uni- Hostor Booth. verfall floud 780. while the children of Israell

claimeth

ferved in Ægypt, Gathelus the sonne of Neale, 2 great Lord in Greece, was upon disfavour exiled the Country with a number of his faction, adherents, and friends. The young Greeke being very wife, valiant and well spoken, got honourable entertainement with Pharao surna- Ich. Major. de gestis Scot. lib. med Amanophis king of Ægypt, and in short space reached to 1.cap.9. such a credit that he espoused the Kings base Daughter Scota, whereof the Scotts are thought to be named. This match bred to the King some tumult, and to the young Gentle-man Gathelus much envy, wherefore assoone as the foresaid Amenophis Exed. 14. was drowned in the Red Sea, the Princes of Ægypt so vexed Gathelus and his wife, that they were faine to bulke them, withall their traine into Europe, and came first to Lusitania, where diverse of his people tyred with travaile, would needs abide, he builded there the city of Brigantia, called afterwards Heave, Booth. Novium, now Compostella. The remnant passed with him lib.r. into Ireland, where the Barbarians highly honoured him, for his cunning in all languages, who also greatly perfected and beautified the Irish tongue, taught them letters, sought up their antiquities, practifed their youth in martiall feates, after his Greeke and Ægyptian manner. Finally so well he pleased them that to gratifie such a Benefactour, they were content to name the lland after him Gathelia, and after his wife Scotia. Truely that Scotia is the auncient appellation of Ireland, all Chroniclers agree, as it shalbe more plaine, when wee touch the Scottish pedigree. A brute there is in Ireland but uncertainelie fathered, that in remembrance of Pharao, their good lord, the Kerne pitching his Dart, cryeth of courage faro, faro; but the learned thinke that to bee taken from the Spaniard, who in his loco dicano ex-

CAP. IX.

Ann. mundi

Hiberus and Hirimon.

Captaine was Bartholmew, as many Au thors affirme.

Grafton p. 60.

Fab.part. 2.

Ann- murdi 33920

claymeth fabo, fabo. The people left in the coast of Spaine, founded the city of Bayon, now part of Gascoigne, and replenished all the shore towards Africk, and the edges of Portugall, Castile, Galæcia, towardes the sea Cantabricum, well nigh 200. yeares, after which time some of them began to minde another travaile. because they were pestered with Inhabitants, and whether they ever sped to Ireland, it is unknowne, at the leastwise in the raigne of Gurguntius the Brittaine, then chiefe Lord of Bayon, foure brethren Spaniards, whereof two are noted, Hiberus and Hirimon, not the sonnes of Gathelus (as writeth Boethius) but his off-spring, understanding that divers Western Ilands were empty, defirous to live in eale and elbovy-room, sayled Westvvard with a great retinue of men, vvomen and babes, hovering long about the Ilands Orchades in 60. great Thips, untill by good hap they met with Gurguntius, then returning from the conquest of Denmarke, who had refused to pay him the tribute, which Belinus his father vvan, him they belought (confidering their yvant of victuals, unable any longer to dvvell in their ships, accumbred vvith carriage of vvomen & children) to direct & further them to some place of habitation, proffering to become his liege people to hold the same of him & his heires for ever. The King advising himselfe, remembred with what difficultie he kept the Irish in subjection, & conceived hope that these strangers vvould endeavor either to stub out that unruly generation, or to nurture them. & so taking their oathes and hostages, he mann'd their ships, stored the vvith victuall & munition, & seated the in Ireland. Thus had the Brittaines an elder right to the Realme of Ireland, then by the conquest of Henry the 2. which title they never surceased to claime, & somtimes prevailed, as in the dayes of King Arthur, to whom the Irish Princes agnized their tribute and apparance, made at his Parliament in urbe Legionu, vvhich I take to be Westchester, called of old Carleon, as divers other citties vvere, vvherein the Romanes placed the legions. Again the Kings of Britain vvere the Lords of the place vyhence this people came, so as their vyinnings must

have beene the Kings Dominion.

To all this when their owne free assent, the dedition of other Princes, lawfull conquest and prescription is adjoyned, it forceth an invincible title. But to prosecute our purpose, Those Iberians being substantially ayded of Gurguntius, enjoyed the Lands, bestowed themselves soure brethren into foure parts thereof, untill their pride and ambition armed two against other two, Hiberw and his brother against Hirimon and his. In this conflict Hirimon slew Hiberus, and raigned quietly. At this time the countrey was first named Ibernia, as I have declared in the third Chapter. The King to avoyde obloquie and slaunder, purged himselfe to his subjects, that neither maliciously nor contentiously, but for his necessary desence and safeguard he had borne armes against his brother. And to witnesse how farre he was from desire to rule alone, he nominated speciall Captaines to be Kings under him of their severall Countryes, reserving to himselfe but one fourth part, and the portion of Meth allotted to the Monarchie for the better maintenance of his part.

of IRELAND.

Thele afterward clambered into five Kingdomes incompatible, Leinster, Connaght, Vlster, Mounster in two por- land. tions, and sometimes to more by usurpations and compofitions. but ever one was elected the Monarch over all.

An hundred and thirtie chiefe Kings are reckoned of this Nation from Hirimon to Laigirus the Sonne of Nealus magnus, in whose time the blessed Bishop Patricius converted them to Christianity. ยาวการสาร์มิ ฮ์ มีโดเส 6ฮ โดยนาม ปั

CAP. X.

An Dom 120.

The comming of the Picts into Ireland.

Bedol. r.c. 10

OW lived the Irish in collerable order under their fundry Kings, and applyed themselves to peace and gathering of wealth, when suddainely Rodericke a Red-shank of Scythia fled thither with a small company of Galleyes,

and winde-driven in compassing round about the British Pian coast, were happely blowne ashore into Ireland. These are the Picts, a people from their cradle diffentious, land-leapers, mercilesse, sowre and hardy being presented to the King they Joh. Major de craved Interpreters, which granted, Roderick their Chieftaine

uttered for him and his, the request in this manner.

s ou lexible dischito nombre e

The words of Roderick King of Picts.

Not as describe from the courage of our auncestors, but inclining our felves so the bent and five aye of fortune, we are become suppliants to Ireland, that never before have humbled our selves to any, Looke Sir King, eye us well, It is not light provvolfe that hash caused these valiant bodies to stoop. Scithians we are and the Picts of Scithia, great substance of glory lodgeth in these two names, what shall I tell of the civill Tumult that hath made us leave our home? or rippe up old Historyes to make strangers bemoane us? Let our vassailes and children discourse it at large and leysure, if perhaps you vouchsafe us any leysure in the Land: To which effect and purpose your infinite necessities pray your favours. A King of a King, Men of Men, Princes can confider how neere it concerneth their honour and surety to proppe up the state of a King defaced by Treason, and men will remember nothing better befeemeth the nature of man, then to feele by compassion the griefes of men. Admit we beseech you these scattered reliques of Scithia, If your Realmes bee narrow, we are not many. If the foyle be barren, we are born

to hardnesse. If you live in peace, we are your subjects. If you warre, we are your Souldiours. We alke no kingdome, no wealth, no triumph in Ireland. We have brought our selves, and left these casualtyes with the enemie. Howsoever it like you to esteeme of us, we shall easily learne to like it, when we call to minde, not what we have beene, but what we are.

Great confultations was had upon this request, and many The Answer. things debated too and fro. In the end they were answered, that their antiquities layde forcible arguments, wherefore it could not be expedient to accept the Scithians into Ireland, that mingling of natios in a Realme breedeth quarrels remedilesse, that Ireland finding scarcity rather of roome then of people, that those few inferred amongst a many might quickly disturbe and put the whole out of joynt. But quoth they, though wee may not divell together yet shall you finde us your very good neighbours and friends. Not farre hence lyeth the Iland of Brittaine, in the north thereof: your manhood and polycies shall winne you scope enough, our Capitaines shall conduct you the way, our strength shall helpe to settle you, addresse your shippes and hye you thither. With Iohn Stow. this perswasion they shaped course cowards the north of Brittaine, now called Scotland, where contrary to all expe-Chation Marins the King avvayted their comming, and gave them there a sharpe battle, wherein Rodericke was staine, with diverse of his band. Them which remained and appealed to mercy, be licensed to inhabite the uttermost borders of Scotland: Wives they wanted to encrease their Mue, and because the Brittaines scorned to match their daughters with such a froward and beggerly people, the Picts continued their first adquaintance with the Irish and by entreaty obtained wives from them, conditionally that if the Crowne Thould happe to fall in question they should then yeeld thus much prerogative to the woman as of the female blood royall, rather then of the male to choose their Prince, which Covenant, saith S. Bede, the Picts are well knowne to keepe at Bede lived and

But long afore this time the Scottish Chronicles mention

Anno Mundi 57 17. ante Christum 330.

32

the arrivall of Almaine Picts into the marches now of England and Scotland, with whom certaine Irish called then also Scotts joyned against the Brittaines, devising to erect a kingdome there, as well to fortify themselves as to gratifie the Irish, who detracting their obedience lately promised to Gurguntius, practifed all they might to abridge the kingdome of the Brittaines. First therefore came from Ireland, Fergusius the sonne of Ferchardus, a man very famous for his skill in blasoning of armes. Himselfe bare the Red Lyon rampant in a golden field. There was in Ireland a monument of Marble fashioned like a Throne, which Simon Brecke a companion to Hiberus and his brethren found in the journey, & because he deemed the finding thereof to be ominous to some Kingdome, he brought it along with him, and layde it up in the country for a lewell ... This marble Fergusius obtained towards the prospering of his voyage, and in Scotland he left it, which they used many yeares after in Coronation of their King at Scona. But Fergusius though he be scored in the row of Kings, for one, and the first, yet he held himselfe there obscurely, fundry times beat backe into Ireland, where he was finallie drowned by milfortune within the Creeke of Knockfergus. That Fergusius encountred with Coilus the Brittaine and flew him, as writeth the Scotts, it is impossible except they mistake the name of Coilus for Calius, with whom indeede the age of Fergusius might well meete, and the rather for that in the first yeare of his raigne, the Picts entred, and then Fergusius immediately after them, 330. yeares ere Christ was borne. Now Coilus raigned in the yeare of our Lord, 124. about which time befell the second arrivall of the Picts in Brittaine, so it seemeth they mistake by a slight error, Coilus for Calius, and the second arrivall of the Piets, for the former. This confusion of Histories is learnedly noted by Cooper in his generall collection of Chronicles.

a appearation becomes all decrea constructions about

CAP. XI.

of IRELAND.

How the frish setled themselves in Scotland.



Eturne weenow to the course of our Historie, An Dom. 1600 while the Picts were bestowed in the north of cap. 11. Brittaine and waxed populous, the Irish made Bedd rect.

fundry arrands over to visite their Daughters, Nephewes, and kindred. In often comming and going, they noted waste places, and little llands not replenished, but rather neglected and suffered to grow wilde. Hereof in Ireland they advertised their Prince, namely Reuther or Rheuda, who be- Rheuda. ing the Issue of Fergusius, bethought himselfe of his interest to certaine peeces of land beside the nation of the Picts. Hee therefore well appointed, partly by composition, and some deale perforce stepped into those hamlets which no man occupied, & proceeded hansomely to reare his kingdome. By little and little he edged forward, and got betweene the Picts and Brittaines on this side the Scottish banke, which he possessed but a season. The place was thereof named Rheudisdale, now Riddesdale, (asmuch to say, as the part of Rhenda) for dahal in their language, signifieth part . In those quarters after fundry conflicts with the borderers, hee was by them flaine, but the kingdome lafted in his successours still, and the two nations the Picts and the Irish lovingly suffered each other to thrive. The Scotts caught up the Islands & the Frontiers. The Picts dwelt in the middle: Soone after the peace betweene them, vvent suspitions & the diversities of people, place, custome, language, vvith the memorie of old grudges stirred up such inward jealousies and hate, that it seemed they were easie to kindle, & as in such factions, there never wanteth drifte to drive a cumult, so it happened that certaine of the Nobilitie of the Scotts resciant next them had with some difficultie, received out of Greece a Molossian Hound, which Toh Major. do breede both in swiftnesse of soote, and in sweetnesse of opening, vvas reputed peerelesse.

This Hound, a willfull Gentleman, a Pict Itole home, and

therewith gratified his Prince, glad of the novelty, and little

thoughtfull of the displeasure. Contrarywise the Irish, wood for anger at this dishonour, and injury, assembled in poste haste under Eugenius their King, and after brawling, sell to spoyle, and so to blowes; whereof parts and stomackes be-An, Donn. 188. ing even, the fortune was variable. In this division they scambled out a few yeares, untill the malice of carassus a Brittaine forced a quietnesse betweene them to abuse their helpe against th'Empire. But hee was shortly slaine by Alectus the Romane Captaine, and hereupon the old fore waxed rawe: To heape the mischiese, a Brittish Lord named Maximus, aspiring to the kingdome, sent an ambassadge to Ethodius king of Picts, pleading with him a league of friendship, utterly to expulse the Irish Scot: conditioning withall their assistance to chase the Romanes out of Brittaine, which was concluded,

An Dom. 353.

An Dom 358.

fome into Ireland their first home. Maximus watching his time, despairing of the Brittish Kingdome, and espying the Picts tyred with continuals vv arres, turned his povver upon them, and brought them to such an exigent, that they had no readier shift then to crave To, Major, li. 2. helpe from Ireland, and so by degrees when some private persons, nourishers of the quarrell, vvere out-vvorne, the matter of malice vvas qualified, and the remnant of the Irish Scots, vvith their friends and off-spring called home to their dvvelling, after their first banishment, 43. yeares expired.

and by this confederacie, after many lamentable skirmishes,

the Irish were betrayed, Eugenius the King, Ethai his brother,

and Ericus his nephew, and also the residue, such as could e-

scape the enemies sword, fled thence, some into Norway,

From this time forward the amity waxed steddy, and the Irish under Fergusius the second their King vvan such credit, that finally the nation of Picts vvere afflicted by the Brittaines, then the Scots incroched into the heart of the Realme, and became the mightier and more populous, of vyhom the Countrey vvas ever since un der one Generall name called Scotland.

Thus

Thus you see the Scotts a lively, stirring, ancient, & victo- An. Dom. 423? rious people, are mixed first of Brittaines, (though the Chronicles dissemble it) whom Brutus planted there with Albana-Etw: Secondly, of Picts: Thirdly and chiefly, of the Irith, which after this time left the name of Scott, for those in Brittaine, and delighted rather to be called Irish. Then came up the distinction of Scotia major for Ireland, and Scotia minor for the Scotts in Brittaine.

But most effectually (as saith Cambrensis) the Scotts pre-Distina, s. vayled under the guiding of fix valiant Gentlemen, Sonnes to Muridus King of Vlster, who in the time that Neale the great enjoyed the monarchy of Ireland, going to succour their countrymen there, at last also tooke up for themselves no little portions of ground, which their posterity kept in Cambren= sis time, the yeare of Christ 1 200 who treateth their exploits more largely in his Topography of Ireland. Ever fince then, they were utterly named and efteemed Scotts: The nation of Joh Majord z. the Picts driven into corners, albeit the most parts & the out Isles retaine at this day a people mungrell betwixt both, cal- Polit I. Angl. led Redshanks. The Scotts write that their King Gregorius, hin. in an. Dom. 875. invaded Ireland as his lawfull inheritance, and the same conquered, who lieth buried in one of their out-Iles, called Iona, beautified with the Sepultures of Scottish Kings, where the Irish tongue is their native language, & therefore they call the submission of the Irish to Henry the 2. a defection from Scotland, which nevertheleffe they recke, ne regard not, but willfully did forgoe it, as reaping lesse then they expended, and unable to defray the growing charge, which cost considered little better then nothing, say they, the King of England winnerh by keeping of Ireland. Yet in the late governement of S. Henry Sidney, Vister being conveyed by discent, & act of Parliament to the Crowne, which Earledome was in the time of Edward the third reckoned at thirty one thousand markes yearely, the same being but one fift part of Ireland, It seemeth that if this right be well prosecuted that Ireland might pay it selse of necessaries, and yeeld sufficient benefit to the Princes Coffers.

CAP. XII.

The conversion of the frish to Christianity.

An Dom . 426.



Bout this time, Holy Church being stayed in peace, enriched with possessions, supported with authority, many noble Clearkes flourishing in diverse Realmes, the Holy Doctor Augustine yet

Cap. 40. Plat in Cæle-

in life: Theodosius the second, suppressing Idols in all the Empyre: Celestinus 1. Bishop of Rome, conferred with his cleargy touching the instruction specially of the western parts, wherin the faith of Christ was hitherto, either not planted, or by persecution extinct, or by corruption of Hereticks defaced; of them all, no country was more lamented then Ireland, which partly for distance from the heart of Christendome. partly for their infinite rudenesse, had yet received no fruit of true Religion. In that affembly was Palladius Arch-Deacon of Rome, a good Priest and well learned, who profered his charitable travaile towards the conversion of any those lands. whither he should be by them directed and appointed. The Pope knowing the sufficiency of the man, did consecrate Pal-Vita S. Patricij. ladius a Bishop, authorized his journey, furnished his wants, affociated to him, diverse religious persons, delivered him the Holy Bible, with great folemnities, and certaine monuments of Peter and Paul, whereat diverse miracles had beene shewed Hearryved in the North of Ireland, whence he escaped hardly with his life, into the Ilands adjoyning, there preaching and converting many, erecting monasteries, and ensueing his vocation so painefully, that the onely report of his holy. nesse and cunning, excited the Scotts (late christened, but abiding in seisme, and committing the function of Bishoppes to single Preists,) to call him thither, whereunto he assented.

upon the Popes answere, and leaving his Disciples in the Isle,

became the special apostle of Scotland, where he spent the

relidue of his time, with more fruite then among the Irish.

enpia. Prosp. Aquit. In Chroni.

Hercunto Celestinus condiscended the easier, for that in the very

very point of Palladius his departure, Patricius attended at Rome to bee sent with leave and benediction into Ireland. In which attempt hee found such joyfull successe, so farre different from their accustomed frowardnesse, that a man would weene the Realme had beene reserved for him. And because it pleased God to worke to the Land such an universall benefite by the meanes of this holy Patriarch, I take it convenient to set downe briefly here his course of life, after the most approoved Chronicles that I could finde.

Patricius was borne in the marches of England and Scot. The life of s. land, in a sea towne called then Taburnia, whose father Toselin, of Furcalpbrune (as writeth Ioseline) was a Deacon and a Priests nest. sonne, his mother conches was sister to S. Martin, the famous Bishoppe of Toures in France. The childe was from his cradle brought up in the Faith, and much given to devotion.

Novv vvere the Irish through the helpe of the Scots and Picts, arch-pirats of the narrovv seas, and used to sacke litle vveake villages scattered along the shore, and for vvant of other prey, to bring the Inhabitants home Captives, with others also was taken this Patricius, a ladde of fix- Ex Epid. Pateene yeares olde, being then a student of secular learning, An. Dom. 386. and became the Villaine of an Irifh Lord called Mackbiam, from vyhom after fixe yeares hee redeemed himselfe vvith a peece of gold which hee found in a clod of earth, nevely timed up by the svyne hee kept the time of his Banishment (as affliction commonly maketh men religious.) This with the regard of his former education, printed in him such remorse and humility, that being from thenceforth utterly vycaned from the world, hee betooke himselfe to contemplation, ever lamenting the lacke of grace and truth in that Land, wherefore not despairing, but that in continuance, some good might bee vvrought upon them, hee learned their tongue perfectly, and alluring one companion with him for his exercises, he departed thence into France, ever casting backe his eye to the conversion of Ireland, vvhose babes yet unborn, seemed to him in his dream

(from out their mothers yvombes) to call for Christendome. In this purpose he sought out Martinus his Vncle, by vyhose meanes the yong man entred under the government of Gera manus then Bishop of Antifiodore, vvhose scholler and familiar he vvas forty yeares, bestovving all that time in prayer and study of eloquence and holy Scriptures. Then at the age of threefcore and two yeares, being renowned through the Latine Church for his wisdome, vertue, and skill, hee came home to Rome, recommended with letters from the French Bishops, to Pope celestine, to whom he uttered his full mind, and the secret vow which long since he had conceived touching Ireland. The Pope invested him Archbishop and Primate of the whole Iland, bleffed him, commaunded publique prayer and fasting, brought him and his disciples onward on the voyage. Therefore in the twentie third yeare of Thes odosius the younger, which was the yeare of our Lord 430. Patricke landed in Ireland: and because he spake the tongue plentifully, being a reverent personage, he tooke holy Bible, adding thereto diverse miracles in the Name & vertue of IBs us whom he preached: many liftened unto him, namely such as in the late entertainement of Palladius and Albius the Irish Bishops his Disciples, had some little feeling in the Gospell. In continuance, hee wanne the better part of that Kingdome, except Laigirus himselfe sonne of Neale the great Monarch, who (notwithstanding hee relyed nothing to the Gospell yet) because hee stopped not the course thereof, nor forbid any that list to embrace it, the Bishop denounced to him a curse from God, according ly tempered vvith mercy and judgement, that during his life hee should bee victorious, but after him, neither the Kingdome should stand, nor his linage inherite. Thence hee journeyed with a great number of his Disciples and friends to conill Lord of Connaght, (who honourably reputed him, and with all his people was converted) and then sent him to Logan his Brother, King of Leinster, vyhom hee likevvise persvvaded. In Mounster he was highly honoured of the Earle of Daris, who gave him a dyvel-

a dwelling in the East angle of Ardmagh, called Secta, where hee erected many Celles and Monasteries, replenished with votarious men and women. Thirty yeares continually hee travailed in preaching through the Land, ever leaving behinde him Bishops and Priests, whose learning and holinesse by the speciall grace of God shortly repaired the faith so begunne, other thirty yeares hee spent in his Province of Ardmagh among his ghostly brethren, in visitation of those religious Houses, which by his meanes were founded, so hee lived in the whole An Dom. 4826 one hundred twentie two yeares, and lyeth buryed in Downe.

of IRELAND.

39

CAP. XIII.

Of Saint Patrickes Purgatory.

Very History of Ireland that I have seene, maketh one severall title De mirabilibus Hi-bernia, and therein with long processe treateth of severall llands, some full of Angels, some full of devils, some for male only, some for female, some where poore may live, some

where none can dye: finally such effects of waters, stones, trees, and trinkets, that a man would vveene them to be but heedlesse and uncertaine tales by their complexion.

Verily, being inquisitive of these matters, I could finde no one of them soothed by such persons upon whose relation I am disposed to venture. Onely the place behinde Ardmagh called S. Patricks Purgatory, because it is knowne and confessed, and because I would be discharged of my Readers expectation, who perhaps with the name of S. Patricke looketh to bee informed thereof, I can bee content to put so much in veriting, as Bookes and reports affirme with most likelyhood.

Two things I muse at, that neither the time nor the author

of so strange erection was preserved. Concerning the time one Record putteth it in Anno Domini 302. which is 128. yeares before S. Patricke converted Ireland, and fixty fixe yeares before his birth. Againe cambrensis who maketh curious recitall of wonders in the land, never uttereth word of this Purgatory; & though a negative authority be not invincible, yet confidering the propertie of that man, and what a fort of trifles he taketh paine to justifie, it may serve for a vehement suspition, that the place was then either not found, or not miraculous. Concerning the Author, very few there are that referre it to this Patricke their Apostle, but rather to an Abbot of the same name, whom I marvaile I finde not in the mighty bigge volume of their Saints: Notwithstanding these Originalls might bee either lost or altered, but the thing it selfe being extant, must needes have had a beginning, whereof possibly there are monuments in that Church, or in the Irish tongue to me unwitting.

Therefore I hold him unwise that will utterly mistrust the principall, because the circumstances vary; or condemne the vehole, because he could not reach to the undoubted truth of some part. If any man bee so delicate, that not a jote thereof veill sinke into his head, veho shall controule him? neither hee nor veee are bound to believe any story besides that vehich is delivered us from the Scriptures, and the consent of Gods Church. Let the discreet Reas

der judge of it.

This I learne, that the holy Abbot Patricius secundus, not the Bishop their Apostle, laboured the conversion of the people of Vlster, vehich being nove Christians, could yet at no hand be evonne to renounce their olde sensuality, cruelty, murthers, extortion. And vehen he much inforced the life to come, they replyed unto him veith contempt, that unlesse they save proofes of these loyes and paines hee preached, they evould never lesse possession of the pleasures, in hand, for hope or dread of things to come they veist not when. At their importunacie hee besought God, were it his good pleasure to give out some evident token

of the maters they required: finally by the special direction of God he found in the north edge of Vlster a desolate angle hemmed in round, & in the mids thereof a pit, where he read red a Church, closed the same with a wall, bestowed therein Canons regular, at the East end of this Church yarde, a doore leadeth into a closet of stone, which they call the Purgatory, because devout people have resorted thither for pennance, and reported at their returne, strange visions of paine and bliffe appearing to them. They used to continue therein foure & twenty houres, which doing one while with ghostly meditations, and another while a dreadfull conscience of their deserts, they saw as they say, a plaine resembling of their owne faults and vertues, with the horror and comfort thereto belonging, that one so terrible, the other so joyous, that they verily deeme themselves for the time to have sight of heaven and hell. The revelations of menthat went in (Saint Patricke yet living) are kept veritten veithin the saide Ab. bey. When any person is disposed to enter (for the doore is ever sparred) he repaireth first for advice to the Archbishop, who casteth all perils, and dissivadeth him, because they say diverse never came backe againe, but if, the party be resolute, he recommendeth him to the Pryor, vvho in like manner favourably exhorteth him not to hazard such a danger, if notwithstanding he finde the party fully bent, he conducteth him to this Church, enjoyneth him to begin vvith prayer, fast and vigill of 15. dayes, so long together as in discretion can be endured. This time expired, if he yet perfevere in his former purpose, the vyhole Convent accompanieth hith with solemne procession and benediction to the mouth of the cave, volere they let him in, & fo barre up the doore till the morrovv, & then with like ceremonies they avvaite his returne, & reduce him to the Church. If he be seene no more, they fast & pray 15 dayes after. Touching the credit of those matters, Ifee no cause but a Christian man assuring himself that there is both hel & heaven, may without vanity upon sufficient information, be perfuaded that it might please God at formtime for considerations to his infinit vvisdome known to reveale

Polichre l.r. ca.35. Trevisibid.

gide was base Daughter of Dubtachus a Captaine in Leinster, niz.

who perceiving the Mother with child, fold her secretty, fea-

ring the jealouly of his wife, to a Irish Poet, reserving to him-

selfe, the fruite of her wombe, she was there delivered of this

by miracles the vision of loyes & paines eternal, but that altogether in such fort, & so ordinarily, & to such persons, and by fuch meanes as the common fame & some records therof doe utter, I neither believe, nor wish to be regarded. It appeares by Trevisa in his additions to Polichronicon, that a superstitious opinion of this Purgatory was then conceived, which he difproveth. And a man of indifferent judgement may soone suspect that in the drift and strength of Imagination, a contemplative person would happely suppose the sight of many strange things which he never fave. Since writing hereof I met with a Priest, who told mee that he had gone the same pilgrimage, and affirmed the order of the premisses: But that he for his owne part faw no fight in the world, fave onely fearefull dreames when he chanced to nod, and those he saith were exceeding horrible: further he added, that the faste is rated more or leffe, according to the quality of the penitent, and that the place seemed to him scarcely able to receive sixe perfons. sob oderni i seco

geoglicida A écit e catal de Jahliana de LillXIII. See Stime is conference by to f

The Frish Saints.

Hough my fearch thereof in this my haste out of the land be very cumbersome, yet being loath to neglect the memory of Gods friends, more glorious to a Realme then all the victories and triumphs of the world, I thinke it good to furnish out this chapter with some extracts touching the Saints of Ireland, namely those that are most notable mentioned by authors of good credit. cambrensis telleth, that in S. Patricks time flouri-Thed S. Bride the virgin, and S. columbe in Doune, where their bodies soone after the conquest, and also S. Patrickes body were found, Sir John courcye being then President of Vister In viewing of the sepulture her testifieth to have seene three principall jevvells, vyhich vvere then translated as honourable monuments worthie to be preserved.

Brigide, whom the Poet trained up in letters, and so convey- An. Dom. 43.0. ed her home to her father. The Damofell was schooled in the faith by S. Patricke, preaching then in those parts, The became lo religious, and so ripe in judgement, that not onely the An Dow. 418. multitude, but a whole synode of Bishoppes assembled by Dublin, used her advice in weighty causes, and highly estecmed her. One fact of hers being yet a childe, made her famous. The King of Leinster had given to Dubtachus in token of singular affection, for his good service, a rich sword. Now it befell, that the maiden visiting her sicke neighbours, diverfly distressed for hunger, (her father being a sterne man, his Lady a shrewe) she saw none other helpe to releive these wretched people, but to part the lewels of that idle sword among them. This matter was haynoully taken, and came to the Kings cares, who (comming thortly after to a Banquer in her fathers house) demaunded the Girle, not yet nine yeares old, how the durst presume to deface the gift of a King, Thee answered, that it was bestowed upon a better King, then hee was, whom (quoth she) finding in such extremity, I would have given all my father hath, and all that thou haft, yea your Clves and all, were yee in my power to give, rather then Christ should starve. At convenient age she professed virginity, and allured other noble Virgins to her fellowship, with whom she lived in her owne Monastery, untill the yeare of our Lord 500. and was buried at Downe, in the Tombe of S. Patricke, what Cambrensis reporteth of his own knowledge and sight, I will

Among her reliques, was found a concordance of the 4. Evangelists, seeming to bee written with no mortall hand,

beautified with mysticall pictures in the margent, whose co-

lours and workemanship, at the first blush were darke and

unplea-

be bold to adde hereunto.

Diffind,3.6. Brigid, Colum. Senanns. An. Domr493.

Brendan.

unpleasant, but in the view wonderful lively and artificial! Senanus first a Souldiour, succeeded S. Patricke in the Sec of Ardmagh, when he had been e certaine yeares a minor and doctour to the Campe. Brendan Abbot at the age of ten yeares. was of fuch incomparable holinesse, and thereto so wise and lettered, that his parents thinking themselves to have wonne the most notable fruite, that could ensue their marriage, by mutuall consent professed continencie. Hee stourished in the time of S. Bride, lived familiarly with Ercus the Bishop, and Finan the Abbot, and and to the state of a surely provident

An. Doin 456. Edan, or Ma-

Molingus-

Fintan.

Madoc alias Edan of noble parentage, taken prisoner with the King of Temore, and kept in his court with diverse yourge men his schoole fellowes, openly adjured the King to suffer him and them to depart and serve God, as they were accustomed, which being now fundred and distrayned of libertie they had partly discontinued, immediately they were dismissed: he died Bishop of Fernes, and laide the foundation of that Burrogh. Molingus the fuccessor of S. Madoc being Bishop tooke himselfe to voluntary labour, & with his owne hands. drived a running spring to his Monastery, enduring that travaile dayly after prayer and study, eight yeares together. Fintan the Abbot was had in such veneration, that whereas Colm King of Leinster, kept prisoner Cormak the Kings sonne of Kenfill: He went boldly with 12. of his Disciples through the presse of the Souldiours, and in sight of the King, rescued! the young Prince, for the Irish in no wayes are outragious a gainst holy men . I remember, Cambrensis writeth himselse, merrily to have objected to Morris then Archbishop of Cashell, that Ireland in so many hundred yeares had not brought forth one Martyr, The Bishop answered pleasantly, (but alluding to the late murther of Thomas of Canterbury,)Our people(quoth he)notywithstanding their other enormities yet have ever more spared the bloode of Saints. marry now we are delive:ed to such a nation, that is well acquainted with making Martyrs, henceforwards I trust this complaint shall cease. In risometre thanky here be

Malachias was borne in Ardmagh of noble parents, cherished

rished in vertue by example of his Mother, and trayned up in learning, even yet a very babe, he vvas oft-times espied to steale from his companions to pray in secret, so grave & modest, that of himselfe he choosed alwayes the most severe and rigorous Schoolemasters, and refused an excellent Clerke, only because he saw him, somewhat lightly demeaned at game. In the beginning of his youth hee yeelded himselfe the Dist. Benard in vie ciple of Imarius, an old recluse, whose austerity of conversation, the whole towne admired. There he became a Deacon, and at twenty five yeares a Priest. The Archbishop for the fame and opinion of his worthinesse, made him his Coadjutor, in the which office he reformed superstitions and revived the strength of religion, specially the uniformitie of their Church service, wherein before time they jarred. The famous monastery of Banchor he reedified, of the patrimony & legacies by his Vncle left him . The same Monastery was of old time, first governed by Congellus, and then proceeded Columbanus, the father of many religious houses in France. Banchor had beene so stored with Moncks, that no houre of day nor night they ceased, but some company or other was in continuall succession at divine service. Of which brethren there were in one day murthred 900. and the place spoyled, whose possessions conveyed to Malachias by his Vincle, hee restored forthwith, and bettered the foundation. At the age of thirtie yeares, he was by Canonicall election forced to accept the Bishopricke of Concreth, a people of all the Irish then most savage and bestiall, whom he with inestimable toyle reclaymed.

In the meane while died Celsus Archbishop of Ardmagh, to whom succeeded Malachias, at the age of thirty eight years. But ere this wel-nigh the space of 200. yeares together, a pestilent custome had crept into the country, that the Metropolitanes See, was inferred upon meere lay persons of the blood royall in manner by inheritance, wherefore Nigellus the next of kindred animated by the partiality of some Princes, & getting into his custody the Bible and Staffe, and other Ornaments of S. Patricke (whereunto the eares of the common

people

Malachias. An.Dom. 1014

people tyed the prelacy) came to the Pallace, with a bande of Souldiours to have slaine the Bishop. When all the people wept and howled, for his perill, he alone stepped into the bosome of his enemies, demaunding their purpose. The very Tyrants letting fall their weapons in stead of the murder conspired, fell to reverence him and departed friends. Three yeares he sate in the primacy, rather to discontinue the horrible corruption before used, then with intent to abide there: and their error having disabilled the abuse, he procured Gelassus to be his Successor, and returned to his former Bishopricke of Downe. For to Downe was then annexed Coner. But Malachias understanding that in times past, they were severall, sundred them againe, and preferred another to the Diocesse of Coner, desirous rather to discharge his cure, then to enlarge the fruites, while he preached, a woman fell at his feete, and befought his prayer, for that she had gone now with childe fifteene moneths and twenty dayes, nor could by any meanes be delivered, which done, the newes of her delivery was reported before the assembly brake up. Hee threatned vengance to a Captaine, unlesse he would turne away the Concubine he kept, the same being also his brothers Concubine. The Captaine tooke it disdainefully, and within one houre, was slaine by a conspiracy of women, whose Daughters and servants he had defiled. There dwelt in Lismore a notable Clerke, of conversation upright, but corrupt in judgement of religion, this fellow advancing his doctrine, offered disputation to the Bishop, before the multitude, when he was forced to silence with the waight of truth, yet he cavelled maliciously, that not the cause nor learning, but the countenance and credit of Malachias had wonne the victory. To whom the Bishop answered, our Lord compell thee, even maugre thine owne willfullnesse to acknowledge thine errors. At these words the Clerke and intending to fly the fight of men, was prevented with a mortall infirmity, and befeecha ing the Bilhop of his peace and communion, died immediate ly, reconciled to God and holy Church. Being demaunded of his Brethren, the Moncks of Banchor, where and when hee would

would wish to dye, and be buryed, if it lay in his choyse, hee answered: If in Ireland, beside the body of S. Patricke: If beyond the seas, at Clarivall, where S. Bernard was then famous and in the feast of All Soules. He cast in his minde, within a few dayes to sue to Eugenius the third, for the increase of the number of Metropolitanes, which request, was shortly after sped, and in this voyage he rested at Clarivall, and there diverle times, openly foretold that his yeare of departing was come accordingly when he had taken leave of S. Bernard and the brethren, descended from his chamber to Church, and received the rites of a christian man, he returned to his lodging, and dyed on All Soules day, in the yeare of his age fifty foule, so mildely and peaceably that it seemed rather a sleepe, then a death. There his obsequies was solemnized and miracles wrought at his tombe, and from thence his body was tranflated to Ardmagh, in the yeare 1 192. The latest of liver the

Malchus, though borne Irish, yet he spent most part of his time in the monastery of Winchester, in England, from thence assumpted Bishop of Lismore, him also remembreth S. Bernard upon occasion. A lunaticke childe he cured in Bishopping him. This miracle was through the world scene and contelled of many hundreds. There happened the same time, a discord betweene the King of Mounster, and his Bro- King of Mount ther, wherein the King was overmatched and fled into Eng. ac., land, vilited Malchus in his Abbey, and would at no hand be faid nay, but so long as it should please God to afflict him, he would live there under his government; and enfue his conversation, he contented himselfe with a poore Cell, used dayly a cold bathe to represse the wantonnesse of his sless, dieted himselfe with none other fare, then bread, water and salt, passed dayes and nights in sobbing and remorfe of sinne: At length the Kings and Nobles of Ireland began to stomacke the usurper, vanquished him, called home the good King to his right, who with many perswasions of Malchus and Mala-

chias could scarcely be gotten to forsake ghostly company, &

trade of life.

1148.

CAP. XV.

The most noble events in freland, betweene the time of Saint Patricke, and the conquest under Henry the 2.

386.

N the yeare of Christ 586 the people of Norway were Lordes and victours of the llandes in the West Ocean called Orchades, and great scowrers of the seas: A nation desperate in attempting the

Careticus K. of Brittaine.

conquest of other Realmes: as being sure to finde warmer dwelling any where, then at their owne home. These fellowes lighted into Ireland by this meanes, Careticus King of Brittaine (odious to his subjects) fell with them at civill warre. Ioyfull was the newes hereof to the Saxons, who then in the fix severall kingdomes, possessed the Iland sundry wayes, so they laide together their force, & associated to them Gurmondus, a Rover out of Norway, who having a navy still in a readinesse, and an army thereafter furnished, holpe the Saxons, to hunt the Brittaines into the marches of Wales, builded the towne of Gormond-chefter, and then having holpen the Saxons, made a voyage into Ireland where he sped but meanely, and therefore the Irish account not this for any of their conquests, as some of their antiquities have informed me. The same Gurmondus finding hard successe, did but build a few flight castles and trenches in the frontiers, and then leaving the land, got him home into France, where he was finally flaine, him our Chonicles name King of Ireland. But the Irish affirme that before Turgesius no Easterlings obtained a Kingdome. Here Cambrenfis to salve the contradiction, thinketh Gurmundus to have conquered the land by Turgesi= us his Deputy, sent thither at his provision, which answere breedeth a contrariety more incurable, for himself numbreth betweene Laigirius King of Ireland, in an. 430. and Fedlemiz dius whom lurgesius vanquished, Monarches 23. and yeares

400. so that Turgesius lived in an. 830. and could not possibly

deale

Targefius.

deale with Gurmondus, who joyned with the Saxons against careticu in Anno 586. This knot might be untwyned with more facility. Gurmondus made much of that little he caught, and wrote himselfe King, which Title our Histories doe allow him, because he opened a gappe, enjoyed it for a while, and brake a way for his Countreymen. Turgesius brought this attempt to perfection, and in these respects each of them may be called first King and Conqueror.

8:03

Secondly therefore Turgefius with his Normans, assaulted Ireland, sustained losse and many overthrowes, but in the end fastening his power to the sea coasts, and receiving in his friends at will, he subdued the land through and through, ever as he went building up Castles and fortresses, vvherevvith the Irish had not beene yet acquainted, for hi= therto they knevv no fence, but vvoods or bogges, or ftrokes. Turgesius bridled the Kings, and avved them so, that vvithout interruption he raigned thirty yeares, cryed havocke & spoile vvhere any vvealth vvas heaped, spared neither Lay nor Clergy, nor Church, nor Chappell, but very infolently abused his victory. O-malaghlien king of Meth, was in some trust with the Tyrant, his onely Daughter Turgesius craved for his concubine. The father having a present vvitt, and vvatching some subtle oportunities, Saving your fancie, my Lord, quoth hee, there are diverse Ladies of my bloud svvceter bed-fellovves for a king, then that brovvue girle; and then he began to count neeces and cousins a number for sooth, endovved with angell-like beauties, painted so lively with his Tale, that the Tyrant doted already upon them ere hee savv them: But ever he doubted, lest O-malaghlien extolled them to exempt his ovvne, and the vvite father cloaked his drift vvith modestie in answeres, and lingering his graunt to enflame the leachers folly, as hee that would anything to bee suspected rather then his thought indeed. And at the last when the other tooke his delay somewhat unkindely, and bade his Queene speake to him. If I said (quoth hee) that with my very goodwill my fole daughter should bee sent to you to bee deflovered, your high vvisedome vvou!d

Out flew the fame thereof into all quarters of Ireland

and the Princes nothing dull to catche holde of such ad-

would guesse I did but faine and flatter, and yet if ten daughters were deerer unto me then your good pleasure and contentation, by whose bounty, both she & I, and we all are supported, I were unworthie the secret friendship, wherein it lyeth in you to use mee. As for the wench, it will in part seeme honourable to bee asked to the bed of such a Prince. feeing Queenes have not sticked to come from farre, and prostrate their bodies to noble Conquerours, in hope of issue by them, and howsoever it bee taken, time will redeeme it. But such a friend as you are to mee and mine, neither I nor mine shall live to see, and I purpose not to offend your amity with faving a greater mater then twenty maiden-heads, seeing fathers have not sticked to yeeld their owne wives to quench the loves and lustes of their fonnes.

I herefore I am thus agreed, name you the day and place, sever your selse from the open eye of your Court, conferre with those that have a curious insight and skill in beauties, I will fend you my daughter, and with her the choice of twelve or fixteene gentlewomen, the meanest whereof may bee an Empresse in comparison, when all are before you, make your game at will, and then if my childe shall please your fancie, thee is not too good to be at your commandement: Onely my request is, that if any other presume upon your leavings, your Majestie will remember whose fathers childe shee is. This liberall proffer was accepted of him, whose desire was infatiable, with many faire promifes and thankes. To bee short, the same day O-malaghlien attired Princelike his owne Daughter, and with her sixteene beautifull striplings, which presented to the King in his privy Chamber, accompanied onely with certaine wantons of the Nobility, drew foorth from under their womanlike garments, their skeanes, and valiantly bestirred themselves, stabbing first the Tyrant, next the youth present that prepared but small resistance, surely sitt mates to supply the office they tooke in hand, of Paris, not of He-Etor.

vantage, with one assent, rose ready to pursue their liberty. All Meth and Leinster vvere soone gathered to 0malaghlien, the father of this practife, vvho lightly leapt to horse, and commanding their forwardnesse in so naturall a quarrell, sayde, Lordings and friendes, this o malaghlien, case neither admitteth delay, nor asketh policie, heart and hafte is all in all, vvhile the feare is young and strong, that of our enemies some sleepe, some sorrovv, some curse, some consult, all dismayed, let us anticipate their furye, dismember their force, cut off their flight, occupie their places of refuge and succour. It is no mastery to plucke their feathers, but their neckes, nor to chase them in, but to rovvse them out, to vvcede them, not to rake them; nor to treade them dovvne, but to digge them up. This lesson the Tyrant himselse hath taught mee, I once demaunded him in a parable, by what good husbandry the Land might bee ridde of certaide Crovves that annoyed it, hee advised to vvatche where they bred, and to fire the nestes about their eares. Goe vyee then upon these Cormorants that shrowde theniselves in our possessions, and let us destroy them so, that neither nest, nor roote, nor seede, nor stalke, nor stubbe may remaine of this ungracious generation. Scarce had he spoken the word, but with great showtes

and clamours, they extolled the King as patron of their lives and families, affured both courage and expedition, joyned their confederates, and with a running campe, fivept every corner of the Land, razed the castles to the ground, & chased the strangers before them, slevy all that abode the battaile, recovered each man his owne precinct and former state of government. The Irish delivered of slavery, fell to their old vomit in persecuting one another, & having lately defaced their fortified castles & tovvns, as coverts to the enemy, al sides lay nove more open in harmes vvay. This considered, the Prinices that in the late rule of Turgesius espied some towardnesse

Turgefius murdered.

50

Out

to wealth and ease, began to discourse the madnesse of their fathers, who could not see the use of that which their enemies abused, they began to loathe their unquietnesse, to wish either lesse discord or more strength in every mans dominion to cast out the danger of naked Territoryes, as ready to call in the enemy, as the contrary was to shrowd them, faine would they mend, and they wish not hove. The former subjection though it seemed intollerable, yet they felt therein a grovving to peace, fruits of merchandize, rest & surety, for it fared diverfly twvixt those Easterlings, & these Irish: they knevy hove to thrive, might they get some commodious soyle. These had all the commodities of the soile, & reckoned them not. While the Princes & Potentates payvsed in this good mood, certain marchants out of Norvvay, called Ostomanni, Easterlings, because they lay East in respect of us, though they are indeede properly Normans, & partly Saxons, obtained licence fafely to land & utter their yvares. By exchanging of yvares & money finding the Normans civill and tractable, delighted also with gay conceipts, which they never esteemed needfull untill they lavy them, they entred into a defire of traffique with other nations, to allure marchants, they licensed the strangers asoresaid to build, if they vvere disposed, Haven-Tovvnes, vvhich vvas done. Amellanus founded Waterford, Sitaricus, Limericke: Inorus, Dublin, more at leisure by others. Then were repaired by helpe and counsell of these men, castles, forts, steeples, and Churches every-where. Thus are the Irish blended also in the blood of the Normans, who from thenceforth continually flocked hither, did the Inhabitants great pleasure, lived obediently, till wealth made them wanton and rebelli ous. But they could not possibly have held out, had not the conquest ensuing determined both their contentions. The mea ne while they waxed Lords of Havens and Bur-Townesshouled their fouldiours, and oftentimes skirmished tooke the r fortune, crept no higher, onely a memory is left 1010 ale 1014. of their field in Clantarfe, where diverse noble Irish men were flayne, that lye buryed before the Crosse of Kilmaynam.

And it is to be noted, that these are the Danes, which people (then Pagans) wasted England, and after that, France: From whence they came againe into England with Guilde Nan-VVilliam the Conquerour. So that Offomani, Normans, giac. Pold Ls. Easterlings, Danes, and Norway men are in effect the same, and as it appeareth by conference of times and Chronicles, much about one time or season; vexed the French men, subdued the English, and multiplyed in Ireland. An. Dom. 9000 But in the years of CHRIST 1095. perceiving great envy to lurke in the distinction of Easterlings and Irishe utterly west, and because they were simply Northerne, not Easterne, and because they magnified themselves in the late conquest of their Countreymen, who from Normandy flourished now in the Realme of England, they would in any wife bee called and counted Nor- Flatibury. mans.

Long before this time, as ye have heard, Ireland vvas An, Dorn. 942. bestowed into tvvo principall Kingdomes, and sometime into more, whereof one was ever elected Monarch, whom they tearme in their Histories, maximum regem, or without addition, regem Hibernia. The rest were written Reguli or Reges by limitation, as the King of Leinster, of Connaght, of Vlster, of Mounster, of Meth. To the Monarch besides his allowance of ground, and titles of Honours, and other priviledges in Iurisdiction, was graunted a negative in the nomination of Bishops at every vacation. The Cleargy and Laity of the Diocesse, recommended him to their King, the King to their Monarch, the Monarch to the Archbishop of Canterbury, for that as yet the Metropolitanes of Ireland had not receaved their palles: In this fort was nominated to the Bishopricke of Divelin, then voide Anno 1074. (at the petition of Godericus King of Leinster, by sufferance of the cleargy & people there, with the consent of Terdilvachus the Monarch) a learned prelate called Patricius: who the bleffed archbishop Lanfrancus consecrated at S. Pauls Church in London, & swore him to the obedience after the maner of his antecessors. christian Bishop of Lismore

Waterford.

Limericke.

Dabita.

11524

Legate

1162.

Legate to Eugenius 3. summoned a Provinciall Councell in Ireland, wherein were authorized foure Metropolitan Sees, Ardmagh, Dublin, Cashell, & Tuam: Bishops thereof being Gelasius, Gregorius, Donatus, Edanus, for hitherto, though they yeelded a primacy to the Bishop of Ardmagh, in reverence of Saint Patricke, yet was it partly voluntary, and ratified rather by custome, then by sufficient decree: neither did that Arch-Bishop take upon him to invest other Bishops, but sent them to Canterbury (as I said before) which henceforth they did not. Namely the next Bishop S. Laurence. fometimes Abbot of S. Kevynes in Glandilagh, was ordered and installed

rat home by Gelasius Primate

of Ardmagh.

THE SECOND BOOKE

CAMPION'S HISTORY

OF IRELAND.

CAP. I.

The conquest of Freland by Henry the second, King of England, commonly called Henry Fitz Empresse.



Ermot Mac Murrough, King of Leinfter, halt and leacherous, vowed dif concludeth the honestly to serve his lust on the beau: Liand 2. booke cambren de tifull Queene of Meath, and in the conquest Hibernizedeliveabsence of her husband, allured the redunto me by Fiancis Agerd. woman so farre, that she condiscended to be stolne away. This dishonourable wrong to avenge, O-Rorick

the King her hulband, besought assistance of Rodericke Oconor, King of Connaght, at that season the generall Monarch of all Ireland. The subjects of Leinster detesting the quarrell, and long ere this time hating their Prince, left him desolate in his greatest neede, so as with much difficulty he caught his boate, and fled over for succour to Henry the 2. King of England, then warring upon the Frenchmen, within his Dukedome of Aquitaine. Somewhat before this season sate in the See of Rome, Adrianus 4. an English Polichron. man borne, who having in his youth taken a painefull pil- Plat. in Adr. 4. grimage into Norway, and reduced the whole lland unto

Iolin Stow.

Christianity, learned distinctly the state of Ireland, and how their countrymen which dayly repaired thither, being themselves the most part insidels, meeting with a people there, wilde and furious, were like very shortly (but if God found remedy) to deface religion: for though Christ were beleeved and taught, yet the multitude est soone, grew to a shamelesse kinde of liberty, making no more of necessary points of Doctrine, then served their loose humour. Besides these occasions Henry the 2. builded upon the Popes favour, his borne subject, had sent Ambassadours to Rome, in the first yeare of his raigne, asking leave to attempt the conquest of Ireland. Adrian trusting and requiring a diligent reformation of the premisses, graunted his Bull, which Alexander his Successour confirmed, and ratified upon the same conditions. Now when Dermot was come in the very necke of these consultations, and put up his complaint, wherein he preferred the interest of his Crowne, and craved a restitution of some peece of his lands, the matter did seeme not all untowardly broached, Henry having his hands full with the French, because Mac Murrough urged all possible haste, could not personaly intend that offer, but sent him honourably garded into England, with letters patents bearing this Tenour.

The Kings letter. HENRY the second, King of England, Duke of Normandy and Aquitaine, Earle of Angiow. To all our true subjects, English, Normans, Welchmen, Scotts, and to all nations within our Dominions whatsoever. Greeting. Witt yee that the Bearer hereof, Dermot Mac Murrough King of Leinster, we have received into the soveraigne protection of our Grace and bounty, wherefore who so of you all our loving subjects will extend towards him, your ayde for his restoring, as to our trusty and welbeloved, know yee that he is thereto authorized by these presents, and shall deserve at our hands high favour in so doing.

Lo Strongbow, al, Chepstowe.

With these letters and many gay additions of his owne, he arrived at Bristow, where he fell at conference with Richard Strongbow, Earle of Pembroke, with whom he covenanted, the delivery of his onely daughter and heire unto marriage,

and

and so the remainder of his Kingdome: If the said Earle would recover him his home. That day were planted in Wales two gentlemen, Robert Fitz Stephens, and Maurice Fitz Fitz Stephens. Gerald, brethren of a Mother, allyed to Rice ap Griffin, then Fitz Gerald. Prince of Wales, whose Grand-father was surnamed Rice the great. Fitz Stephens had beene high Constable there under the King, and for executing rigour upon the Princes servants, was with him detained prisoner three yeares, ne would in any wife pay ransome or accept the liberty promised him. but if the conditions were loyall to the Crowne, and to his person no dis-worship. Lastly by the mediation of David Bishop of S. Davids, the third brother; and of Fitz Gerald, and at the instance of Mac Murrough whom the Prince entertained in that distresse, Fitz Stephens was conditionally delivered, that he and his brother Maurice, should the next spring, while Strongbom provided his army, assist the Irish out-cast. who in confideration thereof affured them an estate for ever in the towne of Weixford, and two Cantreds adjoyning.

Thus much firmely concluded on all fides, the King stale fecretly home, and wintered closely among the Cleargie of Fernes.

According to covenant came Fitz Stephens, with 30. Knights of his blood, 60. Squiers, & 300. footemen Archers, to whom at his landing, Dermot sent in aid his base sonne Duvelnaldus, and five hundred speares. The towne and suburbes of Weixford marched forth against him: But when they faw Souldiours in array, diverfly dighted and weapo. ned, furnished with artillery, barbed horses and harnesse, they retyred to their walles and strengthned them, burning the villages thereabouts; and all the provision they could not carry. The assault lasted 2. dayes, in the 4. certaine Bishops resciant there, tooke up the variance, pacified the Townesmen to their King, and procured the rendring of the Towne. Dera mot having tryed the valiantnes of the Welchmen, immeadiately kept his touch, and gave possession of Weixford with the appurtenances aforesaid, to Fitz Stephens and his brother. After successe of these matters, they leavyed to the number

of IRELAND.

of 2000. Souldiours, and devised to vexe the Lords of Vpper Offery, who had beene to the King of all other most cruell and injurious. Them they compelled to deliver Trewage and Ivveare fealty.

Rodericke the monarch appalled at these newes, reared up all the Kings, in defence of the land, verily supposing that all would to wrecke, were it not prevented. And first they dires cted courteous messages and gifts to Fitz Stephens, moving him to depart the land quietly, and not to molest them without cause. To whom he answered, that much he wondred at the folly of those Princes, who to satisfie their choller had opened such a gappe to their owne prejudice, as though the subjects whom they had schooled, to breake allyance towards the King of Leinster, would not be as ready by this example to learne to withstand the King of Connaght, for his owne part, though hee might with better reason invade strangers, then they could expell their neighbours and their peere, yet would they suffer the King to reenter his right, they should not finde him stiffe, nor untractable, otherwise they should well seele that the Bryttons wanted neither abilitie, nor truth, to maintaine their word.

Rodericke perceived it was no boote to spurne, and therefore bethought himselse of composition upon agreement,

they resolved thus.

Conditions of

Inprimis, that Mac Murrough swearing asresh his obedience to the Monarch, should quietly, repossesse the parts of Leinster, which Rodericke with-held by suspensation.

Secondly, that for ensurance thereof, he should pledge his dearest base sonne Cnothurn, to whom Rodericke promised his daughter, if this peace were found effectuall.

Thirdly, that being rested in his kingdome, he should discharge the Welch army, nor should henceforwards call them over in defence.

About this time, Donatus the good King of Ergall, founded the Abbey of Mellysont, which is the eldest that I finde recorded fince the Danes arrivall, except S. Mary Abbey, besides Divelin, erected in an. 948.

The meane while was landed at Weixford, Maurice Fitz Gerald with his provision, ten Knights, thirty Squiers, and an hundred Bowmen, hereupon Dermot and the two Brethren, set their force against Divelin, which being the cheife Citty of his Realme, refused to yeeld, when Divelin and the country about it vvas recover'd, there befell hostility between Rodericke, and Duvenaldus Prince of Limericke, vvhom Dermot his father holpe in field, foyled the enemy, and then withdrevy his obedience from the Monarch. Shamefull was Ro= derickes flight, and Dermot infinuated into the favour of his people, began to recount the confederates of his first missortune, and consulted with the two Captaines for the invafion of Connaght, finding them prest, he wrote over to the Earle Strongbow, renewed their covenants, prayed his helpe. Richard Earle Strongbow (whose auncestors came in with the Conquest, but commonly of the King and his successors disfavoured) having read the letters, he passed to King Henry, besought him either to answere him his rightfull heritage, vyhich other men occupied, or to licence him else vyhere in uncouth lands, to seeke his fortune. The King halfe in derision bad him on in the name of God, even as farre as his feete could beare him. The Earle diffembling to perceive the hollovenes of the king, furnished his Cousin Reymond'le Grose, Reymondle Nephevy to the brethren aforesaid, with ten Knights, and 70. Bovvmen, himselfe ensued with about 200. Knights, and 1000 lusty Welchmen, tryed Souldiours, Thortly they vvanne the Citty of Waterford, and then immediately Mac Murrough accomplished his convention, gave to the Earle in marriage his daughter Eve, with the succession of his Kingdome. When Waterford was gotten, and Leinster pacified, and the Princes of Ossory tamed, and a chosen band ever in garrison, Mac Murrough became so terrible, that none durst encounter him? The Cleargy affembled themselves at Ardmagh, and with one accord did protest that for all their sinnes, and especially for the Turkish kinde of Tyrany which they used in buying and lelling, and with vile slaveries oppressing the bodies of the English, (whom their pyrats tooke) their land was like

to be translated to that nation, whose captives they handled so cruelly. To appeale in part, the indignation of God, they decreed, that all English, wheresoever in hold within the realme, should forthwith be loosed, Further, if it pleased God to scourge them, it should be meekely suffered, as farre beneath the debt of their deferts. King Henry, though he was well apayed that the Earle should be from him, yet he liked no deale, his growing in Ireland to such power, as percase in time to come, with his faction in Wales, then living under a Prince of their owne, he might be able to face the Crowne of England. An edict was therefore drawne, whereby all subjects were charged upon their perill, to reverte into England by a day, and a caveat annexed, that upon paine of death, none should presume to passe over without a nevy warrant, nor ship over any wares, money, munition, or victuals into Ireland. Thus had the Irish a breathing space, and would perhaps

have picked greater benefits thereby, had not the Normans

Diveto affaul ted or the Normans.

Hafeolphus the Normans

beene in their top immediately after. Great force they laide to Divelin, but were valiantly repelled, and their Captaine Hasculphus taken prisoner, who being calmely intreated, began to overview himselfe, and to imagine that the Citizens durst not use him extreamely, & once in open audience brake forth his unseasonable courage, in these wordes. Take this

blocke, and swapped off his head. Strongborn perceiving the Kings jealoufly not yet allayed, having wel-nigh spent his army in defence of diverse good townes, impugned by Rodericke and the Irish, left sufficient warde till his returne; and met the King at Gloucester. To whom he writeth, declaring the envy that lurked in his preferment, yeelded the tittle of all his winnings, craved good countenance with his grace, contented himselfe with any portion whatloever his Majesty should relinquish: a finall. quietnesse driven betweene them, Dublin with th'appurtenances, and all port townes of Leinster, & all fortresses

(quoth he) but for hansell, the game is to come: which heard

they delayed him no longer, but pusht him downe on a

releved to the King. The Earle should enjoy with good leave what soever he had gotten beside. This yeare dyed Mac Murrow, and the Abbey de castro Dei was founded Miller election nobmeds blues

Soone after the King with five hundred Knights with atchers and horsemen many more tooke shore at Waterford, Regnisti 17. and was flich a terrour to the Irish, that incontinently all Mouniter submitted themselves to his peace. There the men of Wexford to feede the furmiles of Henry conceived against the gentlemen, betrayed their Lord Fitz Stephen, and him delivered to the King. The King to gratifie them, for a while tremely chained and hampered the prisoner quarrelling with him, notwithstanding the inhibition he had proceeded in atchieving the conquest of Ireland, but shortly hee enlarged him, and ratified the grants of Wexford above-mentioned.

These Princes of the South sware fidelity and tribute to Henry. Dermot Cartye King of Corke, Donald Obrene king of Limericke, Donald and Omalaghlien, puissant Lords of Offory, and in briefe, all the states of Mounster, from thence hee journeyed to Dublin, where in like manner all the Captaines of Leinster, and Ororicke king of Meth, and Rodericke Oconor, king of Connaght, and of all Ireland for himselfe, and the whole Hand, humbly recognized his foveraignety: finally, no man there was of name in the land (except them of Vlster) but they to him bowed and iware obeylance. All which he feasted royally with a dinner of Cranes flesh, a fowle till then utterly abhorred of the Irith.

Merlin had prophesied, that five should meete, and the Merlines Profixt should scourge them. This fixt they now construed phecy. to be Henry, in whom the five pettie Kingdomes were united. Of the same conquest prophesied their soure notable Saints , Patricke , Brachon , colme , and Mo- Irish Prophets. Fab. part 7. ling.

The King not unmindfull of his charge, enjoyned by the Popes Adrian and Alexander, entred into a reformation

03

reserved

of IRELAND.

63

mation of the Church: and mooved the famous Bishop 13. Angle Hill. of Lismore, Saint Christian, their Legate, to call a System of Call node at Cashell. wherein they defined Fishe Arricles

1. First, that their people should abandon unlawfull contracts of their cousins and allyes, and observe the Canons of Matrimonie.

2. That their Infants should be primestened of the Priests hand at the Church dore, and then baptized in the font of their mother Church.

3. That all faithfull duely pay their Tithes.

4. That holy Church be for ever quit of those cursed exactions of diet and harborow whereunto they had beene accustomably strayned foure seasons in the yeare, and else against right.

5. That the fine levyed for manslaughter, be not borne by the Clearkes, and kinsmen to the malefactour, but if he were

accessary or faulty to the deed doing.

6. That the sicke doe his Testament to be made or read in the presence of credible persons.

7. That the funerals of the dead be devoutly and solemn.

ly kept.

8. That forasmuch as GOD hath universally delivered them into the government of the English, they should in all points, rights, and ceremonies, accord with the Church

of England. To these things Gelasius Primate of Ardmagh, because he was old and impotent gave his consent at Divelin in the presence of the King, he died two yeares after, so aged, that his sustenance was the milke of a white Cow, which he carried with him wherefoever he travelled. This yeere the Abbey

de fonte vivo was founded.

While all went well in Ireland, newes came that Henry the sonne (whom his father had for good purpose crowned King of England) was missedde to intrude upon the actuall possession of the Crowne in his fathers life-time, which stirre to appeale; the Kingdeft the custody of Ireland with Hugh de Lacy, to whom he gave Meth in fee, with Fitz Stephens, Stephens, Fitz Gerald, and Philip de Bruise, and diverse others, King Henry and sayled into England.

In absence of King Fenry, Ororick King of Meth, surnamed Monoculus, required conference and parley with Hugh de Lacy, in which communication the King had trayteroufly murdered Lacy, had not Fitz Gerald rescued him. Then stept out an ambushment of the Irish, but Griffin a Gentleman of the bloud royall in Wales, flighted the Kyrneghes, and flevy O, Ororick with rorick.

The English perceived such practices daylie sought and attempted, tooke from the Irish as farre as they durst, all trust of government, senced themselves with garrisons, made Captaines, Keepers and Constables, vvheresoever they vvanne the better. But King Henry was so affrighted with his sonnes rebellion, and grevy into such envye both at home and abroad for the death of Thomas late Archbishop of Canterbury, that he had no will so mind his proceedings in Ireland. Ever his jealousie increased toyvardes the Earle Strongbow, vvhom he supposed easie to bee carryed avvay with any light occasion of tumult. The Earle was a man of Bow, great birth, but not of great port until this good marriage befell him, & knowing himselse neither to be brooked in sight, nontrusted out of sight, kept still one certaine rate in all his doings, bare but lovve saile, sed no quarrells, shunned all suspicious conference applied ylond bad about the language

While they flood thus in a mammaring, and Letters ctime daylie over, hovy faintly the States and Princes of Ireland performed obedience; for except in Leinster, all other parts retayned still their auncient kinde of government , and did onely acknowledge Tribute. It was thought expedient by Henryes Counsellours, to discharge his minde of that care, and feeing there vvas trouble on all fides, and all could not bee intended one yvay, they determined to venture the custody of Ireland to Strong bow, being likely for his owne wealth and affurance, to procure all possible meanes of bridling and annoying the frish many to some an real program and

Strongbow Lord Warden of Ireland.

No sooner was the Farle landed with his Commission Lord Warden of Ireland, but Donald King of Limericke met him at the vantage, and coursed him within the walls of Waterford, whereof hearing the relidue their mates were animated, so that up they start in every corner, tagge and ragge

to expell the English.

It went hardly, then the Earle remembred himselfe of his cousin Lord Reymond, left behinde him in Wales a suitor to Basil his lister, whose marriage nothing stopped but the Earles consent. Now therefore hee writeth lovingly to the Wooer, and upon condition that hee came speedily to succour him, hee yeelded the Lady and all else at pleasure. Reymond in his first entry brake into Divelin, marryed his Wife in compleate Armour, and the very next daye sprang foorth, whipped the Rebells, quieted Leinster.

Pol. Virg. lib. 13 Angl.Hift.

Also the Cleargy having lately perused the Popes Bull, wherein hee entitleth Henry Lord of Ireland, and under straight paynes commaindeth alleagiance unto him, busily repressed the fury of their Countreymen. And forsomuch as immediatly after Christianity planted there, the whole Iland had with one confent given themselves not only into the spirituall, but also into the temporall jurisdiction of the See of Rome, which temporall right the two Bishops Adrian and Alexander had freely derived into King Henry. as by their publique instruments read in their counsell at cashell appeareth, they denounced curse and excommunication to any that would maliciously gainfay or frustrate the same.

When these broyles were rocked asleepe and husht for a time, the familiars of Strongbow greatly fore-thought them of the credit and rule committed to Reymond, whom in cons clusion they procured home againe when he had served their turne at neede. The meane while dyed Strongbow, as some fay, betrayed and wounded, he lyeth buryed in the Body of Christ Church in Divelin, leaving behinde him one onely daughter Isabel, marryed after 14. yeares to VVilliam Earle marshall.

marshall. Closely they concealed Strongbowes death, untill they had compassed from the King another Governour after their towne tooth. For ever they dreaded, that Reymond; being in the Princes reye, and friended in the Court, would catch his oportunity, and wynde himselse (might he get an inkling in time of the Earles death) into the succession of his office, which even then waxed (weet and favoury: Goodgellors of this drift, stopped messens, intercepted letters, hafted on their own course. Basil the wife of Reymond, more dutiful Basil the wife of Reymond le to her husband, then naturall to her brother, continued still in grose. Ireland ficke, but having privy knowledge of those newes, ere the breath was quite out of the Earles body, payned her selse to distribe this whole array. And whereas thee knew well her letters should bee searched, and her owne servants stayed, shee let it be delivered at all a very venture to one of the maryners, and therein draweth a long processe of her affayres and houshold, but in the middle shuffles in a few lines of her meaning, under these tearmes: To all my afflictions is added now lately the tooth-ake, so that except that one master-tooth had fallen (which I sendyou for a token) I weene I were better out of my life. Now was the tooth tipped with golde, and burnished feately like a prefent, which Reymond wift well to bee none of hers ; and therefore quickly imelled the construction, lingred not for Letters Pattents but stept over presently, and made his Reymond Lord packed, and was elected by the Kings Agents there, Irelands Lord Protectour of Ireland will the Kings pleasure were further knowne: During his authority flourished the Geraldines a but shortly after they quayled againe, under the government of VVilliam Fitz Aldelin, with him was joyned in commission the valiant Knight Iohn de Courcy, conquerour, and Earle of Vifter, which hitherto the King had not vitter conque obtained

1176.

That yeare was founded the Abbey of Crockesden, by Bertramus de Verdon.

To establish the conquest of Vister, and other victories of the parts of Ireland before enjoyed , Alexander

22776

the

Flatsbury.

Infra cap.48

the third fent his Cardinall Vivianus, vvho declareth the Title that Henry held of the Pope, the reservation of the Peterpence, the indignation of GOD and holy Church against the rebells who beeing themselves contemners and breakers of Canons Eccletiasticall, yet for maintenance of their unruly stomackes, had found the meanes to make Churches their barnes, bestowing therein both corne and pulse, that the victuallers and purveyors of the Princes campe should not dare to require the sale thereof for perill of sacriledge. Therefore hee licenseth Officers in this behalfe soberly and discreetely to convent such perfons, as made the Church a Sanctuary for their Corne. and in neede to take thereof at reasonable prices.

Little good did Fitz Aldelin, and lesse vvas like to doe, because hee delighted to crosse his Peeres, and vvas of them

stopped in his course of government.

Hugh de Lacye vvas made Protector generall over the Land But Miles Coyan , Philip de Bruife , Fitz Stephens , Power, and diverse other more preferred to severall countreves under him.

This Lacye builded a fort of castles and forts throughout all Leinster and Meth, and the next fixe yeares continually devout gentlemen erected fundry Abbeyes, as the Abbey of Roseglasse, of Donbrothy by Herry a Welchman, one of the speciall conquerours of Ireland, who himself after that, entred into religion in Trinity Priory at Canterbury, The Abbeyes of Geripont, and choro Benedicti, the Abbey de lege Dei, vvith repayring of many Chappels, Chauncells, Bell-houses, High-vvayes, and Bridges. Then dyed Saint Laurence Archbishop of Divelin, to vyhom succeeded John comyn an Englishman, brought up in the Abbey of Everham, Founder of Saint Patrickes in Divelin, which was before that time a Parish Church, & novv by the faid Archbishop endovved with Prebends, Viccars, Clearkes, Chorists, and many notable possessions for their maintenance, whereout from time to time have proceeded Clergy men of greatest learning & reputation in the Diocese. Divers

Mugh Lacve Protectour.

66

Flatsbury. 1178.

1180.

5. Patrickes Chuichin Di velin founded.

Divers contentions were raifed betwixt Christs Church and it, for antiquity, wherein they of S. Patrickes, are (no doubt) inferiour, as shall appeare. They are both written Cathedrall Churches, and both are the Bishops Chapiter, in vyhose election they both ought to convent within the Church of the bleffed Trinity, called Christs Church, which in all records hath the preheminency of place. The party that disturbeth this order of election, forfeiteth by deede to th'Archbishop of Divelin, 200 pounds. This foundation was much enriched Booke of reby King toling and the service of the beat have a word and and

The same yeare died the yong King Henry, reconciled to his father, but preparing warre against his brother Richard Duke of Aquitain: soon after also deceased leffry his other son, Duke of Brittaine. Thus were left Richard, his inheritour, and John afterwards Earle of Glocester, heretofore surnamed without land, to whom the father conveyed all his interest and Lordthip of Ireland, sens him thither honourably accompanied, being then but twelue yeares old, and with him in speciall trust, Giraldus Cambrensis Clerke, a diligent searcher of the an. Girald. Camb. tiquities of Ireland, furely well learned, and in those dayes counted Eloquent de visit de comme de 201 han

About the young Earle were fervants and counsellours, loh.Lord of three sorts, first Normans, great quaffers, lourdens, proud, belly (waines, fed with extortion and bribery; to whom hee most relyed secondly, the English brought with him, meetly bold: Thirdly, the English found in the land, whom being best worthward most forward in all good services, hee least regarded, hereof sprang parties and disdaine, and to the knights that hardiest were and readiest of courage no small

discomfort, to the enemies a spurre.

With the brute of his arrivall at Waterford, the Kings of Thomond, Defmond and Connaght, put themselves in the bravest manner they could, to meete him and to submit their countries to his Grace, before them came the Irish Franklyns with rich presents, (and as they are very kind hearted where they lift to shew obedience,) made unto the Childe, their Lord, the most joy and gladnesse that might be, and though

rude-

rudely, yet lovingly, and after the custome of their country, offred to kiffe him, with fuch familiarity as they used towards their Princes at home . Two of the Guard, Normans, pickthankes, shooke and tare the Clownes by the glibs & beards unmannerly, and churlifhly thrust them out of the presence, whom they should have instructed curreously, & born with. The Irish thus rejected, went against the fore-named Kings, opened the rebukes and villanyes done to them, for their meekenes, that their Lord whom they thought to honour, was but a Boy, peevish and insolent, governed by a sort of flatterers, younglings and prowders : That fithence to them that buxome were and tractable, such despite and dishonour (that terme they have borrowed of the Spaniards) was proffered so soone, little good should the states of Ireland looke for in continuance, when the English had once yoked and penned them in their clouches.

This report lightly alienated the mindes of those Princes, not yet very resolute, and turned them home with great oathes and leagues, entred among themselves, caused also the mightiest Captaines elsewhere to sticke together, while their lives lasted, and for no manner earthly thing to slacke the defence of their auncient liberties.

Immediately walked abroad mutinyes of broyle & commotion, so that the young Earle and his army, were content to commit the tryall thereofito Lacy, Bruife, Courcy, Fitz Ge= raid, and the rest, himselfe departing away the same yeare he came, and leaving the Realme a great deale worse bestedde then he found it. ปลา อิกษาสติสติสติส

From the Conquest hitherto Giraldus Cambrensis, and from hence to the yeare 1370. I am specially holpen by certaine briefe extracts, whose author is namelesse, and therefore I quote him by the name of Philip Flatsbury who wrote them, and enriched them with collections of his owne, for Gedifferent, sent and enriched them with collections of his owne, for Geme, the one by rald the father of the Earle of Kildare then being. An. 1517.

Lacy the rather for these whisperings, did erect and edifie a number of Castles, well and substantially, provided in convenient places, one at Derwath, where diverle Irish prayed to

be set on worke, for hyre . Sundry times came Lacy to quicken his labourers, full glad to see them fall in ure with any such exercise, wherein, might they once be grounded & taste the ivverenelle of a true mans life, he thought it no small token of reformation to be hoped, for which cause he visited them often, and merrily would command his Gentlemen to give the labourers example in taking paines, to take their instruments in hand, and to worke a season, the poore soules looking on and refting. But this game ended Tragically, while each man was bufie to try his cunning: some lading, some plaistering, some heaving, some carving; the Generall also himselfe, digging with a pykeaxe, a desperate villaine of them, he whose toole the Generall used, espying both his hands occupied and his body, with all force inclining to the blow, watched his stoope, and clove his head with an axe, Lacy murdelittle esteeming the torments that ensued. This Lacy was conquerour of Meth, his body the two Archbishops, John of Divelin and Mathew of Cashell, buryed in the monastery of Monat debeof Becktye, his head in S. Thomas abbey at Divelin. The next yeare, was builded the abbey of Ines in Vister, and soone after, the abbeyes of Iugo Dei, and of Comer, and then the abbey of Knockmoy, or de Colle victoriae, by Cathel Cronderg King of Connaght.

1189.

1187.

7198, 1390.

CAP. II.

The Titles of the Crowne of England to every part of Freland, and to the whole diverse wayes.



Will begin with the pedigree of VVilliam Earle marshall, for thereupon depend many recordes in Ireland, and the Queenes right to Leinster.

VV alter Fitz Richard, who came from Norman-

dy, with VVilliam Conquerour, died Lord Strongbow of Strigule alias Chepstow without issue, to whom succeeded his sisters sonne Gilbert, who was created the first Earle of Pembroke,

In these notes I used the con. ference of 3. coppies, much Trimlestone. another from M Agard, the third from M. Stanyhurft.

Pembroke, & had issue Richard the inheritour of Leinster, by a covenant & marriage of Eva the sole daughter of Mac Murrough King of Leinster. This Richard conveyed to Henry the fecond all his title, and held of him the Lordship of Leinster in foure counties, Weixford, Catherlagh, Offory, and Kildare. Richard left issue, a daughter Isabel, married to VVilliam Earle marshall of England, now Earle of Pembroke, Lord Strongbow, and Lord of Leinster . VVilliam had issue five sonnes, who died without iffue, when every of them, except the youngest, had successively possessed their fathers lands, and five daughters, Maude, loane, Ifabel, Sibil, and Eve, among whom the patrimony was parted in an. 31. H. 3. Of thele daughters bestowed in marriage, are descended many noble houses, as the Mortimers, Brusses, Clares, &c. borne subjects to the Crowne of England, paying ever to the King his dutyes reserved.

Title to Meth.

Hugh de Lacy Conquerour of Meth, had issue VValter de Lacy, who held the same of King John, paying a fine of foure thousand marks sterling, and hence beganne all the severall claimes there at this day, with allegiance sworne and done by their auncestours.

Title to Moun-

At the very first arrivall of Henry the second, the Princes of Mounster came universally, and did homage voluntarily, and acknowledged to him and his heires, duties and payes for ever.

Title to Viller,

Iohn de Courcy Conquerour and Earle of Vlfter, dyed with-& Connaght. out issue, King John Lord of Ireland, gave the Earledome to Hugh de Lacy, who had issue, Walter and Hugh, dead without issue, and one daughter married to Reymond Burke Conquerour and Lord of Connaght.

Burke Earle of Connaght.

Connaght descended to diverse heires, owing service to the Prince, but VIster is returned by devolution to the speciall inheritance and revenues of the Crowne of England, in this manner The said De Burgo, had issue Richard, who had issue lohn, who had issue VVilliam, who was slaine without issue, and a Daughter Elizabeth intytled to thirty thousand marks yearely, by the Earledome of Vister, whom Edward Pembroke, the

the 3. gave in marriage to Leonel his second sonne, Duke of Clarence, who had issue a daughter Philippe, marryed to Edmund Mortymer, who had iffue Edmund, Anne, Elinor. Edmund and Eliner died without iffue, Ame was matried to Richard, Earle of Cambridge, sonne to Edmund of Laugley Duke of Yorke, fift sonne to Edward the third, which said Richard had iffue Richard Plantagenet, father to Edward the fourth, father to Elizabeth wife to Henry the seventh, and mother to Henry the eight, father to Mary, Edward the fixt, and Elizabeth.

Severall claimes to the Land of Ireland.

1. First that the Irish (for of the rest there is no question) were subjects to the the Crowne of Brittaine, before they set foote in Ireland. Thus it appeareth. They dwelt on that side of Spaine, whereof Bayon was then cheife imperiall Citie, and the same then in possession and obedience to Gurguntius 376. yeares ere Christ was borne, as it was to his succesfours many a day after, namely to Henry, the which as I finde noted in certaine precepts of governement, dedicated by Iames Young, to lames Butler Eatle of Ormond, then Lieutenant of Ireland.an.1416.

From this coast and Citty, now part of Gascoigne came the fleete of those Iberians, who in 60. ships met Gurguntius on the sea, returning from the conquest of Denmarke, to whom they yeelded oath and service, sued for dwelling, were by him conducted and planted in Ireland, and became his leige people.

lating the origin to the constant, who make the private 2. Mac Gil-murrow King of Ireland, with all his petty Princes, Londes, and Captaines, summoned to King Arthurs court held in Carlion, an. 519. did accordingly their homage, and attended all the while his great feast and assembly lasted.

3. The Monarch of Ireland and all other, both reges and reguli for them and for theirs for ever, betooke themselves to Henry the second in an. Dom. 1172 namely those of the south; whiles he lay at Waterford, Dermot King of Corke, which is the nation of Mac Cartyes, at Cashell, Donald King of Lim-ALL ELL

ricke,

of IRELAND.

73...

ricke, which is the nation of the Obrenes, Donald King of Offory, Mac Shaghlen King of Ophaly, at Divelin did the like. Okeruell King of Vriell, Ororicke king of Meth, Rodericke King of all Ireland, and of Connaght. This did they with consents and shoutes of their people is and king Henry returned without any Battle given. Onely VIster remained which Iohn de Courcy loone after conquered, and Oneale Captaine of all the Irish there came to Dublin to Richard the 2 in an 1399. And freely bound himselfe by oath and great summes of money to be true to the crowne of England.

4. The lame time Obrene of Thomond, Oconor of Connaght, Arthur Mac Murrow of Leinster, and all the Irish Lords which had beene somewhat disordered, renewed their obe-

5. When Ireland first received Christendome they gave themselves into the jurisdiction both spirituall & temporall; of the See of Rome. The temporall Lordship, Pope Adrian conferred upon Henry the second, and hee gave the same to John his younger sonne, afterwards King of England, and so it returned home to the Crowne.

6. Alexander the 3. confirmed the gift of Adrian as in both their Charters is expressed at large.

7. Viroian the legate on the Popes behalfe doth accurse and excommunicate all those that flitte from the obeylance of the Kings of England.

8. The cleargy twice affembled once at Cashell, secondly at Ardmagh, plainely determined the conquest to be lawfull. and threatned all people, under paine of Gods, and holy Churches indignation, to accept the English kings for their Lords from time to time.

9. It would aske a volume to recite the names of fuch Irish Princes, who fince the conquest have continually upon occasions, revolts or petitions, sworne truth and faith to the kings of England, from time to time, received honours, wages, fees, pardons, and petitions. And thus I thinke no reasonable man will doubt of a right to old, to continued, to ratified, to many wayes confelled. at the first of the way of the light of the wayer.

CAP. IIL

and the two soundary is appeared to the transport their man

d Landar Chapand the next vesy.

Richard the first, and King John.

Y occasion of Lacyes milhap, John Courcye, and Hugh de Lacye the younger, with all their assiflants, did streight execution upon the Rebells, and preventing every mischiese ere it fell, stayed

agailthan Undsa

the Realine from uproares. Thus they continued lovingly, and lived in wealth and honour all the dayes of Richard the first, untill the first yeare of King John raigne.

Henry the second had issue male, William, Henry, Richard, leffrey, and Iohn. VVilliam, Henry, and Richard dyed without issue. Ieffrey Earle of Brittaine dyed besorehis father, and lest issue two daughters, and an after-borne son called Arthur, sowe whose title to the Crowne, as being the undoubted lyne of Arthurs. the elder brother, Philip King of France, and certaine Lords Pollhumas. of England and Ireland Routly justified: Him had King John taken prisoner in Normandy, and dispatched, if the same be true, with his owne hands at Roane. Of this barbarous cruelty all mens eares were full, and Courcye either of zeale or partiality, spake bloudy words against it, which meane his undermyners caught, and did not onely heave him out of credite, but also got commission to attach his body, and to fend him into England.

The Earle mistrusted his part, and kept aloofe, till. Hugh de Lacye Lord lustice, vvas saine to levye men in armes, and to invade Vister. Thence hee was often put to flight vohereupon hee proclaymed Courcye Tray- Iohn Courcye. tour, and hyred fundry gentlemen with rewards, to bring him in quicke or dead, so long hee vvooed the matter, that Courcyes ovvne Captaines vvere inveygled to berray their Lord. Therefore upon good Friday, when the Earle did off his armour, and in secret meditations visised religious places bare-footed, they layde for him, tooke

him

T:04.

him as a rebell, and shipped him into England the next way, where he was adjudged to perpetuall prison. Sentleger addeth in his collections that Lacy payd the Traytors their money, and then immediatly hanged them.

This Courcye translated the Church and Prebendaryes of the Trinity in Downe, to an Abbey of black Monks brought thither from Chester, and the same did hallow to S. Patricke. for which alteration of the name of God to his servant, hee deemed himselfe justly punished.

Not long after (as fay the Irish) certaine French knights came to King Johns Court, and one of them asked the combat for tryal of the Dutchy of Normandy. It was not thought expedient to jeopard the title upon one mans lucker, yet the challenge they determined to answere: some friend put them in minde of the Earle imprisoned, a Warriour of noble courage, and in pirch of body like a gyant. King John demaunded Cource whether hee would bee content to fight in his quarrell: Not for thee (faid the Earle) whose person I esteeme not worthy the adventure of my bloud, but for the Crowne and dignity of the Realme, wherein many a good man liveth against thy will. The words were haply raken without dudgen, as proceeding from stomack, and from one counted more plaine then wife.

Courcye therefore being cherished to the field, and refresh. ed with dyet, fed so wonderfully after his hard keeping, that the French Challenger tooke him for a monster, and privily stale into Spaine. Then was the Earle in larged, and crossed the seas toyvardes Ireland, fifteene times, evermore beaten back to the shoare, went thence into France to change the coast, and there dyed: after vyhose decease vvithout heires of his body, the Earledome of Vister vvas entirely bestovved upon Hugh de Lacre for his good ser-

Hugh de Lacy LIECTY Parle of Vifters VICE.

In Ireland remained one of the Courcyes, Lord of Rathenny and Kilbarrock, vyhom as a spye of all their practises, and an informer thereof to the King, Walter and Hugh the sonnes of Hugh had slaine, and great seditions rayled, bearing

bearing themselves after the decease of their father for Governours out of checke. To settle the Realme of Ire- King John enland, King Iohn brought thither a maine Armye, ba- treth Ireland the Geond nished the Lacyes, subdued the remanents, tooke pled-time. Anno ges , punished malefactours , established the execution of English Lawes, coyned money of like value currant sterling in both Realmes. The two Lacyes repentant of their follyes and tyrannies, fled into France, dispoyled of sumptuous apparell, and unknowne, meekely they served in Saint Taurines Abbey, as gardners, untill the Abbot by their countenance and behaviour, beganne to smell their estates, and pressed them so farre, that they detected their offences, and the due desert of much harder chastisement, estsoone beseeching the Abbot to keepe their counsells, who commending their humilities, yet advising them to laye holde upon their Princes favour, if it might behad, laboured the King his familiar and godsip earnestly for their pardons and obtained it.

Each of them were fined, VValter at 4000. and Hugh at 2500 markes, and restored him to the Lordship of Meth, this to the Earledome of Vlster: King John made his Vice-gerent, and returned home, subdued the Welchmen, met with Pandulphus the Legate of Innocentius the third, who came to release him of the sentence wherein he stood excommunicate for his spoyle and extortion of Church goods, to whom being the Popes Atturney, hee made a personall surrender of both his Realmes in way of submission, and after his assoylement, received them againe: some adde that he gave away his Kingdome to the See of Rome, for him and his successours, Polid lib, 15. recognizing, to holde the same of the Popes in fee, paying yearely therefore one thousand markes, and in them three hundred for Ireland. Blundus sayth, Centum pro utroq; auri marchas. Sir Thomas Moore, a man in that calling & office likely to found the matter to the depth, writeth precisely, that neither any such writing the Pope can shew, nor were it effectuall if he could. How farre foorth, and with what limitation a Prince may or may not addict his Realme feodary cation of souler

12600

Fabian.

to another, John Maior a Scottish Chronicler, and a Sorbonist, not unlearned, partly scanneth, who thinketh 200. marks for Ireland a very hard pennyworth. The instrument which our English Chronicle rehearleth, might haply be motioned and drawne, and then dye unratified, although the copy of that record continue: But certaine it is, that his successours never payde it, and thereto assenteth Iohn Bale in his Apology a-

gainst vowes.

1212.

Henry Scorch bill Lord Iuflice.

To lohn Comin Founder of S. Patrickes Church, succeeded Henry Lounders in the Archbishops See of Divelin, who builded the kings Castle there, being Lord Chiefe Iustice of Ireland, him they nicknamed (as the Irish doe commonly give additions to their Governours in respect of some fact or qualitie) Scorch villaine, and Burnebill, because hee required to peruse the writings of his Tenants, colourably pretending to learne the kinde of each mans severall tenure, and burned the same before their faces, causing them either to renew their estates, or to holde at will. In the fourth yeare of King Iohns raigne, was founded the Abbey of Dowske, in the fixt, the Abbey of Wethny in the Countie of Limericke. by Theobald le Butler, Lord of the Carricke, and in the twelfth, Richard Tute builded the Monastery of Granard.

CAP. IIII.

Henry the third, and Edward the first.

izz8.



Free the death of Lownders, Henry the third (informed of the Truth and good service done by the Geraldines ever since their first arryvall in the Countrey) made Morrice Fitz Gerald the sonne of Morrice aforesaid Lord lustice.

Morice Fitz Gerald, Lord Iuflice.

To him sent Edward the Prince, surnamed Longshanke, for assistance and power of men against the Welch Rebells, who leaving Warders in the Castle of Sligaghe, by him lately founded, together with Phelim Oconnor,

and a lusty band of souldiours met the king at Chepstovv, returned victorioully, and by this meanes increased favour, & streightway they two joyning with cormack mac Dermot, Mac Rory, made a noble hosting upon Odonill the Irish enemy that invaded and grieved the Kings subjects of Vlster, when Lacy was once dead.

Odonill being vanquished, the Lord lustice forced pledges and Trowages of Oneale, to keepe the Kings peace, and diverse other exploytes did hee during his time of government, which in particular rehearseth Flatsbury in his notes collected for Gerald Fitz Gerald, Barle of Kildare, Anno 1517.

To him succeeded in office Sir John Fitz Geffrey knight, Geffrey Allan de la Zowche, whom Earle Warren slevy, to Zowch, Stephen de longa spata, who slew Oneale in the streets of Down, and there dyed. Him followed William Den, in whose

time Mac Cartye played the devill in Desmond, and to Den, Richard Capell, who envyed the Geraldines, and was of them taken prisoner, together with Theobald le Butler, and Miles Con gan. The king tooke up the variance , and discharged Den, preferring David Barrye to his roome, who tamed the insolencie of Morrice Fitz Morrice, cousin ger-

mane to Fitz Gerald: upon Barrye came Vfford, upon Ufford, lames Audeley, who dyed of a fall from his horse in Thomand : and then for the time Fitz Morrice governed, till the king sent over Sir leffrey de Ge-

nevill, nevely returned in pilgrimage from the Holy Sepulture : Him called home againe Edward the first, in the fourth years of his raigne, and fent in his stead Ro-

bert Offord the second time, who made his Vice-gerent, Fryar Fulborne, Bishop of Waterford, and resumed his

charge at his next arryvall into Ireland.

At this time the citty of Divelin was miserably wa- Divelin fired. sted with fire, and the Bell-house of Christs Church utterly defaced, which the citizens before they repayred their private harmes jointly came to succor, & collections made to redresse the ruines of that ancient building first begun by the Danes, Records of

Priory and Canons, now Deane and Chapiter.

as I finde in a monument of that foundation, continued by Sitricus, Prince of Divelin, at the motion of Donate, then Bi-Thop, & dedicated to the Bleffed Trinity, finished by Richard Earle Strangbow, Fitz Stephens, and S. Laurence the Archbishop, and his foure successors, John of Evesham, Henry Scorchbill, Lord Iustice, & Lucas, and lastly by Iohn de S. Paul, which worke at the decay by fire, and fince, many devoue citizens of Divelin have beautified.

The same Strongbowes Tombe spoyled by fall of the roofe. Sir Henry Sidney Lord Deputy, restoreth at this present, who hath also given a fightly countenance to the Quire, by doing Cap. Randolfe, cost upon the Earle of Kildares Chappell, over against the which he hath left a monument of Captain Randolfe, late Co. lonell of Vlster, Valiantly dead in that service, lohn Samford Archbishop of Divelin Lord Iustice, VVilliam Vescy Lord Iustice, who pursued Omalayblien king of Meth, that soone after was flaine.

The Souldan of Babylon determined to vexe the Christians cities of the East. Tripolis, Tytus, Berinthus, Sidon, Ptolemais, now parts of Turky, whom to redeeme, & with their helpes to get againe the Holy Land, Edward the first had source yeeres past obtained by licence of Marein the fourth, and by confirmation of Honorius his successor, the vehole tenth of all ecclefiastical revenues in Ireland for 7. yeares, whereafter followed a fifteene of the Temporalty: And the same yeere Iohn Baliol Earle of Galvvay, founded Baliol Colledge in Oxford, made his homage to King Edward for his Kingdome of Scotland, and to the Lord Iustice for his Earledome of Ireland.

Vescey vvas a sterne man, and full of courage, but rashe and impudent of his tongue: he convented before him, John Earle of Kildare, & charged him with riots & wagaryes unseasonable, for that he ranged with his men abroad, & preyed upon privatenemies inordinatly, for malice & grudge, not for advancement of the publique vveale: vvhom the Earle as impatient as the other, answered thus: By your honour and mine,my Lord, & by king Edwards hand, you would if you durst, appeach me in plaine tearmes of selony is for vyhereas

I have the title, and you the fleece of Kildare, I wot well how great an eye fore I am in your fight, who if I could bee haniomely trussed up for a fellon, then might my young Master your sonne, become a Gentleman: Iustice, Gentleman (quotli he)thou proud Earle, the Vescyes were gentlemen, before Kildare was an Earledome, and before the Welch bankrupethy Cousin seathered his Nest in Leinster. But seeing thou darest me,I will furely breake thy heart, and with that word he ealled the Earle a notorious theefe & murderer. Then followed clattering of swords by Souldiours on both parties, untill either fide appealed his owne, and the Lord Luftice leaving his Lieutenant VVilliam Hay, sped over to the King, whom immediately followed the Earle, & as fast as Kescey charged Kildare with fellony, no leffe did Kildare appeach the luflice of high treason, and in tryall thereof he asked the Combate. But when the liftes royall were provided, Veftey was flipt away into France, and so disherited of all his lands in the county of Kildare, which were bestowed upon the Earle of Kildare and his heires for ever. I an in ted no Pollege out E light

The Earle waxed infolent upon this fuccesse, and squared with diverse Nobles English and Irish of the Land, hee took prisoner, Richard Earle of Vister, and him detained untill the Parliament then affembled at kilkenny, commanded his delivery, and forthat unrulinelle, diffeised the Geraldines of the Castle of Sligagh, and of all his lands in Connaght.

WKilliam Doddingfale, Lord lustice, This yere for the defence of Wales, and commodity of Passengers, to and from Ireland, the King did coast upon the life of Anglisey, called the mother of Wales, and builded there the castle de bello marisco, or Bewmarishe. Thomas Fitz Morice Lord lustice.

John WV ogan Lord Iustice pacified the former strife, betweene Vister and Kildare, and all the Geraldines, with their affociats, together with Theobald Lord Butler, gathered strength of men, and met the kings army before Edinburgh, wan the Citty, flew 25. thousand Scots, hampred Iohn Baliol king of the Scots, in such fort, that glad and faine was he to renew his homage.

Bewmarishe.

CAP. V.

9187.

Blundus lib. 2.

1281.

CAP. V.

Edward the second.

1307.

Homas Fitz Morice Lord Iustice.

I will begin this Chapter with the modestie of a good Clerke, Richard Havering who hve yeares by dispensation had received the fruites and revenues of the Bishopricke of Divelin, and long might have done, had he beene so disposed But now feeling in sleep a waight upon his stomacke, heavyer to his weening then any masse of mettall, whereof to be released he vowed in his dreame, all that ever he could make in this world: Suddainely the next morne, religned the cultodium of the Bishopricke, and contented himselfe with other ecclesiastical cures incident to his vocation. The same yeare was the bane of the Templers in Ireland, to whom succeeded the Knights of the Rhodes. This profession began at Ierusalem, by certaine Gentlemen that kept their abode next to the Temple there. who till the Councell of Creetz increased not above the number of nine. But thenceforth in little more then fiftie yeares, being enriched by contribution of all Christian Realmes, every where their houses were erected and endowed bountifully: they grew to 300. Knights of the order and into inferiour brethren innumerable. But with ease and wealth they declined now to such intollerable deformities of life and other superstitious errors, nothing lesse regarding then the purpose of this their foundation, that the generall Councell allembled at Vienna, disanulled the same for ever. And thereupon as in other countries so in Ireland, they confessed the publicke fame of their enormities, and themselves culpable, their persons they yeelded to perpetuall pennance, their lands were given (though with some difficulty) to the Knights of S. Johns hospital at lerusalent, who since then for recovering the Hand of Rhodes from the Saracens, became famous, and multiplied much more honourably then did the Templers.

Tyr.l. ra.c.y.

Capuin hift. Gald.z.

Tom-3 Conc.

chargeth them with treafon artainft the Christians.

Of this latter foundation was the priory of S. lohns at Kilmaynam besides Divelin.

Iohn Decer Major of Divelin builded the high Pype there, Iohn Decer. and the Bridge over the Liffy, toward S. Wolstans, and a chapell of our Lady at the Fryar minors, where he lyeth buried, repaired the Church of the Fryars preachers, and every friday

tabled the Fryars at his owne costs.

In absence of VVogan, S. VVilliam Burche was Lord Warden of Ireland, to whom King Edward recomended Pierce of Pierce of Ga Gavestone the disquieter of all the nobility in England, a companion to the King in vice, bolftered up by the King so peremptorily against the will of his Councell, that whereas the faid Pierce was by them exiled, Edward fent him now into Ireland with much honour and many lewels, assigning him the commodities royall of that Realme, which bred Iome bickering betweene the Earle of Vlster Sir Richard Burke, and Gavestone, who notwithstanding bought the hearts of the Souldiours with his liberality, subdued Obrene, edified fundry Castles, cawswayes, and bridges, but within three yeares he retyred from Flaunders, into England, where the nobles besieged him at Scarborough and smit off his head.

Iohn VV og an Lord Iustice, summoned a Parliament at Kilkenny, where wholesome lawes were ordained, but never executed: There fell the Bishops in argument about their Iurisdictions and in especiall the Archbishop of Divelin forbad the Primate of Ardmagh to lift up his crofyer within the province of Leinster. In ratifying of which priviledge I have seene the coppy of Pope Honorius Bull exemplified among the recordes of S. Patricks Church, shortly after Rowland loyce, then Primate, stale by night in his pontificals from Howth to the priory of Gracedieu, where the Archbishops servants met him, and violently chased him out of all the diocesse. This Archbishop was named Iohn Aleeke, after whose death were elected in scisme & division of sides, two successours, Thorne. burgh Lord Chancellor, and Bignore Treasurer of Ireland. The Chancellor to strengthen his election, hastily went to sea, and perished by shipwracke, the other submitting his

caule

E313.

cause to the processe of law tarryed at home, and sped.

Theobald de Verdon Lord Iustice. Sixe thousand Scots fighting men, under the conduct of Edward Bruise brother to Robert King of Scotland, also the Earle Murray, John Menteith, Iohn Steward, and others landed in the north of Ireland, joyned with the Irish, and conquered VIster, gave the Englishmen three notable overthrowes, crowned the faid Bruise King of Ireland, burned Churches and Abbeyes, with all the people found therein, men, women, and children. Then was Sir Edmund Butler chosen Lord lustice, who combined the Earle of VIster, and the Geraldines in friendship, himselfe with Sir John Mandevill, and preserved the rest of the Realme.

Iohn Huffee.

13X T.

The wordes of Okelly.

In the necke of these troubles, arose soure Princes of Connaght, to impaire and scatter the English force. But then the Burckes and the Berninghams discomfitted and slew the number of eleaven thousand besides Athenry . To Sir Richard Berningham belonged a lusty young swayne, John Hussee, whom his Lord commanded to take a view of the dead care casses about the walles, and bring him word whether Okelly his mortall foe were flaine among them. Huffee passed forth with one man to turne up and peruse the bodies. All this marked Okelly, who lurking in a bush thereby, being of old time well acquainted with the valiantnes & truth of Husse, fore longed to traine him from his Captaine, and presuming "nowupon this opportunity, disclosed himself & said. Hussee, 'thou seest I am at all points armed, and have my Esquire, a 'manly man, belides me, thou art thin and thy page a young-'ling so that if I loved not thee for thine owne sake, I might betray thee for thy Masters. But come and serve me at my 'request, & I promise thee by S. Patrickes staffe, to make thee 'a Lord in Connaght, of more ground, then thy Master hath 'in Ireland. When these wordes waighed him nothing his owne man (a front lubber) began to reprove him, for not relenting to so rich a proffer, assured him with an oath, whereupon hee proffered to gage his soule for performance. Now had Huffee three enemies, and first he turned to his owne knave, and him he flew, next hee raught to Okellyes

Okelber Squire a great rappe under the pit of his sare; Mhich overthrew him. Thirdly he bestirred himselfe so nimbly that etc any helpe could be hoped for, he had also flaine Okelly, and perceiving breath in the Squire, he drawed him up againe, & forced him, upon a truncheon to beare his Lords head into the high towne, which presented to Bermingham, and the circumstances declared, he dubbed Hussee Knight and himadvaunced to many preferments, whose family became afterwards Barons of Galtrime. While the Scots were thus matched, Robert de Bruise King of Scots, tooke shore at Cragfergus, to allift his brother, whose Souldiours committed facriledge and impiety, against Monasteries, Tombes, Altars, Vire gins, robbed Churches of all their plate and ornaments. They of Vister, sent to the Lord Iustice pittifull supplication, for aide in this misery, who delivered them the Kings power and standerd, wherewith under pretence to expell the Scots, they raunged through the country with more grievance and vexation to the subjects, then did the strangers. Le Bruise proceeded and spoyled Cashell, and wheresoever he lighted upon the Butlers lands, those hee burned and destroyed unmercifully. By this time had the Lord Iustice; and Thomas Fitz This is of some John Earle of Kildare, Richard de Clare, and Arnold as Powere, called the firm Baron of Donoile, furnished and armed thirty thousand men date ready to set forward. Then came newes that William de Burgo the Earles brother was taken by the Scots, bwhereof the Irish of Vister imboldened with the presence of the Scotish Army, and with the late discomfiture which Earle Richard Burcke sustained at Coynes, denyed their alleagiance openly, and conspired in the behalfe of Edward le Bruse, whom they proclaimed King, The Lord Iustice had alsembled fuch force against them, under the leading of the Geraldines and Poweres, that each of them was thought sufficient, by himselfe to winne the field. But suddainely the two Captaines, and their adherents squared, so as no good conclusion might be inferred: Roger Mortimer, trusting by their discenti- Mortimer. on to imbeazell a victory, culled out fifteene thousand Souldiours, and met the Scots at Kenles, where he was shamefully foyled.

An-1310.

foyled his men (as folke supposed) willfully forfaking him, and bearing falle hearts. Vp start the Irish of Mounster at thele newes the Ocooles, Obrines, and Omores, and wasted with fire and sword from Arkloe to Leix; with them coped the Lord Iustice and made a great staughter, fourescore of their heads were let upon Divelin Castle."

Edward Bruife raigneth in Vifter.

Donald fonne of Arthur Mac Murrowe.

The meane while Edward Bruife raigned in Vifter, held his courts, pronounced his enemies traytors, abandoned the English blood, exhorted the Irish of Leinster to doe the like, whereupon Donald the some of Arthur Mac Morrow, a flip of the royali family, displayed his banner within two miles of Divelin, but him Traberone tooke prisoner, senthim to the castle of Dublin, whence he escaped, llyding downe from the Turret, by a cord that one Adam Maugle brought him. The

laid Maugle was drawne and hanged.

88870

Roger Mortimer Lord lustice pacified the displeasure betweene Richard Earle of Vlster, and the Nobles that had put the said Earle under surety, misdeeming him of certaine riots comitted against the kings subjects, wherby the Scots caught strength and courage, whose ravening, caused such horrible scarcity in Visters that the Souldiours which in the yeare before abused the Kings authority, to purvey themselves of wanton fare, furfeited with flesh and aquavitæ all the Lent long, prolled and pilled in latiably without neede, and without regard of poore people, whose onely provision they devoured: Those (I say) now living in slavery under Le Bruise, starved for hunger, when they had first experienced many lamentable shifts, as in scratching the dead bodyes out of their graves, in whose skulls they boyled the same flesh, and fed thereof. Mortymer went over to the King indebted to the Citizens of Divelin for his viands, a thousand poundes, whereof he payde not one smulkin, and many a bitter curse carried with him to the sea.

1318:

Famine hor-

VVilliam Archbishop of Cashell Lord Chancellor was left Lord Warden of Ireland, in whole time Bermingham aforefaid being generall of the field, and under him Captains, Tute. Verdon, Tripton, Sutton, Cufacke and Manpas, led forth the Kings

power against Edward Bruise, pitching by Dundalke, the Primate of Ardmagh personally accompanying our souldiours, blessing their enterprise, and assoyling them all, ere ever they began to encounter. In this conflict the Scots were vanquished full & whole, 2000. slaine, & Manpas that pressed into the throng to meet with Bruile, was found in the learch, dead, covering the dead body of Bruise. Thus dissolved the Scottissi Kingdome in Ireland, and Bermingham sending his head to the King, received in recompence the Earledome of Lowth, and to his heires for ever the Barony of Ardee, and Athenry. Alexander Bigmore, Archbishop of Divelin, sued to Pope

John the 21. (so I reckon, omitting the scissmaticke and dame Ioane) for priviledge of an Vniversitie to bee ordained in Di-Vniversity at velin, which tooke effect, and the first three Doctors of Divinity the said Bishop did create, VVilliam Hardit a Fryar preacher, Henry Coggy a Fryar minor, Fryar Edmund Kermerdin, & one Doctor of the Canon law, VVilliam Rodiard Deane of S. Patricks, Chancellour of the said University, who kept their termes & commencements solemnely, neither was the same ever disfranchised, but onely through variety of time discon-

tinued, and now fince the subversion of monasteries, utterly extinct, wherin the Divines were cherished, and open exercise maintained. A motion was made in this last Parliament to erect it againe, contributions layde together, Sir Henry Sidney then Lord Deputy, proffered 20. pound lands, & one hundred pounds in money, others followed after their abilities & devotions, the name devised Master Acworth, Plantolinum of Plantagenet and Bullyne. But while they disputed of a convenient place for it, and of other circumstances, they let fall the

DOMACL

Thomas Fitz John, Earle of Kildare, Lord Iustice, to vvhom succeeded Bermingham Earle of Lourh, and to him Sir Iohn Darcy. At this time lived in the Diocesse of Osforye, the Lady Alice Kettle, vvhom the Bishop ascited to purge Alice Kettle a the fame of inchaunting and Witch-craft objected to soiccresse. her, and to Petronilla, and Basill her complices. They charged her mightily to have carnall conference with a

spirit called Robin Artison, to whom shee sacrifized in the high way nine redde Cockes, and nine Peacockes eyes, Thee swept the streetes of Kilkenny betweene compleere and twilight, raking all the filth towards the doores of her sonne VVilliam Outlawe, murmuring these wordes, To the house of VVilliam my sonne, hye all the wealth of Kilkenny towne. At the first conviction they abjured and accepted pennance, but were very shortly found in relapse, and then Petronilla was burned at Kilkenny, the other twayne could not be had: shee at the houre of her death, accused the said VVilliam as privy to their forceryes, whom the Bishop helde in durance nine weekes, forbidding his keepers to eate or drink with him, or to speake with him more then once in the day, by procurement of Arnold le Power, then Senischall of Kilkenny hee was delivered, & corrupted the Senischall to vexe the Bishop, which he did, thrusting him into prison for three moneths. In ryfling the closet of Alice, they found a wafer of Sacramentall bread, having the devils name stamped thereon, in stead of I e s us, and a pype of oyntment, wherewith Thee greafed a staffe, whereon Thee ambled through thicke and thinne, when and how shee listed. This businesse troubled all the Cleargy of Ireland, the rather for that the Lady was supported by Noblemen: and lastly, conveyed into England, fince which time no man wotteth what became of her.

VI. CAP.

Edward the third, and Richard the second.

13:7.

86

Adam Duffe-

Carcely vvas this businesse ended, but another devil possessed another franticke gentleman of the nation of the O-tooles in Leinster, named Adam Duffe, vvho denyed obstinately the Incarnation of Christ, the Trinity of persons

in unity of the God-head, the resurrection of the flesh. Hee called the Holy Scripture, a fable; the bleffed Virgin, a vyhore, the See Apostolick, erroneous, for vyhich assertions he was burned in Hogging greene besides Divelin.

Roger Outlaw, Prior of S Johns of Ierusalem at Kilmainam, became Lord Iustice. Great variance arising betweene the Geraldines, Butlers, and Berminghams on the one side, and the Powers and Burkes on the other fide, for tearning the Earle of Kildare a Rymer. The Lord Iustice summoned a Pariament to accord them, wherein he himselse was faine to cleare the flaunder of herefie fathered upon him by Richard Ledred, Bishop of Osfory. The Bishoppe had given a declaration against Arnold le Power, convented and convict in his consistory of certaine hereticall opinions; but because the beginning of Powers acculations concerned the Iustices kinsman, and the Bishop was mistrusted to prosecute his ownewrong, and the person of the man, rather then the fault, a day was limited for the justifying of the bill, the party being apprehended and respited thereunto. This dealing, the Bishop (who durst not stirre out of Kilkenny, to prosecute his accusation) reputed partiall; and when by meanes thereof the matter hanged in suspence, hee infamed the said Prior, as an abbettour and savourer of Arnolds heresie. The Prior submitted himselse to the tryall, and three leverall Proclamations were cryed in Court, that any man might lawfully come in and indict, ac dice cleared of cuse or say evidence against the sustice: none came: then pasfed the Councell a decree, commanding to appeare at Divelin, all Bishops, Abbots, Pryors, the Majors of Divelin, Corke, Limericke, Waterford, Droghedah, the Sheriffes, Knights, and Senischalls of every thire. Out of them all they forted fixe Inquisitours, which in secrecie examined the Bishoppes and persons aforesaid one by one, who with universall consent deposed for the Pryor, that to their judgements hee was a zealous and faithfull childe of the Catholique Church. The meane while deceased le Fower prisoner in the Castle, and because he stood unpurged, long he laye unburyed.

Sir lohn Darcye Lord Instice.

The Irish of Leinster made insurrections, so did Magoghigan in Meth, and Obrien in Mounster, whom VVilliam Earle

of IRELAND.

80

Bermingham hanged.

of Vister, and Iames of Ormond vanquished. In which sturre, VVilliam Bermingham, a warriour incomparable, was found halting, and was condemned to dye by Roger Outlawe. Pryor of Kilmainam, then Lieutenant to the Lord Iuslice, and so hanged was hee, a Knight among thousands odde and fingular. So outragious were the Leinster Irish that in one Church they burned 80. innocent foules, asking no more but the life of their Priest then at Masse, whom they notwithstanding sticked with their savelins, spurned the bleffed Sacrament, and wasted all with fire, neither forced they the Popes interdiction, nor any censures ecclesiasticall denounced against them: But maliciously persevered in that fury, till the Citizens of Weixford tamed them, flevy foure hundred in one skirmish, the rest flying, vvere all drenched in the vyater of Slane.

13350

Thomas Burgh Treasurer and Lieutenant of Ireland, vvhile Darcy Lord Instice pursued the murtherers of VVilliam Bourk Earle of Vlster, a young gentleman of twenty yeares olde, vvhom the seditions of Maundevill murdered besides Cragfergus. And when hee had scourged those Traytours, he entred Scotland with an army and might have possessed the llands befides, had they bene worth the keeping, into which Ilands besides him and Suffex the late Lieutenant of Ireland no Governour ever yet adventured.

Darcye and Saffex.

1337.

25 330

Sir Iohn Carleton Lord Iustice, with whom came his brother Thomas Bishop of Hereford, Lord Chauncellor, and Iohn Rice Treasurer, and two hundred Welchmen souldiours. The Bishop became Lord Iustice, in vyhose time all the Irish of Ireland vvere at defiance with the English, but were shortly calmed by the Earles of Kildare and Defmond.

1340.

Sir Iohn Darcy by the Kings Letters Patents Lord Iustice of Ireland during life, in the fourteenth yeare of Edward the third, which king abused by some corrupt informers, called in under his fignet royall, fraunchises, and liberties, and graunts vvhatsoever his predecessours had ratified to the Realme of Ireland, and to every person thereof. This revocation vvas taken very displeasantly.

The

The English of birth, and the English of bloud falling to The first no. words, and divided in factions about it. The Irish laye on of the Enwayting for the contention, so as the Realme was even upon land. point to give over all and rebell. For remedy the Iustice began a Parliament at Divelin, whereto the nobles refused to make apparance, & affembled themselves quietly without disturbance at Kilkenny, where they with the Commons agreed upon certaine questions to be demaunded of the King by way of supplication, by which questions they partly signified their griefes: Those in effect were,

1. How a Realme of warre might be governed by one, both unskilfull and unable in all warlike service.

How an officer under the king that entred very poore, might in one yeare grow to more excellive wealth, then men of great patrimony in many yeares.

3. How it happened feeing they all were called Lords of their owne, that the Lord of them all was not a penny the ri-

cher for them.

The Prince of this repining was Morice Earle of Delmond, whom Ufford the now Lord Iustice in paine of forfeiture of all his lands commaunded to the Parliament at Dublin, and there put him under arrest, delivered him by main prise of the tvvo Earles Vifter & Ormond, & of 28. knights & Squiers: All vvhich, except the Earles & tyvo knights, lost their inheritace by rigour of the said V fford, because Desmond had escaped.

Therefore at the decease of the Lord lustice, which ensued the next yeare, Bonfires and gavvdes vvere solemnized in all the Land; his Lady was a miserable sort; and led him to extortion and bribery, much he clipped the prerogatives of the Church , and was so hated, that even in the fight of the country, he was robbed without rescue, by Mac Carty, notwithstanding he gathered power, and dispersed the rebellions of Vister. Jacob Cand fuch High L

Robert Darcy Lord Iustice, chosen by the Councell, untill the Kings charter came to Sir John Fitz Morrice, vvho inlarged Fitz Thomas Earle of Kildare, left in holde by Offord, Fitz Morrice was deposed, and Sir VValter Bermingham

8345.

14465

elected, who procured safe conduct for Desmond to pleade his right before the King, where he was liberally intreated & allowed towards his expences there twenty shillings a day at the Princes charge, in confideration of which curtefie to his kinsman, the Earle of Kildare, accompanyed with diverse Lords, Knights, and chosen horsemen, served the King at Callice, a towne thought impregnable, and returned after the winning thereof in great pompe and jollity.

Bar. Carew.

90

Iohn Archer of Kilmainarn, Lieutenant to the Lord Iustice. to whom succeeded Baron carew, after carew followed Sir Thomas Roke/by knight.

Sherman Major of Divelin.

This yeare dyed Kemvricke Shereman, sometimes Major of Divelin, a Benefactour to every Church and religious house twenty miles round about the citty: his legacies to poore and others, besides the liberality shewed in his life time, amounted to 2000.marks: with fuch plenty were our fathers bleffed, that cheerefully gave of their true winnings to needfull purposes, whereas our time that gaineth excessively, and whineth at every farthing to be spent on the poore, is yet oppressed with scarcity and beggery.

Sir Robert Savage

The same time develled in VIster Sir Robert Savage, a vvealthie Knight, vvho the rather to preserve his ovvne. beganne to vvall & fortifie his Mannour houses, vvith castles and pyles against the Irish enemy, exhorting his heire Sir Henry Savage, to intend that Worke to beneficiall for himselfe and his posterity. Father (quoth he) I remember the Proverbe, better a Castle of bones, then of stones, vvhere strength and courage of valiant men are to helpe us. Never will I, by the grace of God, cumber my selfe with dead walls, my fort shall be where soever young blouds be stirring, and where I finde roome to fight. The father in a fume let lye the building , and for vore it. But yet the vvant thereof, and fuch like, hath beene the decaye aswell of the Savages, as of all the Englishe Gentlemen in Vlster, as the lacke of vvalled townes is also the principal occasion of the rudenesse and wilder nesse in other partes of Ireland. This Savage having prepared

pared an army against the Irish, allowed to every Souldiour before he buckled with the enemy, a mighty draught of Aquavitæ, Wine, or old Ale, and killed in provision for their returne, beeffes, venison, and foule great plenty, which diverse of his Captains misliked, & considering the successe of warre to be uncertaine, esteemed it better pollicy to poyson the cates or to doe them away, then to cherish a sort of Catives with princely foode: If ought should happen to themselves in this adventure of so few, against so many. Hereat smyled the Gentleman and said: Tush yee are too sull of envy, this world is but an Inne whereunto you have no speciall interest, but are onely tennants at the will of the Lord. If it please him to commaund us from it, as it were from our lodging, & to set other good fellowes in our roomes, what hurt shall it be for us to leave them some meate for their suppers, let them hardly winne it, and weare it, If they enter our dwellings, good manners would no lesse but to welcome them, with such fare as the country breedeth, and with all my heart much good may it doe them: Notwithstanding I presume so farre upon your noble courage, that verily my minde giveth me, that wee shall returne at night, and banquet our selves with our ownestore, and so they did, having slaine 3000. Irishmen.

of IRELAND.

Morrice Fitz Thomas Earle of Desmond, Lord Iustice during life, whom followed Sir Thomas Rokesbye a knight, fincere and upright of conscience, who being controlled for suffering himselfe to be served in wooden Cuppes; Answered, these homely Cuppes and dishes pay truely for that they containe, I had rather drinke out of wood, and pay gold and filver, then drinke out of gold, and make wooden payment.

Almericus de Sancto Amando, lames Butler Earle of Ormond, and Morrice Fitz Thomas Earle of Kildare, Iustices of Ireland by turnes. To this last, the Kings letters appointed in yearely fee, for his office 500. pounds, with promise that the said governour should finde twenty great horse to the field, and should bee the twentieth man in going out against the enemy, which allowance and conditions at these dayes, I thinke were ordinary. Leonell

1357. 1159.

1361. Leonell Duke of Clarence.

1357.

1369 4377-

Recordes of th'exchequer

tought up by M. John Tho

mas remem-

Records of

excheq.an.9

1385.

branest. John Stow.

Riches

Leonell the third some of Edward the third Duke of Clas rence, and in the right of his wife, Earle of Vlster, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. He published an inhibition to all of Irish birth, that none of them should approach his army, not be imployed in service of the warres. Obrene he vanquished suddainely, but no man wift how, an hundred of his principall-Souldiours in garrison were missed, whose dispatch, that seditious decree was thought to have procured, wherefore hee advited himfelfe and united the people, shewing alike fatherly care towards them all, and ever after prospered, Knights he created these Gentlemen, the worthiest then in Chivalry, and at this day continuing in great worship, Preston, now the house of Gormanstowne, Holywood, Talbot, Cusacke, Delabide, Patricke, Robert and John de Fraxinis. The exchequer he removed to Catherlagh, and bestowed in furnishing that towne 500.pounds.

Gerald Fitz Morice Earle of Delmond, Lord Iustice, untill the comming of VVilliam de VVindsore, Lieutenant to the King, then in the last yeare of Edward the third ruling the realme, under the name of Lord Governour, and keeper of Ireland.

At the yeare 1370, all the Notes written by Flarsbury doe end and from hence to this day, nothing is extant orderly gathered, the rest 1 have collected out of fundry monuments, authorityes, and pamphlets.

During the raigne of Richard the second, Lieutenants and Iustices of Ireland, are specially recorded, the two Mortimers, Edmund and Roger Earles of March, Phillip courtney the kings cousin, James Earle of Ormond, and Robert Vere Earle of Ox. ford, Marquelle of Divelin, and Lord Chamberlaine, who was created Duke of Ireland by Parliament, and was credited with the whole Dominion of the Realme by graunt for tearme of life, nothing paying therefore, pallingfall writs, all offices, as Chancellor, Treaturer, Chiefe Iustice, Admirall, his owne Lieutenant, and other inferiour charges under his own Teste.

The meane while King Richard afflicted simpatiently

with the decease of Queene Anne his wife, nor able without many teares to behold his pallaces, and chambers of Estate, which represented unto him the solace past, and doubled his forrow, lought some occasion of businesse and visited Ireland, where diverse Lords and Princes of Vlster renewed their homage, and he placing Roger Mortimer his Lieutenant, returned quietly, but within foure yeares after, informed of the trayterous death of Mortimer, whom he loved entirely, and being wonderfull eager in hastening the revenge thereof upon the Irish, he journeyed thither the second time, levied infinite subsidies of money, by penall exactions, and with his absence as also with those injuries, fed the hatred and opportunity of conspiratours at home, for Henry Duke of Lancaster, intercepted the Kingdome, whose some with the Duke of Glocesters sonne, King Richard shut up in the Castle of Trim, and then shipped course into England, tooke land at Milford Haven, found his defence so weake and unfure, that to avoide further inconvenience and perill of himselfe and his friends, he condiscended to refigne the Crowne,

CAP. VII.

The house of Lancaster, Henry the fourth, Henry the fift, Henry the fixt.



Lexander Bishop of Meth, Lieutenant of Ireland, 1529.
under Thomas Lancaster the Kings brother, so Recorder of Exch. was also the worshipfull Knight Sir Stephen Scroope, whom for his violence and extortion be-

fore used, in the same office under King Richard, the common voyce and out-cry of poore people damned. This report hea- lames Young ring the Lady his wife, the would in no wife affent to live in government his company there, but if he sware a solemne oath on the ormand cap. Bible, that wittingly he should wrong no Christian creature in the land, that duely and truely he should see payment made for all expences, and hereof, the faid, the had made a vow to Christ so deliberately, that unlesse it were on his part firmely promised

1394

promised, she could not without perill of her soule goe with him:her husband affented, and accomplished her boone effectually, recovered a good opinion, schooled his Caters, enriched the country, continued a plentifull house, remissions of great fines, remedyes for persons endamaged to the Prince. pardons of lands and lives he granted so charitably and difcreetely, that his name was never uttered among them, with. out many bleffings and prayers, and so cheerefully they ferved him against the Irish, that in one day he spoyled Arthur Mac Murrough, brent his country, restored O-Carrol to the towne of Callane, with held by VV alter Burke, slew a multitude of Kerneghes, and quieted Leinster. Not long before, the Major of Divelin lohn Drake, with his band out of the Citty, had flaine of the same Irish Outlawes 400.

In this Kings raigne the inhabitants of the county & towne of Corke, being tyred with perpetuall oppressions of their Records of Christ-Church Irish borderers, complained themselves in a generall writing, directed to the Lord of Rutheland and Corke, the Kings Deputy, and to the Councell of the Realme, then affembled at Divelin, which Letter because it openeth the decay of those partes, and the state of the Realme in times past, I have thought good to enter here as it was delivered me, by Francis Agard Esquire, one of her Majesties privy Councell in Ire-

land.

A letter from Corke coppied out of an eld Record bearing no date.

1402.

in Divelin.

It may please your wisedomes, to have pittie of us the Kings poore subjects, within the county of Corke, or else we be cast away for ever, for where there was in this countie these Lords by name, besides Knights, Esquiers, Gentlemen, and Yeoman, to a great number, that might dispend yearelie 800 pounds, 600 pounds, 400 pounds, 200 pounds, 100. pounds, 100. markes, 20. pounds, 20. markes, 10. pounds, some more, some lesse, to a great number, besides these Lords fol-

First the Lord Marquelle Caro his yearely revenues was, besides Dorzey Hauen and other Creekes, 2200. pounds sterling. for the house and head head a literal

The Lord Barnevale of Bearehaven, his yearely revenues

was, beside Bearehaven and other Creekes, 1600 pounds sterling.

The Lord Vegan of the great Castle, his yearely revenues was, befides havens and creekes, 1200. pounds sterling.

The Lord Bulram of Emforte, his yearely revenues was, besides havens and creekes, 1 3 00. pounds sterling.

The Lord Courcy of Kilbretton his yearely revenues, be-

sides havens and creekes, 1500. pounds sterling.

The Lord Mandevil of Barrenstelly his yearely revenues, besides havens and creekes, 1200. pounds sterling.

The Lord Arundell of the strand his yearely revenues, besides havens and creekes, 1500 pounds sterling.

The Lord Baron of the Guard his yearely revenues, be-

fides havens and creekes, 1100. pounds sterling.

The Lord Sleynie of Baltimore his yearely revenue, befides havens and creekes, 800 pounds sterling.

The Lord Roche of Poole castle his yearely revenue, be-

fides havens and creekes, 1000 pounds sterling.

The Kings Majesty hath the Lands of the late young Barz ry by forfeiture, the yearely revenue whereof, besides two rivers and creekes, and all other casualties is, 1800. pounds

sterling.

And at the end of this Parliament Your Lordship with the Kings most noble Councell may come to Corke, and call before you all these Lords and other Irish men, and binde them in paine of losse of life, lands and goods, that never any of them doe make warre upon another, without licence or comandement of you my Lord Deputy, & the Kings Councell, for the utter destruction of these parts, is that onely cause, and once all the Irish men, and the Kings enemies were driven into a great valley, called Glanehought, betwixt two great mountaines, called Maccorte or the leprous Iland, and their they lived long and many yeares, with their white meat till at the last these English Lords fell at variance among themselves, and then the weakest part tooke certaine Irish men to take his part, and so vanquished his enemy, and thus fell the English Lords at variance among themselves, till the Irifh

Irish men were stronger then they, and drave them away and now have the whole country under them, but that the Lord Roche, the Lord Courcy, and the Lord Barry onely remaine, with the least part of their auncestors possessions, and young Barry is there upon the Kings portion, paying his Grace never a penny Rent . Wherefore we the Kings poore subjects, of the Citty of Corke, Kinfale, and Yowghall, defire your Lordship to send hither two good suffices, to see this matter ordered, and some English Captaines, with twenty English men that may be Captaines over us all, and we will rife with them to redresse these enormities, all at our owne costs. And if you doe not, we be all cast away, and then farewell Mounster for ever. And if you will not come nor send, we will fend over to our Liege Lord, the King, and complaine on you all. Thus farre the letter.

And at this day the Citty of Corke is fo encumbred with unquiet neighbours of great power, that they are forced to watch their gates continually, to keepe them shur at service times, at meales, from sunne set, to sunne arising; nor suffer any stranger to enter there with his weapon, but to leave the same at a lodge appointed. They walke out for recreation at seasons, with strength of men furnished, they match in wedlocke among themselves, so that welnigh the whole citty is allyed together. It is to be hoped that the late sent over Lord. President of Mounster, Sir John Parrot, who hath chosen the same place to abide in, as having greatest neede of a Governour resident, would ease the inhabitants of this seare, and scourge the Irish Outlawes that annoy the whole region of Mounster.

An, 1408.

Register of Majors.

Henry the 4. in the 10. years of his raigne, gave the Sword to the Citty of Divelin, which Citty was first governed, as appeareth by their auncient seale, called, Signum propositure, by a Provost, and in the 14. yeare of H. the 2. by a Major, & two Bayliffes, which Bayliffes were changed into Sheriffes, by Charter of Edward the 6.an. 1547. This Majorality both for state and charge of that office, and for the bountifull hospitality exceedeth any Citty in England, except London.

While

While Henry the 5 reigned, I finde lieutenants and deputyes Recordes of of Ireland specially remembred, Iohn Talbott of Hollamshire Exch. Lord of Furnyvall. Thomas de Lancaster, Senischa of England, and Stephen le Scroope his Deputy, Iohn Duke of Bedford then also Lord Keeper of England, and the noble Earle of Ormond:

Sir Iames Butler, whose grandire was Iames surnamed the chast, for that of all vices hee most abhorred the sinne of the The chaste flesh, and in subduing of the same gave notable example. In mond. the red Moore of Athye (the fun almost lodged in the West, and miraculously standing still in his spicycle the space of sames Yonge three houres till the feat was accomplished, and no pit in that bogge annoying either horse or man on his part)-he vanquished Omore and his terrible Army with a few of his owne, and with the like number Arthur Mac Murrough, at whose might and puissance, all Leinster trembled. To the imitati- tion of Camon of this mans worthinesse, the compiler of certaine pre-brensse 37. cepts touching the rule of a Common-wealth, exciteth his Lord the said Earle in diverse places of that Worke incidently, eftsoones putting him in minde that the Irish beene false by kinde, that it were expedient, and a worke of Charity to execute upon them (willfull and malicious transgrei- prec of govern fours) the Kings Lawes somewhat sharpely, That O. dempfye being winked at a while, abused that small time of sufferance, to the injury of the Earle of Kildare, intruding unjustly upon the Castle of Ley, from whence the faid Deputy had justly expelled him, and put the Earle in possession thereof, that notwithstanding their oathes and pledges, yet they are no longer true then they feele themselves the vveaker.

This Deputye tamed the Obriens, the Burckes, Macbanons, Ogaghnraghte, Manus Mac Mahowne, all the Captaines of Thomond, and all this in three moneths. The Cleargye of Divelin twice every weeke in folemne procession praying for his good successe against these disordered persons, which nove in every quarter of Ireland, had degenerated to their olde trade

62. 23.

Li-urenants & their deputyes. Records of exchequer.

An ize

An.ze.

An az.

An.26.

Lieutenants to Henry the fixt over the Realme of Ireland were Edmund Earle of Marche, and Iames Earle of Ormond his Deputy, Iohn Sutton Knight, Lord Dudley, and Sir Thomas Strange, his Deputy Sir Thomas Standley, and Sir Christopher Plonket his Deputy Lyon Lord Welles, and the Earle of Ormond his Deputy, Iames Earle of Ormond, the Kings Lieute. nant by himselfe, Iohn Earle of Shrewesbury, and the Archbi-

shop of Divelin, Lord Iustice in his absence.

of life, and repyned at the English.

Richard Duke of Yorke.

Richard Plantaginet, Duke of Yorke, father of Edward the fourth, and Earle of Vlster, had the office of Lieutenant by letters Patents, during the space of ten yeares, who deputed under him at severall times, the Baron of Delvin, Roland Fitz Eustace knight, lames Earle of Ormond, and Thomas Fitz Morrice Earle of Kildare. To this Richard then resciant in Divelin, was borne within the castle there, his second son George, Duke of Clarence, afterwards drowned in a butt of Malmfey: his god fathers at the font were the Earles, of Ormond and Delmond.

Whether the commotion of Iacke Cade an Irish-man borne, naming himselfe Mortimer, and so clayming cousinage To, Ma 1.6 c. 16 to diverse noble houses, proceeded from this crew, it is uncertaine: furely the Duke was thereof vehemently mistrusted & immediatly began his rumults, which because our English histories discourse at large, I omit as impertinent.

> Those broyles being couched for a time, Richard held himselfe in Ireland, being lately by Parliament ordained Protector of the Realme of England, leaving his agent in the Court his brother the Earle of Salisbury Lord Chauncellour, to whom he declared by letters, the trouble then toward in Ireland, which letter exemplified by Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Deputy, a great searcher and preserver of Antiquities, as it came to my hands, I thinke it convenient here to let downe.

3458.

brother, that was well boild of your hands inflaining; that my To the right worshipfull and with all my heart entirely beloved brother, the Earle of Shrewefbury Telephoresias such quite is, which this i pray and extract you good.

Paght worshipfull and with all my heart entirely beloved The Letter. Brother, I commend mee unto you as heartily as I can And like it you to wit; that fith I wrote last unto the King our foveraigne Lord his Highnes, the Irish enemy, that is to fay, Magoghigan, and with him three or foure Irish Captaines, associate with a great fellowship of English rebells, notwithstanding that they were within the King our Soveraigne Lord his power, of great malice, and against all truth, have maligned against their legiance, and vengeably have brent a great towne of mine inheritance, in Meth, called Ramore, and other villages thereabouts, and murdered and brent both men, women and children, without mercy. The which enemies be yet affembled in woods and forts, wayting to doe the hurt and grievance to the Kings subjects that they can thinke or imagine, for which cause I write at this time unto the Kings Highnes, and befeech his good grace for to hasten my payment for this land, according to his letters' of vvarrant, novv late directed unto the Treasurer of England, to the intent I may wage men in sufficient number; for to refult the malice of the same enemyes, and punisher in such vvyse, that other vvhich vvould doe the same, for lacke of resistance in time, may take example; for doubtlesse, but if my payment bee had in all haste for to have men of wvarre in defence land lafe guard of this Land, my povver cannor stretcheto keepe it in the Kings obeylance. And very necessity will compell mee to come into England to live there, upon my poore livelode, for I had lever bee dead, then any inconvenience should fall thereunto in my default; for it shall never bee chronicled, nor remaine in scripture, by the grace of God, that Ireland was lost by my negligence. And therefore I beseech you right vvorshipfull brother,

brother, that you will hold to your hands instantly, that my payment may bee had at this time, in eschuing all inconveniences, for I have example in other places, more pitty it is for to dread fliame, and for to acquite my truth unto the Kings Highnes, as my dutie is. And this I pray and exhort you good brother to thew unto his good grace, and that you willbe fo good, that this language may be enacted at this present Parliament for my excuse in time to come, and that you will bee good to my servant Roger Roe the bearer hereof, and to mine other servants in such things as they shall pursue unto the kings Highnes: And to give full faith and credence unto the report of the faid Roger, touching the faid maters Right worshipfull and with all my heart entirely beloved brother, our bleffed Lord God preferve and keepe you in all honour, prosperous estate and felicity, and graunt you right good life and long. Written at Dixelin the 15. of lune. idition, **vyithout statet**.

- Your faithfull true brother. and another special one or more than Richard Yorke.

Of fuch power was Magoghigan in those dayes, who as he wan and kept it by the fword, so now he liveth but a meane Captaine, yeelding his winnings to the stronger. This is the milery of lawlesse people, resembling the wydenesse of the rude world wherein every man was richer or poorer then other, as he was in might and violence more or leffe enabled. And warre to make the committees

ello la americo libitado di liber

Heere beganne factions of the nobility in Ireland, favouring diverse sides that strived for the Crowne of England, for Richard in those tenne yeares of government a exceedingly tyed unto him the hearts of the noblemen and gentlemen in this land, whereof diverle vvere scattered and slaine with him at Waterford as the contrary part was also the next yeare by Edward Earle of Marche, the Dukes brother, at Mortimers crosse in Wales, in which meane time the Itish vvaxed hardye, and usurped the English Countreyes infufficiently defended; as they had done by like oportunity

in the latter end of Richard the second. These two seasons did let them so a-floate, that henceforwards they could never be cast out from their forcible possessions, holding by plaine wrong all Vister, and by certaine Irish Tenures, no little portions of Mounster and Connaght, left in Meth and Leinster, where the civill subjects of English bloud did ever most prevaile.

CAP. VIII.

Edward the fourth, and Edward his sonne. Richard the third, & Henry the seventh.

Homas Fitz Morice Earle of Kildare, Lord Iustice Ann. D. 1460. untill the third yeare of Edward the fourth, since which time the Duke of Clarence aforesaid, bro-Duke of Clarence

ther to the King, had the office of Lieutenant, nant, and his while he lived, and made his Deputies in fundry courses, Thomas Earle of Desmond, Iohn Tiptost, Earle of Worcester the An. Reg. 1. Kings cozen, Thomas Earle of Kildare, Henry Lord Graye. An 10. Great was the credit of the Geraldines, ever when the house of Yorke prospered, and likewise the Butlers thryved under the bloud of Lancaster, for which cause the Earle of Desmond remained many yeares Deputy to George Duke of Clarence his god-brother, but when he had spoken certaine disdainfull words against the late marryage of King Edward with the Lady Elizabeth Gray, the said Lady being now Queene, caused his trade of life, (after the Irish manner, contrary to sundry old statutes enacted in that behalfe) to be sisted & examined by Iohn Earle of Worcester his successour. Of which treasons he was attaint and condemned, and for the same beheaded at Droghedah. Iames the father of this Thomas of 7 1467. Desmond, being suffered and not controuled, during the leger in his colgovernment of Richard Duke of Yorke his godsip: and of lections. Thomas Earle of Kildare his kinsman put upon the Kings subjects within the Countyes of Waterford, Corke, Kerry,

and

1459.

1460

and Limericke the Irish impositions of Coyne and Lyverie, Carrings, carriages, loadings, cosherings, bonnaght, and such like, which customes are the very nurse and teat of all Irish enormities, and extort from the poore tennants everlasting Sesse, allowance of meate and money, their bodies and goods in service, so that their horses and their Galloglashes lyestill upon the Farmers, eatethem out, begger the Countrey, foster a fort of idle vagabonds, ready to rebell if their Lord commaund them, ever nusseled in stealth and robberyes. These evill presidents given by the Father, the sonne did exercile being Lord Deputy, to whome the reformation of that disorder especially belonged, notwithstanding the same fault being winked at in others, and with such rigour avenged in him, it was manifestly taken for a quarrell lought and picked.

Two yeares after, the said Earle of Worcester lost his head, while Henry the 6. taken out of the towre, was fet up againe, and King Edward proclaymed Vsurper, and then was Kildare enlarged, whom being likewise attainte, they thought also to have ridde, and shortly both the Earles of Kildare and Desmond were restored to their bloud

by Parliament.

Sir Rowland Eustace, Knight, sometimes Treasurer, and Lord Chauncellour, and lastly, Lord Deputye of Ireland, founded Saint Frauncis Abbey besides Kilkullen

bridge.

Edward, a yeare before his death, honoured his yonger fon Richard the infant, Duke of Yorke, with the title of Lieutenant over this Land. But his unnaturall Vnkle Richard the Third, when hee had murdered the childe, and the elder brother called Edward the 5. He then preferred to that Office his ovvne sonne Edward, vvhose Deputy was Gerald Earle of Kildare, and bare that office a vvhile in Henry the 7. his dayes. To whom came the vvylie Priest, Sir Kichard Symonds, & presented a lad his scholler, named Lambert, whom he fained to be the son of George Duke of Clarence, lately escaped the towere of Londo. And the child could his pedegree so readily,

Edw. Y.

1481.

Flatsbury.

14690

Henr. 76

and had learned of the Priest such princely behaviour, that he lightly moved the faid Earle, and many Nobles of Ireland tendering the Seed Royall of Richard Plantagenet, and George his sonne, as also maligning the advancement of the house of Lancaster, in Henry the seventh, either to thinke or make the world weene, they thought verily this childe to bee Edward Earle of Warwicke, the Duke of Clarences lawfull Sonne.

And although King Henry more then halfe marred their sport, in shewing the right Earle through all the streetes of London, yet the Lady Margaret Dutchesse of Burgoine, sister to Edward the fourth, Iohn de la Poole her Nephew, the Lord Lovel, Sir Thomas Broughton Knight, and diverse other Captaines of this conspiracy devised to abuse the colour of this young Earles name, for preferring their purpose, which if it came to good, they agreed to depose Lambert, and to erect the very Earle indeed now prisoner in the towre, for whose quarrell had they pretended to fight, they deemed it likely hee should have beene made away: Wherefore it was blazed in Ireland, that the King to mocke his subjects, had schooled a Boy to take upon him the Earle of Warwickes name, and had shewed him about London to blinde the eyes of simple folkes, and to defeate the lawfull Inheritour of the good Duke of Clarence, their countryman and Protectour during his life, to whose linage they also derived a title of the Crowne. In all haste they assembled at Divelin, and there in Christ-Church they Crowned this Idoll, honouring him with titles imperiall, feasting and triumphing, rearing mighty shoutes and cryes, carrying him from thence, to the Kings Castle upon tall mens shoulders, that he might be seene and noted, as he was surely an honourable Boy to looke upon. Thereupon ensued the Battle of Stoke, wherein Lambert and his Master were taken, but never executed, the Earle of Lincolne, the Lord Lovel, Martine Swarte, the Almaigne Captaine, and Morice Fitz Thomas Captaine of the Irish, were slaine, and all their power discomfitted.

Iasper Duke of Bedford and Earle of Penbroke, Lieutez nant, and VV alter Archbishop of Divelin his Deputy. In this

time befell another like illusion of Ireland, procured from the Dutchesse aforesaid, and certaine Nobles of England. whereby was exalted as rightfull King of England, and undoubted Earle of VIster, the counterfeit Richard Duke of Yorke preserved from King Richards cruelty, as his adherents faced the matter downe, and with this maygame lord, named indeede Peter (in scorne Perkin) VV arbecke, flattered themselves many yeares.

Then was Sir Edward Poynings Knight, sent over Lord Deputy, with commission to apprehend his principall partners in Ireland, amongst whom was named Gerald Fitz Gerald Earle of Kildare, whole purgation the King (notwithstanding diverse avouching the contrary) did accept. After much adoe Perkin taken, confessed under his owne handwriting the course of all his proceedings, whereof so much as concerneth Ireland, I have heere borrowed out of Halles Chronicles.

Perkins confes-

I being borne in Flaunders, in the towne of Turney, put my selfe in service with a Britton, called Pregent Meno, the which brought me with him into Ireland, and when wee were there arrived in the towne of Corke, they of the towne (because I was arrayed with some cloathes of silke of my faid Masters) threeped upon me, that I should be the Duke of Clarences sonne, that was before time at Divelin, and forasmuch as I denyed it, there was brought unto me the Holy Evangelists and the Crosse, by the Major of the towne, called Iohn Lewellin, and there I tooke my oath that I was not the said Dukes sonne, nor none of his blood. After this came to me an English man whose name was Stephen Poytowe, with one Iohn VV alter, and sware to me, that they knew well that I was King Richards Bastard sonne, to whom I and fwered with like oathes that I was not. And then they advised me not to be affraide, but that I should take it upon me boldly: And if I would so doe, they would assist me with all their povver against the King of England, and not onely they. but they were assured that the Earles of Desmond and Kildare, should doe the same, for they passed not what part they

tooke, so they might be avenged upon the King of England. And so against my will they made me to learne English, and taught me what I should doe and say: and after this, they called me Richard Duke of Yorke, second sonne to Edward the fourth, because King Richards Bastard sonne was in the hands of the King of England: And upon this, the faid lobn UV alter, and Stephen Poytowe, John Tyler, Hubbert Burgh, with many others, as the foresaid Earles, entred into this false quarrell, and within short time after the French King sent ambassadours into Ireland, whose names were Lyor, Lucius, and Stez phen Frayn, and thence I went into Fraunce, and from thence into Flanders, and from Flanders againe into Ireland, and from Ireland into Scotland, and so into England.

Thus was Perkins bragge twighted, from a milpost to a pudding pricke, and hanged was he the next yeare after.

Then in the yeare 1501. King Henry made Lieutenant of Ireland, his second sonne Henry as then Duke of Yorke, who afterwards raigned. To him was appointed Deptity, the a- Christ-Church foresaid Gerald Earle of Kildare, who accompanied with Iohn Blacke Major of Divelin, warred upon VVilliam de Burgo, O-Brien, and Mac Nemarra, Occarrol, and the greatest power of Irish men, that had beene seene together since the conquest, under the hill of Knootoe, in English the hill of Axes, fixe miles from Galivay, and two miles from Ballinclate, de Burgoes mannor towne. Mac VVilliam and his Complices were there taken, his Souldiours that escaped the sword were purfued, flying five miles, great flaughter done, and many Captaines gotten, not one English man killed. The Earle at his returne was created knight of the Noble Order, and flourished all his life long, of whom I shall bee occasioned to say somewhat in the next Chapter.

icor.

From nenceforward I hav. foilowed the relation of the wiieft and moft ind He rent persons that I could acquaint inv

felte withall in

Ircland.

Register of Majors.

responding the paid and a respect that the contract of the land of the land And to against any vall New York for the learned to this and leasely me wheel thould doe and lay and after the ducy of hose anno Henry the eight: t do di caso engol bradiad glicol (9 ggi) i sluccedo, decest

Erald Fitz Gerald Earle of Kildare a mighty made man, full of honour and courage, who had been Lord Deputy and Lord Justice of Ireland thirtie foure yeares, deceased the third of September, and lyeth buried in Christs Church in Divelin. Betweene him and James Butler Earle of Ormond, their owne jealousies fed with envy and ambition, kindled with certaine lewd factions, abbettors of either side: ever since the ninth yeare of Henry the se venth, when lanes of Ormand with a great army of Irish men, camping in S. Thomas Court at Divelin, seemed to face the countenance and power of the Deputy: these occasions I say fostered a mallice between them and their posterityes. many yeares after incurable causes of much ruffle and unquietnes in the Realme, until the confusion of the one house. and nonage of the other, discontinued their quarrels, which except their Inheritours have the grace to put up, and to love unfainedly, as Gerald and Thomas doe now, may hap to turne their countryes to little good, and themselves to lesse.

Ormand was nothing inferiour to the other in stomacke, and in reach of pollicy farre beyond him; Kildare was in go. vernement a milde man, to his enemies intractable, to the Irish such a scourge, that rather for despite of him then for sayour of any part, they relyed upon the Butlers, came in under his protection, served at his call, performed by starts, as their manner is, the duty of good subjects. to good subjects.

Ormand was secret and drifty, of much moderation in speech, dangerous of every little wrinkle that touched his reputation. Kildare was open and passionable, in his moode desperate, both of word and deede, of the English welbeloved, a good lusticier, a warriour incomparable, towards the Nobles that he favoured not somewhat headlong and unrulie, being charged before Henry the seventh, for burning the Church Church at Cashell, and many witnesses prepared to avouch against him, the truth of that article, he suddainely confessed the fact, to the great wondering and detestation of the Councell, when it was looked how he would justifie the matter, By lesus (quoth he) I would never have done it, had it not beene told me that the Archbishop was within . And because the Archbishop was one of his busiest accusers there present, merrily laught the King at the plainenesse of the man, to see him alleadge that intent for excuse, which most of all did aggravate his fault. The last article against him they conceived in these tearmes, finally all Ireland cannot rule this Earle: No (quoth the King) then in good faith shall this Earle rule all Ireland. Thus was the accusation turned to a jest, the Earle returned Lord Deputy, shortly after created Knight of the Garter and so died. Marvell not if this successe were a corrolive to the adverse party, which the longer it held aloofe and bit the bridle, the more eagerly it followed his course, having once the sway and roome at will, as you may perceive hereafter.

Gerald Fitz Gerald sonne of the aforesaid Earle of Kildare, Gerald Earle and Lord Deputy, who chased the nation of the Tooles, bate of Kildare. tered Ocarrols Castles, awed all the Irish of the land more & more. A Gentleman valiant and well spoken, yet in his latter time overtaken with vehement suspition of lundry Treasons. He of good meaning to unite the families, matched his Sister Margaret Fitz Gerald, with Pierce Butler Earle of Osfory, whom he also holpe to recover the Earledome of Ormond, whereinto after the decease of Iames, a Bastard brother had intruded.

Seven yeares together Kildare kept in credit and authority, notwithstanding the pushes given against him by secret heavers, enviers of his fortune, and nourishers of the old grudge, who fett him up to the Court of England by commission, and caused him there to be opposed with diverse interrogatories, touching the Earle of Desmond his Cousin, 2 notorious traytor, as they said . He left in his roome Morice Fitz Thomas Lord Iustice. After whom came over Lord Lieutenant,

15214

1523.

Lieutenant, Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey, Grandfather to this Duke of Norfolke, accompanied with 200. of the Kings guarde. While he sate at Dinner in the Castle of Divelin, hee heard newes that Oneale with a mighty army was even in the mouth of the borders, ready to invade: Immediately men were levyed by the Major, and the next morrow joyning them to his band, the Lieutenant marched as farre as the water of Slane, where having intelligence of Oneales recoyle, hee dismissed the footemen, and pursued Omore with his horse. men, which Omore was said to lurke within certaine miles. That espied a Gunner of Omore, and watching by a wood fide discharged his peece at the very face of the Deputy, strake the visard of his helmet, and pierced no further (as God would.) This did he in manner recklesse what became of himselfe, so he might amaze them for a time, breake the swiftnesse of their following, and advantage the flight of his Captaine, which thing he wanne with the price of his owne blood, for the Souldiours would no further, till they had fearched all the corners of that wood, verily suspecting some ambush thereabout, and inseverall knots ferretted out this Gunner, whom Fitz VVilliams and Bedlowe of the Roche were faine to maugle and hewe in peeces; because the wretch would never yeeld.

In the meane while defiance proclaimed with Fraunce & Scotland both at once, moved the King to returne Surrey out of Ireland, that he might employ him in those services, his prowesse, integrity, good nature and course of government, the country much commendeth, and honoureth the name

and family to this day.

Pierce Butler Earle of Offory Lord Deputy, Kildare attending the Kings pleasure for his dispatch, recovered favour at the instance of the Duke of Suffolke whose daughter, Dame Elizabeth Graye he espoused royally, and so departed home. Now there was a great partaker of all the Deputies Councell, one Robert Talbot of Belgard whom the Geraldenes hated deadly, him they furmized to keepe a Kalender of all their doings and to stirre the coales that incensed brother against brother.

brother. In which fury, lames Fitz Gerald meeting the faid Gentleman besides Ballimore, slew him even there; jour- Talbor of Bel neying to keepe his Christmasse with the Deputy. With this gard slaine. despitefull murder both sides brake out into open rage, and especially the Countesse of Osfory, Kildares sister, a rare woman, and able for wisedome to rule a Realme, had not her stomacke over-rul'd her selfe. Heere beganne intimation of new Treatons palling to and fro, with complaints and replyes. But Suffolke had wrought the canvas to fast in his sonne in lawes behalfe, that hee was suffered to rest at home, and onely Commissioners directed thither with Authority to examine the roote of their griefes, wherein if they found Kildare but even tollerably purged, their instructions was to depose the plaintiffe, and to sweare the other Lord Deputy. The Commissioners were, Sir Raphe Egerton, a Cheshire Knight, Anthony Fitzberbert, fecond lustice of the Common pleas, and lames Denton, Deane of Lichfield, who huddeled up those accusations as they thought good, and suddenly tooke the sword from the Earle of Offory, sware the Geraldine Lord Deputy, before whom con Oneale bare the fword that day. Concerning the murtherer whom they might have hanged, they brought him prisoner into England, presented him to Cardinals VVoljey, who was faid to hate Kildares bloud: And the Cardinall intending his execution with more dishonour to the name, caused him to be ledde about London streetes manacled and haltered, which asked so long time, that the Deane of Lichfield stepped to the King, and got the Gentleman his pardon.

This untimely thist inflamed the Cardinall, and ripened the malice hitherto not so ranke, and therefore hereafter Offory brought evident proofes of the Deputies disorder, that hee wilfully winked at the Earle of Desmond, whom hee should have attached by the Kings letters, that he curryed acquaintance and friendship with meere Irish enemyes, that he had armed them against him being the Kings Deputy, that he hanged and herved rashly good subjects, whom hee il is and t

mistrusted

The Counteffe

of Offory,

mistrusted to leave to the Butlers friendship. Yet againe therefore was Kildare commaunded to appeare, which he did, leaving in his roome Fitz Gerald of Leixlip, whom they shortly deprived, and chose the Baron of Delvin, whom O-Connor tooke prisoner, and there the Earle of Osfory to shew his ability of service, brought to Divelin an army of Irish-men, having Captaines over them Oconnor, Omore and O-Carroll, and at S. Mary Abbey, was chosen Deputie by the Kings Councell.

In which office (being himselfe, save onely in feates of Armes, a simple gentleman) he bare out his honour, and the charge of government, very worthily, through the fingular wisedome of his Countesse, a Lady of such port, that all Ea states of the Realme couched unto her, so politique, that no thing was thought substantially debated without her advice. manlike and tall of stature, very rich and bountifull, a bitter enemy, the onely meane at thole dayes whereby her Husbands Countrey was reclaymed from the fluttish and uncleane Irish custome to the English habite, bedding, house keeping, and civility.

But to those vertues was yoked such a selfe-liking, and luch a Majesty above the tenure of a subject, that for ensurance thereof shee sticked not to abuse her husbands honour against her brothers follye. Notwithstanding I learne not that shee practifed his undoing, (vvhich ensured) and vvas to her undoubtedly, great heavinesse, as upon whom both the blemish thereof, and the sustenance of that vvhole family depended after,) but that Thee by indirect meanes verought her Brother out of credite to advance her husband, the common voyce, and the thing it selfe speaks

eth.

All this vvhile abode the Earle of Kildare at the Court, and with much adoe found shift to bee called before the Lords, to answere solemnely. They sate upon him diversely affectioned, and especially the Cardinali, Lord Chauncellour, disliked his cause, comforted his accusers, and enforced the Articles objected, and what else soever could could be gathered thereof in these words.

I wot well, my Lord, that I am not the meetest man at this accuration a Board to charge you with these treasons, because it hath pleafed some of your pew-fellowes to report, that I am a professed enemie to all Nobilitie, and namely to the Geraldines, but feeing every curst boy can say asmuch when he is controlled, and feeing these points are so vveightie, that they should not be diffembled of us, and so apparant, that they cannot be denyed of you . I must have leave, notwithstanding your stale flaunder, to be the mouth of these honorable persons at this time, and to trumpe your Treasons in your way, howsoever you take me.

a matter

First, you remember how the lewde Earle your kinsman, Ticasons layde who passeth not whom he serve, might he change his Master, sent his confederates with letters of credence to Frauncis the French King, and having but cold comfort there, to Charles the Emperour, proffering the helpe of Mounster and Connaght towards the conquest of Ireland, if either of them vvould helpe to vvinne it from our King. Hovv many letters? vvhat precepts? vvhat messages? vvhat threats have been sent you to apprehend him? and yet not done: vvhy fo? forfooth I could not catch him: Nay nay, Earle, for footh you vould not nighly vvatch him. If he be justly suspected, vvhy are you partiall in so great a charge? If not, vvhy are you fearefull to have him tryed? Yea Sir, it vvil be svvorne & deposed to your face, that for feare of meeting him, you have vvinked, vvilfully Thunned his fight, altered your course, vvarned his friends, stopped both eyes and eares against his detectors, and whensoever you tooke upon you to hunt him out, then was hee sure before hand to bee out of your walke: surely this juggling and false-play, little became either an honest man, called to such honour, or a Nobleman put in such trust. Had you lost but a Cove, or a Garron of your ovvne, two hundred Kyrneghes would have come at your whiltle, to rescue the prey from the uttermost edge of Vister: All the Irish in Ireland must have given you the vvay. But in pursuing so vveightie K 2

a mater as this, mercifull God, hove nice, hove dangerous, how wayward have you bin? One while he is from home, another while he keepeth home, sometimes fled, sometimes in the borders where you dare not venture: I wish, my Lord, there be shrewde bugges in the borders for the Earle of Kildare to feare: The Earle, nay, the King of Kildare, for when you are disposed, you reigne more like then rule in the Land: where you are malicious, the truest subjects stand for Irish enemies, where you are pleased, the Irish enemie stands for a dutifull subject: hearts and hands, lives and lands are all at your curtesse, who fawneth not thereon, hee cannot rest within your smell, and your smell is so ranke, that you tracke them out at pleasure.

Whilest the Cardinall was speaking, the Earle chased and changed colour, & sundry proffers made to answer every sentence as it came, at last he broke out, and interrupted him thus.

My Lord Chauncellour, I befeech you pardon me, I am short witted, and you I perceive intend a long tale. If you proceede in this order, halfe my purgation wilbe lost for lacke of carryage: I have no schoole trickes, nor art of memory, except you heare me while I remember your words, your second processe will hammer out the former.

The Lords affociate, vvho for the most part tenderly loved him, and knew the Cardinals manner of termes so loth-some, as vvhervvith they were tyred many yeares agoe, humbly besought his grace to charge him directly vvith particulars, and to devell in some one matter, till it were examined through. That granted.

Kildares reply to the Cardie, nals oration

It is good reason (quoth the Earle) that your Grace beare the mouth of this chamber. But my Lord, those mouthes that put this tale into your mouth, are very vvide mouths, such indeed as have gaped long for my wireck, & nove at length for vvant of better stuff, are fain to fill their mouths with smoak. What my cousin Definoud hath compassed, as I know not, so I best been by my agents that presently wayte for him,

then have my adversaryes betrayed their malice, and this heape of haynous wordes shall resemble a man of strawe, that seemeth at a blush to carry some proportion, but when it is felt and poyfed, discovereth a vanity, serving onely to fray crowes, and I trust your Honours will see the proofe hereof and mine innocencie testified in this behalte by the thing it selfe within these few dayes. But goe to, suppose hee never bee had, what is Kildare to blame for it, more then my good brother of Offory, who notwithstanding his high promises, having also the Kings power, is glad to take egges for his money, and bring him in at leysure. Cannot the Earle of Desmond shift, but I must be of counsell ? cannot hee bee hid, except I winke? If hee bee close, am I his mate? If he be friended, am I a Traytour? This is a doughty kinde of accufation, which they urge against mee, wherein they are stabled and myred at my first denyall; You vvould not fee him, fay they, vvho made them so familiar vvith mine eye-fight? or when was the Earle within my Equinas? or vvho stood by vvhen I let him slip, or vvhere are the tokens of my vvilfull hood-vvinking? Oh, but you sent him word to bevvare of you, Who was the messenger? where are the letters? convince my negative: See hovv loosely this idle reason hangeth, Desmond is not taken, vvell, vvee are in fault: vvhy? because you are; vvho proves it? no body. What conjectures? so it seemeth. To vvhom? to your enemies vvho tolde it them? What other ground? none. Will they sveare it? they will sveare it. My Lords, then belike they knovv it, if they knovv it, either they have my hand to sheve, or can bring forth the messenger, or vvere present at a conference, or privy to Desmond, or some body beverayed it to them, or themselves were my carryers or vice-gerents therein, which of these parts will they choose, I know them too well to reckon my selfe convict by their bare vvords or headlesse heare-sayes, or franticke oathes, my letter vvere soone read, vvere any such vvryting extant, my servaunts and friends are ready to bee sifted. K_3

Of my coufin Defmond they may lye lewdly, fince no man can heere well tell the contrary. Touching my selfe, I never noted in them either so much wit, or so much faith, that I could have gaged upon their silence the life of a good hound, much lesse mine owne, I doubt not may it please your Honours to oppose them, how they came to knowledge of these matters which they are so ready to depose, but you shall finde their tongues chayned to another mans trencher, and as it were, Knights of the Post, suborned to say, sweare and stare the uttermost they can, as those that passe not what they say. nor with what face they say it, so they say no truth. But of another thing it grieveth me, that your good grace, whom I take to bee wife and sharpe, and who of your owne bleffed disposition wish me well, should bee so farre gone in crediting those corrupt informers, that abuse the ignorance of their state and countrey to my perill. Little know you my Lord. hove necessary it is not onely for the governour, but also for every Nobleman in Ireland, to hamper his vincible neighbors at discretion, vyherein if they vyayted for processe of Law. and had not these lives and lands you speake of vvithin their reach, they might hap to loofe their ovene lives and lands vvithout Lavy. You heare of a case as it vvere in a dreame, and feele not the smart that vexeth us. In England there is not a meane subject that dare extend his hand to fillip a Peere of the Realme. In Ireland, except the Lord have cunning to his strength, and strength to save his ovene, and sufficient authoritie to racke theeves and varletts when they stirre, hee shall finde them swarme so fast, that it will bee too late to call for Inflice. If you will have our service take effect; you must not tye us alwayes to the Iudiciall proceedings, where with your Realme, thanked bee God, is inured. In add to a made of at beyong and ylone

As touching my Kingdome (my Lord) I would you and I had exchanged Kingdomes but for one moneth, I vould trust to gather up more crummes in that space; then twice the revenues of my poore Eatledome, but you are vvell and vvarme, and so hold you; and upbraide not me vvith

with such an odious storme. I sleepe on a cabbin, when you lye soft in your bed of downe, I serve under the cope of heaven, when you are served under a Canopy, I drinke water out of a skull, when you drinke wine out of golden Cuppes, my courser is trained to the field, when your sennet is taught to amble, when you are begraced and belorded, and crowched and kneeled unto, then I finde small grace with our Irish borderers, except I cut them off by the knees.

but each man bitt his lippe, and held his countenance, for

At these girds the Councell would have smiled if they durst,

howfoever some of them inclined to the Butler, they all hated the Cardinall: A man undoubtedly borne to honour, I cardinali thinke some Princes Bastard, no Butchers sonne, exceeding wise, faire spoken, high minded, full of revenge, vicious of his body, losty to his enemies, were they never so bigge, to those that accepted and fought his friendship wonderfull courteous, a ripe Schooleman, thrall to affections, brought a bed with flattery, in satiable to get, & more princelike in bestowingeas appeareth by his two Colledges at Ipswich, and at Oxenford, th'one suppressed with his fall, th'other unfinished and yet as it lieth an house of Students (considering all appurtenances) incomparable, through Christendome, whereof Henry the eight is now ealled Founder, because hee let it stand. He held and enjoyed at once the Bishopricks of Yorke, Durham, and Winchester, the dignities of Lord Cardinall, Legate, and Chancellour: The Abbey of S. Albans, diverse Prioryes, sundry fat Benefices in Commendam : A great

The Cardinall perceived that Kildare was no Babe, and rolein a sume from the Councell table, committed the Earle, deferred the matter till more direct probations came out of Ireland.

preferrer of his servants, advauncer of learning, stoute in every quarrell, never happy till his overthrow. Therein he shewed

fuch moderation, and ended so patiently, that the houre of

his death did him more honour then all the pompe of life

passed.

After many meetinges and objections wittily refelled,

1532.

they pressed him sore with a trayterous errant, sent by his daughter the Lady of Slane, to all his brethren, to Oneale, Oconnor, and their adherents, wherein he exhorted them to warre upon the Earle of Ossory then Deputy, which they accomplished, making a wretched conspiracy against the English of Iteland, and many a bloody skirmish.

Of this Treason he was found guilty, and reprived in the Towre along time, the Gentleman betooke himselfe to God and the King, was heartily loved of the Licutenant, pittied in all the Court, and standing in so hard a case altered intle his accustomed hue, comforted other Noblemen, prisoners with him, diffembling his owne forrow. One night when the Lieutenant and he, for disport were playing at slide-groat, fuddainely commeth from the Cardinall a mandat to execute Kildare on the morrow. The Earle marking the Lieutenants deepe figh, in reading the bill, By Saint Bride, quoth he, there is some mad game in that scrolle, but fall how it will, this throw is for a huddle, when the worst was told him, now I pray thee, quoth he, doe no more but learne assuredly from the Kings owne mouth, whether his Grace be witting thereto or not. Sore doubted the Lieutenant to displease the Cardinall, yet of very pure devotion to his friend, he posteth to the King at midnight, and said his errant, (for all houres of the day or night, the Lieutenant hath accesse to the Prince upon occasions.) King Henry controwling the sawcynesse of the Priest, those were his tearmes, gave him his Signet in token of countermand, which when the Cardinall had seene. he begun to breake into unseasonable words with the Lieutenant, which he was loath to heare, and so he left him fretting: Thus broke up the storme for a time, and the next yeare VVolley was cast out of favour, & within few yeares Sir VVilliam Skevington fent over Deputy, who brought with him the Earle pardoned, and rid from all his troubles. Who vivould not thinke but these lessons should have schooled so vvise a man, and warned him rather by experience of adversities past, to cure old fores, then for joy of this present fortune, to minde seditious drifts to come. The second yeare of Skewingtons

sound tous government, there chaunced an uproase among the Merchants and their Apprentices, in Divelin, which hard and scant the Deputy and Major bothscould appealed. Then was also great stirre about the Kings divorce, who hearing the frowardnes of Ireland under Skewington, and thinking it expedient in so fickle a world to have a sure poste there, made Kildare his Deputy, the Primate of Ardmagh Lord Chancellor, and Sir lames Butler Lord Treaturer But Kildare reviving the old quarrels, fell to profecute the Earle of Offory, excited Oneale to invade his country, his Brother lobn Fitz Ge= rald to spoyle the country of Vriell and Kilkenny, being himselfeat the doing of part, namely in nobbing the towne, and killing the Kings subjects. The next yeare going against 0-Carrol he was pittifull hurt with a Gun in the thigh, to that he never after enjoyed his limmes, nor delivered his wordes in good plight, otherwise like enough to have beene longer forborne, in consideration of his many noble qualities, great good service, and the state of those times. Straight wayes complaints were addressed to the King of these enormities, & that in the most haynous manner could be devised, whereupon he was againe commaunded by sharpe letters to repaire into Englad, & co leave such a substitute, for whose governét he would undertake at his perill to answere: He left his heire the Lord Thomas Firz Gerald and ere heavent, furnished his owne, pyles, forts, and castles, with the Kings artillery & munition, taken forth of Divelinac Being examined before the Councell, he staggered in his answere, either for conscience of the fact, or for the infirmity of his late mavme: Wherefore a falle mittering flew abroad that his execution was intended. That symour helped forward Skevingtons friends and fervants, who sticked not to write into Ireland secret letters, that the Earletheir Masters enemy (so they tooke him, because he got the government over his head,) was cut shorter, and nowthey trusted to see their Master againe in his Lordship, whereafter they fore longed as crowes doe for carryon. Such a letter came to the hands of a simple Priest, no perfect Enbglish man, who for haste hurled it among other papers in vayor the

1528, 1540. the Chimneyes end of his chamber, meaning to peruse it better at more leisure: The same very night a Gentleman retaining to Lord Thomas (then Lord Deputy under his father) tooke up his lodging, with the Priest, and raught in the morning for some paper to drawe on his straite hosen, and as the devill would he hit upon the letter, bare it away in the heele of his his hole, no earthly thing mildeeming, at night againe he found the paper unfretted, and musing thereof began to pore on the writing, which notified the Earles death. To horsbacke got he in all haste, and spreading about the country these unthrifty tydings, Lord Thomas the Deputy rash and youthfull, immediately confedered himselfe with Oneale, and O-Connor, with his Vnkles and Fathers friends, namely, Iohn. Oliver, Edward Fitz Gerald, James and John Delahide, VVelch parlon of Loughleudy, Burnel of Balgriffen, Rorcks a pirat of the seas, Bath of Dullardston, Feild of Bulke, with others, and their adherents guarded, he rideth on S. Barnabyes day to S. Mary Abbey where the Councell sate, and when they looked he should take his place, and rose to give it him, hee charged them to fit still, and stood before them and then spake.

The words of Lord Thomas.

Howfoever injuriously we be handled and forced to defend our selves in armes, when neither our service nor our good meaning towards our Princes crowne availeth, yet say not hereafter but in this open hostility, which wee professe heere and proclaime, we have shewed our selves no villaines nor churles, but warriours and Gentlemen. This Sword of estate is yours and not mine, I received it with an oath, and have used it to your benefit. I should offend mine honour, if I turned the same to your annoyance a now have I neede of mine owne sword, which I dare trust, as for this common sword, it flattereth me with a golden scabberd, but hath in it a pestilent edge, already bathed in the Geraldines blood, and whetted it selfe in hope of a destruction stave your selves from us, as from your open enemies. I am none of Henryes Deputy, I am his foe, I have more minde to conquere, then to governe, to meete him in the field, then to serve him in office. If all the hearts of England and Ireland that have cause thereto, vvould joyne

Joyne in this quarrell (as I trust they will) then should be be a by-word (as I trust he shall) for his heresie, lechery, and tyranny, wherein the age to come may Ikore him among the auncient Princes, of most abhominable and hatefull memorie. With that he rendred up the sword, and flang away like a Bedlam, adding to his shamefull Oration many other slanderous and foule termes, which for regard of the Kings posteritie.I have no minde to utter.

They concluded, first to murther all of the English birth in Ireland, and sent an ambassador to Paulus the 3, called Mac Granell, archdeacon of Kelles, and rejected thence to Charles the fift, whose Aunt Queene Katherine the King had lately cast off, with much indignation of all the Spaniards, him hee thought eith to be kindled, and craved affistance to conquer the land, which he promised to hold under him, & his heires for ever. The meane while he forced an oath upon Gentlemen of every shire to ayde him, camped within the pale, reared a great army of English, Irish, and Scots, invaded the Earle of Offory, and lames his sonne Lord Butler, who having intelligence thereof, prevented his fury and kept those parts in

When the Butlers had stopped his rage in Mounster, he fell to parlyes and treatyes with them, sent them diverse messengers and letters, whereby he covenanted to devide with them halfethe Kingdome, would they allist his enterprise, Tames Lord Treasurer, in whom for their youth and acquaintance he most affied, and often accumbred with such temptations, finally returned his brokers with letters.

Taking pen in hand to write you my resolute answere, I rheletter of muse in the very first line, by what name to call you, my James Lord Butler, and Lo. Loud, or my Coufin, seeing your notorious treason hath di- Treasurers to Lord Thomas. flayned your honour, and your desperate levednes shamed your kindred, your are so liberall in parting stakes with mee, ihat a man would weene you had no right to the game, fo importunate in craving my company, as if you would perdwade me to hang with you for good fellowship . And thinke you that lames is so mad to gape for gudgens, or so un-

grations

Doctour Allen Archbishop of Divelogand L. Chancellor

inurdered.

gratious to fell his truth for a peece of Ireland, were it so, (as it cannot be) that the Chickens you reck on were both hatched and feathered, yet be thou fure I had rather in this quarrell die thine enemy, then live thy partner: for the kindnes you proffer mee, and good love in the end of your letter, the best way I can I purpose to requite, that is, in advising you though you have fetched your feaze, vet to looke well ere you leape over Ignorance and error, and a certaine opinion of duty hath carried you unawares to this folly, not yet fo ranke, but it may be cured. The King is a vessell of bounty and mercy, your words against his Majesty shall not bee counted malicious, but rather balked out for heat and impotency, except your felfe by heaping offences, discover a mischievous and willfull

meaning. Farewell.

Nettled with this round answere, forth he passed to increase his power, offered violence to very few, except that one despitous murcher at Tartaine, the twenty five of July, wherein a morning earely he caused to be brought before him, the honourable Prelate Doctour Allen, Archbishop of Divelin, and Lord Chancellor, who being a reverent personage, feeble for age and sicknesse, kneeling at his feete in his shirte and mantle, bequeathing his soule to God, his body to the Traytors mercy, the wretched young man commaunded there to be brained like an oxe. The place is ever fince hedged in, overgrowne and unfrequented, in detellation of the fact. The people have observed that all the accessaries thereof, being after pardoned for rebellion, ended miserably. Allen had beene in service with Cardinall VVolsey, of deepe judgement. in the Cannon law, the onely match of Stephen Gardener an= other of VVoljeyes Chaplaines, for avoyding of which emulation he was preferred in Ireland, rough and rigorous in Iustice, hated of the Geraldines for his Masters sake, & his owne, as he that crossed them diverse times, and much croubled both the father and sonne in their governments, nor unlike to have promoted their accusations.

All this while the Kings army was looked for, and no fuccour came to the rebels, which greatly quayled them, being of themselves, themselves, though stored with souldiours, yet unfurnished with any sufficient munition to stand in a maine battell. Moreover the number of wife Gentlemen did not greatly incline to his purpose. And therefore when he besieged the City of Divelin, the most part of those arrowes which were thot over the walles, were unheaded, and little or nothing affrayed them. That espied the citizens, and gathering the faintnes of his fouldiours thereby, blazed abroad upon the walles triumphant newes, that the Kings Army was arryved, and as it had beene so indeed, suddenly rushed out of their gates up! pon the Rebels, who at the first fight of armed men, weening no lesse but the truth was so, otherwise assured that the Citty would never dare to incounter them, gave ground, for sooke their Captaines, dispersed and scattered into diverse corners, and never after mentogether. The value of the state of the state of

Alittle before this time dyed the Earle of Kildare in the John Stow. towre of London for thought and paine. Sir V Villiam Skevington (whom the Irish men call the gunner, because hee was preferred from that office of the Kings Master-gunner to governe them, and that they can full evill brooke to be ruled of any that is but meanely borne) brought over an Army, and with him Leonard Gray, a younger forme to the Marquesse Dorset, Lord Marshall. To whom Fitz Gerald yeelded and was sent into England, where hee with his Vncles, and other principalls of the conspiracy; were afterwards dravine, hanged and quartered at Tiburne. Soone after twas the house of the Geraldines attaynted by Parliament, and all of the name builty trayned out for feare of new commidtions. But Thomas Leurus, late Bishoph of Kill Yong Kitz Getald preserved. dare schoole-master to a younger brother, Garald Fitz Gerald the Earle that novy liveth secretly stale avvay with the childe, first into Scotland, then into France, and mildoubting the French, into Italy where Cardinall Pole his neere kinfman preferved him, till the raigne of Edward the fixt, with whom hee entred into high fdyour and obtayned of him his olde Juheritance of Meinothe. Princely emercenced and you adult. CAR

Lastly,

Lastly, by meanes of the said Cardinall, and Sir Anthony

Browne, Lord Mountague, whose sister hee marryed (a wo-

man worthy of such a brother) Queene Mary (Founder

and restorer of many Noble houses) repealed his attainder,

and set him in his fathers Earledome, wherein since that time

he hath shewed himselfe fundry wayes officious and serviceable towards his Common-wealth, and the Crowne of Eng-

land, beside other good qualities of honour and curtesie, they

repute him heere for the best horseman in these parts of Chri-

stendome. With this escape of yong Fitz Gerald, the Lord Leonard Gray his Vncle on the mothers side was held suspect, &

the same was one speciall articleurged against him when hee

all vertues very just of his word, deceased Lord Deputy at

Kilmaynam, & the Lord Leonard Gray succeeded him. Oneale

and Odonill colourably required a parley with the Deputy,

but in the way as they rode, they burned the Navan, and the

towne of Ardee. Wherefore the Deputy with the helpe of

the Maior of Divelin Iames Fitz Symonds, and the Maior of

Sir VVilliam Skevington, a vvorthy Governour, and among

lost his head, Anno 1542.

of IRELAND.

123

. Operada Bildonasi ekanga essi kalungga ostortikoa , gakikas Shell gedr , this main C.A.P. to X. Here were a gradding

enther eman as the man of the land of the property that Edward the 6. Mary, and Elizabeth.

Efore the decease of Henry the 8. Seintleger was twice in England, leaving at both times Sir VVilliam Brabason Lord Instice. In his se-cond returne An. 1546. Sir Edward Bellingham, Captaine generall, landed at Waterford,

make we will be not be to be with

and skowred the coast, where Omore and Ocomore used to

This yeare the city of Divelin obtained a Charter for two

Sheriffes in stead of Bayliffes.

The Geraldines Out-lawes were taken and executed, Bellingham appointed Lord Deputye, erected a Mint within the Castle of Divelin, which quickely wearyed them for want of fuell. Andrew Brereton with 300. horsemen, and 40. footemen, inhabited the North as farre as Lecale, where hee with 35. horsemen gave the charge upon 246. Scotts, that from the out Islandes came to succour the Irish, and wasted the Countrey. In one yeare hee cleered thole quarters, that the Kings subjects might passe in peace.

Sir Frauncis Bryan the Kings Mynion was left Lord Iustice; vyhile Bellingham repayred into England, vvhere he dyed a man made up by service in the vvarres, by continuall toyle therein diseased and feebled, but of courage a lyon to his Bellingham. dying day; true as steele, as farre from flattery as from hearing flatterers, an exceeding servent Protestant, very zealous and carefull in tendring the vvealth of Ireland, vvherein the countrey giveth him the praise over all his predecessours and successours vvithin memory, he spent his vvhole allowance in hospitality, calling the same, his deare Masters meate, none of his owne cost. Letters commendatory offered him by the Councell, when Brian had verought his trouble before the

1548.

Droghedagh, and the English pale met them, flighted them, Simons Major of Divelin.

1542. Hall. An H 8

X537.

34. 8€ 34.

1542.

Con Oncele Earle of Tyrone.

flevy 400. of their trayne, and there the Maior of Divelin for Sir lames Fitz. notable service in that journey, was knighted. Sir Anthony Seintleger Knight of the Garter, Lord Deputy. He summoned a Parliament, wherein the Geraldines were attainted, Abbeyes suppressed, the King named supreme head and King of Ireland, because he recognized no longer to hold it of the Pope At this Parliament appeared Irish Lords Mac Gilpatricke, Lord Barry, Mac Cartimore, O-Brene, and diverse more, whom followed con Onede, submitting himselfe to the Kings Deputy, and after to the King himselfe, vvho return ned him richly placed, created him Earle of Tyrone, his base sonne Matthew Oneale Baron of Donganon. As for Shane O. neale the onely sonne of his body mulier begotten; hee was then little esteemed and of no proofe. The same sime same Earle of Defmond came to the King, and was of him both Princely entertained and revvarded.

CAP. X.

Nobility

X5570

nobility of England hee rejected as vaine and superfluous. professing, that if of his owne innocencie he could not uphold him, hee would never feeke other shift, then Credo resurrectionem mortuorum, for (quoth he) well they may kill mee, but they shall never conquer mee. Sowre he was, and thundering in words, indeed very temperate, applyed himselfe altogether to severity, Lordlinesse, and terrour, Brian dyed within fixe weekes, and Brabason became Lord lustice. till Saintleger the fourth time was fent over Deputye. To him crept Mac Cartye, that had lately roved and denyed his obedience with an halter about his necke, and got his pardon.

Vpon Saintleger came Sir Tames Croftes, of whose bounty and honourable dealing towards them, they yeeld at this day a generall good report. Crofts tarryed in office two yeares, and left Sir Thomas Culack (who dyed five houres before the writing heereof, and Gerald Ailmer, while they

both were courfing Oneale from Dundalke.

Queene Mary.

1553. Sir Anthony Seintleger.

Queene Mary established in her Crowne, committed her government once more to Saintleger, whom fundry Noblemen pelted and lifted at till they shouldered him quite out of all credite. He to be counted forward and plyable to the taffe of King Edward the fixt his raigne, rymed against the Reall Presence for his pastime, and let the papers fall where Courtiers might light thereon, who greatly magnified the pith and conveyance of that noble sonnet But the originall of his own hand-veriting had the same firmely (though contrary to his ovvne Iudgement) wandering in so many hands, that his adversary caught it, and tripped it in his vvay: the spot whereof he could never vvipe out. Thus vvas he removed, a discreete Gentleman, very studious of the State of Ireland, enriched, flout enough, vvithout gall,

While the Deputy staggered uncertaine of continuance, the Tooles, and the Cavenaghes vvaxed cockish in the Countie of Divelin, rangeing in flockes of seven or eight score, on vyhom set forth the Marshall and the Sheriffes of Divelin, Buckley and Gygen, with the citties helpe, and over-layde them them in sudden skirmishes, of which, threescore were executed for example.

Thomas Earle of Suffex, Lord Deputy, with whom came _ 1554 his Brother in law Sir Henry Sidney, Treasurer. This Deputy, Earle of Suffer.

to the inestimable benefite of the Realme, brought under obedience the disordered countreyes of Leix, Slewmarge, Ofalie, Irrye, and Glinmalire, then late possessed by the Oconnore, Omores, Odempsyes, and other Irish rebels. Hee molested lames Mac Conell the Scottish Islander, that in those dayes joyned with the Irish, and disquieted Vister. In which voyage Divelin assisted the Governour with a faire company, conducted by Iohn U sher, Sheriffe, and Patrick Buckley. He held a Parliament, wherein it was made high Treason to retaine Scots for fouldiours, and fellony to contract with them matrimony. At his returne from England (in which time Sir Henry Sidney vvas Lord Iustice) hee pursued the Scots to their Ilands, and there entred, did them much skathe, vvanne himselse sull great commendation of hardinesse, sayled backe with the glory of that adventure, wherein (I trovv) two more of his matches are not remembred, nor read. With the nevves of Maryes death, hee croffed the seas againe into England, leaving Sir Henry Sidney; Lord lustice, and yet againe the next yeare leaving Sir VVilliam Fitzwilliams Lord Iustice, then returned he Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, by Proclamation reformed and aba- Queene Elizated their base Coyne, being as yet perfect in all the proportions, measures, allayes and values thereof, as by mintanor, tooke with him fouldiours out of Divelin, victualled for fixe vycekes at that citties charge, under the leading of Petaboghe Sheriffe, and joyning him to his povver, vvent upon Shane Oneale, the Irish enemy of greatest force then living. Thereupon Shane hyed him into England, the Lieutenant after him ; Fitz VVilliams Lord suffice, till Suf-Jex sped his businesse, and came backe the next and last time of his departure. Sir Nicholas Arnold directed thither Sir Nic Arnold vvich Commission, tarryed behinde him Lord Iustice, and too short a vvhile as the country speaketh, vvho testisieth

1560a

upright and reasonable provision of household cates, the abules whereof with leffe and fouldiours, doe so impoverish and alienate the needle Farmors from us, that they say they might as eafily beare the Irish oppressions of Conies & Cuddies, from which we pretend to deliver them.

Arnold for his better successe in government, linked himselfe entirely with Gerald Earle of Kildare, who likewise endeavoured to support the same with all diligence, being authorized to straine the rebells at his discretion, wherefore hee disposed himselfe to serve, and presented the Governour many times with a number of principall Out-lawes heades.

The Earle of

In the meane while Suffex became Lord Prefident of the North of England, a spare man of body, but sound & healthfull, brought up with Stephen Gardiner, passing valiant, a deep reacher, very zealous in friendship, quicke in resolution of extremities in the field, wonderfull patient, able to tyre ten souldiours, learned and languaged, ever doing with his penne, of utterance harpe and fententious, wary, buile, painefull, and speedie, meeter to rule, then to be over-ruled.

Sir Henry Sidney, Knight of the Gatter, Lord Prefident of Wales, and Lord Depune of Ireland. Hee found the Realme distempered with Oneales rebellion, and the same did extinguish, whereof before I speake, I must looke backe a little into certaine yeares past, and lay together the circumftance of this lamentable tunfult.

Of all the rinees, though none was then comparable same endured fundry varieties and vexacions, untill the divion began in England of the two royall families, Yorke and Lancaster, at Which time the English Eords of Ireland, either

to Oneale for antiquity and noblemente of bloud, yet had the for zeale, or for kinved and affection transporting their force thither to vohold a side, the meere wiln waxed insolent, and chiefly Oneale increched upon the full possession of Vister, abiding so uncontrolled, till Shane Oneale fearing the puissance of Henry 8. exhibited to him a voluntary submissio, surrendred all titles of honour, received at his hands the Earledome of Ter-ovven,

Ter-owen, commonly called Tirone, to be held of the King of English forme and tenure: Armes he gave the bloody hand a cerrible cognizance. This Oneale had two sonnes, Matthew a bastard, and Shane legicimate, but because Matthew was a dusty horseman, welbeloved, and a tryed Souldiour, Shane but a Boy, and not of much hope, the father obtained the Barony of Donganon, and the remainder of his Earledome to Matthew. When Shane and his foster brethren grew to yeares, they considered of the injury and tyranny, done by policie of the base Oneale, with rearing hue and cry at the side of a Castle where he lay that night, when the Gentleman ran suddainely forth to answere the cry, as the custome is, they betrayed and murdered him. The father not utterly discontent with his dispatch, wher he saw the proofe of his lawfull sonne and heire, thenceforward fancied Shane Oneale, put him in trust with all, himselfe being but a Cripple, notwithstanding that Matthew left iffue male which liveth, to whom the inheritance appertained, yet after his fathers decease, Shane was reputed for the rightfull Oneale, tooke it, kept it, challenged fuperiority over the Irish Lords of Vister, warred also upon the English part, stibdued Oreyly, imprisoned Odonil, his wife, and his sonne, enriched himselfe with all Odonils forts, eastles, and plate, by way of ransome, detained pledges of obedience, the wife (whom he carnally abused) and the Childe, fortified a strong lland in Tyrone, which he named spitefully, Foogh-ni-Gall, that is, the hate of English men, whom he so detested, that he hanged a Souldiour for eating English bilket, another by the feete mistrusted for a spy, another Captaine of the Galloglaghes he flew with torture. After this ulurpation and tyranny, hee was yet perswaded by Melchior Husse sent unto him from Gerald Earle of Kildare, to reconcile himselse to good order, and to remember the honourable estate wherein King Henry placed his father, which monition he accepted, belought his protection, and made a voyage into England, where the Courtiers noteing his haughtines and barbarity, devised his stile thus . Oneale the great, Cousin to S. Patricke, friend to the Queene of England, enemy to all the world

Oneales tebel-

world belides. Thence he fped home againe, gratiously deals with, used Civility, expelled the Scots out of all VIster, where they intended a conquest, wounded and tooke prisoner, Captaine Iames Mac Conell their Chieftaine, whereof the faid lames deceased: ordered the North so properly, that if any subject could approve the losse of money or goods within his precinct, he would affuredly either force the robber to restitution or of his owne cost redeeme the harme to the loosers contentation. Sitting at meate before he put one morfell into his mouth, he used to slice a portion above the dayly almes, and fend it namely to some begger at his gate, saying, it was meete to serve Christ first: But the Lords of Vister, and elsewhere. whom he yoked and spoiled at pleasure, abhorring his pride and extortion, craved affiftance of the Deputy, for redreffe thereof: Oneale advertised, increaseth his rage, disturbeth and driveth out Mac Gwire, the plantiffe, burneth the Metropolitane Church of Ardmagh, because no English army might lodge therein, for which sacriledge the Primate accursed him, besiegeth Dundalke, practiseth to call strangers into the land for ayde, as appeareth by those letters which Sir Henry Sidney Lord Deputy intercepted, occupieth all the North of Ireland, being 100.myles broad, 120.long. Then addressed he planfible letters to the Potentates of Mounster, exhorting them to rebell, that the force of England at once might bee difmembred. This message the Deputy prevented, stayed the country. abridged him of that hope, and then proclaimed him Traytor. An Irish lester standing by, and hearing Oneale denounced with addition of a new name, traytor: Except (quoth he) traytor be a more honourable title then Oneale, he shall never take it upon him, by my confent.

While the Deputy was absent in England, the towne of Droghedagh was in hazard to be taken by the Rebels, which to preferve at the motion of the Lady Sidney, then abiding in Droghedagh, came Master Sarsfield then Major of Divelin, with a cholen band of goodly young men Citizens, and brake the rage of the enemies. The Deputy returning made him Knight, and finding it now high time utterly to weede and roote out the Traytor, he furnished a substantiall army, and with the readines thereof hartened the Irish, whom 0= neale had impoverished, cut off his adherents, and all accesse of succour, chased him and his into corners, spent him, cast him into such despaire, that he consulted with his Secretary Neale Mac Connor, to present himselfe unknowne and dif oncalevanguiled to the Deputy, with an halter about his necke, begging his pardon. Ere you doe so (quoth his Clarke) let us prove an extreame shift, and there he perswaded him to joyne with the Scots, whom he had lately banished: of whom, should he be refused or finde inconvenience, at any time, submission to the Deputy might then be used, when all faileth . Shane knew himselfe odious to the Scots, especially to them whom he thought to lincke with the brother and kindred of James Mac Conil the Mac Coull, yet in those hard oddes hee devised rather to assay their friendship, then to grate upon mercy, which so oft and so intollerably he had abused.

Mac Conill whom Shane overthrew left two brethren, and 2 Sifter, whereof one Suarly Tormy remained with Oneale, entertayned after his brothers death. The other was Alexander Oge, who with 600. Scots incamped now in Claneboy. The woman was Agnes live, whose husband Shane slew in the Said discomfiture, Agnes had a sonne Mac Gill, e Aspucke, who betrayed Oneale to avenge his Fathers and Vncles quarrell. At the first meeting, (for thither he came accompanied with Torwy and his Secretary, and 50. horsemen) the Captaines made him great cheere, and fell to quaffing, but Aspucke minding to enter into his purpose, there openly challenged his Secretary, as the Author of a dishonourable report, that Mac Couils wife did offer to for lake her country and friends, and to marry with Shane Oneale her hulbands destruction; Mary (quoth the Secretary) if thine Aunt were Queen of Scotland, it might beseeme her full well, to seeke such a marriage. To this brawle Oneale gave eare, upheld his man, advaunced his owne degree : The comparison bred a fray betweene their Souldrours; Out sprang Aspucke, and beat Oneales man, and then studdainely brought his band upon them in the tent,

where

:556.

128

cheate mus-

where the Souldiours with their flaughter-knives, killed the Secretary and Shane Oneale, mangled him cruelly, lapped him in an old Irith shirte, and tumbled him into a pit, within an old Chappell hard by; whose head fouredayes after, Captaine Pierce cut off and met therewith the Deputy, who sent it before him staked on a pole, to the Castle of Divelin, where it now standeth. It is thought that Tirlagh who now usurpeth the name of Oneale, practiled this devile with Agnes, Alexander, and Tormy, when he perceived Shane discouraged, and not able to hold out.

Thus the wretched man ended, who might have lived like a Prince, had he not quenched the sparkes of grace that appeared in him, with arrogancy and contempt against his Prince.

The Butlers rebellioni

The next Tumult in Ireland proceeded of the folly, especially of Sir Edmund Butler, Pierce and Edward his Brethren. who being unable in law, to maintaine his title to certaine landes, whereof he held possession, whereunto Sir Peter carew laide very direct and manifest claime, (for Carew is an ancient Barons house in Ireland) confedered with lames Fitz Morice of the fouth, and others, began commotion, more dangerous to the Realme then the lare stirre of Oneale, such was their opportunity of place, the rebels fo friended, their number so furnished, that the Deputy passing forth against them in haste, requisite with such shift as the suddaine mischiefe asked, was thought to have put his person in great adventure, but in conclusion he wanne by that journey, great martiall honour, flarted them from hole to hole, and ranfacktevery veine of the land, so as the Butlers craving protection, Thortly recoyled, and stand now at the Queenes mercy. To appeale the country, & reforme the lewdines of his Brethren. Thomas Earle of Ormond came from the Court of England home, and in quieting the faid broyles, Thewed also for his part, a right good peece of lervice, worthy to be remembred. After this enfued a Parliament, the particulars whereof, are expressed in the acts lately drawine, to be published in Print. somewhat before the last session, a seditious libell intituled,

Tom I roth, (let fall in the streetes of Divelin) nipped by name diverse honourable and worshipfull of the Realme, & certaine officers of the Deputyes houshold, for greeving the land with impositions of Cesse, whereupon followed a proclamation, bearing date the twenty eight of lanuary, which if it may bee executed in all points, would cut off many such murmures, and leave a bleffed memory of the Governour that deviled it. The day of prorogation when the Knights 12. Decembria and Burgesles of the Cominalty resorted to the Lordes of the upper house, much good matter was there uttered betweene the Deputy and the Speaker, whereof comming home to my lodging I tooke notes, and here I will deliver them, as neere as I can call them to minde, in the same words and sentences, that I heard them . First the Speaker Iames Staniburst an Esquire of worship, Recorder of Divelin, and for the Citty Burgelse at that present, began thus.

Rather of custome and dutyfull humility, then for doubt The oration of of your honourable disposition, (so well knowne to us all, hurft spales and to every of us in private, that it little needeth my praile) of the ment. we are to request your Lordship in the behalfe of our selves, and our countryes, whom we represent in this Parliament, to accept our service and endeavour in driving these conclusions, where by to the uttermost of our skill we have intended without injury, the Crowne to enrich, treasons to chastise, to better the state, trassique to further, learning to cherish, and in briefe, to maintaine with our best advice those benefits, which the Prince hath inferred upon this Realme by you, and you with your sword and wisedome have performed . An ordinary finte it is, in the end of fuch affemblies to crave executions of law, for it sufficeth not, to keepe a statute tanquam inclusum in tabulis, as a thing shut up in parchiment rolles, but law must speake and walke abroad, to the comfort and behoofe of good subjects: Otherwise, vve shall resemble the folly of him, that once in every houre saluted his gold, never using it, but onely bad it lye still and couch . Of the necessity thereof, I cannot say so much as your Lordship conceiveth,

and I desire not to discourse a matter generally felt and confessed. In particular the zeale which I have to the reformatiz on of this Realme, and to breede in the rudest of our people. resolute English hearts, moveth me to pray your Lordships helping hand for the practile, namely of one statute which is for the erecting of Grammer Schooles, within every diocesse. the stipends to be levied in such proportion, as in the late act hath beene deviled, whereunto the royall affent is already granted, and yet the point in no forwardnes, nor in none is like to be, except by some good meanes, the onset be given & freshly followed, surely might one generation sippe a little of this liquor, and so bee induced to long for more, both our countrymen that live obeyfant, would ensue with a courage the fruites of peace, whereby good learning is supported, and our unquiet neighbours would finde such sweetenesse in the taste thereof, as it should bee a ready way to reclaime them. In mine experience, who have not yet seene much more then forty yeares, I am able to fay that our Realme is at this day an halfe deale more civil then it was fince noble men and wor-Thipfull, with others of ability, have used to send their sonnes into England to the Law, to Vniversities, or to Schooles. Now when the same Schooles shall bee brought home to their doores, that all that will may repaire unto them; I doubt not, considering the numbers brought up beyond the Seas. and the good already done in those few places, where learning is professed, but this addition discreetly made; will fofter a young frye, likely to prove good members of this cornmon wealth, and desirous to traine their children the same way. Neither were it a small helpe to the assurance of the Crowne of England, when Babes from their Craddles Thould be inured under learned Schoole mafters, with a pure English tongue, habite, fashion, discipline, and in time urterly forget the affinity of their unbroken borderers, who possibly might be wonne by this example, of at the leaftwife loofe the opportunity, which now they have to infect others. And feeing our hap is not yet, to plant an Whiverfity here at honfe. which attempt can never bee remembred without many thankes

thankes to your good Lordship for your bountifull offer, me seemeth it is the more expedient so enter so farre forth as our commission reacheth, and to hope for the rest: I have said enough, especially to a learned governour, to whom an inckling were sufficient in such a plausible and needfull motion. It resteth that wee pray your Lordship to solde up whatsoever squarings or diversities of Judgements, wise men have heere uttered in our often meetings, and by the sequele of all our doings to measure the good meaning of every severall perion.

When the Speaker had done, the Deputy having a rich and plentifull kinde of utterance, meere naturall, but not without judgement, answered at length, as he that knew no end of his good, the points whereof, as I can remember, were thele.

In good faith, M. Speaker, I cannot lesse doe, but recorde The Lord Deand testifie the readines, travaile and good service of you all, puties answer. and namely of your selfe, who in the whole course of this Parliament, & now lastly in this charitable request for trayning your youth, have confirmed the opinion which my felfe and the generall voyce long fince retained of your rare vertues, devotion, wisedome, learning, and modestie, so as the case cannot be misdoubted that is preserred by such a Proctor, the substance whereof toucheth you my Lords spirituall and temporall, & you the knights and worshipfull of every Shire, to you belongeth the quickening of this godly statute, which heere againe I recommend unto you, & will not let to enquire after your diligence therein from time to time, & the most effectuall order that may be for this purpose, shall assuredly be raken in place convenient. Shew your selves forward and franke in advancing the honour, wealth, ease and credit of your countryes, envy not to your posterity the same path that your selves have troden, and namely you that flourish at this day in the light & eye of your comon-wealth. Had your opinions matched with mine, concerning the University which M. Speaker remembreth, no doubt the name and regutation

thereof would have bin a spurre to these erections, as nurses

for babes to suck in, till they might repaire thither to be wained: But I trust your consents therein are only suspended for a time, and that so much good labour shall not be utterly lost and frustrate: What though certaine imperfections cannot as yet be salved? What though the summe arise not to make a muster of Colledges at the first day? What though the place be not also commodious? What though other circumstances inferre a feeble and rawe foundation? These are indeede objections of the multitude, whose backewardnesse breedeth an unnecessary stoppe in this our purpose. But your wisedomes can easily consider that time must ripen a weake beginning, that other Vniversities began with lesse, that all experience telleth us so, shall wee be so curiz ous or so testy that nothing will please us, but all in all, all absolute, all excellent, all furnished, all beautified, all fortified in the prime and infancie thereof. I remember a tale of Apuleius asse, who being indifferently placed betweene two bottles of have because he could not reach them both at once forbare them both. Let us not so doe, but content our selves by little and little to bee sedde as the case requireth. The rest of your Bills debated and passed by your wisedomes in this Parliament, I must confesse, they are as you say, beneficiall to the Queene my Mistris, and to her Crowne, but how? Verily as the Husband-man foweth his feede, and reapeth much more then he layde downe, so whatsoever this benefite amounteth unto, it returneth to your selves in a circle; heere it groweth, heere it is eaten, heere it multiplyeth, heere it is spent, they have their due, the Prince is bettered, you are quieted, Iustice executed, malefactours terrifyed. Were they never so deare collopps of your owne flesh and bloud. I see not how you could either have coloured their offence, or qualifyed their punishment, the one so notorious, that it cannot be dissembled, the other so ordinary, that course of law prescribeth it. Therefore as you have well done, so you have done but your duties, allowed an inch to receive an ell, abridged your owne foes, avenged your own injuryes,

Injuryes, condemned your owne oppressors. And yet this duty being on your parts, so cheerefully and painfully, so loving ly and advitedly performed, deferveth great thankes, and shall finde it too, If I bee the man, either in office able to confider you, or out of office in place to friend you. I am to depart into England shortly, lay your heads together, and article the points, whereby this Realme may be furthered, ute mee either as a mouth to speake for you, or an eye to direct you, or as a hand to under-prop you, aut consilio, aut auxilio. Besides, the generall care vyhich I ought to have for you all, as your governour, and yoked together under one obedience, English blouds, and English hearts, I am linked to you as to my continuall acquaintance these many yeares, hither I came in my fpring, heere I have spent my summer, I returne in the fall of the leafe, now is the time, intimate your defects in demaunds; or what elfe foever may content you, and fee whether I will tender your common-wealth. I meane not the pretended common-wealth, seditionsly promoted in Tom Loodles ryme, but some good and substantial matter worth the hearing , which upright and equall men will indeede esteeme. As for his complaint of Cesse and Imposition, it favoureth either hatefull malice, or childish folly, malice if he would decay the garrison that preserveth the Realme, folly if he thinke the Realme can be preserved vvithout a garrison, wherin I will shew you my fancie by the way, perhaps out of all order, but I pray beare with mee, I take matters as they come next to hand, I can not skill of written tales Many a good fellove talkes of Robin Hoode, that never dreve in his Bovy, and many an idle head is full of Proclamations, and conceiveth certaine farre fetches, able in his viveening to wield a Realme. But let me see which of them all can justifie that Ireland may spare the Army they kicke so much agamft. Are your enemyes more tractable then they have beene? Are they server? Are you by your selves of force to match them? If you bee, then vvere England starke madde, to disburse twentie or thirtie thousand pounds a yeare, for none other purpose but to vexe and grieve you: M 2

that were like the husband who gelded himselfe to anger his wife. You must not thinke wee love you so evill, nay rather thinke truely wee tender your quietnesse and preservation, as a nation derived from our auncestours, ingraffed and incorporate into one body with us, disturbed with a fort of barbarous people, odious to God and man, that lappe your bloud as greedily as ours. The abuse of souldiours, their horse, boyes, and harlots, the Legerdemaine of Captaines, chequerelles, the purloyning of Cessors & Constables, the number of freedomes holding onely by concordatum, the annoyance and hurt which the poore farmer endureth, as 1 know them to be intollerable, so I know them to be redress. sed with the first detection, whose complaint hath not been heard?whose enormity vvinked at?what can you aske more? would you have souldiours nothing insolent, nothing sensuall, nothing greedy, no quarrellers? so wish I, but scarce hope for it, would you hazard a misery certaine, extreame, and incurable, to avoyde a trouble cafuall, transitory, and remedilesse: so vvould not I, it you can prove a garrison needlesse, s undertake to eale you thereof, If you neede it, they must bee fedde, finde another way then this, to provide for them vichuall, that carryeth asmuch readinesse to service, and more contentation to your selves, and I assure you mine assistance to set it forward. But the Brokers of this libell are wont to reason. Why should not wee live without an Army as vvell as in England? Why cannot our Noble-men of might in every border , our tenants and servaunts vvithstand the Irish next them, as well as the Northerne Lordes and Inhabitants of Riddesdale and Tiddesdale and those about the Scottish banke resist the Scotts, facing and pilfering as fast as our enemyes. Very good, vvhat saye they then to Fraunce, which is no vvorfer governed then England, and hath an Armye. Italy notwithstanding as well ordered as Fraunce without an Army? Spaine aswell as either of them both, and continually keepes an Armyer I tell you, these are daungerous and hollovve kindes of Arguments wwhich

which are deduced ab exemplo, by example of other Realmes. Many subtile diversities, many varieties of circumstance, many exceptions alter the case, and make it utterly desperate. Touching Scotland it is well knowne, they were never the men whom England neede to feare: They are but a corner cut out, and easily tamed when they waxe outragious. Your foes lie in the bosome of your Countryes; more in number, richer of ground, desperate theeves, ever at an inch, unpossible to be severed from you without any fence, beside your owne valiantnes, and the helpe of our Souldiours. England is quiet within it selfe, thoroughly peopled on that side of Scotland, which most requireth it, guarded with an army, otherwise the Lords and Gentlemen, and lufty Yeoman, that dwell on a row are ready to maister their private vagaries. From all forraine invasions walled with the wide Ocean. Were there such a Seabetwixt you and the Irish, or were they shut up in an odde end of the land, or had they no such opportunityes of bogges and woods as they have, or were they Lords of the lesser part of Ireland, or were they severed into handfuls, not able to annoy whole towneships and Baronies as they doe, the comparison were somewhat like, but alacke it fareth not so with you, you are beset round, your townes be feeble, the land empty, the commons bare, every county by it selse cannot save it selfe. Take avvay the terrour and feare of our Bande, which increaseth your strength, many an Irish Lord would be set agog that novv is full lovely, and holdeth in his hornes, and the open enemy would scovere your quarters that nove dares not venture lest he pay for his passage. Consis der me the effect of an Army verought in these fevr yeares, for doubt whereof you are nothing to oft nor so lamentably pelted at, as your auncestors vvere, which of them durst be fored with coyne, knowing the rebells teeth watered there. at, and himselse not able to hold him out? vvhich of them had leisure to build, to lye soft and vvarme, to take his ease in his owne home? which of them were plated, or jewelled, or attyred themselves, their vivves and children sumptuously, after their calling as you doe now? If your bagges bee full vvhere

where theirs were lancke, if you dwell neatly where they dwelled homely, if you fleep on featherbeds where they flept on couches, if you be sumptuous where they were skant, you have the more cause to honour that Scepter, that so directeth you, and to love the warrant that procureth you this quietnes,

the mother of all your wealth and prosperity.

Therefore to conclude where I began, weigh well the ficke and wounded parts of your common wealth, cure the roote, regard the foundation, the principall pillars, the furmmer posts, the stone walles, as for the roose and the tyles, if yee repaire them onely, and suffer the ground worke to perish, a tempest of weather, a slovve will shake your building. Of some such good and substantial reformation I would advise you friendly to consult, and you shall sinde me as willing to preferre the generall welfare of you all, as I have been defirous to benefit every singular person of you, that hath in

any lawfull fuite attempted me.

These last words gave Sidney to the Realme, as it were for a farewell, and thenceforwards looked for Sir WV illiam Fitz VVilliams his brother in law, a politicke and stout gentleman, now Lord lustice, and for Sir John Perrot Lord president of Mounster, to be settled there, before his departure. He was honored at the point of his going, with such recourse, pompe, musicke, thewes & enterludes, as no man remebreth the like. He tooke ship towards England at the key of Divelin, in Lent following, accopanied to sea with the Estates & Worshipfull of Ireland, vvith innumerable hartyprayers, & vvith that vvish of his returne, whereof but fevy Governours in these last 60. yeares, have held possession. The man was surely much loved of them, from his first office of Treasurer in the 2. yeare of Queen Mary, stately vvithout disdaine, samiliar vvithout contempt, very continent & chast of body, no more then enough liberall, learned in many languages, & a great lover of learning perfect in blazoning of armes, skilfull of antiquities, of vvit fresh and lively in consultations very Temperate, in utterance happy, which his experience and wisedome hath made areificiall, a preferrer of many, a father to his servants, bothin warre and peace of commendable courage.

FINIS.

Sir Henry Sidney, Lord De puty faileth into England. 25. Mar. 1571.



Faults escaped.





THE CHRONICLE

IRELAND:

COLLECTED

MEREDITH HANMER,
Doctor of Divinity.

The second part.

Hree hundred yeeres after the flood, one Bartho-Bartholanus in lanus the sonne of Sera, with his three sonnes, Ireland. Languinus, Salanus, and Ruthurugus, and their wives of the posterity of laphet, are said to have arrived in this Island. This opinion followeth Giraldus Cambrensis, and him followeth Polychronicon; and my selfe, not meaning to swarve

from the common opinion, thought good to acquaint the posterity therewith. With this Bartholanus, as their Captaine, came many of that line, and multiplied exceedingly for the space of 300 years, to the number of 9000 fighting men. Little is remembred of Bartholanus, saving that with many hands he rid and made plaine a great part of the Country, making paces thorow woods and thickets; and that his sonnes left doubtfull remembrances of their names; the first to Languinus Poole, the second to mount Salanga (since named Saint Dominicks hill) and the third to Ruthurugus his Poole.

At the same time, according to the common saying, Where God

Oceanus inva. deth Ircland.

hath his Church, the Devill hath his Chappell, many of the curfed feed of Cham arrived also in this Island, with their Captaine Oceanus, the sonne of Cham, called of some Mena, of Moses, Mitzraim. First he was in the yeere of the world 1802, the second Commander of Æ. gypt, planted Colonies along the river Nilus, and after hee had reigned there 7 yeares, he endevoured by navigation to lubdue unto his Empire many parts of the world. Thus waxing firong and mighty upon the seas, hee prevailed much, and travelled farre; hee came to these North parts of the world, landed many of his followers, and in remembrance of his voyage, left his name upon the feas which wash these lands, which of him is yet called the Ocean sea.

After his departure hence his curfed line multiplied not so much in number as in all mischiese and rebellion, they set up a King of their

owne, they opposed themselves against the posterity of Iaphet; they were great in strength, and huge of stature, and attempted great mat-

ters after the example of Cham or Zoroastres the Magician, and Nimrod grandfather to Ninus: they repined at the bleffings bestowed up. on Sema: \ laphet, thinking it necessary to withstand and prevent all

lawfull rule and dominion, lest the curse of slavery prophecied by Noah should light upon them, as at length it did. Many bickerings and skirmilhes were amongst them, the successe was variable on both

fides, betweenethe lawfull governours and these usurpers, so much to the gricle of them that coveted to live in peace under their rightfull

Princes, that they determined with the chance of one generall battell either wholly to subdue those rebellious miscreants and tyrannous Giants, or elfe to end their lives in freedome, and so to be rid of farther

milery. They affemble together, they gather their forces out of all parts of the land, and comming to joyne battell with the Giants, after they had fought fiercely together for the space of certaine houres,

the victory inclined to the rightfull part, so that the lawfull Kings prevailing against this cursed brood, great slaughter was made upon

the whole fort of that pestiserous generation, and the Kings meaning to deliver themselues of all dangers in time to come, used their happy victory with great cruelty, which turned to their owne confusion.

For they spared neither man, woman, nor child that came in their way, for more despite and fuller satisfaction of their determinate re-

venge, neither vouchsafed they to bury the carkasses of their saine ecruely turneth nemics, but cast them out like a fort of dead dogs, whereof (through

to the hurr of stinke of the same) such an infective pestilence insued in all places the conquerors throughout the Island by corruption of the ayre, that few escaped

A grievous in- with life, except those that got them away by sea; yea the insection was so great of those cursed carkasses of Cham his posterity, that the

dogs and wolves died thereof. And here ended the whole race of

Bartholanus and his of-spring, and the Country (excepting a few filly

soules scattered in remote places) was unpeopled.

And

And here commeth in a tale yet in great request among the Iriffs, how that one Ruanus a Giant, fearing this mortality, fled into a cave, of Ruanus; and continued there till nature forced him to come forth for food and nourishment, so hungry was hee that every thing was meat that came to his mouth: hee covering his face with mosse and grasse, fled to the farthest parts of the land into the winde to avoid the infection, and to for a long time having taking the advantage of the ayre, escaped death. He is said to have lived two thousand and one and forty. yeeres (which is more then twice the age of Methushelah) vnto the time (forfooth) of Saint Patrick, to whom hee discoursed at large (fav thev) of all the accidents of former times: In the end he was of Saint Pairick baptized, and died after the birth of our Saviour, in the vecre 422, and lyeth buried at Loghry in Ormund, where there is a Church dedicated to his name, and he is numbred among the Confestors of Ireland.

And to fecond this fable with two precedent lies; the which I should have begun withall in the front of this History (as all IrishAnriquaries doe) but that I would not abuse the reader, being purposed beginning and ending to deliver the truth, I read as followeth:

Whereas in the yeere of the world 1525, Noah began to admo- Of cesara and nilh the people of vengeance to come by a generall deluge for the Finan. wickednesse and detestable sinne of man, and continued his admonition 120 yeeres, building an Arke for the safegard of himselfe and his family : one Cefara (lay they) according vnto others Cefarea, a Neece of Neah, (when others feemed to neglect this forewarning) rigging a navy, committed her selfe with her adherents to the seas to feeke adventures, and to avoid the plagues that were to fall; there arrived in Ireland, with her three men, Bithi, Laigria, and Fintan, and fifty women; within forty dayesafter her arrivall the universall flood came upon them and those parts, as well as upon the rest of the world. and drowned them all, in which perplexity of mindeand imminent danger beholding the waves overwhelming all things before their eyes, Fintanis faid to have beene transformed into a Salmon, and to have swoome all the time of the deluge about Vister, and after the fall of the water recovering his former shape, to have lived longer then Adam, and to have delivered strange things to the posterity, so that of him the common speech riseth; If I had lived Fintans yeeres 1 could say much.

But to let these fables passe: The next plantation after Bartholanus (as it is recorded amongst the collections of Irish antiquities) is this in effect, that Mageg the sonne of Taphet planted Colonies in Scythia neere the river of Tanais, from whence about the yeere of the world Anus mundi two thouland three hundred and seventeene, one Nemedus with his 2317 Nemefoure sonnes Starius, Garbaneles, Auvinus, and Fergusius, Captains du and his over great companies of armed men, were fent into this Island now arrive

called

Victory with

fection.

called Ireland. And passing by Gracia tooke with them such voluntaries as were willing to adventure with them, they landed, inhabited the Country, and multiplied exceedingly, although not without continuall warres which they held with the Giants of Chams posterity for the space of two hundred yeeres and odde. In the end the Giants prevailing, chased them out of the land, so that they retired into Scythia, and some to Greece. This was about the yeere after the crea. tion 2222, from which time the Giants kept possession of the land without forraigne invalion for many yecres, but yet in all that space their mindes not being fet upon any goodnesse, but altogether upon mischiefe, they made no good lawes, framed no commonwealth, they obeyed no Magistrate, but fell at variance amongs themselves, measuring all things by might, and feditiously vexed each other.

rbelus the Greck.

In the yeere of the world 2416, and after the universall flood 750 yeeres (as the Scottish History declareth) one Gathelus the sonne of Nealus a Grecian, upon displeasure for sundry rodes, made into Macedonia and Achaia, being exiled and banished his countrey, with a great number of his adherents and complices, went into Ægypt in the dayes of Moses, where he found favour in the sight of King Pharaob, infomuch that he married with Scota his daughter, continued there about 93 yeeres, and multiplied exceedingly. Iohannes Major Scotus calleth the verity of this History in question, de bacprima profectione de Gracia de Agypto figmentum reor : 1 am of opimion (faith hee) that this first going out of Greece and Agypt is but fayned: yet let us goe forward. When Gathelus understood that the land was fhortly for the wickednesse of the people to suffer great plagues, he prepared a fleet, shipped Grecians and Ægyptians, hoifed up faile, and came upon the coast of Numidia, now called Barbary, thence they were put back, to sea they went, and came to the coast of Spaine now called Portingall (as they fay) fince that time of him called Port-gathell: The inhabitants of the place relifted them, gave them a fore battell, and in the end after parlie, Gathelus was intreated, and by them directed to take his voyage into Galitia, which eftfoones he did. There in a short time they waxed so populous, that the countrey could not sustaine them: whereupon Gathelus called a Councell, and being refolved what to doe, tooke a great number of them with him to fea, and arrived in Ireland, and there grew into fuch eftimation with the barbarous people, that for knowledge especially in all languages (having travelled many Countreys, as is afore mentioned) he was highly honoured. For he not only enriched and beautified the Irish tongue, butalfo, as is said, taught them letters, sought up their antiquities, and trained their youth in warlike exercises, after the manner of the Grecians and Agyptians from whence he descended. Note here (gentle reader) before I wade further into this History three contrary opinions of this Gathelus the sonne of Nealus:

The Scottish Historiographers fay, it was 750 yeeres after the flood. Thomas Walfingham Monke of S. Albons, writeth it was 1000 yeeres and odde after the delivery of the children of Israel out of Ægypt (which must be anno mundi 3455, to wit, one 1000 yeeres after the former computation) calling him a noble man of Scythia whom the Ægyptians banished out of Ægypt. Iohn Harding, a great Antiquary (that knew best in his time the state of Scotland) delivereth, that Gathelus and Scota came to these parts after the birth of Christ, in anno 75. This I give as a cavear, referring unto the discreet reader the dissonance that I finde in the observation of times, to bee considered of, promifing to lay downe faithfully every thing as I finde the fame, as shall appeare in that which followeth. And now to the history where weleft. It is said that this Gathelus of his wife Scota commanded that his followers Grecians and Ægyptians should be called Seati, that is, Scottishmen. And Hector Boëtius in the History of Scotland sticketh not to write, that upon his marriage with Scota, the foresaid commandement was published, and that his followers in Ægypt, Barbary, Portingall, Galitia, and over Spaine, were called Scoti. But how true that is, it may appeare by the Roman Histories (which have noted the accidents of those times) in all which there is no mention of the Scots before the time of Constantius the Emperour (which was about the yeere of Christ 310 wholyeth buried at York, and was father to Constantine the great.

Paulus lovins writeth, Scotland tooke that name upon the comming of a forraine and no great ancient nation. No Latine writer before Marcellinus in Iulian the Emperours time (which was about the yeere 362) remembreth the Scots : neither doth it well appeare out of what Country the Scots first came into Albion, when as by the Annals not only of English, but of Scottish Antiquities varying among themselves, great obscurity is brought among doubtfull things. Some bring their originall from Ireland, others from Dania, Cimbrica, Cherfonesus, and the Ilands of Gothland and Norwey ; neither wanted there some which were of opinion, they came from Spaine, deriving the name of Scottishmen from Mofes himselfe, and the Boyptians, as Heltor Boetius the Scottifb Chronicler; yet Heller himselfe preventing as it were the like objection, confesseth that in the third yeere of Adrian the Emperor (which was after the birth of Christ about 122 yeeres) the Scot. Hift lib a:

name of Scots was not knowne unto the Romans.

In short time after the retinue of Gathelus searched the Northeast and North-west Ilands, and entred the Land which now is called Scotland, so also called (as the Scotish will have it) of Scota. But Hellor Boel. in many grave writers have flumbled at the certainty of this flory, yet descript regains I finde for certaine, that Ireland was called Scotia major, and the o- bifor, Scot. ther Scotia miner, and oftentimes confusedly the one taken for the other, and the words to be of no great antiquity. Capgrave in the life

Lobannes Capgrave in vita Santti Colum. Idem in vita Sancti Fiacrif, of Saint Columbanus faith : Ireland of old was called Svotland, from whence the Scottish nation inhabiting Albania (next wato great Britaine) now called Scotland tooke their originall. Fiacrius an Hermite being asked of a Bishop in France what hee was, among other things answered; Ireland the Iland of Scots is the native foile of mee and my parents. It also appeareth by Orosius, Claudian, Isidore, Hubaldus, Beda, the English Legend, the Martyrologe secundum usum Sarum, Marianus, Ionas in vita Sancti Columbani, Aimoinus, Cafarius, 476. that Ireland and Scotland were usually taken one for the other.

But before I goe any further, I thinke it not amisse to say som what to this word Scotts or Scotts, the which Hector Boëtius carrieth away as derived of Scota, and as thing granted. There came to this Countrey of Ireland at three leverall times, before Gathelus, great Commanders of Scythia (as I have faid before) of the posterity of Isphet, planted themselues, divided the land with great troubles, and when they were at the worst, alwayes they left a remnant of their nation behinde them. Beda every where calleth them not Scotes, but Scottes; fo that I finde in the word adouble alteration, y turned into o, and th into tt. Also in low Germany they call the Scythians and Scottilh, Schotten. Nennius the Britain writeth, Scytha Hiberniam obtinuerunt, the Scythians gat Ireland. King Alfredus translating the history of Orosius into the Saxon tongue, termeth the Scots, Segttan: The borderers upon Scotland, cal them to this day, Skyttes and Skets. Walfingham Writeth, Of the country called Sicia (alias Ssythia) wee baue Sciea, Sciticus, Scoticus, Scotus and Scotia. Ranulphus Monke of Chester, writeth, as Sir Iohn Trevisa the Priest in old English laid is downe: Scotts bene called as it were Scytes, for they came ont of Scytia. Matthew Monk of Westminster, saith, Ex Pittis dy Hibernensibus, Scotioriginem habuerunt, quasi ex diver sis nationibus compacti; Scot enim illud dicitur quodex diver sis rebus in unum acervum congregatur, deinde verò terra illa que prius Albania dicebatur à Scotis Scotia nuncupatur, (anno gratiæ 77.) Of Pittes and Irish the Scots had their originall, as it were compacted of divers nations; for that is salled Scot which of divers things is gathered into one heap, afterwards that Landwhich was first called Albania of the Scots is called Sco-

Beda Ang.bift. . 116.1.6ap.1.

And Beda writeth that the Country now called Scotland was inhabited by Pictesthat were Scythians; agains, In processe of time (laith be) Britaine besides Britaines and Pictes received a third nation that is of Scots upon the file of the Pictes.

Folat geograph. lib.3. Ao. Maior de

Of the same opinion is Volateran and Johannes Major Scotus, although Hector Boetius diffemble it. Richard Staniburst the great geft. Seot. 1.11.c.4. Philosopher and Antiquary of Ireland, Writeth, A quo primum ini-De rebus Hiber. tio Scotte nomen fit tractum, nondem plane per frestum video, &c. Of what first originall the word Scotia is drawne, I have not yet found out.

And touching the truth of the History of Gathelus and Scota, hee saith; To the end the worthinesse of so great a mariage delivered unto the posterity should florish, all these Grecians call themselves Scots; and Ireland where they first seased themselves, Scotiam. But all this as a vaine fable George Buchanan, and before him Humfrey Lloide bave auite relected, and if Hector Boëtims bee not the chiefe forger of this hiftory, or rasher vaine fable, yet he hath besprinckled (after his manner) the whole discourse with lies. With great ambition hash that filly writer labored to advance the glory of his nation, in the which endeauour. hee bath little regarded the honour of his Country and his owne credit. For be hath purchased this among st the learned, that where as he would seeme towrite all for the love of the truth, they will beleeve in a manner nothing to be true which he wrote: For to what purpose should he commend to the posterity the acts of his ancestors with such maiesty of words, chas shey have quaited the Spansard; vanquished the Irish with their only austere countenance triumphed asoften as pleased themselves over the bordering Britaines; where they pitched foot, subjected all as furious victors : that then maist think the Scottish not so much to have invaded forraigne Countryes, as to have removed to their proper pofsessions. These fabulous dreames happely may move admiration to some old wives, applause to some Abderas, and laughter to the discreete reader. The Scorish had as other nations tofore (though now famous) base beginning, dasked and obscured with some barbarous rudenesse, and this had beene more discretion to confeste, then to vaunt or crake among the ignorant, with boast of their fained doings. Thus farre Stanis burit:

And now (with Hector Boetius his leave) as the followers of Gathelus and his wife Scota in Egypt, Greece, Barbary, Portugall, Galitia, and over all Spaine, were not called Scoti (as before is remembred) no more were they termed in Ireland and Scotland, but corruptly of Scyta, Scott, comming originly out of Scythia. And it were more honour in mine opinion for thele nations, to derive their originall from Scythia then from Egypt, for two causes; first for that the Scythians are more ancient then the Egyptians, as Trogus, Volateran, and Marianus Scotus do write; secondly for that the Scythians come of tapher that was bleffed, and the Egyptians of Cham that was accurled, but in this cale leaving every man to his owne choice; I will returne the History.

In the antiquities of Ireland it is generally received that Gashelies (of whom I spake before) gave the Irishmen the language, which of him they call Gaodhealgh in British Gwidhealaec, that is, a language compounded of many tongues, and fo it may well be ; for by reason of his great trauell he had skill in many tongues. Although, as they fay, he were a Grecian borne, yet I finde no Greck in the Irilatongue yet for their comming from Spaine, which they fo much urge, 164

Laur. Sureus

Bedigues.

reulanies:

Jo. Maior. bift. hannes Major Scotus for sooth hath found one Spanish word, bona dies, in Irish vennoka die; to which I answere, una hirundo non facis wer; but indifferently to examine the matter, wee finde that diversity of times, alteration of government, invalion of strangers, planting of new Colonies, and converfing with forraigne nations doe alter languages. The Hebrewes by reason of their peregrination and captivities do smach of the Chaldees, Syriack, and Arabick tongues. The Slavonian tongue, as Surius and others record, without exception, at this day is the most dispersed language upon the earth; for the Muscovites, Ruthenes, Ruffians, Dalmatians, Boinenses, Croatians, Istrians, Carnians, Garniolanians, Carinthians, Stirians, Mæsians, Servians, Bulgarians, with other nations reaching to Constantinople, as Bohemians, Lusarians, Silesians, Moravians, Polonians, Circasians, Quinquemontanians, even unto Pontus, and the remnant of Vandals, beyond the river Albis, through Germany, into the North, have the language, and yet we have neither their characters, nor ancient Annals extant. Saint Ierome borne in Strido in the confines of Dalmatia and Pannonia, is faid to have translated the Bible into the Slavon tongue, but whether it be in that language extant, let him report that knoweth it. Gotbi, Hypogothi, Gepidi, Vandali, Hunni, Alani, though they vary in name, yet they vie one language, saith Paulus Diaconus. The Italian, Spanish, and French tongues are compounded of the Latine. The German (high and low country) Saxon, Scottish and English have great affinity. Northwales, Southwales, Cornwall, and little Britaine in France, as Cambrensis and Sir 10. Price have learnedly discoursed; but the Irish (excepting the Redshanks and the Scottish of the have londe) have affinity with no tongue (as I can learne) more then with the British language.

Many reasons there are (gentle reader) to induce thee to bee of that opinion; first of all according unto the first command, the Celticke tongue was of force in all these Northerne parts. Bodinus writeth, that the Britishand Celtick language was all one. Pausanias the Grecian maketh mention how the Celts in their language called a horse Marc, and three horses Trimare, the which the Welshman ufeth to this day with a gutturall alteration, Margh and Treemargh. Also Camden the learned Antiquary of this our age, is of this opinion (remembring the story of Gurguntius, and the infinite number of British words in ure among the Irish, the which he termeth, infinitant wim Britannicarum dictionum) that the Britaines first peopled this land. And although of a long time (by reason of troubles and alterations) the speech grew wholly out of vie; yet afterwards in successe of time it was revived. Secondly the British and Irish oft matched together, fo that there grew among them great alliance and affinity to the furtherance of the language. Mare King of Cornwall anno 459 married with Label Ifode that built Ifodes Chappell (or Chappell-I-

fode) and Ifodes Tower in Dublin, shee was the King of Irelands daughter. Edwal ap Meirie Prince of Wales in the time of Edelred. anno 902 married in Ireland. Jago ap Edwal Prince of Wales in the time of Coute, anno 102 I married in Ireland. In the time of Edward the Confessor, Conan the sonne of Iago Prince of Wales married with Ranulph daughter of Alfred King of Dublin, anno 1041. In the time of William Rufus, Arnulph Earle of Pembroke married with the daughter of Marogh King of Ireland anna 2101; at the same time Magnus the sonne of Herald married with another daughter of the faid King. In the time of Henry the first and King Steuen lived Griffith ap Conan Prince of Wales, that was wont to brag of three things, that his mother was an Irishwoman, his grandmother an Irishwo. man, and that hee himselfe was borne, and of a child brought up in Ireland. In the time of Henry the second. Biryd the some of Owen Gwyneth Prince of Wales, being Lord of Cloghran in Ireland, begat his sonne Howel upon an Irish Gentlewoman. In the same Kings raigne Richard Strangbew Earle of Pembroke, married with Eva the daughter of Dermoste Mac Morrogh King of Leinster. Thirdly, when there was any trouble in Ireland, they fled to Wales, when they had any warres or rebellion there, they came for refuge and aide into Ireland : hereof came the shaking of hands, Brother Brangagh, Brother Erinagh. In the life of Henry the third, it is written, that when Othobon the Popes Legate came to Oxford, and soiourned at Osney Abbey, among other schollers, some for one cause, some for another. that were there, a poore Irish scholler (Matthew Paris calleth him Capellanum Hibernensens) drew neere unto thekitchin dresser, and praid for some releese; the cook took a ladell full of hot liquor and threw it in his face; a VVelch scholler standing by tooke his bow, and shot the cook through with an arrow (Stom writeth that the cook was the Legates brother) the hurly burly was great, the schollers came together in armes (and as it is faid, one Odo of Kilkenny was their enfigne bearer) the Cardinalsmen were well beaten, the Cardinall himselfe to save his life fled secretly at a posterne gate to the King, made a grievous complaint, and craved the aide of armed men to fetch off his men, and thereof arole great troubles; but to proceed. Dermotte Mac Morogb King of Leinster, being banished out of his country, had aideout of VVales. Conan the sonne of Iago, Griffith ap Conan, Rees ap Temder, Owen the sonne of Gadegan, Kadwalader the sonne of Griffith ap Conan, Marleon ap David, Princes of Wales; Algar Earle of Chefter, Arnulph Earle of Pembroke, Magnus the sonne of Herald, William de Bruse Lord of Breknock, with his wife and children, in extremity, tooke Ireland for their refuge, wherethey found favor and kindnesse to their own hearts desire, as in the British Chronicles published by Caradoc of Sancarban, Cambrenfis, Homfrey Lloid, and Doctor Powel, doth more plainly appeare. These two

nations conversed much one with another; Sir Tristram one of the Knights of the round Table, came to Ireland. Morogb brother to the King of Ireland (whom Caxton calleth Morhans) was one of King Arthurs Knights. Merlin the Welch Prophet came twice to Ireland, and in Ofaby there is a Chappell bearing his name: the occasion of his first comming was this. There was a noble man of Ireland which had a fuit unto the King of England, with whom Merlin was great, to whom he faid, Merlin, if thou wilt effect my fute, come to Ireland, and I will give thee as much land as thou shalt see round about thee: it was done; after his arrivall, Merlin demanded his promile, the noble man put him into a cellar, where was a grate, and without a bawne, with an high wall, looke out (faith the Irish man) the Welch Prophet could not fee a quoits cast from him, and thus was he deceived, having left his spirit of prophecy at home. But to our

purpole.

Fourthly, the first conquerors in Henry the teconds times, that brake the ice into this land, were Welch men, whose names and seates to this day are fresh in memory. Rees ap Temder Prince of Southwales had a daughter called Nesta, who by King Henry the first had iffue, Henry, and he had iffue Meiler Fitz Henry and Robarts the was afterwards married to Stephan, and he had iffue, Robart Fitz Stephan, and his issue were Radulph and Mereduk, shee had a third husband, Giraldus Steward of Pembroke, whose mother was Gladys the daughter of Rywall ap Conyn, this Girald had iffue by her, Manrice Fitz Gerald, William Fitz Gerald, and David Bishop of Menevia now called Saint Davids : Maurice Fitz Gerald had iffue, Willia am, Girald, Alexander, and Nefta a daughter, wife to Harvey de Monte Marisco; William Fitz Gerald had issue (by Ellen sister to Earle Richard Strongbow) Reimund and Griffin, of these descend all the Geraldins in Ireland. A neece (a fifter fay others) of Robart Fitz Stephans and Maurice Fit & Gerald married with one Barry, and hee by her had issue, Robart Barry, Philip Barry, Walter Barry, and Girald Barry (otherwise called Giraldus Cambrensis the great Antiquary) of these descendall the Barries in Ireland. There came with them and after them out of Wales, the Prendergaftes, Welches, Whites, Goughes, and Williams, now called Mac William of the North:

The Irish Chroniclers, as David Curren, Nicolas Maguize (bothsom) times Bishop of Leighlin) and others, call them Brittones, Wallones, and Wallenies: It is a name the Saxons gave them; though they were the true natives of Britaine, yet they called them Wellhmen. that is, Arangers, as more at large is to bee seen in Cambrensis. These gave VVelsh names to places, which continue to this day, in the Dioces of Leighlin there is a town called villa Wallicoru, the town of Welflamen. Carreg & Craig in the British or Welsh tongue is a Ron, orrock, and of the Britaines, Carregfergus, Carreggmons-Griffin, Carregg in

Shurie, Carriggwaspani, and Craigwading have their names. Likewise Llis in British is a Court or Palace, of that in Ireland you have Lismore, Lissenyn, Lislofty, Lismakery. Glan and Glynare British words, of them have you Glangibbon, Glandeboy, Glan Reynald, Glynbarry, Glyndelory, Glynmolowra, &c. Inis an lland, is British and Irish, of which kind are Inistircan, Inisshoven, Inisdick, Inisfiag, Inifcorthie, and the like. Reth a moat or round trench (whereof there are many in Ireland made by the Danes) if Beda had not faid that it was a Saxon word, I would have faid it had been British, and how many names of places are compounded with it in Ireland, were too long to rehearle. I will here give Staniburst leave to conclude, Omnes infula locos et lucos Wallici nominis gloria implevit; the renowne of the Welsh name (faith he) bath filled all the wayes and woods of the Iland.

The British words among them are infinite, the which, as I think, the Irish have taken hold of, and have caused to vary little from their

speech, for example.

Britifh,	Bara	Bread.
Irifb,	Ran	Spread.
Br.	Died	76.
Ir.	Diogh	Sprink.
Br.	Tan	Ž
Ir.	Tine	Fire.
Br:	Dras	. 5
Ir.	Dyrrus	&a Doore.
Br: Ir.	Itbyn	Firres.
Br.	Ityn	5
Ir.	Mawn	Turfe:
Br. Ir.	Gaver	Za Goat.
Br.	Gawr	
Ir.	Mawr	&Great?
Br.	More	
Ir.	Myn Mynan	}a Kydde,
Br. Ir.	7 7	}a House in both.
Br. Ir.	Scadan Scadan	Ža Herring.
Br.	Diagon	
Ir.	Carregg	}in botha Rock.
Br. Ir.	Teer Tyr	Zland or ground.
Br. Ir _e	Sidam	Zin both Silke

Samb descrip. Brit.cap.7.

Ireland, anno mundi 2535.

```
Br.
                    Sin both a leg or foot.
Ir.
Br.
          Sane
                    La paire of hole or stockins.
          Fellane
Ir.
          Losky in both burning or burnt.
Ir.
Br.
          Bern and Berny in both fod.
Ir.
Br.
                     in both a like.
          Glyn
          Duffrey
                    in both alike.
          Duffrin
Br.
          MAG
                     a forme.
Ir.
          Mac
Br.
          Cuanid
Ir.
          Cunnogh
Br.
          Knaie
٤r.
          Knoe
Bra
          Kwyr
Tr.
          Kwyragh S
Br.
          Cantref
          Cantrud San hundred townes
Ir.
Eng.
          Cantred
Br.
          AVOR
                     a river.
Ir.
          Owen
          Moil in both bald.
          Mantagh in both toothlesse.
```

And thus much of the Irish language occasioned by the history of Gathelus and Scota; now to the history, from whence I scare mee I have too long digressed. The hard successe of Nemedus before spoken of, and the departure of Gatbelus (as hath beene said) to the Northeast Ilands, and North parts of Britaine, now called Scotland, moved five brethren, the sonnes of one Dela of the posterit pof Nemedus, being valiant men, and skilfull in the Art of Navigation, to make ready a great fleet, and to attempt the conquest of this Iland. These were, as I presently said, of the posterity of wemedus, and were named, Gandius, Gennadius, Sagandus, Rutheranius or Rutheragus, and Slanius, of whom Slane hath the denomination; when they had made preparation, affembled forces, and fet all in a readinesse, they hoised up faile, and in short time arrived in Ireland, about the yeere of the world

After their arrivall, and view had of the land; they found the puissance of the Chamesite Giants sore weakned through their owne civill diffention, so that with more ease then they looked for, they atcbieved

chieved their purpose, wanne the whole country, utterly destroyed and rooted out that wicked generation (enemies to God and man) but spared as many as they found of taphets line, divided the Iland into five parts, and in each of them they severally reigned. This was the first division parts, and in each of them they severally reigned. division of Ireland, the discourse whereof I will referre to another place. Furthermore for the satisfaction of all parties, and perfect league to be had among these brethren, and their posterity, they concluded to fix a meare stone in the middle point of Ireland, to the which each of their kingdomes should reach, so as they might in equality partake of the commodities found in that Iland. Of these alfoit is said, that they invented the distribution of Shires into Cantreds, every Cantred or Barony to containe one hundred townships: but of this in another place. When they had for a certaine space sea. ted themselves (say the Irish Antiquaries) and found warmth and wealth about them, every one began to looke big, and grow ambitious, so that in processe of time, desire of Soverainty set the five brethren at variance, which in the end tended to their destruction. In this civill diffention it is written, that Slanius the yongest through the aid of some old inhabitants, got the upper hand, brought his source brethren to a low estate, attributed unto himselse the title of supreme honour over them, and encroched round about the middle stone and fixed meare aforesaid, for the space of certaine miles; which plot in time, obtained the priviledge and name of one entire plot, or part, and maketh up the number of five parts, into the which Ireland is commonly divided, and is called Meth, in Latine Media, and of some Mi- Meth why so dia, taking that name (as some haue guessed) for that in respect of called. the other parts, it contained but the moity of Cantreds, that is, fix-

of IRELAND.

that it lieth in the midst of the land. These encrochments Slanius annexed to his inheritance and Monarchy, which Monarchy continued thus, the space of thirty yeeres, and then Slanius departed this life, and was buried in a mountaine of Meth, that beareth hitherto the name after him. After his decease the Princes that before were subject unto him, began to gather heart, stomached the matter, and denied their obedience to his successour: whereupon enfued continuall warre amongst them, and especially about the land of Meth, which strife of long time could not bee appealed, yet in the space of thirty yeeres aforesaid, of these brethren and their successors there were nine Kings. In the neck of all these mischieses and hurlyburlies (say the Irish antiquities) there came a fleet of Scythians upon the coast, landed their men in Ireland, made Invasion of claime to the land, by a title of right which they pretended from their Scythians. forefather Nemedus (of whom mention is made before) so that by partaking with the one side and the other, all was in an uproare, havock was made on each fide with fire and sword in most miserable

teene, where each of the other contained thirty and two; or else for

manner.

Anno mundi

2828

manner. They spent themselves in pursuing one another with such outrage, that they cared not what nation, or what fouldier they received to their aid, to hold up, or beat downea side. Both the one and the other sent for aid into the Ilands now called England and Scotland, Orchades, Hebrides, &c. and acquainted forrainers with their state so farre, that they could never after be rid of them, to wit, the Britaines, till in the end they yeelded unto them the upper hand, as by conquests, in processe of the history, shall appeare. Note (gentle reader) how that hitherto, that is, the veere of the world 2828, and before the birth of Christ 1142, these North parts of the world, as England, Scotland, Ireland, with other Iles, were possessed, commanded, and inhabited by the posterity of Iaphet and Cham, the sonnes of Noah, without any speciall name given to the lands, or to the Commanders of them, otherwise then Samothei, Celta, Oceanes, Neptumists, and Albions, although I have hitherto used the names now in ure (for the plainer delivery of the history) as if they had beene knowne before; neither were any called Scots as Hector Boëtime would have it.

Anno mundi 3580

Gurguntius meeteth with Bartholin, His ber and Her-

After the times of the former troubles which happened in Ireland upon the landing of the Scythians, I finde nothing of Ireland till the dayes of Gurguntius (the sonne of Belinus) who began his raine, according to the ordinary account anno mundi 2580, and reigned 19 yeeres over Britaine. This King after his victory atchieved in Denmark (for his tribute which they there had refused to pay him) returning back toward Britaine, met by the Iles of Orkeney, with a navy of thirthy thips (Stanyhurst saith 60) with men and women, whose Generali was called Bartholin or Partholin; in Ponticus Virunius Partolom; in Flores Historiarum, Parthelaim; in Gualter Oxoniensis, Bartholome; in Fabian, Harding, Grafton, and Caxton, Irlamal; of whom they thinke the country to be called Ireland. Gurguntius demanded of them what they were, and the occasion of their travell, their answer was, they were Spaniards, and had long beene on the feas, feeking to finde some favourable Prince, to affigne them a place of habitation, for that their country was so populous, that it could not containe them, (others write that for some disordered parts they were banished their country) and where they found favour, they would become subjects, and hold of him as their soveraigne Lord. In this fleet with the Governor of Baion, their Generall (before named) there were foure brethren of noble birth, the sonnes of Milesius (others fay, Miletus, and others Mile) the two chiefe of which were called Hiberus and Hermon. And beside the former differences in the parents name, Dewling writeth in his Irish collections, that they were the sonnes of Inbal; Hector Boëtius avoucheth they were the sonnes of Gathelus and Scota; Stanihurst affirmeth that Scota was great or old grand-dame to Hiber and Hermon, others write they were of the posterity

postcritie of Gathelus and Scota, whereas Gathelus (if there were any fuch) was a Grecian, and Scota an Egyptian, Hiber and Hermon, Spaniards: see (gentle Reader) how these reports hang together.

samards: see (gentie Reader) now their reports hang, observed.

Gurguntius being aduited by his Councell, pittying their necessia-veth Iteland to tic and wandring estate, granted them the Iland now called Ireland, them. to inhabite, and that they should become tributaries to him and his fuccessors, the Kings of Britaine for ever: For hee called to minde that the inhabitants were an unruly people, and thought by this meanes to subdue them, and quietly to enjoy his tribute; for it seemeth that the Britaines made claime to Ireland, to which effect I reade in the Booke of Houth, that Gurguntius came into Ireland, and Booke of that the land many a yeare paid him truage, and to other Kings of Houth, Britaine after him; but as oft as they put foote in the land, they got more knocks then pence, faith an Irish Chronicler, The King of Britaine haffening homeward, gave them Pilots, and lafe conductors for their arivall and possession of the land.

Hiberus and Hermon after their arivall, by the affent of all their Hiber and Here affociates, divided the land betweene them; the North to Hiber, and mon divide the South to Hermon. But ambition, the mother of mischiese, would two parts. not long suffer them to enioy peace, but rent their hearts with fierie diffention, inflamed their mindes to defire one Soueraigne and ablolute commander over the whole land, they gather forces, they mufer their men, they put on Armes, and to battaile they goe, in which field Hiberus was flaine, (though Hector Boetim write, that he went One brother into Spaine to fucceed his father) and Hermon became Monarch of all killeth ano. murmure of his people, and the cuill opinion (in a manner) of all men Monarchof conceived against him, and peaceably to governe the land, fell to Ireland. purge himselfe, and caused the occasion of the warres to be proclaimed, that he bore armes against his naturall brother, not of malice or defire of foveraigntie, but in defence of his owne person, and lafety of his people; and for proofe, that his heart was farre from defire to rule alone, he appointed certaine Captaines, as Kings, to command under him certaine Countries, reserving unto himselfe, one sourth part, and the Country of Meth annexed to the Monarchie, for the better maintenance of his princely estate.

By this meanes, this Realme of Ireland in processe of time, grew to Ireland divifive kingdomes; the first Leinster, on the East side or quarter, called ded into five in Latine Lagenia, and in Irish, Cuige-Laghen. The second, Conaght, on the west side of the kingdome, called in Latine Connacia, and in Irish, Cuige-Chonoght. The third, Vister, which is the North part of Ireland, named in Latine, Vltonia, and in Irish, Guigh-Vlladh, The fourth, Mounster, South and South-west, in Latine, Momonia, and in the country speech, Cuige Mughan. The fift and last, a plotte defalked from these parts, called Meth, comprising (as they are now

B 2

called)

called) as well East-Meth as West-Meth, in Latine, Midia, or Me-Divers divisi- dia, in Irish, Mbidbe. And here must not bee forgotten, that there hath beene in these kingdomes great change and alteration by usurping and compounding among themselves, and by dividing of Countries, as we finde Mounster was into two parts, and fince have beene there great Earles, deriving their names of Mounster, ormond in Irish, Oirther Mughane, Defmond, in Irish, Deasmughain, and Thomond in Irish, Tuathmughain, the which an Italian comming into Ireland, meruailed at, when he inquired what great men dwelled in the land, for he understood ormand, to bee orbis mandi, the round world; Defmond, decem mundi, ten worlds, Thomond, duo mundi, two worlds, profetto, faid he, valde gloriosi tituli, assuredly these are very glorious titles. So were therealfo in processe of time, divers other leffer kingdomes, as by the processe of the historie will very well appeare. And here for this time leaving to discourse farther of the Irilh kingdomes, I conclude with this one remembrance, that from time to time there was one chosen to be chiefesoveraigne Moalwaies in Ire-narch ouer themall; and the number of Monarchs from Hermon to Langirius, the sonne of Nealus Magnus, that is, great Neale) in whose time S. Patricke converted them to Christianitie, amounteth to an hundred thirty and one.

And now backe againe to the historie where we left. It is faid that

of Hiber or Hiberus, (who was flaine, as hath aboue beene recorded)

Ireland was called Hibernias certaine it is with the concordance of

A Monarch

Treland called Hibernia.

of Ireland,

Stainburst de

most and the best antiquaries, that the land was not called Hibernia, neither right Spanlard arived here before the daies of Gurguntius. Divers names Divers writershaue diverfly delivered the original name of the land, fome corruptly, fome poetically, fome etymologically. Ierna, Iuvernia, Ibernia, Overnia, Vernia, Iris, of the Britaines, Ywerdhon, of the Irish themselues Erin, and tooke that name of Fin Erin, (of whom at large in the booke of Housh) of the Saxons and English it is called Ireland, that is, the land of Erin. All these names originally grew of Hiberus the Spaniard, or in remembrance of Iberus the fecond King of Spaine; who was the sonne of Tuball, the fift sonne of Taphet. Annius Viterbiensis writeth, that of this King, the river is called Iberus amnis, Spaine Iberia, and the inhabitants about the river, Iberi. This land of Ireland hath also beene called Scotia Major, reb.Hib. pa.17. (Scotland the greater) after the birth of Christ, but that came of corrupting the word Scytha, as I faid before. Lastly, it hath beene called Banno of the Poets or Bardes of the land : Staniburft thinketh it was so called of the Banne, a river in the County of Weixford, the place is now called Bagganbun, where the Britaines vpon the conquest arived, and thereof is the rime,

At the creeke of Bagganbun, Ireland was yloft and wonne.

But for this ancient name Banno, and other the like which the Po- camden in ets of Ireland haue in use, I reserre the courteous reader to learned Hebernias Camden, in his treatise of Ireland, about the beginning.

Lanquet in his collections of antiquities, noteth that the Scottills Languet ad historiographers about the yeere of the world, 3652. beginne their Annum 3652. histories at Fergus, the sonne of Fergubard, King of Ireland, that he should come with great power out of Ireland, to their aide against the Pictes, and that they favoured him so much, that they chose him Anno mundi. King, and that hee raigned ouer them in Scotland 25. yeeres, and 36521 how that in his raigne he flue Coile, King of Britaine, at what time by generall consent, there was no Scottilh man then commanding in Albania, no Pict arthat time seene in Britaine or Ireland, nor Coile King of Britaine in many yeares after. I am of Lanquets opinion, thus he writeth, Thefe histories of the Scots, as they fet them forth, bee full of errors, and agree with none other historians. Notwithstanding this Item may not Roppe the course of the historie, and therefore whether he came out of Ireland, (as we here take it) or out of Denmarke, (as fome haue thought) well he might be King of Albania, for so was it then called, and not Scotland, and so from him I will terme them Kings of Albania, untill I finde the name scots knowne amongst forraigne writers.

This Fergus (faith Buchanan) having orderly disposed of his af-Ferguñu. faires in Albania, went into Ireland to pacifie and quiet troubles Buchanan. there rifen, and hoifing faile for his returne into Albania, he and all his company were call away in a tempest vpon the rockes at a place of him now called in the British and Irish tongues Karregsergus, or Craigfregus (corruptly in English, Knockfergus.) It is written that he advanced in his banner, a red Lyon Rampant, with his tailefolden toward his backe, as it were moved with anger, the which his fuc-Armes of Hercessors since have used. After this his infortunate decease, there rose gusius. great strife about the succession, his two sonnes, Ferlegus and Mainus were young, and many exceptions were made against them, in the end, the two sonnes were put beside, and the eldest of the sept (after the Irish Tanistrie) tooke place, which fell upon Feritbaris an Irish man, brother to Fergus. And this Tanistrie continued (saith Bucha- Tanistrie of nan) unto Kenathus 3. during the raigne of fourescore Kings. But I Ireland used in must leave them, and follow onely what concerneth Irish businesse.

About the yeere of the world, faith Languet, 3750. and odde (not Anno mundi, allowing as he protested before, but following the Scottish histories, 3750. oue Reuthar, commander of the invaders in Albania, (now called Reuthar. Scotland) was vexed with civill warres, and by the Britaines, banished into Ireland, where he lived twelve yeeres. See more of him in Hettor Boetius, and Buchanan. The 9. King Albaniensium Scotorum, (Staniburst calleth them) was Iosina Thereus, and is the next that Iosina Thereus. feemeth to have any right or interest in the Irish historie. This man

was bred and brought up in Ireland, and favoured the nation (faith Eo. Pale cent. 14. Bale) above all others; he fought peace of all men, honoured Chirurgions, Physicians and Druydes of Ireland; raigned 24 yeeres, and so ended his daves.

Gillus.

The next that concerneth our purpole, is Gilles the usurper, who through much treason, and many murthers, aspiring to the Crowne of Albania, and deservedly falling into the hatred and mislike of all his subjects, was at length forced by his Nobles, (who rose in Armes against him) to take a fisher-boate and flee into Ireland, where hee was promifed aide; but to prevent further mischiese, one Gadall is appointed generall of an Armie, to pursue the tyrant into Ireland, and meeting him in the field, drove Gillus to flee. When the Irish men had forfaken him, he hid himselfe in a denne, invironed with woods and bogs, where shortly after, an Irish Kerne, for reward, found him out, cut off his head, and brought it to Cadall, after he had tyrannized three yeeres. He was the thirteenth King of Albania.

Dane taketh Dublin.

Denmarke.

Alb, Krant. Dan.

lib.1.cap. 3 2.

Saxo Gr. bift.

Dan,lib. 5.

In the time of Augustus Cafar, a little before the birth of our Saviour, Fridelenus King of Denmarke, puffed vp with pride, through some fortunate successes, arrived in Ireland, laid siege to the Citie of Dublin, and finding it not so easie a matter to atchieue, fell to policie; he caught certaine Swallowes that bred in the Citie tyed fire to their wings, who flying to their nefts, fired the houses; while the Citizens endevoured to quence the fire, the Danes entred the Citie, and

Wanne it.

The King of Leinster after this, gathered forces, and gave the Danes battaile, in which, many fell on both sides; Fredelnus seeing the enemy increase, and his armie decrease, fled the land, and retired Frotho King of into his country. His sonne Frotho, the third of that name, King of Danes (so Albertus Krantzius, and Saxo Grammaticus record) wantonly affailed the Britaines, (lustrans magis insulam quam subigens) rather taking a view of the Iland, then subduing it, afterward relinquishing that course, put foot in Ireland. The historiographers of that side, report hardly of the land, and the inhabitants thereof, and in fine they write, when Cepo the Irish King was overthrowne and put to flight, his brother Kervill (faith Saxo, I take it to be O Carroll) offered tribute, wherewith the Danes being pacified, returned to their Country. This Frotho peopled the Orchades with Danes, and appointed Revillus their commander.

Whilst this Frothe King of Danes was Monarch of Ireland, the light of the world, the comfort of all Christians, I E s v s C H R I S T

IESVS CHRISTIS borne. Claudius. Arviragus. Flor.biftor.

the some of God was borne in the flesh. About the 44: yeere after the incarnation of our Lord, (Claudius the Emperour having appealed the troubles of Britaine by the aide of Arviragus, (as Mathew Westmonasteriensis saith) subdued Orchades, Hebrides, Thule, and all the Ocean Ilands, among the which.

which, Ireland is reckoned, the which Beda and Eutropius have like-Beda eccle, bif. wise remembred. But Fabian, Grafton, Holinshed, and Ponticus Viru-Angl. lib. 1. c. 7.
Eutropius renius say further, that he sent certaine legions of Knights into Ireland rum Rom. lib, 8, to subdue the same, what successe they had, is not recorded, a legion confisting of 6666. (as ancient VV riters record) no doubt they performed some great exploit. Learned Gamden writeth of the Brigan. Camden pa. 5 57 tes (the inhabitants of Yorkeshire, Lancashire, the Bishopricke of Brigantes, Durham, Westmerland and Cumberland were so called) how that in the time of Claudius (as I take it) many of them went to end their dayes in Ireland, and of old were called the Brigantes of Ireland. His words are these, Quod verò Florianus Del Campo Hispanus, nostros Florianus del Brigantes, egc. Whereas Florianus Del-Campo the Spaniard, hath Campo. somewhat arrogantly derived our Brigantes from Spaine into Ireland. and thence into Britaine, being aided by no other conjecture, but that he found in his Country of Spaine, the Citic Brigantia; I feare mee hee hath fouly deceived himselfe. For if the like cause have not given ours and the Brigantes of Ireland the same name, I had rather be of opinion with my most learned friend Thomas Savill, namely, that certaine Brigantes and other nations of Britaine also, even from the comming of the Romansinto Britaine, departed into Ireland, some for quietnesse sake. and to line at ease, some for that their eyes should not be infected with the fight of the Roman dominion, and last of all others, lest in their latter age they should willingly seeme to lose the libertie which from nature they had received in their youth. And that Claudius the Emperour, first of any Romane tooke the Brigantes in hand, and subjected them to bis Empire and command: Seneca sheweth in these his verses.

> Ille Britannos Vltra noti littora ponti, de caruleos Scuta Brigantes, dare Romulais colla catenis

The Britaines farre from knowne feas, and Brigantes Bucklers blue, The Roman Claude to Roman becke did bring, and rebels flue.

Claudins having effected all his affaires, (as formerly hath been delivered) returned to Rome: then faith Gualter Oxon. Omnia regna Arvirago tradidit, be delivered all these king domes to Arviragus. He committed them al to his charge, saith Ponticus Virunias. In Matthen Westmonsteriensis I reade, regimen insulare Arvirago cessit, the command of the Ilands fell to Arviragus. Harding hath delivered it in verse.

SCHECA.

Orchades Isles in the meane time be conquered. In which he infeoffed the King, and him preferred:

About this time, Frotho the fourth of that name, King of Danes,

Saxo Gram.bift. Dan.libe 6. Albertus Krantz Den. Froibo 4.

(some 20. yeeres after the former invasion, saith mine Author) sent great power of Giants out of Denmarke, under the leading of bloudy Haco and the great challenger and huge monster Starcuterus, to invade Ireland. The occasion was as followeth: Starcuterus (before mentioned) being borne farre in the East by reason of shipwracke, having lost both his ship and fellowes, was cast upon the coast of Denmarke, and hearing of the fame of Frotho, came to his Court. This Giant was greatly admired for stature and strength of body. Froshe commanded a great navie to be in a readinesse, with all manner of necessary provision, made him an arch-pirate, and turned him to the Sea to feeke adventures. They touched many lands, and fought with many Giants, at length (faith mine Author) that no Country, though never so remote, should bee freed from the smart of Danish forces, they arived in Ireland. Huglet, King of Ireland, gave them battaile, in the which, Huglet was flaine, and all the Irish put to flight. And yet mine Author, though a Dane, highly commendeth two Irish Lords, Segathus and Suibdanus, the one wounded Haso, the other gave Starcuterus such a blow, that he stood a great while amazed, and had beene flaine, had he not beene rescued. The battaile being ended. facked by them the Danes tooke (Dufflinian) Dublin, ransackedit, and found great flore of treasure, and some of them remained in the land, the rest re-

Dufflania or

Mate and Star

cuterus in

Tieland.

combat with Giants.

Of the com. ming of the Pides or Sev. thisns into thefe parts.

In the time of Arviragus before mentioned, I finde the greatest probability of the first comming of the Pictes out of Scythia, first into Ireland, secondly, into Albania, now called Scotland, and lastly, into the North of England. And whereas before (page 3.) I made mention of the arivall of Scythians, Nemedus and his foure sonnes, and after them of five brethren of their posteritie, and the third time of ano ther fleete of Scythians that arived in Ireland; and that also by many antiquities it appeareth that the Scots be Scythians, and came out of those parts whence these Pictes brake forth I purpose now to make a more full discourse of that businesse.

turned to Denmarke, Starcuterus went into forraigne countries to

Camden modestly confesseth he knoweth not when they came first into these parts, neither doe I mislike with his conjecture, that they should be old Britaines, who painted themselves, to shew more terrible against the Romanes: yet we must confesse, that there are many nations of severall names in Scythia, and Polychronicon, together with Rastall, saith, that the Gothes and Pictes be one nation. The ctymologic I finde in the storie of the Gothes: Scythia in the Gothicke

tongue, signifieth a skilfull archer. And these Pictes brought with 10. Magnus them theme of darts, which the Irith retainer this day. But I come Gold, Hiff. lib. 1 to Beda, who goeth plaine to worke. When the Britaines (faith bee) Beda ecclef. bift. had possessed the greatest part of the ise, beginning at the South, it hap- gentis Aug liber pened that a nation of Pietes out of Scythia, with long shippes, (yet not many) entred the Ocean, the winde driving them about, beyond all the coast of Brittaine, they came into treland, and arived in the North, and finding there the nation of Scots, defired of them to grant them a dwelling place among ft them, but they could not obtaine it, &c. The Scots made answere that the iland could not hold them both, but wee can give you (faid they) good counfaile what you may doe. We know another Island not farre from ours, reaching to the East, the which we are wont of to differne in cleare dayes; if you will goe thither, you may make it your dwelling place, or if any with fland you, take vis for your aide. And fo the Pittes Sayling into Britaine, began to inhabite the Pitterfaile North parts of the Iland, for the Britaines held the Seath. And when into Britaine the Pictes bad no wives, and fought them of the Scots, they were granted them, onely upon this condition, that when the title of Soveraigntie became doubtfull, they should choose them a King rather of the Femi- They obtains nine blond royall, then of the Masculine, the which unto this day is ob- wives of the ferved amongst the Pittes. And in processe of time, Britaine after the Scott Britaines and Picts, received that thirdnation of the Scots upon that part, where the Pictes had their habitation, who iffing out of Ireland Scots under with their Captaine Renda, either by lone or by the foord, have wonne of Ireland into peculiarly unto themselves those seats which they hold unto this day, Britaine. and of this their capsaine they are called Dalrendin, for in their language, (Dal) signifieth apart.

And here I cannot but meruaile at Hetter Boetins and Buchanan, Hett. Boet. Scot. what confusion they bring into the historie, without regard of the bis til. 4. truth, they name Beda, they call Renda, Reuther, and fay that he was the fixt King of Albania, and that the Britaines made him flee into Ireland, and that in the end he was reftored to his kingdome againe, which can no way agree with the words of reverend Beda, whose credit we may not impeach, for he faith, they were Scythians, and wanted a dwelling place, and beganne to inhabit the North parts of the Iland. If Reuda were King of Albania, no thanke to the Irish men to direct him thither. But let us goe on with the Pictes.

I finde in Lanquet that the Pictes were rebellious, an. 9: of Arvi- Anho Domissi ragus, Anno. Domini 53. And Polycronicon affir Ceth, as Beda wrote before, that they came to the North of Ireland in Velpasians time. Stow faith it was in Anno 73. Matthew the Monke of Westminster, in Anno 75. and 76. Leftens and Bozius write that Renda came about the yeere 300. which is very doubtfull, and that then the Pictes wanting wives, defired of the Britaines that they might match with their nation, their fuit being denied, they went to the Irish, who granted

them wives upon the condition in Beda before rehearled And farther. Giraldus Cambrensis, Polycronicon and Grafton concurring. doe fay, that Scotland was first called Albania of Albanactus, secondly, Pictlandia, of the Pictes; thirdly, Hibernia, Ireland, because of the alliance or affinitie in marriage betweene the Pictes and Irifh: last of all, Scotland or Scythians land. And hereof it commeth to passe, that Ireland is called Scotland, and Scotland Ireland, the Irish rolychron lib t. Scots, and the Scots Irish, as one hath largely collected; and the dicap. 1. cap. 37. Stinction of Scotia Major, and Scotia Miner.

Chronig. Meminus.

Harding hath an historie out of Mewinus a Brittilh Chronicler. (Harding lived in the time of Henry the fift and fixt, and in the daies of Edward the fourth,) which if it be true, all that is formerly spoken of Gathelus and Scota his wife, by the Scottish and Irish Chroniclers, is of small credit; namely, how that Gathelus and Scota came into these North parts, together with the Pictes, Anno Domini 75. his words are thefe, speaking of the King of Britaine.

> Then to the Peights left alive, he gave Catenelle To dwell upon, and have in heritage; Which wedded were with Irifh as I geffe, Of which after Scots came on that linage, For Scots be to fay their language Acollection of many into one, Of which the Scots were called fo anone?

Flor hilt. Meminus was alfo called Melkinus. Ho.Bale cent. 1: cap.57.wrote his life. The ftone Regall of Scotland,

But Mewinus the Bryton Chronicler Saith in his Chronicle otherwise, That Gadelus and Scota in the yeere Of Christ, seventie and five by asife, At Stone inhabite as might suffice: And of her name, the country round about, Scotland (be cald that time without doubt.

This Scota was, as Mewin faith the fage, Daughter and baftard of King Pharao that day, Whom Gadele wedded, and in his old age Vnto a land he went, where he inhabited ay, Which yet of his name is called Gadelway; And with the Peights he came into Albanie The yeere of Christ aforefaid openlie, Erc.

Ponticus Viru-

Polycronicon and Cambrensis accord with Harding in this point, that the King gave the Pictes a place to dwell in, which is now called Galleway. And faith Ponticus Virunius, it was defert and waste, where none dwelled in many dayes before. The credit of Harding is great, and he that lift to know farther of him, let him reade Bale, Bi- 10. Bale. Script. shop of Osforie, who wrote his life.

Brytan Centur, 8

I will now neither confirme nor confute, but acquainte the reader with such antiquities as I finde, and in a word, to adde something unto that which went before, of the time of the Pictes comming into these North, and North west parts: Florilegus writeth it was Anno Domini 77. Functius and Polydore, Anno Dom. 87. To reconcile the dissonance, what every one saith may stand for truth, for they came in severall companies, and at severall times, some into Ireland, fome into Albania, and fome into England. I will from hencefor- scotland for ward leave writing the kingdome of Albania, and write the king-Albania from dome of Scotland.

Anno Dom. 73. began Marius the sonne of Arviragus to raigne Anno Dom. 73. in Britaine, (Humfrey Lloide calleth him Meurig) who after his troublesome warres, for nine yeeres space against the Picts and Scots, ended with the helpe of Iulius Agricola, is said to have aspired towards Ireland, and to have placed garrifons on the coast; and to the end he might performe some exploite there, entertained an Irish Prince that was driven out of his country by civill diffention for his conductor. I finde no issue recorded of this businesse.

In the 15. yeeres civill warres which enfued voon the death of Galf. MOR. Lucius, the sonne of Coile, King of Britaine, it is reported, that Falgenius called the Ilanders, Albanians, Pictes, and Irish men to his aide, against whom, Severus the Emperonr comming from Rome, gave them battaile neere unto Yorke, where Severus and a Prince of Ireland were slaine, and Fulgenius deadly wounded; the Emperour Severus and the Irish Prince, lye buried at Yorke.

In the antiquities of Ireland, I finde that about the dayes of Con-Booke of fantine the great, who beganne his raigne anno Dom. 310.) one Re- Houth, almond King of Vifter, fell in love with a Lady of Leinster, who had Anno Dom. 31 o beene wife to the King of Connaught, a woman (they fay) of meane Realmond, King stature, but of singular beautie; when many Princes and Lords of of Vister. Ireland laboured to winne her fauour, her answer was, that none should enjoy her loue, but a Champion that by Marshall prowesse had prevailed in forraigne countries, quitted himselse like a man, wonne the Garland, and brought tribute with him to his native soile. Realmond being overcome with the love of this Lady, hoised up faile and went for France, where he encountted with a Champion, and wonne a Garland called Civica. Afterward comming to great Britain, hee challenged the Duke of Cornewall, and got of him a tribute, Duke of thence he went into Scotland, and encountred with Gyant Caffreus, Cornewall and prevailed; (such was the manner of winning honour and dignity Gyant by marshall feates in those daies, saith Saxo Grammaticus) last of all sax. Gram.bifli he came backe to Ireland, and acquainted his love, the Lady he for-Dandib.7. merly fought for, with his travaile, his dangerous adventures, and

his good successe, and now having prevailed abroad, hee doubted not at home in regard of his kingdome, his kindred and valour, but to obtaine her fauour. Shee being made throughly acquainted with his affaires abroad and at home, gave many a figh in his absence, fearing some mischance might come to him, and wishing she had not so peremptorily answered him; but he no sooner came in place, but she relented from her former hardnesse, and with all speed the solemnity of marriage was performed. But the match was disdained by others. insomuch that he was hated of the Princes and Nobilitie of Ireland, who had formerly affected the Lady, whereof grew mutinies, contentions, and at last open warre, and hee finding himselfe weake, in comparison of his enemies, was forced to flee into Denmarke, where hee found favour and great aide of worthy Souldiers which came with himinto Ireland, where he and his generation, together with the Danes and their posteritie, essected many notable acts, and continued many veeres.

The genealo-

The Danes

come to

Ircland.

Eric or Eris what it fignifieth.

of whom fo called.

The Danes of the lyne of Fin Eryn, that came out of Denmarke, gie of Fin Erin, were these, David the Kings sonne who had to his sonne borne in Ireland, Deure Dove, who had foure fonnes, Covrry, Boyskene, Fyagh, and Oghe: Boyskene had a sonne called Garrenesto, and Con-Caghmore was his sonne; Con had a sonne named Ferrelogh, and he had a sonne called Trenmore, this Trenmore had to his sonne, Coylle Negoe, and he had a sonne called Fin-Fa, alias Fin Mac Coylle, and he had a sonne called ofhen, and he had a sonne called osker. This ofhen lived in Anno Dom. 432. in the dayes of Saint Patricke, unto whom he made relation of many things before going, and was by him baptized, being of the age of seven score yeeres. For proofe of this historie, I finde in Saxo Grammaticus that wrote the historie of the Danes, that Fin and Finni were a great sept there, hardy, stalworth men, given to preying, and burning of towne and country, and happly the Irish conversing with them, did learne those parts of them) and that the name of Eric was of the royall bloud among them; fo Fin Erin turning c. into n. was a great commander there, and conducted Erinor Ireland into Ireland many Danes. And happly, Ireland of old, because of his great command, and his posteritie, might after him be called Evin: this is but my conceit, happly others can say more thereof. These Danes increased and multiplied exceedingly, and became great Commanders and Captaines over the whole land, and tooke vpon them the defence thereof against all forraigne invasion. In processe of time fell out the battaile of Feutra in Mounster, valiantly fought by the Irish and Danes, whereof the Irish Chroniclers make great accompts it was fought chiefly in Mounster, by the Princes and power of Ireland, with the aide of the Danes, and generation of Fin Mac Coylle, and Fin Erys, in which field, they fay, all the forrsigne enemies that came out of Scotland, Cornewall, Normandie, Germany, Spaine

and Denmarke it selfe, were overthrowne. The occasion was as solloweth.

Many Gyants and worthy Champions there were in those daies Occasions of in Ireland, of Irish and Danish birth, hired by them for their defence, the Fattaile of these trauelling into forraine countries, fought many combats, and got yeerely tribute unto their country, as the manner then was among fuch challengers. For this they were generally envied, and a day was appointed by the invaders to arrive together in Ireland to ouer-runne the country, and roote out the whole nation. The first company to Strangers inthe number of thirtie thousand, landed at the Derrie, where Con- tend the utter kedagh one of the Princes of the North, being prepared for them, subversion of the Reich national factor of the Reich national facto by a fleight, set their shipping on fire, and met with them in a place on. where they were all overthrowne, so that with their Armes, those among the Irish that formerly wanted, were furnished and made fit for the warres. The second company of this combination came to Lambay, landed their men at the Follesse of Skerries, set their men in battaile array, and marched to a place now called Cnoc-nagean, that is the hill of dead mens heads, where Dermotte Lambdhearg King of Leinster met them, fought a cruell battaile with equall fortune for the space of soure daies; the Irish by reason of the spoile and victory got A strange base at the former battaile, were mightily encouraged, and also the milke talleifit be and fresh meate which the country yeelded them, and the ftrangers wanted, made them the more able to fight; to be faort, the strangers were overthrowne, and thirty fixe thousand of them flaine, whose Armes furnished Ireland throughly to encounter with the rest of the combination.

The third company came to Fentra in Mounster, where the forces of Ireland being gathered together, kept them from landing the space of seven dayes, with the slaughter of many on both sides, so that the sea-shore at sundry times was died redde with the bloud of the slaine karkasses, untill that one Gillemore, sonne to the King of Thomond, Gillemore of (being male-content for that he was removed from the voward of the Thomond rebattaile to the rere) revolted, and by night stole to the enemie, and directed them where they should safely land their men, which accordingly came to passe, so that the Irish knew it not untill the strangers had let their owne thippes on fire: hee withall brought the invaders to fuch advantage of ground, that they refreshed themselues for ten dayes without any annoyance from the Irish, and afterward when they came to skirmilh, did himfelfe divers times fight valiantly, imbruing his hands in the bloud of his owne natural countrimen. At last it fell out after some bickering, that hee called for water to walk his hands that were all full of the bloud of his countrymen, which was left stand after he had therein washed, and soone after calling for a cup of wine, was answered that there food a bowle of wine upon the tables he forgetting that he had formerly washed therein, dranke

of IRELAND.

Gillemore ve-

26

it up, insomuch, that the standers by said; What fellow is this, more like a brute beast then a man, that drinketh his owne bloud, and eateth his owne flesh? Gillemore hearing this tooke it to heart notwithstanding diffembling his griefe and anger, the next night conveyed himfelfe away, and submitting himselfe to his father, delivered unto him the state of the strangers, which turned to their great disadvantage and hinderance.

The barraile of Fenera.

Shortly after, the day of battaile was appointed, where the strangers were overthrowne, and (as they fay) feven fcore thousand men flaine. The Irish had supplies and extraordinary meanes at home, the frangers could not come by it; the Irish plaid with them at all advantages, the woods and the bogs defended them as occasion ferved. This battaile with the preambles and circumstances, continued one whole yeere, the strangers had no shipping to flee unto for succour, the ground was unknowneunto them, their lodging and fare was cold, hard, and scant, so as their hardinesse could not hold out, their end was lamentable, and the honour was bequeathed to the Irish nation. The Princes of Ireland having thus with great successe foiled their enemies, delivered their people from utter overthrow, and quieted the land, rested themselves a while. Asterward, partly for recompence of good service, and partly for safegard of the land, appointed the Danes (whom they had formerly hired, who also unto that time had served them truely) over the whole land to prevent forraigne invalion, forewarned by the field of Fentra and the former, attempts; these Commanders with their particular places of command, I thought good to impart to the courteous reader.

The feverall garrifons of the Danes. Osker Mac Osben Mac Fin with his Souldiers keps the baven of Dublin.

Fian Mac Fenrasse kept the Winde gates. Wony Etagh Mac Cas Foule kept Wickle. Creyon Mac Wony kept Arcklow. Eye Onagh Mac Kellenkas kept Weixford. Done Mac Kayder kept Roffe. Fellum Mac Eye Keyge kept Dungarvan. Brefell Mac Eydow kept O Keylle. Gaero Mac Dobeyere kept Corke. Ollen Aye Nyang Mac Breffell kept Kynfale. Collo Mac Keils kept Dingle Koyffe. Con Keor Mac Bren Mac Foyll keps Fentra. Osker Mac Cromkeyn kept Trallie. Don Dows Mac Reymowre being a King over the fept of Fin Mag Koyle kept Lymnagh, that is, Limericke. Bye Boge Mac Fin kept Inyskagh. Goll Kroytt kept Corke Vaysken:

Eye Mac Sroy kept Canborne. Eye clone Drylinge keps Donrys Oveyragh. Breffell Mac Eye Begge kept Galloway: Degre Dovenagh Magher Morne, kept Inysbrefin. Eye O row Mac Fin keps Kleere. Collow Daver kept [mall Iland, Enos Dayrk kept Koymaghtbe. Enos Mayoh Ercoipie kept Galley. Feartagh Mac Ferolagh kept Move. Low Magh Mas Karbren kept Sligo. Smerger Drought kept Bondroys: Keyll Croagh Kede Gonagh O Navnyd, Affero! Brasell Mac Doyer kept Donagall. Mogh Small Mac Smoyll kept Fanyd. Ecy Mac Kebow kept Loughfoyle. Darawryd Rowrer kept Bonban. Sperenagh Claw kept Knockfergus. Magh love kept Ard olloe. Donogh Mac Dermotte Evne, kept Ardglas. Art Oge Mac Morne kept Dondorme: Eye Mac Carra Meyke Morne kept Carling ford. Flaas Fere Leyfroke Greffey Fin Mac Koyll, kept Don dalke. Rey ne Roysklaygh Mac Fin Mac Koyll kept Drogheda. Shealvagh Mac Dermotte Doyn kept Gormanston. Covuloe Mac Wowdyrge kept Irelands eye. Derlleys Mac Dovgar kept Howth;

These were the chiese Commanders by direction from Fin Mas Beacons ap-Koyll, who tooke farther order that Beacons should be set up in sun- pointed in dry places of the land, where in time of danger they might have Fin Mac Keill. direction for reliefe, and draw to a head for their defence, which order continued unto the field of Kaghcaro, otherwise called Ardkagh or Ardkath, the occasion whereof was as followeth.

In the time of Karbre Lifeacher, Monarch of Ireland, the Danish Karbre Lifea-Captaines with their bands and garrisons, waxed insolent and outra- cher Monarch gious, they weighed not what Prince or people faid, they grew of Ireland, ftrong and rich, not caring what they did: they brought vp fond cuflomes of their owne deviling, oppressing the people, and disdaining the gentle admonitions of the Kings and Nobilitie of the land. Among themselves they decreed, that no Maid should marry without their license, that none should hunt the Hare, Otter, Foxe, Wolfe, Marterne or Deare, but should pay them what they pleased to rate it The infolent at, and that none should use any other pastime without their privi devices of the tie. The Kings and Nobilitie of the land called a Parliament, ende-

youring to reforme these abuses, charging them to surcease from their

outrages,

Forces of the

Garréstowne.

The marshal-

Danes at the

ling of the

battaile of

Ardkath:

Erish and

Danes.

outrages, or to leave the land. The Danes answered, that they came in with the fword, held by the fword, and with the fword they would be driven away. The day of battaile was appointed to be fought at Amaghery Ongallin, now called Margallin in Westmeath, though the field be called Ardkagh, which is by interpretation, a fet field.

The Danes sent to Denmarke, intimating their griese and lamentable estate, craving aide of the King, and that he would be pleased to fend his sonne to be their Generall, who (according to their request) shortly after landed with tennethousand stalworth souldiers (so the old phrase runneth) and they comming together, made up twenty and eight thousand, and seven hundred. The Kings of Ireland with their forces were threefcore and five thousand. The Danes or Norwegians being valiant and venterous, hastened to the battaile at the day appointed. The Kings in like fort with their forces hearing that their enemics approched, set themselves in battail array, and came to a place where they all kiffed the ground, readie to dye one with another, and gave (after their manner) fuch a crie, as if heaven and earth met together, and therewith somewhat amazed their encmies, so that the place to this day is called Balle-Nangartha, in En-

glish, Garrestowne.

The strangers placed themselves on the South-west side of the hill. that the forces of the Kings being on the other fide, somewhat beneath them, might not easilie discrie their Armie; they appointed their worst men for their Rereward, that seeing the Voward valiantly encountring and prevailing, they might thereby be the more encouraged. They placed their rascals on their jades, nagges and labouring garrons, on the top of an hill, where at this day is a little Mote in remembrance thereof, giuing them in charge, that when the forces of the land espied them, and drew neere, they should retire to the maine battaile for refuge and fuccour, they hoped by these meanes, that the Kings when they faw fo great a company flee, would breake their order and array to pursue them, and so lay themselves open to utter ouerthrow; and then was their intent to have made the King of Denmarkes sonne, King of the land, and to have enjoyed the

Realme to them and their posteritie for euer.

The Kings of Ireland being seven in number, tracing a while on the top of an hill (which therefore was called after that, the hill of Trale, now Hol-trase) divided themselves into two battailes. Gillemore, O Connor Dunnes, sonne of Connaght (one that had stood out in rebellion against the Kings untill that time) had in the Voward the leading of the light footmen, whereof they made least account, he therby to winnetheir favours, and they to hazard him first. Dermotte Lambdhearg, King of Leinster bad the charge of the horsemen; their bonnys were double armed, well appointed, active and venturous fouldiers. Dermot being well mounted, got him to an advantage of ground,

Hol-trafe. Order of the Kings of Ire. land at the. Edd of Ardhash.

Dermot Lambo dbearg King of ground, and turned him to the armie with this speech.

My friends and fellowes in Armes, whose great valour hath been The King of oft tryed; understand (I beseech you) the cause of this battaile. Leinsters Whereas heretofore we have sought our shall and bired at the state of the perch. Whereas heretofore we have fought out these, and hired them in our warres for our defence and good of our country, against our forraine enemics, to be at our service and command, they have committed all manner of outrage against vs, and extortion upon the people of this land, they abused our wives, ravished our widowes, defloured our daughters and maidens, their meat, their drinke; their bedding, will not content them, but they must have money for eating, drinking and fleeping. Wherethey should have beene our true and dutifull seruitors, they disdained the Princes of the land, and made the people their villaines. By maintaining of them, wee made our country men idle and unapt for the warres, by inriching of them we have beggered our selves, and now see the villany of these verlates, our provision, our furniture, our Armes, and forces of our native foile, they bend against us, and not onely this, but they have drawn to their present aide, asresh, both Danes and Norwegians. Wherefore plucke up your hearts, quitte your selues like men, our cause is good, wee fight for our selves, our wives and children, and the libertie of our country; if we lose, we are lost for euer, and our children become bondslaues, and our country subject to these bloudy rascall strangers.

He had no fooner ended his speech, but they all kissed the ground, and gavea terrible shout, that the woods about them rang thereat. On the other fide, one Osker Mac Oshen, experienced in the warres, and bold of speech, craved of the Danes and Norweyes libertie to

speake, and began as followeth.

My masters and fellowes, the cause of this our assemblie is knowne other Mac O. unto you; it is to maintaine that which we honourably wonne in the speech, field, and was granted our ancestors and their posteritie, the which we have in writing to shew, under the hands and seales of the ancestors of these saithlesse Kings and Princes that be in Armes against us. There is no haven, creeke or port in Ireland, but that our predecessors and we tooke the charge of them, since our first arrival here out of Denmarke, and valiantly defended then, maugre the beards of all forraigne enemies. We fought many a battaile for them, wee wanne them tributes, and procured them discharge of tributes, the which forraigne champions in combats had obtained of them, and now for recompence, they endevour eyther to banish us the land, or put us to the sword. Will yee understand what they are, surely a people that keepe no promise with us, therefore we doubt not but the better to speed: and excepting a few of their Princes and Gentlemen that are valiant men indeed, and daily exercised in seats of Armes, the rest are but pesants, poore and needy slaues, bare arst, bare legd, and barefooted, and of small strength. For Armes, they weare a skull, a

Cca

fword

Fabian part 6. cap.198. wriseth that the Danes did the like in England.

fword by their side hanging in a Wyth that compasseth their middle. and a Target; othersome have darts; the best thing in them is, they are swift of foot, & I hope we shal speedily have the experience of that when we fee them run away. Their good meate & best drink we rook. and made them fast, their treasure we tooke to furnish us in apparell and Armes, and left them unfurnished and bare, their bedding wee had, and made them lye on the ground, their wives, widdowes and maides were at our command to keepe us warme in the night, and we gave them leave to lye among their swine. The best soile we tooke to our selves, and gave them mountaines and bogges: alas poore fillie fellowes, these be they that now take Armes against us. Wherefore faint not, be of good courage, and we shall prevaile; let us winne vantage of ground, and get the fide of the hill, and bogge against them, that their horses prevaile not, and once master them, we shall quickly over-runne the pelants; now last, kisse one another, in token that you will live and die one with another.

Ardkath

The battaile of His words being ended, they marched forward with Pipes, Cornets, and Trumpets founding. Their chiefe armes were Skeynes, Speares, Darts, Slings, and Sparthes, (which we call Galloglas Axes:) they fent their boyes and varlets, as they had formerly determined, to the top of the hill. The King of Leinster that had the leading of the horsemen, no sooner espied them, but (contrary to the plot laid downe upon the hill of Trase) put spurres to his horse, and with a loud voyce said, follow me, they were straight upon their backes that fled, so that the Danes had no leisure to receive them for their safegard, but were driven to kill their owne before, as the Irish did behinde. Immediately came the light foot under the leading of Gillemore, and together with the horse, charged the voward of the Danes, so that the rascals of the Danes, and the light sootmen of the Irish were flaine, with the death and hurt of many a Dane. Then came the great battaile of the Kings of Ireland in rescue of the horse, with a great and terrible noise, and gave a stout charge upon the enemie (that kept the ground, I meane the fide of the hill) and fiercely bare them downe to the bottome, where they fought a cruell battell with equall fortune, almost the whole day, untill the King of Denmarkes sonne was slaine by the King of Leinster, whereupon the Danes sled, the eth the King of Irish followed, and had the killing of them without resistance, till horse and man were weary, and the Danes in a manner all destroyed. Of the Irilh were flaine (as I finde in the antiquities of the land) foure Kings, twenty five Kings sonnes, and of others, nineteenethousand, feven hundred and threefcore, though others extenuate the matter. They say the horses went to their bellies in bloud, also the ayre with the stinke was infected, and thereof shortly after rose a grievous plague, which cut off the wives, children, and servants of the Danes, and of many of the Irish that were slaine.

The King of Leinster flaifonne. The Danes overcome.

There was at this field, one Ferreis a Dane, a valiant souldier in the Ferreis a Dane fight, but escaping with life, for very forrow of the overthrow, and fell madde, losse of his friends, fell madde, and kept company with wilde beafts to his dying day. Fin Mac Coile, one of the principall Captaines of Fin Mac Coile. the Danish sept, was in Rome at the time of this field; many things are reported of him worthy remembrance. His chiefe house was called Baragh-llys in Vlster; he was a man in his prosperitie of great command in Ireland, so that the Danes and Norweyans had through him great dealing and entercourse with Ireland, and Ireland with them. But yet (as it sometime falleth out among the decrest friends) many jarres and broiles and factions fell betweene them, and especially betweene the fept of Klan ne Morne, and Klan ne Boisken, both The Danes which sides still relieved themselves out of Denmarke. The King of disagree in Denmarke at last hearing of the same of Fin Mac Coile, feat for him, and tooke such a liking to him, that he concluded to marry him unto his daughter. Fin went thither with three thousand souldiers: the King one day as they conversed together, asked after the manner of the death of his three sonnes, Comen, Law ne-Meyd, and Feagh, who formerly went into Ireland to maintaine one of the factions; Dermot O Doyne, (one of Fins company) answered, trouble not thy selfe, O King, this is the hand that killed thy fonne Comen; one Osker faid, this is the hand that killed thy sonne Law-ne-Meyd; Keyn Mac Fin also said, this is the hand that killed thy sonne Feagh. Herewith the King was wroth and faid, Fin Mac Coile, thou and thy men are my prisoners; forthwith they diew their Skeynes, the Kings guard for Fin Mac Loile feare fled, they tooke him prisoner, carried him abourd their shippes, taketh theking hoised up faile, and brought him to Ireland, so as the marriage was of Denmarke dashe and the King driven to pay a renforme for his 15 better personer. dasht, and the King driven to pay a ransome for his libertie, before he could get from them. This Fin Mac Coile also fought with a Gy-Overcommeth ant that landed at Houth, and came to challenge combats for tribute, a Gyant, and by policie, not by strength, overcame him: his policie was this, he caused him in the night, (for the space of three nights) to be kept waking, and in the day time to be fought withall, and thereby weakened his strength, and foiled the Gyant. Toward his end, one Gorre Gorie burneth an old man, after these former warres and troubles, came to his house fin Mac Coiles (before spoken of) and boasted unto the Gentlewomen then present, of his feates in warre, and the combats he had fought, whereat they laughed, he being offended with them, sware in his anger that hee would burnethem all, got old timber and straw, put it in the house, fired it, made fast the doores, and compassed about the house with men that none might escape. They cryed unto him out of their windowes to fave their lives, but he was inexorable, and could not bee drawne to any compassion, and when the house was readie to fall, he fled into Mounster, and there hid himselse in a Cave. Fin Mac Coile came home from hunting, and beheld this wofull desolation,

There

how his Wife, his Maides, his old Souldiers, his Horses, his Greyhounds, his Plate and houshold stuffe, his Shields, Iackes, and Shirts of maile, and his instruments of Musicke, were consumed to ashes, made after Gorre into Mounster, where he found him, and after some skirmish of both sides, tooke him, and brought him to the place where he had committed this villany. Gorre when hee beheld the bones of them that were burned, laughed, and being asked why, his answer was, that hee laughed at them that sormerly laughed at him. This wille Gorre being kept that night from execution, in the dead of the night stole away, and was found in a Cave, where by commandment of Fin Mac Coill, Hugh Gorre his owne sonne killed He is killed by his father, and after became madde himselfe. And the end of Fin Mac his own fonne. Coill was, that he dyed a beggar and in great miserie. So farre out of Fin Mac Coill. the booke of Houth. Now to continue the storie.

W. Harrison in

the descripti.

veg.Scot.lib.4.

on of Brit.

It is written of Maximus, who beganne his raigne in Britaine, Anno Dom. 287, that he tooke great displeasure against the Scots and Irish, for partaking with Conan, and upholding the faction betweene him and Carodoch: thus it is written; Maximus drave the Scots out of Britaine, and compelled them to get habitation in Ireland, the out Iles, and the North part of the maine, and finally divi-Georg Buchan. ded their region betweene the Britaines and the Pictes. He denounced warre also against the Irish men, for receiving them into their lands but they craving peace, yeelded to subscribe, that from thenceforth they would not receive any Scot into their dominions.

E.Boet .Scot . bist.hb.6.

Trish confule

the Scots a.

how to helpe

Hettor Boetius penneth this matter at large, that all the Scots were gainst the Ros

banished, and despersed themselves into the Hebrydes, Orchades, Norwey, Denmarke, and some into France and Italie. And where Maximus somewhat tendred their utter ruine and overthrow; and referred them to the Pictes for favour, the Pictes most cruelly gave sentence, that the Scots which fled not, should eate the Pictes sword, &c: And of Ireland he writeth, Vponthe first comming of this newes, all Ireland mourned and made great lamentations and when they had deliberately examined the exiles, and understood all the accidents that befell them in Albion, they appointed certaine dayes for a parley, summoned from East to West, all the Princes of the land to meete their Monarch at the certaine day and place prefixed, to confult how and by what meanes the Roman forces might be relifted, and the kingdome of Albion restored to their allies and cousins the Scots. When they could dewife no remedie (for they feared the power of the Romanes) they thought good to put up all injuries, and to intreate for peace. To this purpose they sent Ambassadors to Maximus the Romane Captaine, who at the first sharpely rebuked them, for that they had sens aide into Albion against the Romanes their confederates and favourites, and in especiall, seeing that unto that day, Ireland of all the kingdomes of the world, felt little smart of the Romane sword. In the end he received them into favour.

favour, and granted them peace upon these conditions. That they should Conditions of thenceforth receive no enemies of the Romanes into the Realme of Ire peace between land, neither any that gave aide against the Romanes, and that no re- and Irish. bell of the Irish under pretence ofmarchandize, should thenceforth set foot in Albion. These conditions of peace being concluded the Irish were quiet, and trade not upon Scottish foile. So farre Boetius.

Not long after this (according to Ponticus Pirunius) Guanius, King Ponticus Viruof Hunnes, and Melga King of Pictes having long hulled here and there, and roved upon the seas, were by Gratianus (after their invading of Britaine and Scotland, in the absence of Maximus) overthrowne, and driven out of the kingdome, and forced to flee for refuge into Ireland: foule weather followed these two Kings, and Ireland gave them hard entertainement at the first. Notwithstanding I finde, that this Guanius and Melga, after the death of this Gratianus, (who usurped the kingdome of Britaine for the space of foure yeeres upon the death of Maximus, who had flaine Gratianus the Emperour) prepared againe for Britaine, and brought with them the exiled Scors with Irish and Handers for their aide. But to proceed.

Thomas Cooper, who afterwards was Bishop of Winchester, spea- Tho. Cooper. king of the returne of the Scots from exile ((in his continuing of the Chronicle of Languet) maketh the same to be Anno Dom. 423. and withall delivereth his conceit, that the Scots about this time came first out of Ireland into that country, which of them was called Scotland. If he had referred it to a further yeere, namely when the fixe sonnes of Muredus King of Vister came to Scotland, haply it would have carried some probabilitie: but to say that it was the first comming of the Scors into Scotland, I doe no more like of it, then George Rerum Scotl Buchanan doth, neither doth it concurre with the antiquities prece- 46.5. dent or subsequent. Cambrensis and Staniburst doe direct me in this course. Here I am to note, (faith Cambrensis) that in the time of Neall, Monarch of Ireland, the fixe sonnes of Muredus, King of Vister, Cambrenses. with no small navie, possessed the North parts of Britaine, whence the nationissuing out of them, and by speciall name called Scottish to this day, inhabite that northerne angle, but upon what occasion they came buther, bow and by what great treasons (rather then voyages) they banished the Pictes from those parts, a stout nation, farre passing them for armes and courage, I referre to our Topographie of Britaine: Stani- die. hurst addeth; this inrode into Albania was a little before the comming of Patricke. So that these Noble men of Ireland came into Scotland in the time of Neale, and Patricke came into Ireland in the time of Leigerius the sonne of Neale, as hereafter more at large shall appeare.

In the meane time we reade, how that (Anno 430, according to Anno Dom 430, Functius) Celestinus Bilhop of Rome sent Palladius into Scotland, proper in cine. who was the first that gave them Bishops, for unto that time, the Palladina.

Churches

vey Scot. lib.33

Locelin in vita Sandli Patricif 6ap. 24.

Geo, Buchanan. Churches without Bishops, were governed by Monkes, with leffe pride and outward pompe, but with greater sanctitie and meckenesse of spirit, &c. I make mention of him, for that (as our Irish Anonymus, and locelin doc write) he landed in the North parts of Ireland, where he hardly escaped with life, as it is reported, thence he went to the llands, where he did much good, lastly hecame to Scotland, preached the Gospell, rooted out the Pelagian heresie, and consecrated them Bishops, &c.

in Ircland.

Colmannus and Dyrana. The life of Saint Declanus

At this time (as it is written in the life of Declanus) Christian religion first beganne, and tooke roote in Ireland, not as some have dreamed, by Saint Iames the Apostle, neither by Saint Patricke, whom they terme the Apostle of Ireland. The truth of the historic is as followeth. There was one Colmannus in Mounster, a reverend Prick, (and the first Christian which I finde upon record in Ireland) that baptized one Declanus, and delivered him to be brought up unto one Dymna a Christian schoolemaster, under whom he profited so much, that his fame was spread farre and nigh, so that upon good advice and counsaile, he travailed to Rome, where Celestinus the Pope consecrated him Bishop, where also he mer with Albans a Bishop of Irish birth. In his returne from Rome, he mette with Patricke in Italie, conversed a while with him, and being injoyned by Celestinus, hastened to Ireland, and left Patricke that was bound for Rome. Declanus after his arrivall in Ireland, came among his owne fept (whom mine Author calleth Nandesi, and I take to be the ancient house of Familie of the the Decies) not farre from Lilmore, and there preached the Gospell, and converted many to the Christian faith. Thither came unto him, (faith the Legend) feven holy men Mocellog, Beanus, Colmanus, Lachuyn, Moby, Fyndlug and Caminanus; they builded them celles, conversed together, and planted the Christian faith over all Mounfter. He went to Engus the sonne Nafrygh, King of Mounster, whose Engus King of Pallace was in Cashill, who gave him leave to preach, yet received not the faith; the reason of this favour (as I finde it) was for that Engus had married his mother, and had iffue by her, Colman and Eo. shard. Colman was by Saint Albaus the Bishop baptized, and then received the Ecclesiasticall habite, Eochard raigned after his father King of Mounster.

Mounfter.

Saint Declarus took a second journey to Rome, and was reverently entertained by David Bishop of Menevia; after the effecting of his businesse, he returned into Ireland, and arrived in a place called Ard-naciored, in Latine Altitudo ovium, now called Ardmore, the Altitudo ovium, Which soile the Lord of Nandesi gave him, where goodly buildings mow Ardmore. have beene, and as the record runneth, Civitas sancti Declani qua in eo loco posita est, vocatur Ardmore, id est, Altitudo magna. Farther in the same Legend I finde, Quatuor sanctissimi Episcopi, cum suis discipulis fuerunt in Hibernia, ante Patricium pradicantes in ca Christu,

scilicet, Albaus, Declanus, Ybarus & Kyaranus (alias Keran), & hi Albaus, Declaplures ad Christum rete evangelico traxerunt, sed tamen santtus Pa-nus, Thams, tricius Majores Hibernia, & potentiores ad fidem convertit. In their time Patricke sent from Celestine Bishop of Rome came to Ireland whom these foure Bishops with their followers saluted, and seeing Patricke (after the humour of humorous people) more graced then themselves, jarred with him, they would not (forsooth) have any of forraigne nation to patronize the land. In the originall it is recorded: Tharus nulla ratione consentire Sancto Patricio, nunquam ei subditus Emulationi esse voluit, nolebat enim Patronum Hibernia de alia gente habere, & conflictus magnos inter se ipsos Ybarus & Patricius secerunt. But afterward by much adoe, they were reconciled. See gentle reader the infirmitie of men, and emulation following the same. At Cassill they were reconciled by Engus King of Mounster, whom Patricke baptized, who after his baptisme, founded there the Cathedrall Church, Caffill Church in the honour of Saint Patricke, made it the Metropolitane See of is built and Mounster, and assigned Albaus the first Bishop there. This King Church of held therea Parliament of spirituall and temporall persons of his king- Mounter. dome, ratifying the premisses, pacifying all quarrels, and yeelding A Parliament, contentment to all sides, The Legend reporteth, in quo decreture est ut Albaus secundus Patricius, & Patronus Mumenia esset; & Declanus secundus Patricius de Patronus effet Nandeifi, de Nandeifi sua Diorefis usque ad finem seculi esset. Postea sancti Episcopi salutantes & benedicentes regem Engufum, ad fua in ofculo pacio, cum spirituali gaudio, ad opus Domini seminandum regressi sunt Wherein it was decreed, that Albaus should be a second Patricke and Patron of Mounster, and that Declanus should be a second Patricke and Patrone of Nandeisi, and that Nandeisi should be his Diocesse so the end of the world. After all, these holy Bishops saluted and blessed King Engus, and in the kisse of peace, with spiritual ioy, returned every one to his charge, to fow the worke of the Lord. Immediately there infued a grievous plague over Agreet pelliall Mounster, and especially at Cassill, which was the death of thou-lene in sands, the manner of it was this, first they had the yellow jaundies, then they fell downe for dead. King Engus lamented greatly the death ofseven Nobles of Mounster, that were pledges with him at Cassill, and miscarried in this mortalitie. Not long after, Declarus en-

ded the way of all flesh, and lyeth buried at Ardmore. Albaus, (as his owne Legend delivereth) the second Patrone of The life of Mounster after Patricke the generall Patrone of Ireland was borne in Saint Allege. Elyach, now called Ely O Caroll. His fathers name was Olenais, his mothers, Sandith, a maid fervant in the house of King Cronanus, the King Cronanus Lord of Eliach was then called a King. Cronanus in his rage, bid his of Eliach. fervants hang the whoore, and kill the childes the fervants loath to dispatch an innocent, tooke him out of his Pallace, and laid him under the fide of a rocke. One Lochanus the sonne of Luggr passing by,

pittied the childe, tooke him to his horse, and set him to nurse among

certaine Britaines, in the East part of Elyach. Palladius (faith the story) palling from Rome toward Scotland, and travelling through Ireland, baptized him. The Britaines fent him into France, where hee was trayned up in Christian schooles, and brought up under Bishop Hilarius, who lent him to Rome, where he was confecrated Bishop, and remained one whole yeere and fiftie dayes, preaching and expounding holy Scripture, with great admiration. And faith the Legend, there came unto him out of Ireland, fiftie grave and reverend men, of which number there were 12 Colmans, 12 Coenigeni, and 12 Fintans; the Billiop of Rome sent them backe into Ireland, they came to Dolomoir, where Sampson Bishop of that See gave them entertainement. There he baptized (saith the storie) King Fintan. After he had baptized and converted many unto the faith, and builded many Churches, and founded many Hospitals for lazers, he came to Ymleach, now called Emley, a Bishopricke, and in the Legend, termed his owne Citie, fell ficke, and there left his bones. He converfed with Biga, (whom learned Camden calleth Bega) & Bretach Nunnes,

tiquities I never faw.

Biga and Bretach Nunnes. and with Neffanus a great Antiquarie, faith mine Author, whose an-Neffanus the Antiquarie. The life of

King Fintan

Ymleach or

Emley.

baptized.

Kyaranus or Keran, alias Piran, (another of the foure Bishops Saint Kyaranus that lived in Ireland before Saint Patricke) commeth next to be spoken of. Of him, Caperave and the Martyrologe thus write, that hee was a Bilhop and Confessour, and termed Santtorum Hibernia primogenitus. And yet I finde in Molanus, that one Saint Mansuetus, (Bilhop of Tullum now called Tullense oppidu, a towne in Flanders) was of Irish birth, sellow Disciple with Saint Clement, under Saint Peter the bieffed Apostle, not trayned up in Ireland in the Christian faith, but in forraigne countries, where he was both baptized, instru-Red, and made Bilhop, and where he now resteth. But to returne to Keran, he was borne in Offorie, having to his father Domnell, (faith another, Lugneus, whereby I gather, there were two of that name) to his mother Wingella, famous for life, learning, and fanctitie, in the dayes of Saint Patricke. He lived in the 1le of Cleere some 30 yeeres, from thence he went to Rome, where hee met Saint Patricke, who came to Ireland 20. yeeres after Pyranus was of note; in Rome hee continued 15. yeeres, expounding holy Scripture with great admiration, (as another faith 20. yeeres) there the Bishop of Rome consecrated him Bishop. He came to Ireland, and was the first Bishop of Offorie, having his See at Keran in Elie O Carroll. Hee refreshed, (saith mine Author) Saint Patricke, and tenne Irish Kings for the space of three dayes, he confirmed Rhodanus in the faith, visited the Virgin Cora (with her Priest Geranus) whose cell was a rocke of the leas, not farre from the Citic of Cluan in Mounster. He was a man of an austere life, never ware woollen garment, but the fell of Wolves

Reran the first Bifhop of Offoric.

and wilde beafts. As he came to his lodging, in time of Lent, and has ving inquired what provision they had, answere being made, that they had but a pestle of Porke, he commanded it to be laid on the table, one scornefully refused the dyet, he misliking with him, threatned him an ill end, which accordingly came to passe. When by the course of nature he saw his end approach, he called his friends unto him, and faid: My welbeloved children and friends, God hath dispofed that I should trauaile out of Ireland into Cornewall, and there expe& the end of my dayes; I cannot withstand the will of God; I doe admonish you brethren, to uphold the place, with good workes and examples of life, for there shall come children of perdition and death among you, ye shall have mortalitie and warres, the Churches shall become waste and desolate, and the truth shall be turned into iniquitic, faith shall not shine with good workes, the Pastors will looke to themselves more then to their flocke, seeding themselves more then their sheepe: last of all, I beseech you brethren, pray for me that my iourney may be prosperous, and that after my decease, I finde not my King and my God angry, but gentle and appealed, when I shall appeare before him. He tooke leave, came to Cornewall, and resteth some sifreene miles from Petrok-stow, 25. miles from Mousehole, where he is remembred for their Patron. Cambronsis writeth, that minerarium in Caerdise in Wales, there is a Chappell called Saint Perans Chap. Cambrie. pell, where King Henry the second in his returne from Ireland, repaired to heare divine service, as he hath remembred it in his Booke intituled Itinerarium Cambria. And thus much of Saint Keran or Saint Peran

Of Tharus the fourth Bishop before Saint Patricke, I finde some Thelife of discourse in the Legend of Abbanus the Abbot, how hee baptized Saint Tharus, him, and brought him up in learning, and how they went together to Rome, and after their returne, conversed in Ireland with Saint Pasricke, as formerly in part hath beene delivered in the life of De-

This Abbanus is renowned in Ireland for building of Celles and Thelife of Abreligious houses, besides three Monasteries in Connaght, he built in bot. Mounster, Ceall Achard Conchun, alias, Kill Achard, where Saint Finan (whom he baptized) after his death was Abbot. In the bor Saint Finan. ders of Muskerry he builded the Nunnery of Husneach, and lest it to Saint Gobnaid and her Virgins, another Monasterie also by Kilcullen. In Nandesi (as I take it now called the Decies,) by the towns of Briogoban, he founded Kill-na-Marban, and at the foot of the mountaine Crotte in Muskerie, the famous Monasterie called Cluain-Airdmobecoc, where Saint Becanus was Abbot, the which after- Saint Becanus ward, because of Becamus his lamentation in devout fort (as it is write ten) for his finnes, was called Ceall Nander, Cella lacbrymarum, the cell of reares. He founded also Cluain Findglaise, & Cluain Conbrum,

Emenus the Abbot.

Civitas Ma-

and went into Ely, where he baptized and converted unto the faith. thousands, as the Legendreporteth, in a place afterward called Rath-Becain, in Latine, Atrium Becani, where Abbanus is recounted Patron. He builded a Monasterie upon the river Berba, called Ross-Mac Treoin, where the Abbot Saint Emenus resterh; also in Meath, Ceall-Ailbe, and committed the charge thereof to the holy Nunne Segnith and her affociates, and in the North part of that country, a Nunnery, Ceall Abbain, where he made an end of his course, and flept with his fathers. There was great Brife for his corps, betweene the North and the South, the Lords of the country strove for it in Armes. The North pleaded, here hee first builded and made his abode, the South answered, with us was he borne, with us hee most conversed, and we will have his corps, or else we will leave our carkasses in this place. The body was laid in a Cart, bruit beasts had the drawing of it, when both sides were in Armes, the silly beasts were frighted, and ranne away with the dead, and where he was buried, I have not found as yet. His Monkes howled, and kept a lamentable stirre, the record runneth thus. Populus civitatis Magarnoid in Australibus Laginensibus sic dicebat. Iste sanctus a Domino ad nos missus est, dy per multos annos apud nos vixit, dy monasteria multa et cellas in nostra regione edificavit, et ipse est noster Sanctus et venerabilis Pater, qui nostra civitatem similiter construxit, qui post multa miracula, apud nos, ad Dominum migravit, et per eum semper a Domino adjuvari (peramus, et scitote, quod nos morti omnes prius trademus, antequam revertamini, eo a nobis absente. Ad hanc vocemira principum et militum utrorumque arsit, surgentes in furorem magnum, contendere et rixari conantes. Tunc verò monachi de clerici, quibus non licebat bellare, seor sum exicrunt, ululantes de flentes, de fusis lachrymis dicentes; hen ben Domine Deus, cur concedis tam maximam cadem, tantoru nobilium virorum, circa corpus famulitui, qui in sua vita mulra bella prohibuit? He had familiaritie with Saint Beartanus an Abbot, Brendanus, Molyng, Flannanus, Munnu, Gobban, and with Columba the reverend Priest.

The life of

Anno Christi, 422. Bocel, in praf. ad

Sigeb.adan. 432. Robannes Clin Ansig.Hiber.

Saint Patricke was sent into Ireland by Celestinus Bishop of Rome Saint Patricke. before named, five yeeres after Palladius was lent into Scotland. So writeth Iohannes Major Scotus, and Functius therein followeth him; but I thinke they are too forward in their computation, for hee came into Ireland, Anno 422. and for this believe Iohn Bale Bishop of Osforie, I have warrant from Iocelin the Monke of Furnese, who wrote his witam Pairie, life at the request of Thomas, Primate of Ardmagh, Malachias Bishop of Dune, and Sir Iohn de Courey Earle of VIster; and out of Sigebersus and Iohn Clyn Guardian of the Fryers Minors in Kilkenny in his collections of Irish antiquities, who also saith, that he was 16. yeeres old when the Pirates brought him out of Britaine into Ireland, that he was fixe yeeres inservitude, that he was eighteene yeeres under Saint

Saint Germane a Bilhop in France, that he spent thirty and five yeeres in converting Ireland and other Ilands to the faith, that he bestowed thirty three yeeres in contemplation, and that hee died anno atatis. one hundred twenty two.

Bale writerh his life. Patricius furnamed Succetus Magonius, of 10hn Bale Scrip, most writers called Magnus for his excellent vertues, had in Britaine Britaine Britaine to his father one Calphurnius a Priest (the sonne of Ponticus a Priest. "14. faith Incelin) and to his mother one Conche of Pannonia (Concessa faith Probus) fifter to Saint Martin (cofin faith Iocelin:) hee was brought up under godly tutors, when Maximus reigned, first under his uncle Martin, afterward under Germanus Bishop of Auxerre in Burgoyne, from thence he came to Italy, and fo to Rome, where for his grave carriage and fingular learning, descending of noble race, he got the name of a Senator, Patricius. His first name, saith Flori. legus was Nannus, and in his confectation hee was called Patricius; Sigebertus and Staniburst write, that in his baptisme hee was called Suchat or Suchar; of Saint German, Magonius; and of Celefinus, Patricius; the like faith Beda in his Martyrologe.

Celestinus then Bilhop of Rome sent him rogether with Segetius significant a Priest, anno 432 after Palladius the Grecian, unto the Scots and I- with Saint Parish, to defend them from the Pelagian herefie; he with a wonder- with full fervency of spirit preached the Gospell unto the Irish nation, travailing in the vineyard of the Lord the space of thirty nine yeeres. converted them unto the Lord with his great learning, and fanctity of life. Wherenpon among other miracles (the which he is faid to have wrought) upon the top of an hill, like a fecond Elias, he prayed and fasted forty dayes and nights, in a vision hee received of Christ the Gospell, and a staffe, (an Hermit gave him the staffe saith Tocelin.) Hee destroyed the prophane temples of false gods, hee crected monuments of piety, builded Churches, ordained Ministers, relected the poore, redeemed captives, healed the fick, delivered the possessed, raised sixty dead persons, baptized twelve thousand, if all be true which Fincentius, Antonius, and Capprave report of him. Saint Patricks Out of the treasure of his pure heart, many Authors affirme, that he works.

Deantiquitate Avalonica ____libat Itenerarium Confessionis - libit Odoeporicon Hibernia _____ lib. x Historia Hibernia ex Ruano — lib T Detribus habitaculis ____ De futura electora viea -Ablectoria quedam 366--lib.I Sermones quoque - 120 3 Ad Cereticum tyrannum - epife:x

wrotin Latine these bookes.

Trobuslib. 23 of his life mentioneth it.

Doctor Hanmers Chronicle

Ad Avalonia incolas--epift. A Ad Hibernenses Ecclesias -----epist.plur. Ad (was Britannas -epist.plur.

The manuscript Legend of Ireland reporteth, that Saint Patrick in his Epistles wrote his ownelife. The Antiquaries report, that in his conflicts with the lages of the Gentiles, this Apoltle of the Irish wrought no lesse miracles then of old Moses under Pharaoh, or Peter under Nero, and that he endured many dipleasures. In the end after S. Patrick buris his death, hee was buried neere the City of Dune, but the yeere aed in Downe. mong the Historiographers is not agreed upon; yet in remembrance of him this distichon was made.

> Hi tres in Duno tamulo tumulantur in uno Brigida, Patricius, atque Columba pius.

Saint Patrick died first, Brigida fix yeeres after him, and Columba many yeeres after her, yet were all three buried in one grave. VVhat Bale hath formerly written, I find he hath gathered out of Vincentius, Antoninus, Capgrave, Leland, Gildas, Giraldus Cambrensis, Bostonus wrote of Saint Buriensis, and Florilegus; and all that Iocelin hath at large written, and what Legenda Plumbea, and the booke of Houth report, to avoid prolixity, and to shunne fabulous conceits, I omit. Now to the Irish Chroniclers.

Fot, in vita Pasrici] cap.12.

Authors that

Pacricks

prophecied:

They deliver, that in his captivity in Ireland being fold to Milcho King of Vister (laith locelin) to Milach (laith Staniburst) to Cuulzu (saith Florilegus) to Machuaine saith the Irish Anonymus, and to reconcile them all, I take it that Milcho was called Milcho Machuaine: he kept swine six yeeres; no disgrace unto him, for Marcellus Bishop of Rome (he that will not beleeve other writers, will credit the Martyrologe of Sarum) by the commandement of Maximian the tyrant, kept swine many yeeres. When Patricks six yeeres were expired, one of the swine turned up a clod, under the which lay so much mony as paid his ransome. When he came the second time, he landed at Carlingford, and inquired after Milche whose captive hee had beene, who would not give eare to his doctrine, but immediately after his death, his two daughters of one name, Emeriawere baptized. Laigeri-#sa (in Iocelin, Leogarius) Monarch of Ireland, the son of Neale harkning unto Magicians and Sooth-fayers, gave commandement, (togeland, withftan. ther with his brother Corbre) unto the Country, for the banishing of Saint Patrick, but Dicha and Rius (two brethren and great Commanders under him) received the faith, and Conil brother to Laigerius, who also himselfe shortly after grew indifferent, winking at them that did receive it, so that his Queene and his yonger brother received the faith, and his two daughters. And of Laigerins he thus

prophecied: because thou hast alwaies withstood my doctrine, and ceased not above measure to persecute me, and hast above all disdained to beleeve in him that made all things, thou art the childe of death. And whereas of right, thou with the rest, yea before all thy confede. Saint Pat prorates, oughteft presently to enter into everlasting torments; yet info- phecie of the much as thou meckely comment unto me, craving pardon, and like

King Achab, humblest thy selfe before my God, the Lord will not forthwith bring upon thee the evill which thou hast deserved; not-

but shall serve thy yonger brother that beleeveth in my God and his feed after him for ever.

As this holy man travailed in preaching the Gospell, he met with Motho Bishop a young man whose name was Machaa or Mache, keeping swine, in whose physiognomic hee perceived towardnesse and sparkles of grace; he taught him, baptized him, trayned him up in holy Scripture, made him Deacon, Priest, and Bishop of Dune where he lyeth buried. Clonfillan and Kellestowne fome five miles west of Dublin, have him for their Patron, where under an high rocke runneth a Spring called S. Mochon his Well. Next he baptized one Benignus or stacalled allo Stephanus, fo Probus writeth, with his father, mother, & fa- phanus, success milie, who proved so good a member in the Church of God, that he sour to Saint fucceeded S. Patricke in Armagh; this Benignus, faith Capgrave, lyeth Nunne (faith buried in Glastenburie. Saint Patricke also received into the faith, one Joseph was in Erchas, the sonne of Dega, saith Ioselin, whom he also made a Bishop. fent for him to The Martyrologe of Sarum calleth him Herkus: At that time, one her bed, but Pheg a Poet, and (faith Probus) Duprachus an Irish rymer or Poet the signe of the Crosse in Last gerius his Court, desired baptisme, and afterward all the dayes made all well. of his life, converted his vaine rymes into Chrihian Poems, and did Erebus or Harmuch good thereby among the common people.

withstanding there shall none of thy seed after thee sit upon thy seat,

Saint Patricke had brought with him into Ireland out of Italie, one 100.cap. 49.51. Mac Cartyn, of Irish birth, so I reade in the martyrologe of Sarum, 53.68.69.69. and three fifters of his owne, which proved very fruitfull. Lupita feq. (who lived a Virgin, and lyeth buried at Armagh) Trigridia and Saint Pat. Darercha. Tigridia had seventeene sonnes, and five daughters; the sikers. men became Priests, Monkes, and Bishops, the daughters were made Nunnes: the Bishops were called Brochadius, Brochanus, Mogenochus, and Lumianus. Darerea the yongest sister had two Bishops to her fonnes, Melrioch and Munis: the martyrologe of Sarum reckoneth her children thus, Mele, Melk, Muncfe, Bilhops, Riok, Finian and Bolke Abbots. Where I thinke there is some errour, that Melri-

och in locelin is Mele, and Ryok in the maytyrologe.

Of Lumianus I reade, that he baptized a Lord of the country, cal- Lumianu Biled Fedlemus, and his sonne Forkernus, whose mother was a Britain, shop of his dwelling was at Abreum There are the state of the dwelling was at Abreum There are the state of his dwelling was at Ahtrum. There Lumianus by their meanes builded a Church some twenty five yeeres before the founding of Dd 2

Armagh.

Laigerius Mo. march of Iredeth S. Patr.

Milcho his daughters are

babtized.

Armagh, the which he tooke for his Bilhops See, and ordered Forkerhus to succeed him there. The possessions (faith mine Author) which were first given to this Church, afterward by the donations of other Princes, fell to belong to Armagh.

Conallus Lord of Connaght.

The holy man Patricke laboured still in the vineyard of the Lord: he baptized Conallus, alias Comil, Lord of Connaught, brother to Luigerius, and his familie, who gave Patricke a country called Dompnac Patricke, and builded for himselse a dwelling place called Raith Artair. After seven yeeres, this Conill sent him to his brother Logan (Cogan faith the Booke of Houth) King of Leinster, whom hee baptized, together with Amolgath (whom I take to be the ancessour of the house of o Malaghlin) a great Lord of a country, and his seven fonnes, (Florilegus faith they were feven Kings.) After this, this holy man comming out of Meth, and having passed over the water at Finglas, went up to a hill some mile from the village Atheled, now called Dublin. When he had viewed the place and foile adjoyning. he bleffed the same, and is said to have prophecied thus; This village is now but small, it will be great; it will be inlarged with wealth and worship, neither will it leave increasing untill it bee advanced to the feate of the Kingdome.

In a while after, he came to the village, where the inhabitants head

ring of the wonders which the Lord wrought by his hands, went

our to meete him with much joy, and beleeved by his preaching, and

were baptized. My Author addeth that upon complaint made unto

him, how that they were annoyed with brackish waters, which of

necessitie they were driven to use, he walked about the village, turned

up cloddes, digged the earth and found a Spring, which is now cal-

Saint Patricks prophecie of Dublin.

Dublin beleeveih and is baptized.

Saint Patricks

Well. Morgaus of Caftleknoke.

led Saint Patrickes Well.

From this village Atheled, hee went to Castleknok, where one Murgaus dwelled and commanded those places, who hearing of Patricks comming, refused to give him entertainement, but sent him word that he was afleepe, in which fleepe (as the storie faith) he died, of which accident the common faying arifeth, Thou fleepeft Murguus fleepe, applyed to those that fleepe heavily, or are given to overmuch fleepe.

Saint Pat.

Ormond.

Engus and Da- to King Engus, alias Oengus Mac Nafroic, who received him ioyfully, and brought him to his Palace at Cassill, saith locelin; where also one Daris a great Lord in that country, shewed him much kindenesse. When he had baptized the King, and many thousands with him, he Temiunnanor came to Vrmiunnan now called Ormond, where in like fort they received the faith, and the inhabitants in remembrance of him builded a Church, and dedicated the same to his name. From Mounster (where he preached feaven yeeres) hee tooke his journey backe to and his daugh- Vifter, and came to King Eochu, whom he baptized, & his daughter Cumia.

From Castleknok, he bene his course towards Mounster, and came

Cumia, whom he madea Nunne, and committed her to the charge of the Nunne Cecubris (in the Nunnery of Drumdukain) whom Pa- first Nunne in sricke first vailed of all the women in Ircland. Also he baptized olea- Ircland. nus, who went into France to studie, and upon his returne, erected schooles in Ireland, and had many schollers, whereof a great number were afterwards Bilhops, he himselfe rowards his end, became a Bishop, and ended his dayes in sanctitie. When Saint Patricke had baptized a fecond Conallus (a petite King) and his brother Fergus, King Conallus he prophecied of Fedlemus the sonne of Fergus, and of Columba the and Fergus sonne of Fedlemus, what a holy man hee should prove, as after hee baptized. did, and was the founder of an hundred Monasteries.

Saint Patricke for all this travaile failed into Britaine for coadiutors Saint Patin and fellow-labourers in this worke, where he opposed himselfe both in publike and private against the Pelagians and other heretickes Pelagians. which disturbed the peace of the Church, and brought with him thirty learned men, whom afterward he confecrated Bishops. So that to this day in Britaine, (as in Anglescy, Bristoll, Exeter, and other places) there are Churches built in remembrance of him. He also converted the Isle of Man to the faith, and there is a Church which also Isle of Man. beareth his name, and lest them one Germanus to bee their Bishop, after whose death hee ordained for that place, Conidrius, Ronillus and Machaldus. Vpon his returne into Ireland, hee met with fixe of his Disciples, of Irish birth, that had beene Students beyond Seas, whom in the end hemade Bilhops; Lugacius, Columbanus, Meldanus, Lugadius, Cassanus, and Cheranus. Then he made(faith Iocelin) a fecond iourney unto Atheled now called Dublin; upon his comming, (which was about twentie yeeres after their conversion) and found them all given to idolatric, and withall, one Alpinus a King with his Queene, and his retinue, lamenting the death of Boschiad their Eoschiad and sonne & heire, and the drowning of their sole daughter Dublinia. Pa. Dublinia railed tricke preached, the people beleeved, the King hearing of him ho. ped to reape some comfort; to bee short, (saith mine Author) the dead are raised to life, and Atheled ever after in remembrance of the Kings daughter Dublinia, was called Dublin.

Saint Patrickes manner was, first to Catechize, secondly to Bap. saint Patrickes manner was, first to Catechize, secondly to Bap. Saint Patrickes tize, lastly to minister the Sacrament of the Lords Supper. When ner of teaching with the aide of the country, he builded Churches, hee would not name them after any Saints name, but Domnach the Church of the Lord. And when he had procured a Church to be builded in a place called Achad Fobuit, and confecrated his Disciple Sennachus, alias Seachuallus Bishop theresthe humblesute of Senachus unto him was, that the Church should not be called after him, as the manner was, (faith mine Author) in many places among the Irish people, The loceline.122, onely doctrine Patricke read and expounded unto the people, was the foure Evangelists, conferred with the old Testament. Hee is

Dublin whence

reported to have given many bleffings, and to have denounced many curses. He had many Disciples, Kertennus, Winnocus, Winwallocus, likewise saith Molanus, Elberus, Ibarus, Connedus, Secundinus, Asicus. Fiechus, Sennachus, Olcanus, with many others which he made Bishops. I finde mention also of Riochus that kept his Bookes and Papers, and of Rodanus that kept his Cattell, that hee made them Bishops, and the world made them Saints.

Ircland is greatly beholding unto him, for it is recorded that hee went up to the top of the Mount Hely (I take it to be a hill in Ely. O Carrols country) where he made three petitions unto Almighty three petitions God for the people of Ireland that had received the faith. First, that every one might have grace to repent, though it were at the last houre. Secondly, that they might not be utterly destroyed by Infidels. Lastly. that no Irish man should live till the day of Indgement; Quia delebitur per orationem sancti Patricij septem annis ante judicium; for it shall be destroyed by meanes of Saint Patrickes prayers, seaven yeeres before the comming of Christ to judgement. Probus maketh mention of other Petitions, which for that I hold them fabulous, I will not rehearfe: He procured (as it is written of him) seaven hundred Churches to bee workes and 1a-bour in Ireland, builded in Ireland, ordained five thousand Ministers, confecrated locetin eap. 187. three hundred and fifty Bishops, successively understand in his time.

Saint Patricks

Flor biftor.

Anten Chron.

part 2.tit, 11.

cap. 18.

Darius (the Booke of Houth calleth him Dares, in Probus Dair) a Noble man, affecting Patricke, and seeing him beare low saile, and shrowding himselfe with all humilitie in Vister, drew him to dwell at Drumsailech, now called Armagh, and having used meanes there for the building of a Church, Patricke went to Rome, procured all confirmations necessary to his purpose, arrived againe in Ireland, and being of the age of 122. yeeres, ended his life in the time that Aurelius Ambrosius raigned in Britaine, and Forthkerrus was Monarch of Ireland, Brigida and Ethembria who then were accounted two holy women, shrowded him to his grave, when Thasfach a Bishop had ministred the Sacrament. Probus writeth that the Britaines came with Strife forSaint great forces, attempting at leverall times to fetch away his corps, and Patricks body. that the men of Vifter did withstand them. As for the purgatorie that is fathered upon him. I must referre the reader to the yeere of grace,

The life of

In our Patricks time flourished many good Christians, renowned Saint Brigide. at this day, and as an Antiquarie and collector of antiquities, I desire the christian reader to accept of them as I finde them. And I will beginne with Brigida that gave Saint Patricke his winding sheete, shee Bernard in wita Was borne (as Iohn Clyn writeth) anno 439:in Focharenot farre from Dondalke, as Bernard delivereth, she was the base daughter of one Duptacus, haply Laigerius his rymer before spoken of) a Noble man (faith Bale of the North parts, a Captaine of Leinster, faith the Book of Houth. Caperave writeth, that her mother in wantonnesse having conceived,

850. where he shall finde a second Patricke founder thereof.

conceived, and her belly being espied to be up, Duptacus his wife caufed her to be turned out of doores; Duptacus to avoid the icalousie and disquietnesse of his wife, delivered her to a Poet or Bard, (a Magician faith Bale) who kept both Mother and Daughter, and trayned her up in such learning as he had skill in. Shee proved so singularly learned, and was in such account among all men, that a Synode of Bishops assembled by Dublin, used her advice in weightie causes, as A Synode by I reade in the Booke of Houth. She became a Nunne, and wrought but one miracle, (saith Bale) that is, shee used meanes to purge a Bishop, one Bronus or Bruno from fornication, when the fact was manisestly proved against him. In the authenticke manuscript Legend of Ireland, I finde that the kept most in Leinster, and builded a Cell for her abode under a goodly faire Oke, which afterwards grew to be a Monasterie of Virgins, called Cyll-dara, in Latine, Cella Quercess, the Cell of the Oke, now Kildare, and faith mine Author, ibique Kildares maxima civitas postea in honore beatissima Brigidacrevit, qua est bodie metropolis Laginensium. The first Bishop by her meanes was Conlianus, alias Conlaidus. Staniburft reckoneth the succession of the See in this fort.

<u> </u>		• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	
Lony.	Symons.	William?	
Ivor.	Nicolas.	Galfride.	
Conlie.	Walter.	Richard.	1.1
Donatus.	Richard!	Iames.	
David.	Thomas.	Wale.	
Magnus.	Robart.	Barret.	
Richard.	Boniface.		
Iobn:	Madogo	Edmund L	ane.

Bishops of Kil

Who flourished in the yeere, 1518. So farre Master Staniburst Hector Boetius puttethus in remembrance of the honour given see bift lib. 91 her by Scots, Pictes, Irish and English nations, and how that many Churches beare her name. The superstitious Irish in processe of time, found out a Bell called Clogg Brietta, Brigids Bell, whereunto, to deceive the simple people, they attribute great vertue and holinesse, the which together with other toyes they carried about, not onely in Ireland, but also in England, and were by Act of Parliament in England, banished the land in Henry the fifts time. Cambrenfis reporzeth that the harmonic of the foure Evangelists (the worke of Saint Ierame) was caused by Brigid (most of it) to be written in letters of gold, and was as curious a worke (faith he) as ever I faw, and called Brigids Booke, the which was kept as a monument (faith Staniburff) at Kildare.

She deceased about the yeere 5 to. (another faith, anno 548.) and Brigidin death. about the yeare 524. The was translated from the Hebrides into Dune,

and resteth by Saint Patrickes side, as formerly bath beene declared in his life. Ireland hath given her this Epitaph.

> Flos patria, pietatis amans, virtutis alumna, Sidus Hibernorum, Brigida virgo fuit.

In her Legend I finde mention of Erem, a Bilkop, the disciple of

Saint Patricke, borne in Mounster, also of Saint Ruanus a Bishop,

Saint Darlu-

Leinfter.

Saint Numidus, Saint Pracipuus, Saint Daria a Virgin, Saint Darluedach called a Virgin, and yet had a daughter that was baptized in the presence of Brigide. This Darlugdach was the second Nunne. and fucceeded Brigide in Kildare, whose remembrance is celebrated Illand King of the same day with her. Illand King of Leinstergave Brigide great honour, of him I read in her Legend, that hee was a most worthy Prince, and fortunate in all his affaires. Illand Rex Lagenia qui triginta bella in Hibernia vicit, octo certamina in Britannia, occidit Enquifum regem Momonia cum Ethna uxore, quos Patricius baptizavit: Illand King of Leinster, who wonne thirty battailes in Ireland, and eight combats in Britaine, sue Engusus King of Mounster, and Ethna his wife, whom Patricke had bapsized.

The life of Celius Sedulius.

Rohannes Bale Script. Brit. cent. 14.

About this time lived Calius Sedulius, whom Damianus à Goes, a Knight of Portingall challenged for a Spaniard. Bale writeth hee was a Scot, and Staniburst that he was borne in Ireland. I will first lay downe what Bale hath, next what Staniburst reporteth. Calius Sedulius (faith Bale) by nation a Scot. by calling a Prieft, a man trayned up in learning from bis youth, cleaved as a diligent scholler unto Hildebert, the most learned Archbishop of Scots, as Tritemius deliveresh. After the decease of his master, being descrous of farther knowledge, be tooke a painefull voyage in hand, travailed throughout Spain, France, Italie, Grecce and Alia; last of all, after he had read in Achaia most learned lectures, to the great profit of many, hee came backe to Rome, where with great labour be distributed most abundantly in like for the treasure of fingular learning. Hee was a man exercised in holy Scripture, of a singular wit, excellently well scene in all manner of secular literature, passing both for verfe and profe, so that Gelasius, Bi-Shop of Rome, in the decrees, dift. 15. calleth him reverend Sedulius, and gave his workes no meane commendation. Paterius the disciple of Gregorius Magnus, and Remigius Antifiedorensis, in his commentary upon him of old have published his fame and renowne. Sedulius both in verse and prese hath published many workes, whereof in Boston of Burie, and Tritemius, I onely found thefe that follow. Vnto Macedonius the Priest, a singular worke, which he intituled

The workes of Carmen paschale __ lib.4 Pascales quicung; dapes conviva requiris Elegia velexborta lib.1 Cantemus socij Dom. cantemus honorem:

De signis & virtutibus-lib. I Gestaet miracula Christi-lib.4 Superutroque testamento-lib.2 In Pfalmos Dividicos -- lib. L Collectanea in Paulum-lib. 14 In Paulum ad Romanos-lib. T Ad Corinthies ____lib.2 Ad Galatas ———lib. R Ad Ephelios -----lib.r Ad Philippenses --lib. r Ad Coloffenfes_ Ad The (Talonicenses-AdTimotheum -Ad Titum Discipulum -lib. I Ad Philemonem --- lib. I Ad Hebraos _____lib. E De factis Christi profaice lib. 2 Ad Cafarem Theodofin lib. I Epist.ad diversos-lib. E In editionem Donati-lib. In Prisciani volumen -lib. I Carmina diversi generis lib. z

Domino meo charissimo. Expulcrat quendam, &c:

Antequam Apostolica verba. Sciendum est quod hoc. Quod nomen funm proponit. Hoc est non ab humana. Refere scriptura testante. Metropoli Macedonia cum. Hac vice Apostolatus autor. Quod non dicit Apostolus: Non secundum prasumptionem. Hancepistolam scribit de In carcere vel in catenis. Quoniam apud Habraorum.

Romulidum ductor Clariff. Sedulius Scotigena dilect.

He published also cer 2 taine Hymnes which the Church ufeth.

I (A folis ortus cardine Adusque terra limitem Christum camamus principem, egci Hoftis Herodes impie Christum venisse quid times? &c.

He flourished in the yeere after the Incarnation, 450. under Theodosius Iunior the Emperour, what time Fergusius the second raigned in Scotland after bis miferable exile by the Romanes. Of this Author, Sigebertus and Bostonus write more. So farre Bale.

Staniburst pleadeth for Ireland, and writeth: Sedulius was not only R. Stanprefatied of Irish birth, but also the light of all Ireland, neither will me suffer any lib. I. dereb. Hib. longer so excellent a man out of his native soile contrary to all right to exile or wander, but be is rather to be restored to his sormer inheritance, as it were with a new folemoity of bireh. In another place hee seemeth Appendi maces. to qualifie the matter (having already chalenged Damianus a Goes of 17: iniurie) and to reconcile the diffonance of varying writers, that the Scottish is taken for the Irish, and the Irish for the Scottish; and to fatisfie the reader, noteth the confusion, how that all the commentaries of Sedulius upon the Epistles of Paul beginne, Sedulij Scoti Hibernensis, &c. the Commentarie of Sedulius the Scot of Ireland. And to shut up this challenge of all sides, I finde that there was a second Sedulius, a man of no lesse same and learning, and hee is said to beca

Scottish man therefore let Ireland being more antient then Scotland. take the first, and Scotland the last.

The life of tor Io. Bale (cript. Britanic cent.

In the like fort (excepting the challenge) standeth Fridelinus Via-Fridelinus Via ter. so called by reason of his great travaile; his stile is, Scotorum Hi. bernicorum regis olim filius, the sonne sometime of the King of the Scots in Ireland, whom I couch among them of Irish birth, because of the ancient stile and distinction often used by Buchanan, Scoti Albanenses, and Scoti Hibernenses, the first he challengeth for Scotland. the second he referreth to Ireland, and therefore I accept of him as granted. He was a Kings sonne of Ireland, excellently studied in Philosophie, earnestly addicted to the ecclefiastical course of life, and to the end he might plant religion, and spreade abroad christianitie. enterprised a voyage farre from his native soile: This holy man first of all taught here and there throughout France, he came to Poitiers, and became father of the Monkes of Saint Hilarie, and with the aide of King Glodovarus, erected a stately Monasterie, the like he did at Mosella in Flanders, upon the top of the mount Vosagius, at Argentine, Curia Rhetiorum, and elsewhere throughout Burgundie. Laftly, he came to Angia Seckingenfisupon the Rhene, to the end he might there also build a Cell; after many godly Sermons and learned Interpretations, he is said to have written a Booke of exhortations unto the facred Virgins. He flourished in the yeere 495, and resteth in the Monasterie of Seckinge before spoken of.

Saint Fekin.

Ireland remembreth the feast of Saint Fekin, that hee was of the Kings bloud, and an Abbot, cured many of the flixe or fluxe, and dyed thereof himfelfe.

The life of

Many things are written of Saint Modwen, (whom the Britaines Saint Modwen call Mandwen) the daughter of Naughtheus the Irish King, who heard Saint Patricke preach, and of her companions Orbila, Luge, Edith, Athea, Lazara, Sith (whom the Irish call Ofith) Ofmanna, and of Brigid spoken of before, whereof some began with Patricke, and ended with him, some began with him, and lived many yeeres after, (as Capgrave writeth in the life of Modwen) to the time of the Bishop Collumkill, (otherwise called Colme and Columba) and the Eremite, Abbot, or Bishop Kevin.

Saint Sith the Virgin.

Saint Modwen was a Nunne, lived 1 30. yeeres. The Irish, Scots, and English (in which countries she had travailed) strove for her corps, at length Columkill the Bishop gave sentence for England, where shee restethat Andreisey: Bale writeth how that one Galfride, Abbot of Burton upon Trent, in the time of King Toha, wrote the life and memorable acts of this Irish Virgin Modmen, unto the posterity, with great applause.

Caperave writeth the life of Saint Sith, (otherwise called ofith) that was brought up under Modwen, that the was a Kings daughter, and borne in England: Leppeloe the Carthusian, and other forraigne

forcaigne VVriters fay little of her, faving that the Danes (being Heathens) cut off her head, and that shee tooke her head in her armes, carried it uprightly three furlongs off, knockt at the Church doore, (being lockt) with her bloudy hands, and there fell downe. The The reader is Martyrologe of Sarum confounded Downells, and Saint Still Bound to Martyrologe of Sarum confoundeth Dorothy, and Saint Sith thus; beleeve this. the 15 of Ianuarie the feast of Saint Dorothie otherwise called Saint Sich, is kept in Ireland, who refused marriage, fled into a Monasterie, where the devill appeared unto her, and there mine Author left her.

Of ofmanna the Virgin I finde little, faving what Caperave repor- ofmanna the teth, that the was of the bloud royall in Ireland, and having infidels Vugin. to her parents, fled into France, dwelled upon the banke of Loire, the river of Lions, and there in peace ended her dayes.

I read that about this time one Tathe, the sonne of an Irish King, Tathe the forfooke his fathers possessions, went to the Diocesse of Landasse in Monkes . Wales, and became a Monke, builded a Monasterie, and there left his bones.

Gualterus Calenius, Archdeacon of Oxford; Caxton and others The flones of doe write, that Aurelius Ambrofius, after his valiant exploits and Salisbury lent noble victories, went to a Monasterie neere Cair-caredoch, now cal- for into Ireled Salisburie, where through the treason of Hengist, (which the Bri-land. taines call Toilly Killill Hirion, the treason of the long knives) the Nobles and Princes of Britaine were flaine and buried, called his Councell, and demanded what monument were meete to be made there in remembrance of fo many Nobles of the land there resting in the dust of the earth. Carpenters, Masons, Carvers, Ingravers, and Tombemakers, being out of all places sent for, came thirher, delivered their opinions, but concluded nothing. Then stepped forth a Bishop, which faid; O King, if it may stand with your pleasure, there is one Merlin of Worcester, a Prophet, a searcher of Antiquities, a man of rare gifts, I wish his opinion in the matter. Merlin came, and being "advised, faid as followeth. Most Noble King, upon occasion offe-"red, I went lately into Ireland, and having ended my businesse, I "was inquisitive of antiquities, and sight of monuments, where a-"mong other things, being brought to a mountaine of Kildare, I " faw fo rare a fight, in fo rude a country, as might bee scene, there " was a round row of huge stones, the which none of this age had so framed, neither could be, unlesse Art had mastered the common skill of man; fend for them, and let them up as they are there couched, and they will bee a monument while the world standeth. Hereat the King fmiled and faid, how shall we convey so great flones into Britaine, from lo farre a countrey, and to what end? as though Britaine yeelded not as good stones to all purposes? Merlin replied, be not displeased O King, there is a hid mystery in those stones, they are medicinable, and as I was given to understand in Ireland, the

Gyants of old dwelling in that land, procured them from the farthest

Gillomer, King of Leinster.

part of Affricke, and pitched them there, in them they bathed themfelves, and were rid of their infirmities. The Britaines hearing this, were perswaded to send for them, the King appointed his brother Vier-Pendragon, with Merlin, and fifteene thousand men to effect the businesse. In a short time, they arrived in Ireland. Gillomer King of Leinster, raised an Armie to resist them, and reviled the Britaines. faying, what fooles and affes are you? are the Irish better then the British stones? and turning himselfe to his Armie, said, come on, quit your selves like men, keepe your monuments, and defend your country. Vter-Pendragen feeing this, animated his company, they met. and manfully encountred in the end: Gillomer fled, and the Irish were discomfitted. Vter-Pendragon marched on, they came by Merlins direction to the place, and beholding the hugenesse of the stones. they wondred, yet they joyed that they had found them. To worke they went, some with Ropes, some with Wythes, some with Ladders, and carried them away, brought them to Britaine, and pitched them in the Plaine of Salisburie, which place is now called Stonebenge.

Stonchenge.

In prefatione ad hift. Danie

Io. Harding.

Beside this, there are divers monuments of Gyants in Ireland, as at Dundalke, Louth, Ardee, and on the hilles not farre from the Naas: the like Sano Grammaticus reporteth of the Danes, a nation famous for Gyants, and mighty men, and this, faith he, the great and huge stones laid of old upon Caves and Tombes of the dead, doe declare.

About this time, Passent the sonne of Vortiger that fled into Germany for aide, arrived in the North parts, Aurelius Ambrofius met him, and put him to flight; Paffent came into Ireland, delivered his griefe unto Gillomer King of Leinster, craved him to extend his Princely favour toward him; Gillomer on the other fide complained of the wrong done him by Vter-Pendragon and the Britaines, namely, how they had flaine his subjects, wasted his country, and carried away his rare monuments, concluding that hee was willing of himselfe to be revenged of them, much more finding this opportunitie. Caxton faith, he came with fifteene thousand Irish to aide Passent against the Britaines; the Armie was great, for with Paffent came Germans, Irish and Saxons, and arrived at Menevia (now called Saint Davids) at which time Aurelius Ambrofius being ficke of poylon, (by the procurement of Paffent) of which he died, Vter-Pendragen was appointed Generall of the field, met with the invaders, fought a bloudy battaile (where many fell on both fides) and in the end, flue Gillomer, King Paffent and Gillomer, and ouerthrew the Germans, Irish, and Saxons, of Launter, and was crowned King of England.

Davids in Wales.

I doc finde in Antiquaries, together with Florilegus, Fabian, Caxton, Holinshed, and Fleminge, (men of great judgement) that the Pictes and Scots in the dayes of King Arthur (who fucceeded his father Vier-Pendragon) loyned with the Saxons, and drew to their

aide, Gillomer, second of that name, King of Ireland, so that Arthur fent for Hewell his fisters sonne, King of little Britaine in France. who came with fifteene thouland fighting men, and ioyning forces with Arthur, foyled the Pictes, Scots, and Saxons, vanguished the Irish King, and chaced him into Ireland, and the yeare following. viz. five hundred twenty and five, in revenge of the former aide, hee came into Ireland, offered King Gillomer battaile, hee then being Anne Dom. 525. Monarch of Ireland (as Canton and the book of Housh record) affembled the Princes and Nobles of the land, and it is faid that King An- Homage for guish came to the field with five thousand horse, but Arthur constrai- Ireland. ned them to yeeld, and to acknowledge by doing their fealtie, to hold the Realme of Ireland of him. Whereof Harding faith,

The Comner next Arthur went to Ireland, With battaile fore forefoughten y conquered, And of the King, had homage of that land To hold of him, fo was he of him feared; And also gate (as Chronicles have us lered) Denmarke, Frifeland, Gotland and Normey; Iseland, Groenland, the Isle of Man and Orkney.

The booke of Houth recordeth, that anno Dom. 519: Arthur fummoned to a special feast of solemnitie of the round Table, Gillomer the Monarch of Ireland, and King Anguish, with the Princes and Nobles of the land, where they continued during the whole time of the folemnitie. In which triumphit is recorded that Garret, King of Orkeney, sonne to King Lotho, and nephew to Arthur, being one of King Arthurs Knights, together with his two brethren, performed most valiant exploits, encountred with Anguish, King of Ireland, Goranes King of Scotland, Cador, Duke of Cornewall, and with other Princes, and wanne great honour. This Anguish claimed tribute from Marke, King of Cornewall, that formerly was wonne by combate, and fent Morogh (whom Caxton calleth Marhaus) the Maroth, one of K. Arthurs Queene of Leinsters brother, who was also one of King Arthurs Knights: Knights, to demand it; he was a valiant Gentleman, often tryed, and ever quitted himselfe with honour. The Frenchmen calleth him Le Morboult d'Ireland; and a Citizen of London thus blazoneth his Rich. Robinfon Armes.

of Armes and Archerie

In filver shield, on felle of peeces five throughout the fame, Hebare a Lyon Rampant red and arme greene, whose name Might feeme to fignifie in truth. each mighty enterprise, A prey most fie for bis courage, as is the Irish guise.

Ec 2

Marke.

Marke. King of Cornewall denieth the tribute, offereth the com-

bate, and Sir Triftram undertaketh it for him. Morogh for himselse

pleaded that he was to encounter with none, unleffe he were a King

or Oucene, a Prince or Princesse sone; the circumstances being con-

fidered and agreed upon, the combatants meete, and fiercly fight, the

battaile was a long time doubtfull; in the end, Sir Triftram gave Sir

Morogh with his fword, a fore blow, that a piece of the edge stucke

venomed, and could not be cured untill that by counfaile he repaired

to the country where the venome had beene confected. Whereupon

he came to Ireland, and to King Anguish his Court, and having great

skill upon the Harpe, he recreated himselfe, delighted the house, and

fell in loue with La Bell 160d the Kings daughter, and she with him.

In processe of time the Queene had learned that he had given her bro-

ther Morogh his deaths wound, and comparing the piece of the

fwords edge which was taken out of the skull, with his fword, found

them to agree, and banished him the land. Not long after upon con-

ference had with Marke, King of Cornewall, of marriage, and commending the beautie and vertues of La Bel Isod spoken of before, hee

commeth to Ireland to intreate of marriage betweene King Marke

and her. And having effected his purpose, taketh her with him to

but the old secret love betweene Tristram and her, had taken such

La Bel Isod; and thus as his love began with the Harpe, so it ended at

the Harpe; it is recorded that Ifed came to his grave and Iwouned.

She was (faith mine Author) so faire a woman, that hardly who so

beheld her, could not chuse but be enamoured with her. In Dublin

upon the wall of the Citie, is a Castle called Isods towre, and not farre

from Dublin, a Chappell with a Village named Chappell-Ifod: the

original cause of the name I doe not finde, but it is conicctured, that

her father King Anguilh, that doted on her, builded them in remem-

in his scull, whereupon the combate ended, Morogh returned into e Ireland, and shortly after died of the wound. This doth Caxton and the booke of Houth deliver at large. But I may not end thus with Sir booke of Houth. Tristram, he also was sore wounded with a Speare, whose head was

Sir Triffram, & La Bell Ifod.

Marke, King of Cornewall, where Marke espouled her with greatioy and solemnity; Cornewall married La impression in both, and so inflamed their hearts, that it could not easi-Bell I(od. ly be quenched, so that in processe of time, Marke espied it, and in lealouse. his furious jealousie, slue him as he played upon the Harpeto recreate

The life of Congellus a Britaine.

brance of her, the one for her recreation, and the other for the good of her foule. About the time that King Arthur raigned, lived many famous men of Irish birth, renowned for their great learning and sanctitie, and commended by divers Antiquaries, both at home and abroad to the posteritie. But before I come to speake of them, I must first make mention of Congellus a Britaine by birth, who builded the Monastericof Bangor, not farre from West-Chester, which was called the Colledge

Colledge of Christian Philosophers, and became the first Abbot thereof himselfe, in the dayes of King Arthur, anno Dem. 530. I make mention of him, because Bernard in the life of Malachias, reporteth this Colledge or Abbey which he built, to have beene the head or principall Abbey of all the Monasteries in Europe, the seminarie or see hive of many thousands of Monkes, after the Apostolike manner, getting their living with the sweate of their browes, and the labour of their owne hands. And the rather for that he had to his Difeiples of Irish birth, Columbanus that travailed France, Germanie, and Italie, Brendanthat furnished Ireland and Scotland with holy men, with Luanus and others, of whom I shall have occasion to speak in their places. This Congellus also (Bernard is mine Author) founded the Abbey of Benchor, alias Bangor, here in Vister, where many fin-Bangoe in gular learned men of Irish birth were trayned up, yea Britaines, Sax. ons, and Scots alfo, and dispersed themselves farre and nigh, (as hereafter shall more plainely appeare) into forraigne countries, converted and confirmed thousands in the true faith. The which Abbey of Benchor, was afterward deftroyed by Pyrates, and nine hundred Monks flaine in one day, and fo continued waste unto the time of Malachias Bishop of Armach, whereof I will speake hereaster.

Yet in an ancient manuscript Legend of Ireland, I finde that this congellus sup-Gongellus the Abbot was borne in Dail Naraid in VIster, of honou-poled to be rable Parents, and upon some displeasure conceived, forsooke his linh, native soile, came to Mounster to Saint Fintan Abbot of Gluoyn Ednech at the foote of Mons Blandina, where he was joyfully received, who after long instruction, through the counsaile of Fintan, returned to his native foile, and entred the Monafterie of Saint Riaran in Cluayn Mac Noyle, where Bilhop Lugidus gave him orders; and that in a while after, he founded the famous Abbey of Benchor in Vister, in the country called Altitude ultorum, to the East sea (as I Altitude Plis reade in the life Moccomog) containing three thousand Monkes, and led the Ardess that seven yeeres after, hee went into Britaine, and founded there a Monasterie that swarmed with Monkes, as formerly in part is delivered, whither out of all places by fea and land, they flocked unto him, for the same of learning which there was professed. He, when hee had setled his affaires there, returned into Ireland, and now resteth at his monasterie of Benchor. The same of both Monasteries or Colledges of Christian Philosophers and famous men thirher frequenting, and enterconffing with domesticall and forraigne students, mee thinkes, should reconcile Britaine and Ireland now being in one, and breed an agreement among Antiquaries.

Brendan, among others, was famous at this time, borne in Con- grendens life. naght, brought up under Hereus a Bishop, and directed by Barintus a Monke, he was excellently feene in the liberall sciences, and travailed into Britaine to the Abbey of Bangor, where hee learned the

mona-

monasticall rules of Congellus, from thence he went to Llancarvan and builded a Monasterie, became the father of three thousand Monkes that got their living with the labour of their hands, and sweate of their browes, left to oversee them Machatus and Molochus, travailed over Ireland and Scotland with other countries; afterseeven yeeres peregrination, he returned to Ireland, and became Bishop of Kerry, (of old called Kiaragi, but now Ardsertensis) where he ended his dayes, and lyeth buried at Cluenarca, otherwise called Luarcha. Yet in the life of Ruadanus, I finde hee was buried at Cluanserta. Other things that Capgrave, the martyrologe, and Bale have, I omit.

Saint Fynbarry.

Lee flus

VVhen Saint Brendan was olde, Saint Fynbarry was a childe, hee is now the Patrone of the Cathedrall Church of Corke; his Legend runneth thus: There was a certaine King in Ireland, called Tegernasus, who had to his handmaid, a very beautifull Damosell; this King gave charge throughout his dominion, that none should be so bold as to touch her, for it was supposed he kept her for his owne tooth. Yet (laith the Legend) one of his fouldiers, whose name was Amorgen, (a blacke Smith) got her with childe, the which being brought to light, and the time of her travaile nigh approaching, Tegernatus commanded that Amorgen the father, the faire harlor the mother, (with her great bellie) thould bee cast into the fire, and burned to ashes. But (saith the Legend) they were all miraculously deliuered, and the childe fafely brought into the world. At his bapt fine he was named Loanns, but in a while after, three religious men that had the charge of him (by reason of the beautie of his white lockes, and gratious aspect) called him in Irish, Fuenbarrab, whom now wee call Fynbarry. He was brought up under Bilhop Torpereus, the disciple of Gregorie, Bilhop of Rome, and was conversant with Fatturus, (another Legend calleth him Fyachna) a King in Ireland, who did alor him a certaine portion of land in his country. Bilhop Torperens gave him orders, after which he went (faith the Legend) into Albania now called Scotland, did much good there, and went from thence to Rome, and was confecrated Bilhop in the time of Gregorie the first, then he returned to Ireland, landed on the South fide of the river Lee, where one Edo a Noble man gave him a parcell of ground, where (with the aide of many good men) he built the old Citie of Corke, and the Cathedrall Church, annexing thereto a faire Church yard, wherein now standeth a watch Towre, builded by the Danes. The Legend speaketh of a priviledge granted to that Church-yard, which I take to have beene brought in through the covetousnesse of the Priests: That what faithfull soever being penitent, shall bee buried there, shall not after this life, feele the torments of hell; as if every faithfull penitent Christian were not freed from hell, wherefoever he be buried. But let us proceed: Torpereus Bishop of Cloan his Schoolemaster, was the first man that was buried in that Church-yard. After this, Finbarry went to Calangus a reverend man, then Abbot of Cloane, and concluded betweene themselves, that in the seare of God, they would both be buried in one place, and so indeed it sell out, for there Finbarry sell sicke, received the Sacrament at the hands of Calangus, ended his dayes, and was brought to the Church-yard old Gorke, and there interred; shortly after, sollowed Calangus, and there Bishop Torperus the first Bishop of Cloane, Finbarry the first Bishop of Corke, and Calangus the first Abbot of Cloane, keepe together in the dust of the earth, waiting for the resurrection at the last day. The sabulous circumstances of the Legend I leave to old Wives and long winters nights; yet to satisfie the reader that I met with the Originall, I will lay down part of the Latine rithmes sung yeerely on his day, being the 25. of September, not worthy of translation into English, and here they follow.

Ex officio Santti Finbarri.

Infantis clari matremque patremque ligatum Ambo Rex quondam, flammis praceperat uri; Interea mirum bellum geffere elementa, Ignis edax stupuit, non audens mandere ligna. Hic nondum genitus jam matris ventre moratus, Onovares! miris cepis clamare loquelis, Obstupuit rex, &c. Ad Christ verbum ducentes tres seniores Infantem fecum nitidum, vultuque decorum; Dogmata ut facra cunabulo disceret evo Contigit ut nimie, folis fervore fitiret. Tune fenibus quidam praceperat ire ministrum Vt potum puero cerva deduceres almo Statim cerva petens vitulum lac fudis abunde. Et potum, dec. Rex quondam retinens plenam turpedine prolem Luminis expertem natum, mutamque puellam Praclarum Christi famulum iam rogitavit Vt natos miseros ditaret munere caro Illico respensit cacus, & muta locuta Ad natum regis cacum, wutamque puellam Fynbarry precibus salvavit conditor almus. Santius Fynbarrus quondam cum rege fedebat, Cumque falutabant leti fefe vice verfa, Audierant fletum triftem, magnumque lamentum: At rex confestim turbatus, ben mea, dixit, Regalis conjux nunc mortem gustat amaram. Tunc dixit Christi famulus, depone merorem, Namque porest dominus vitam donare defunctis.

Fynbarry

Fynbarry precibus tune fæmina viva resurgit. Fynbarrus residens Rex atque sub arboris umbra : Tunc placuit Regi miracula cernere quadam Auxiliante Deo Fynbarrus qua faciebat; Interea corylus gignebat tempore veris Maturos fructus, valde largeque cadebant. Miratur corylum vernalem gignere fructum.

With many fuch strange things with which I will no longer trouble the reader, nor keepe him from that which followeth.

Now commeth in the confused name of Colme, Columba, Columbanus, Columkillus, and Colmannus; who all lived at one time, about the dayes of King Arthure, and were all of Irish birth, but are greatly mistaken by the Antiquaries.

Columbanus.

The first called Columbanus by Adamannus and Capgrave, in the life of Columba, was, as they write, Episcopus Laginensis, a Bishop of Leinster, but the Diocesse of which he was Bishop, I finde not named.

Columba.

The fecond by Beda (whom, for authority and antiquitie, I reverence) is called Columbanus presbiter & Abbas, Priest and Abbots whom Capgraue calleth Columba, borne of Noble Parentage in Ireland. Adamannus who wrote his life, saith, his father hight Feidlimyd, the sonne of Fergus, his mother Ethnea, and that the second yeere after the bloudie battaile of Cule-Dreibne, he came to Britaine Cule Dreibne. in the time of Gildas sapiens, and converted the Pices. But before his departure out of Ireland, he founded a Monasterie (saith Beda) à copia roborum, in the Scottish tongue called Dearmagh. Capgrave termeth * Roboretum, the grove of Okes. In Britaine (faith Beda) he builded a Monasterie in the Iland called Hu, (Capgrave calleth it Iona) where he lyeth buried, ending his dayes at the age of 77. yeeres, whose death Aidanus King of Scots greatly lamented. Beda reporteth that some wrote of him, which work came not to his hands, and that in the observation of Easter he followed no other direction, then hee found in holy Scripture. Here (gentle reader) two scruples are to be removed from among our Irish Antiquaries; the first Beda dissolveth, Beda Ang bift. namely that of him the name of Columbilli came in Columba, now a dayes (faith be) of some men compounding Cella and Columba, is called Columcelli, and in Caperave we reade Columkillius. The second scruple is, where Beda writteh that he was buried in the Isle Hu, the Antiquaries of Ireland record his funerall to have beene at Downe, (as formerly I have written) in one Tombe with Patricke and Brigide; I hold both may be true, namely that he was buried in the Isle before spoken of, and being thence translated into Downe in Ireland, (as Brigide was before) now resteth therein one grave with Patricke and

The third Columbanus, otherwise called Columba, of Irish birth, 3 Columba. was a most famous man of that time for learning and vertue, eternized in writing by Ionas an Abbot his disciple, also by Capgrave, Bale, Surius, Baronius, Lippeloo and Staniburft. In his youth he was mightily tempted with the feminine fex, nihil tam fanctum religione, (faith mine Author) tamque custodia clausum, quod penetrare libido nequeat.

He forlooke his native foile, went to Congellus, Abbot of Bangor. continued there many yeeres, and having formerly taken with him twelve of his country men, called twelve followers, hee went into France, and made them Cabanes, after the Irish manner, in stead of Monasteries. Many fabulous things are reported of Wolves, Beares, and Fowles of the ayre, that they had no power over him. When he had continued together with his followers, twenty yeeres in one place, he was banished thence, and being desirous to returne to Ireland, Clotarius sonne to Chilpericke staid him, yet he tooke his course into Italie, where Agilulphus King of Lombardie received him most honourably, and in Italie hee died, faith Beda in his Martyrologe, though Capgrave write it was in Almaine, whose report of him to, capgrave. I may notomit. He builded (saith he) certaine famous Monasteries in Almaine, into the which, (as it is faid) they admitonely Irish men unto this day. He wrote (faith Lippelee) a booke against the Arians, Bale reckoneth his other workes that he published.

In pfalterium commentar: ___lib. I. De moribus monachorum metrice lib. i. Hac pracepta legar. Epistolas ad Commilitones lib. 1. Monasteriorum methodos -- lib. I. Adversus Theodoricum regem adulterum ____lib.t

This Columbanus had many learned men of Irilh birth, brought columbania his up under him. The Martyrologe of Sarum remembreth one Deico- Irish disciples, lus an Abbot. Capgrave and Walafridus Strabe commend one Gallus, Gallus. whom Columbanus lest behinde him in Almaine. And when Gunzo Duke of Suevia would have made him Bilhop of Constance, he preferred one John his Deacon and disciple, to the roomth, and kept the desert himselfe. Surius writeth, Italie glorieth of Columbanus, Almaine of Gallus, and Flanders of Kilianus. Hee wrote, as Bale remembreth.

In electione Iohannis-Orat. I. Sempiternus & inastimabilis Deus Gubernanda ecclesia formam-lib. z

Ionas likewise his disciple, is by Tritemius commended and recko Jonas a Monke ned among the great learned men of Ireland, who at the request of

lib.5.cap.10.

The

certaine brethren, penned for the good of posteritie.

Vitam Abbatis Columbani - lib.1 3 Vitam Attala Monachi ——lib.1 (All'are found among Be-Vitam Eustachij Abbatis ____lib.1 da his workes. Vitam Bertolfi Abbatis.

a Columbi

There was a fourth Columbanus a Monke in Luxonium, countriman and kinsman to Columbanus going before, who dyed in his presence; so much I finde of him in Capgrave, and no more of him either there or in any other.

Colmannus and Colme.

Colmannus I must referre to his place, and Colme I must leave to the vulgar and corrupted speech; yet in one Author I finde, that Colme is buried with Patricke and Brigide, which must be understood to be Columbanus spoken of before.

About the latter dayes of Saint Martin, Bishop of Toures in France, Ninianus a Britaine (whom Beda worthily commendeth) comming from Rome, was made Bishop of Lyndsey, Lindessernenfis, whom Aides (otherwise called Aidanus and Adanus) Finanus and Colmannus, all three of Irish birth, orderly succeeded in the

dayes of King Arthur.

Saint Mochada About this time, Carthagus commonly called Mocudu, Mochada and Mocedi was the first Bishop of Lismore, he descended of the sept of Ferculius, the most potent Prince of Vlster, whose of-spring were dispersed over Ireland, his father matched with the royall bloud of Mounster, he had to his Schoolemaster one Carthagus a Bishop. It is alledged in his Legend, (penes authorem sit sides) that it was prophecied, he should become a great man, and build two cities; the first, Raithe (or Raichen) in Feraceall; the second, Lismore. This diversitie of names comming upon accidents, is known unto them that have skill in the old Irish. It is remembred in his life, that in his youth, 30. Virgins were in love with him, and that hee prayed unto God, to turne their carnall into spirituall love, which was granted, yet (saith mine Author) to requite their former love, he builded them all Cells, and they dwelled in his parish, and conversed with him all the dayes of their lives He had disciples that proved rare men, Mochue, Mocoemoge, Gobbanus, Sraphanus, Lazreaanus, Molva, Aldanus, Flachus, Findeling, with others. He was compelled to forfake Raithen, and travailed west-ward, untill he came to the river Nem, now called Band more, falling from the mountaine Chua, and running into the sea, whereupon Lismore is builded, and given to Saint Mocodi. For the Lord of that country, Nandeisi Melochtrig, the fon of Cokthacg, before witnesse, granted him that seate, to build both Church and Citie, where heresterh, and whom one Molcolmog succeeded.

The life of Saint Machusus or Masla-

Machutus otherwise called Maclovius, though Bale and Capprave

call him a Britaine, yet I finde that he was borne in Ireland, and that he was the some of one Lovi, and therefore called Maclovy. Molanus writeth, that he croffing the feas, and having good successe, led an Eremites life in Britaine, and was the disciple of Saint Brendan of Ireland. He accompanied with one Aaron, and kept with him in an Island of his name, (faith Molanus) called Auron, but now I finde Iles of Aran, it in the North-west parts of Ireland, belonging to the Earle of Ormond, called the Isles of Aran: Lastly, he was made Bishop of Aletha, and is honoured at Gemblacum in Flanders, where the Church (say they) is patronized by Saint Machutus, alias Maclovius, hee lived (faith Bale) about the yeere 540. what time Arthur commanded 10.Bale cent. 1.

Kentegernus then also lived, and now is remembred in Ireland and Saint Kenteger. in Wales: the Martyrologe of Sarum reporterh, that his Mother wist not how, when, nor by whom he was gotten, yet was shee an holy woman, (faith mine Author) and much loved our Lady. She was cast downe headlong from a rocke (saith mine Author) into the sea, and tooke no hurt, then put into a Boate alone without Sayle or Oare, came into Ireland, and presently travailed with child. He became an Abbot of 965. Monkes, kept company with Saint

David, and in the end was a Bishop.

Ruadanus borne in Ireland, of Noble Parentage, his father hight Ruadanus his Byrra, of the of-spring of Duach, but inhabited the West part of Leinster, of olde called Ofraigie, but now Offorie, whose sept is called Dnachs, in those parts unto this day He left Offorie, and hearing of the fame of Saint Fynnan, a wife and a learned man, dwelling in his owne towne, (so saith mine Author) commonly called Clonard, of Cluayn jarhaird in Meath, and confines of Leinster, relorted to him, who for the space of certaine yeeres, brought him up in facred letters, gave him orders, and sent him to Muscraytrie in Mounster, where he was borne, where also he builded a Monasterie, which standeth to this day, and is maintained by the Lords of the foile. From thence he went to a place called Lothra, where he builded another Monasterie, and lyeth there wayting the generall refurrection. Saint Brendan at the same time builded a Cell not farre from that place, called Tulach Brenayd, that is, (faith mine Author) Collis Brendani, left Ruadan the charge thereof, tooke his bleffing, and begun his travaile, as the Legends at large doe write. Rusdanus is faid to have written these bookes in the Latine tongue-

De miraculosa arbore _____lib. T De mirabili fontium in Hibernia nasura—lib. 1 Comra Diarmojd regem

Saint Faghna lived in the time of Finbarry, and founded a Mona- his life,

sterie upon the sea in the south part of Ireland, where he became Abbor, the which feat grew to be a Citie, wherein a Cathedrall Church was builded, and patronized by Faghua. This towne of olde called Rossai Lithry, but now Roskarbry, hath beene walled about by a Lady of that country, but now according to the fruits of warre, among the Carties, O Driscales, and other septs, scarce can the old foundation bescene. There hath beene there of old (faith mine Author) magnum studium' scholarium, a great Pniversitie, whereto reforted all the South-west parts of Ireland for learnings sake, Saint Brendan Bishop of Kery, read publikely the liberall sciences in that schoole. Farther of Faghua or Faghuanus, mine Author recordeth. that he being sapiens of probus, a wise and a good man, by mishap sell blinde, and with many prayers, and falt teares, defired of God, restitution of his fight, for the good of his Covent, and the Students brought up under him; a voyce he heard, (faith mine Author) goe get some of the breast milke of Broamus the artificers wife, wash thine eyes therewith, and thou shalt see. He went to a Prophetesse called Yea or Ytha, to learne how to come by this woman, and it fell out that this woman was her fifter, hee found her our, washed his eyes, and recovered his fight; whether it be true or no, I know not, I report it as I finde it. This Saint Tta was an Abbatesse, whose original was of Meth, but the was borne in Mounster.

Saint Tia the Abbateffe.

Saint Mocseimoge.

Vpon the storic of Faghua dependeth the Legend of Mocoeinoge, interpreted in Latine, mens pulcheriuvenis, my beautifull young man, who proved learned, an Abbot and a Bishop, being the childe of those breafts that walked Faghua his eyes; many admirable things are reported of him wherewith I will not trouble the reader. He conversed Divers learned with Coemanus or Chemanus, Cannicus, Finianus Abbas, Colman a Bishop, Daganus Abbot of Inbyr-dayle in Leinster, Mocobe his owne disciple, Illepius the disciple of Mocobe, Molna, Most Eta, Cunmimus longus, the sonne of Fiachua, and Cronanne, who lycth buried at Rosscre, Luctichernus and Lazerianus, with Tea, Patronesse of Hua Conaill, & her Abbot of Cluarn Mac Noys, & Abbot Englis, & Abbot Congallus, of Vifter, Mocoeinogereftethin the county of Typperary, by along foord in the way from Kilkenny to the Holy Crosse(as they cal it) where sometime was a Citie & a Monasterie called Liath, but now a Village bearing his name, Liath Mococinoge. He had in his life time much adoe with Coemanus, Bledin, Ronanus, Foelanus, Diarmoda, Sugbae, Lords of Ely, (now called Ely O Carroll) and with Falke Fland, King of Mounster, whose chiefe Pallace was in Cashell.

Saint Coeinge-

Saint Coeingenus shall next be spoken of, in Latine as much to say, as pulchrogenitus, he was ordered by Bishop Lugidus, & led an heremeticall life in a Cell, in a place of old called Cluayn Duach, where he was borne and brought up. Now the place is called Gleand-daloch Gleanst dalech. (faith mine Author) Vallis duorum flagnorum, a walley of two pooles

or standing waters, where one Dymnach a Lord of the soile founded Dymnach. a Cathedrall Church, in the honour of Saint Cocingenus, joyned therunto a faire Church-yard, with other edifices, and divers buildings; the which in mine Author, legenda fancti Cooingeni) is termed civi. tas de Glandelogh. In the life of Saint Patricke I finde, that hee prophecied of two rare men, Albanus and Coeingenus, and that this should be a Bishop, and that one Molingus should succeed him, I finde this true in the See of Glandelogh. Goeingenus was a great learned man, and wrote these bookes.

De Britannorum origine __ lib. 1 Bryto five Brutus. De Hibero & Hermone___lib. I Hyber & Hermon.

Molva before mentioned in the life of Mococinoge, (of his mother Saint Alolva called Engidus, but of his mafter, Congallus) was a great learned man, borne in Mounster, in Huafi, of the sept of Corcach. His father hight Carthach, alias Coche, his mother Sochla, that is, Large; hee was brought up under Congallus in Vifter, in his Abbey of Benchor, where he received orders, and was sent into his native soile of Mounfter, for the good of his country. Hee came to the schoole of Saint Her, for the good of his country. The came to the ichoose of Saint Finnian Finnian, in the confines of Leinster, and profited there very much, his schoole, from thence he went to mount Luacha in the South-west part of the Inacha mons. river Synna, together with his disciples, and craved of Foelanus, synna su. Lord of that foile, license there to inhabite, who resuled him, so that he went to his kindred in Ofraigi, (now called Offorie) who received him loyfully. In a while after, he went to mount Smoil, now cal- Mount Smoill led mous Blandina, where he cast his staffe, and builded a Monasterie in a place called Rosse Bualead, by licence of Berachus Lord of that foile, (in Latine, Dux Laign) where he decreed, faith the Legend, ut nulla mulier ibisemper intraret, that no woman should alwaies enter into it; which was, and may well be observed to this day, yea while the worldendureth. In the same place was afterwards a famous citie builded, called Cluayn ferta Molua, in Latine, latibulum mirabile fanti Molva, the secret habitation of Saint Molva, He conversed with Saint Flanganus, Molay Si, alias Molassus, Seebua Bishop of Saigir or Divers Bishops Sagri, where it lyeth, I finde not, but by all likelyhood it should not men, be farre from Cluayn Ferta, with Moedog Archbilhop of Leinster, Einenss Abbot of Rosse Mac Treoin in Kenselach, upon the river Berua, founded by the olde Saint Abbanus, with Daganus Abbot of Berua ft. Ardgabraine in Nandesi, called Achad Dagani, Saint Cronan in infu. la Cree, Stellanus his disciple, Manchenus and Munnu, Abbot of Techmunnuin Kenselachin the South part of Leinster. Hee ended the way of all flesh, and resteth in the Monasterie of Cluayn Ferta, where one Lachtanus succeeded him. He is said to have wrought many wonders, and if the reader laugh not, I will penne him one.

Molva

Molva in an evening walking among the cattell of his monasterie. heard a company of Wolves howling for their prey; hee was moved with pitty, called them to him, washed their feet, made them a feat and gave them lodging. The Legend faith further, that they thence. forth familiarly conversed with the Heard keepers, and chased away other Wolves and theeves. Hewrote

The life of Saint Munnu.

Lazerianus.

Regulas Monachorum, confirmed by Greg. 1.

Munnu spoken of in the former Legend, came of good parentage. of the house of Neill, his father was Tulchanus, his mother Fedelyr. he was brought up under Silell a learned man in the North of Ireland. Hee proved a fingular learned man, and wrote a booke de pascate, which was in his time in question, he outlived Congallus and Columba. and conversed with Baithenus and Lazerianus, Abbor of Leighlin, he dwelt a while in Ely, from thence hee went to Athcayn in Kinselach, and in Achad Liachtrom he builded a monasterie cailed Teach-Munnu, alias Thech-Munnu, where hee gave up the ghost, 12. of the Kalends of November, and yet the Martyrologes place him the fixt Kalend of the same moneth. In his storie I finde mention of a controversie betweene him and Lazerianus, who builded a Monasterie, In stagno Hibernia Dai ynis, in Latine, bovis insula, in the North part of Ireland, so it is written in the life of Adanus: afterwards he came to the river Berba (now called the Barrow) and there became Abbot of fifteene hundred Monkes. In their time, the old controversie about the observation of Easter, was vehemently urged of all fides; a great disputation and parlie was appointed in Campo Albo (faith mine Author) upon the Barrow. Munnu held the old. the other the new observation. To be short, Munny gave this offer. brother Lazerianus (saith he) let us not spend time, neither trouble this people with this tedious question; choose for the tryall of the truth, one of these three things, take two bookes, one of the old, the other of the new Easter, cast them into the fire, looke which the fire faveth, let the truth rest there; or take two Monkes, one of thy side, If they were another of mine, and cast them both into an house set on fire, he that as fat in those commeth forth fafe, let him carry the truth. Or let us goe to the grave of some holy Monke, and raise the dead, and stand to his sentence, when we shall keepe Easter this veere. Lazerianus resused his beene oldfry. offers, and faid, I will no longer contend with theo brother Munes, for I know thy worthinesse and fanctitie is such, that if thou command the mount Margee over against us to remove to this Campus albus, and this ground to remove thither, I am of opinion it will bee fo, thus they broke up and did nothing.

daies, as most of them proved after there

Saint Kenny his life.

Cannicus or Kennicus was borne in the North of Ireland (in Connaught as I gather) his father was called Lugaid Lechteag a Poet, his mother hight Maula or Mella, her was trayned up in Britaine in the christian schoole of Decas, thence he went to Rome, and took orders

in Italie, returned into Ireland, preached the Gospell most zealously, and (faith his Legend) wrought many miracles. He converfed with great learned men, namely Eugenius, Bilhop of Ardratha, Baithenus Learned men. and others. Adamanns in the life of Columba formerly spoken of, and the second of the name, writeth (wherby I gather the time of the learned men of that age) how that at one time, Cannicus, Congallus, Brendanus, Gormacus, and Fynbarry visited Columba, and were all present when he celebrated the divine mysterie. Colmanus the sonne of Feraid, Lord of Ofraide or Offragy, now called Offorie, was Kannicus his deare friend, who after he had received the faith, gave him many villages, where he builded Cels and Monasteries, but chiefely at Achadbo, where he resteth. When the time of his departure out of this finfull world drew nigh, he fent for Fintan the Abbot, and received at his hands the bleffed Sacrament, and fo departed the fift of the Ides of October.

In remembrance of this Cannicus, there is now a famous towne in Kilkenny Leinster called Kilkenny, parted into the English and Irish towne. with a small fresh or brooke that falleth into the Nure; the chiefe Lord under the King, is the Earle of Ormand and Offorie; the English towne is governed by a Soveraigne, Bayliffes and Burgesses, the Irish towne is governed by the Bishop of Osforie and his officers, and the Bishopricke of Osforie, whose principall see was first in Ely, and called Sire Keran (as formerly I have written in the life of Keranus) afterward translated to Achadbo, is now fetled in Kilkenny. The first founder of Saint Kennies Church there, was Hugh Mapilton, the fift Bilhop of that See, after the conquest, about the yeer 1240. There was also about the same time, a Church builded over against the towne, upon the East side of the Nure, in the honour of Saint Maula the mother of Saint Kenny, whole memory is continued in that Saint Kennies towne, by her plague that fell among them, and thus it was.

There was a great plague in that towne, and such as died thereof being bound with Wythes upon the Beere, were buried in Saint Man- Saint Menta las Churchyard; after that the infection ceased, women and maides and her plague went thither to dance, and in stead of handkerchiefes and napkins to keepe them together in their round, it is faid they tooke those Wythes to ferve their purpose. It is generally received, (take it gentle reader as cheape as you finde it) that Maula was angry for prophaning her Church-yard, and with the Wythes infected the dancers fo, that thorsly after in Kilkenny, there died of the ficknesse, man, woman and childe.

Adanus (divers times before spoken of) was of honourable pa- Adanu his life rentage, borne in Connaght, his father hight Sothna, his mother, Ethne, of the lept of Amlungh, his companions were Molassus, alias Lazerianus, and Airedus, also he conversed much with Saint David, Bishop of Menevia, (now called Saint Davids) and is there called Moedock?

Brezdub,King of Leinster. Monarch of Iteland.

Fernes.

Fernes the Sec of Lein-Mer.

Moedock: this David was his mafter. The martyrologe of Sarum calleth him Maeldock; my Author yeeldeth the reason, writing how that his mother conceiving with childe of him, his father dreamed that he faw a starre fall from heaven upon his wife, the mother of this Adams, and therefore when he was borne, he was called in Latine. filius stella, in Irish, Moedor, that is, the sonne of the starre. Master Fox writeth, that hee builded the Monasterie of Maibrose by the floud of Twide. David the holy man advised him to repaire to his native foile for the good of his country, after that hee had for a good space followed the Christian Britaines against the faithlesse Saxons. He came to Ireland to Anmyre, King of Connaght, from thence to Leinster, and builded Monasteries in Kinselach and Cluayn More, Edus or Edams What time Edus or Edams, the sonne of Anmyre King of Connaghr, King of Con- levied warreagainst Brandub King of Leinster, in which battaile, Edus and all his Nobilitie of Connaght were flaine, and Brandub became Monarch of Ireland. After this he went to the North of England, and was made Bishop of Lyndsey, Lyndesfernensis: Caperave maketh two of one Adams, the one an Abbot, the other a Bishop. and to reconcile the diffonance, he was first an Abbot, afterwards a Bishop, so writeth Bale. Beda delivereth singular commendations of him, the which to avoid prolixitie I omit. After all this, hee returned to Leinster, to Brandab the Monarch, who upon special liking of his vertues, gave him a parcell of land, where he builded a Monasteries the place is called Ferna, now Fernes, where both Church and Monasteric are patronized (as they write) by Saint Moedog, where afterwards both Brandub and Moedog were buried, whereof the words in the life of Adanus, alias Moedog, are thefe. Magnas dedit rex oblationes Sancto Moedog, & agrum in quo vir Des confirmais monasterium quod dicitur Ferna, in quo Sanctus Moedog sepultus est. dy rex Brandub, dy genus ejus post eum ibi semper sepelitur. Et mag. nacivitas in honore fancti Moedog ibi crevit, qua eodem nomine vocasur Ferna. Deinde facta Synodo magnatum in terra Laginenfium, decrevit Rex Brandub, of sam Laici quam Clerici, ut Archiepiscopatus omnium Laginensium, semper esset in sede & cathedra sancti Moedog, de twee fanctus Moedog a multis catholicis confectatus est Archiepiscopas. The King gave many gifts to Saint Moedog, and a parcell of ground, where the man of God builded a Monasterie, called Ferna, where Saint Moedog is buried, and King Brandub, and bis posteritie after bim, is there continually buried. And a great Citie in the honour of Sains Moedog is there risen, the which by the same name is called Ferma. Afterwards a Synode or Parliament of the Nobilitie of Lein-Metropolitan fter being called together, King Brandub decreed together with the Laitie and Clergie, that the Archbishopricke of all Leinster should almaies be in the feate and charge of Saint Atoedog, and then Saint Moedeg by many Casholikes was conferrated Archbishop. According

to which indeed in the Legend of Saint Molva he is called Archiepif. copus Laginen fium.

David of Menevia being of great yeeres, defired to fee him before King Brandubt his death; Moedog visited him, and returned into Ireland in a trou-death. blesome time, namely when all Leinster was in Armes to revenge upon Saran (a Nobleman of Leinster) the death of King Brandub, whom he had traiterously murthered. This Brandub, the sonne of Eatach, of the progenie or fept of Enna, of whom Cenfelach hath originall, had a most honourable funerall, and was greatly lamented, and intombed in the Church-yard of Saint Moedog, in his Citie Fer- Ferne, the buna, where his progenie, the royall bloud of the Kings of Leinster is riall place of the Kings of Leinster his death Farle Saran (for mine Author called him the Kings of interred; after his death, Earle Saran (so mine Author calleth him) Leinster. being tormented in conscience, came to the Kings tombe, lamented the horrible treason he had committed, and could finde no rest to his dying day.

In the time of this Moedog, the three Kings of Tuomond, Con-Warresagainst naght, and Vifter, with an Armie of foure and twenty thousand men, Leinster. came to Leinster, to revenge the death of Edus before spoken of. The King of Leinster called Moedog, and the Clergie, and commanded them all to pray while he fought, and, faith the storie, God gave the Leinster men the victory, and their enemies were overthrowne.

It is remembred of this Adams, how that one comming unto him, and desiring him to affigue him a Confessor, his answer was; Thou needst no Confessor but God, who knoweth the secrets of thy heart, but if thou wilt have a witnesse of thy doings, goe to one Molva a learned man, who shall direct thee in thy course. And yet (gentle reader) I may not overslip one thing, the which Caperave reporteth in the life of Adams or Aidans, (or Moedog) namely, how that (for all An Epifle the sanctitie of the Prelates in those dayes) Satan, with all the infer-vell. nall spirits, sent greeting, with great thankes, unto the Ecclesiasticall flate upon earth, in dreadfull characters. For that they wanting no aide in their delights from hellish places, sent such a number of damned foules into the sulphureall pits, through their remisnesse in life, and flacknesse in preaching, as in former ages had not beene seene. Whosoever devised the course, it forceth not greatly, the matter might feeme odious if it contained no truth.

Finnan in Wales, (as my Authors report) called Gwyn, was born Bishop Finan. at Ardez, he travelled forraigne countries, came to his native foile, Capprave. was Bishop of Farne, saith Beda, baptized Penda King of Mercia, con-Manyrologe. fecrated Cedd, Bishop of East Saxons, and lyeth buried at Cuningham in Scotland, called of the Britaines, Kilgwinin. There was alfo one Finan an Abbot, borne in Mounster, sent by Saint Brendan to Abbot Finan. Smoir, now called Mons Blandina, to inhabite there, who came afterwards to Corcodizbue, where hee was borne, builded Celeand Monasteries for religious men, contended with Falbe Fland, King of

Mounster.

ayn jarhaird. Colmannya.

Beda.

Mounster. A third Finan there was, who was master of Ruadanus a

great learned man, and dwelt at Cluayn jarhaird in Meath.

Colmannus, whose life Bale writeth at large, was a godly learned man, borne in Ireland, the sonne of one Fiachra, of the bloud Royall. and highly commended of Beda, hee was brought up after the Ano. stolike rules of Congellus, he succeeded Finan in the Bishopricke of Farne, alias, Linsey. In his time there was great stirre about the obfervation of Easter, when some alledged custome, and some urged the authoritie of Rome; he pleaded the Gospell both against this Rir. and the like trouble that role about the shaving of Priests crownes. the which he reiected (faith Beda) and feeing that he could not prevaile, forfooke his Bishopricke, and went with certaine Scots and Saxons into the Hebrydes, where he ended his dayes.

Beds writeth, how that in the yeere 664, there fell ftrange accidents upon the eclipse of the Sunne. (which was the third of May) in England and Ireland, and a great mortalitie in both lands, in the time of Finan and Colman the godly Bilhops. Gentle reader, thou Shalt heare himselfe speake. The plague pressed fore that Iland of Ireland, no leffe then England, there were then at that time, many of noble parentage, and likewife of the meane fore of English birth, in the dayes of Finan and Colman the Bishops, who leaving their native soile, had repaired thither, either for divine literature, or for more continencie of life, whereof some immediately gave themselves to monastical converfation, others frequenting the Cels, gave diligent eare to the lectures of the readers. All which the Scots (he meaneth the Irish men) with most willing minde daily relieved, and that freely, yeelding unto them bookes to reade, and mafterly care without hire. Among thefe, there were two young men of great towardnesse, of the Nobles of England, Edelthun and Egbert: the first was brother to Edilhum, a man belo-Edelibus and ved of God, who formerly had visited Ireland for learnings sake, and being well instructed, returned into his country, was made Bishop of Lindisfarme, and for a long time governed the Church with great discretion. These men being of the monasterie of Rathmelfig, and all their fellowes, by the mortalitie, either cut off or differ fed abroad, were both vifited with the ficknesse; and to make short, that which mine Author layeth downe at large, Edelthun died thereof, and Egbert lived until he was fourescore and tenne yeeres old. So farre Beda.

Colmannus, or Colmanellus.

Echusthe

Egbers.

There was another Colmannus, otherwise called Colmanellus, an

Abbot, of the fept of the Neilles, borne in Hoichie in Meth, what time the King of Leinster, with an huge armie wasted the North, he became first Abbot of Conor in Vister, where the godly Bishop Mac Cneffey resteth. From thence he came to the place where he was born, and there (faith his Legend) he met with Eadus the sonne of Aimirefonne of King ach, a King of Ireland, Edns Flan a Lord of that country, of the fept of the Neills, his kiniman, Saint Columba Cylle, and Saint Cannicus

the Abbot who received him joyfully. Edus Flan gave him a parcell of land to build upon, and to inhabit, called Fyd Elo, afterwards called Colmans Elo, where hee founded a Monasterie, and now resteth himselfe.

Carantocus, in the martyrologe Cartak, was the fonne of Reredi- Carantocus of cus, a King of Ireland, a good Preacher, the Irish called him Ceruagh, Corugh. his mother was a Britaine, and was delivered of him in Wales. Hee travailed over Ireland and Britaine, King Arthur is faid to have honoured him greatly, and gave him a parcell of land, where he builded a Church. In his latter dayes he came to Ireland, and died in a towne called after his name, Chervac: So much Capgrave. There was ano. ther of that name, an Abbot in France, of whom Ionas maketh mention in the life of Columbanus, but not of Irish birth.

Now to intermit a while from speaking of these learned men; I finde that Aurelius Conanus, (who flue Configutine that succeeded King Aribur, and raigned in his flead thirty three yeeres) valiantly by force of Armes brought under his command, as Gualteras Oxoni. by force of Armes prought under this command, as Ostoland, the Ireland libited to the King of Orchades, and Ocean Ilands. I finde alfo that Malgo, the nephew England. of this Conanus, who (as it is in the English history) succeeded Fortipere, vanquished the Irish Pictes, or Scots, which the Britaines called y Gwydhil Pictiard, which had over runne the Isle of Man, Ileof Man, of them called, Tyr Mon, and flue Serigi their King with his owne hand at Llany Gwydhil, that is, the Irish Church at Holy-head; fo write Sir Iohn Price Knight, and Humfry Lloyd in the description of Cambria. Florilegus faith, that he subdued fixe Ilands of the Ocean adiovning unto him, which Harding thus reckoneth.

And conquered wholy the ifle of Orkenay, Ireland, Denmarke, Ifelondandeke Norway, And Gotland also obeyed his royaltie. Hewas fo wife, full of fortunitie.

When Careticus was King of Britaine, who began his raigne, Amo Demisse Anno Dom: 786. the Saxons intending to make a full conquest of the land, called to their aide, for a number of Pirates and lea rovers, that were mighty and firong, and feoured the Seasand the Hands, whose Captaine was Gurmandas, one calleth him an African. Fabian wil- Gurmandel teth, that he had two names, and was called Gurmundus, and Affi. canus, howfoever, I finde, that hee was the King of Norweys fonne. and for his fuccesse in England, referre the reader to that historie; and for his behaviour in Ireland, I will acquaint the courteous reader with what I finde, in which the Writers not not agree. Cambrenfis and Polycronicon followed bad prefidents, and were deceived, Staniharff stammereth, writing one thing in English, another thing in

of Margee.

Latine, the best record I finde, is in Thadie Domlinge, Chancellour of Leighlin, and Iames Grace of Kilkenny. They write that Gurmund was in Ireland, but no King or Conquerour, that with frong hand he entred Leinsterlike a raging Pyrate, prevailed for the time, and that the Princes of the land, not being able then to withstand his forces, veelded unto the iniquitie of the time, and wincked at his rash enterorises. And whereas he gave forth his stile, King of England, they laughed at it, and he perceiving the wilinesse and ingeniositie of the people, and having small stomacke to continue among them, (by reason of many mishaps which befell him) left the land, and went for France to seeke adventures, where he ended his dayes. Further they write, that he had a sonne called Barchard, alias Burchared Mas Gurmond, whom his father made Duke of Leinster, and Baron of Marfter and Baron gee. He was commonly called, O Gormagheyn; Hee builded Gurmund grange in Monte Margeo, with other memorable things for him and his posterity; hee is said to have beene the founder of the mother Church or priorie of old Leighlin, but I rather beleeve hee was a Benefactor or endower thereof in the time of Saint Eubanus the originall Patron; and that one Lazerianus a Bishop and Confessor. Anno 651. procured the perfection of the whole, as in the Leighlin records more at large doth appeare. Againe, it is recorded that Duke Burchard lyeth buried on the North fide of the Chancell of that Cathedrall Church, over against the Treasurers stall, under a marble stone, as it was found for certaine, Anno 1589. by Thadie Domlinge. Chancellour, and others, with this Epitaph.

> Hic jacet humatus Dux fundator Lenia (i. Leighlenie) En Gormondi Burchardus vir gratus Ecclefia.

Here lyeth interred Duke Burchard, the sonne of Gurmond, foun-

der of Leighlin, and a gratefull man to the Church.

There are, faith mine Author, other remembrances of this in those parts, as Gurmunds-grove, and Gurmunds-foord, the which I over-Baron of Sliew passe. Mons Margens, in Irish; Sliewe Marrig or Sliew Marighagha, (which is the mountaine reaching along by Leighlin to Butlers wood) whering as before I have touched; Gurmunds-grange standeth, was, as I have learned, of old, granted to one called de Santso Leodegarie, by the name and honour of Baron de Marrighagha, but time

so syrannized over the Britaines, that they were faine to take Ireland

and place have brought the name to degenerate and turne from English to Irish. Of late yeeres a Gentleman of the name, dwelling at Dunganstowne, neere Catherlagh, (affirming himselfe to be lineally descended from Baron Sentleger) made claime unto the same, but the fuccesse. I hearken not after, as impertinent to my purpose. About the yeare 587. Athelfrid the Saxon King of Northumbers,

for their refuge, and Ardan, King of Scots pittying their state, raised forces to defend them, but could not prevaile, fo great was the milerie of the Britaines.

Anno Dom. 635. was Cadwallin crowned King of Britaine; Cax. ton and Florilegus write of cruell warres betweene Edwin, sonne unto Athelfrid, King of Northumbers, and Cadwallin; how that Ed-peth Cadwalling win made him flee into Ireland, destroyed his land, cast downe his lin. Castles, burnt his Mannors, and divided his land among his friends, and lastly, how that in a good while after, Cadwallin came upon him with forces out of Ireland, flue Edwin, and recovered all his poffer-

In the dayes of this Cadwallin, Kenevalcus, (otherwise called Agitterus of Cewalch) King of West Saxons, builded the Church of Winchester, Ireland, the made it a Bilhops See, and the first Bilhop he placed there, was one winchester Agilbertus, who came out of Ireland, who in a short time after, was deposed, say some; Grafton with other writers record not the cause. but Beda writeth that he was offended, for that Kenelwalkus divided the Province into two, that he left the See, went into France, became Bishop of Paris, and there ended his dayes; and how that Kenelmalkus sent for him againe and againe, but his flat answer was, for that he had dealt with him fo unkindely, he would never returne.

I must here insert that which Cambrensis writeth of the antiquities Brasbanus, of Brechinia or Breknoke in this fort; there was of old of that conn fonne of Hair try, which now is called Brecheinoc, a governour that was a man both Ireland, mighty and Noble, whose name was Brachanus, of whom the country of Brecheinoc, (Brecknokshire) is so called, of whom one thing came unto me worthy the noting the histories of Britaine doe testifie that be had foure and twenty daughters, that were all from their childhood brought up in the service of God, and happily ended their dayes in the boly purpose they tooke upon them. Doctor Powell the great Antiquarie of Britaine, in his learned annotations upon him, explaineth the same thus. This Brachanus, (faith be) was the foune of one Haulaph, King of Ireland, his mother was one Mercella, the daughter of Theoderike, the sonne of Tethphalt a petite King of Garthmarthrin, to wit, of the cound try which tooke the name of this Brachanus, and at this day is called Brechonia, or Brechinia, in British, Brechinoc, in English, Breknok. This Brachamus had to his daughter, one Tydvaell, the wife of Congenus, the sonne of Cadell a petit King of Powis, and the mother of Broch. mael, surnamed Scithroc, who flue Athelfred, alias Esbelfred, King of Northumberland, at the river of Deva (called of the Britaines, Doverdwy) and foyled his armic about the yeere of our Lord, 603. Here Breknoktowne, and Breknokshire have cause to glorie of Ireland, that gave them the name and honour which they hold to this day, and Ircland to glory of them that gave their Kings founc Marcella their Lady, and all that country in her right,

Alfa

Anne 587.

caines.

peth the Bri-

Marrig.

Beda eccles bist: lib.3.cap.26.

Grafton.

Prishs of former ages:

Also I cannot omit another thing of that age, the which Grafton reporteth of the Glergie; and I finde in Beda more reverently delivered, for that I have formerly spoken much of them, and shall have occasion to speake something hereafter, especially seeing Bedaes words are generall, to be understood as well of the one land, as of the other, if not rather of Ireland, confidering what hath beene delivered heretofore. In those dayes (faith Grafton) the Monkes and Clergie les all their mindes to serve God, and not the world, and were wholly given to devotion, and not to filling of the panch, and pampering of the body, wherefore they were then had in great reverence and honour, fo that they were then received with all worship. And as they went by the streetes and wayes, men that faw them, would runne to them, and defire their blessings, and well was him then that might give unto them pollessons, and to build them houses and Churches. But as they increafed in riches of worldly treasure, so they decreased in heavenly treasure: as in the dayes of Aluredus some deale began, and sithen that time, hath forung not all to the pleasure of God. Then they applied nothing that was worldly, but gave themselves to preaching and reaching of the word of our Saviour Ielus Christ, and followed in life, the dottrine that they preached, giving good example to all men. And beside that, they were utterly void of coverous ne se, and received no possessions gladly. but were enforced thereunto. So farre Grafton.

Anno Dom. 685. was Cadwallader crowned King of Britaines, that Ireland was subject unto him, Harding testifieth, his words

Cadwaladrus after him gan succeed,
Both young and faire in florishing invent;
That Cadwallader was called as I reade,
Who of Britaine had all the Soveraigntie,
Of English and Saxons in each country,
Of Pightes, Irish, and Scots his under regence,
As Soveraigne Lord, and most of excellence.

For other things that concerne him, I referre the reader to the himoric of England. He had two nephewes (his daughters formes) named Iwor and Heuyr, who fled into Ireland faith Powell, and when they faw their time, came with forces against the Saxons, gave them three battailes, with many skirmishes and invodes, yet in the end, were foiled, as in the proper historic more at large appeareth. And here ended the rule of the Britaines which had long continued.

Saint Dympna the Virgin. I must now acquaint the reader with such as for learning and sancitie were of note during this age, beginning at the yeere 600. Zasharias Lippelos, out of Pesrus Cameracensis, writeth, that about this yeere 600, there was an heathenish and idolatrous King in Ireland,

who had one Dympna to his daughter, who fecretly was baptized by one Gerebernus a Priest that travailed the land for such purposes. The daughter being sole heire, and her mother being now dead, the father was very carefull to see her well matched according to his degree, and accordingly acquainted his dearest friends and counsellers with his intent and purpose, who likewise travailed carefully in the cause, but could not speed to the fathers contentment. As shee grew in vecres, so she excelled in beautie, and the father being as wicked as the was good and faire, became enamoured of his owne daughter, and importunately offered her marriage. Shee at the first being amazed at the motion, yet at length gathering spirit, defired respite for forty dayes, and withall defired that it would please him to adorne her with such attire, jewels and ornaments, as became a Kings daughter to weare, all which being granted, the privately fent for Gereber. mus the Priest, and acquainted him with all the circumstances. The Priest advised her, that the safest way for her to avoid the incessions King, was to avoid the land; shee immediately with the Prieß, together with her fathers lefter and his wife, tooke shipping, and arrived at Antverp. When they had rested there a while and recreated themfelves, they of devotion (faith mine Author) fought out among woods and defarts, a solitarie place to remaine; in this resolution they came to a poore village called Ghele, (Gelafaith Molanus) and from thence they went to a thicket called Zammale, where they rid some small quantity of ground, made a Caban to hold them all foure, where they continued well some three moneths, praying and fasting. In the meane while the Irish King missing his daughter Dympna, lamented greatly, made great inquirie, and offered great rewards to know what became of her, and having gotten inkling of her course, hoised up faile after her, and landed at Antverp, immediately hee made fearch, and fent messengers with large offers about, if haply they might heare of her. At the length, by the coyne which they offered for reward. the was found out, for they faid, there was a faire young woman, remaining in a folitary place, which had fent for reliefe for her felfe, and three persons more with the like coyne. The messengers were brought to the place, who knowing her ranne forthwith with newes to the King, and he with much joy made hafte to the Caban, and when he faw her, faid; O my onely daughter Dympna, my love, my delight, and the ion of my heart; what constrained thee to despife a regall dignity, to forfake the native foile, to forget the naturall affection of a Childe toward her Parent, to flee from thy father a King, and to follow, as a childe, this old decreps bald Priest, and so willingly to condescend to his unsavorie injunctions? bearken to mine advice, returne with me into treland, yeeld to thy fathers defire, and I will advance thee above all the Ladies in Ireland. Gerebernus the Prick, preventing. the young Gentlewoman, turned him to the Irills King, and rebuked

him sharpely, denouncing him for a most wicked and abhominable person, then he turned him to the Gentlewoman, and charged her never to give eare to fo lewd a man. With this the King and his company being mightily moved, commanded the Priest to be taken aside, and his head to be taken off his shoulders. Afterward the father turned him to his daughter, O daughter, (faith be) why fufferest thou mee thy father to bee thus vexed? why contemnest thou my love towards thee? yeeld, and thou shalt want nothing. Shee with a sterne countenance made answer, Thou infortunate tyrant, why woelt thou about with deceitfull promifes, to withdraw me from my letled purpose of shamefastnesses I defie thee, and all thine. Thou cruell tyrant, why haft thou flaine the Lords Prieft? fhalt thou efcape (thinkeft thou) the indgement of the Almighty? what torture thou wile lay upon me, I weigh not: with this, the father being furiously moved, commanded his fouldiers to cut off her head, and they being loath to doe. it, he tooke the fword that hung by his fide, and with his own hands ftrucke offher head, and with expedition returned into Ireland. Thus the Priest and Dympna died, of the Iester and his wife I reade nothing, belike they returned home againe. Molanus writeth, that many yeeres after, the bodies of Dympna and Gerebernus were foughtour. takenup, and solemnly enterred. The Irish in the County of Louth doe honour her; belike her father dwelt there.

Saint Bertwin:

Saint Bertwin, an Irish man, was brought up in the Monasterie of Othbell in England, from thence he went to Rome, where heeled a solitarie life the space of two yeeres; in his returne, he came to the Forrest of Marlignia in Flanders, where he builded a Chappell lastly he was made Bilhop of Molania, where he ended his dayes. Sigebert ad an.651. writeth, Many out of Eng. or Scot. (he knew notwell the countries) as frangers travailing in France, preached the word of God, and did much good, to wit, Etto, Bertwinus, Eloquius This Bertwinly. eth buried nigh Namurcum (faith Molanus) of oldcalled Namur, novus murus, but now Namurra, fo writeth Hubertus Thomas Leodius,

ment.de Tungris vo Eburonibus.

Livinus.

Chron lib. 13.

Livinas, borne in Ireland, and brought up in Scotland and England, under Benignus the Priest, and Augustine the first Bishop of the Saxons, by whom he was made Archbilhop (faith Molanus) of the Scots, (faith Christianus Massaus, of Ireland, saith Bale, Silvestris Sanctori Belgij. Scotia, of the Handers and Red Thanckes) the which charge, after certaine yeeres, he committed to Sylvanus his Arch-deacon, and gave himselfe to travaile, and tooke with him his three disciples, Saint Foillanns, Helias, and Kilian, and came to Gandavum. Of him, Chri-Saint Massaus Writeth thus: In the yeere of our Lord, 621. Saint Livinus by nation a Scot, Archbishop of Ireland, came to Gandavum, with three disciples, and remained there one moneth, from thence he went to Esca, preached Christ, and converted many, there some hard-hearted people slue him, when he was beheaded, hee rose

up, tooke with him his owne head, (beleeve it who lift) and carried it to Houtthein, where the Angels had made a sepulchre for him. He is faid (faith Bale) to have written a booke of Homilies, and in the yeere 1007. to have beene translated to Saint Bavons Church in Gandavum. There was another Livinus a French man, a Fryer minorite, and flaine, as they fay, about the yeere 1345. and of fame at

this day in Flanders.

Arbogastus borne in Ireland, a godly Preacher, and a great Wri- Arbogastus. ter, was the fecond Bilhop of Argentine, Anno 64 6. who also for his Anno 645. great wisedome, was taken by Dagobert King of France, to be of his Councell. He left behinde him for the good of the Church, a booke of Homilies. Somuch Bale out of Munster Molanus writerh, that about the yeere 647. some of the familie of Pipinus, the first Duke of Brabant, father of Saint Gertrude, fent for many Preachers out of Ireland and Scotland into Brabant, and the bordering regions, to plant the Christian religion among them, Fortanus and Vitanus are there Fortanus. named. Lippeloo faith, that about the yeere 696. Egbertus, Wichertus Vilanus. and Willibrodus were famous learned men in Ireland, continued there wiebertus. a long time, afterwards dispersed themselves into farre countries, and "illibrans. with happinesse ended their dayes.

Molanus hereof writeth farther thus. In the imperiall towne cal. Saint winberd. led Werda, the birth of Saint Switberd, (whom Beda calleth Suidbertus) the Bishop and Confessor is solemnized: who in the time of Pipinus, (the first Duke of Brabant) together with Saint Willibrod, preached foules health unto the nations thereabouts. This man, among other difeases, was wont to cure the disease in the throate, called of the Physitians, the squinancie. He is termed the second of those spostolike men which came out of England and Ireland to preach the Gospell unto the Frifans, Hollanders, and the nations about them Among whom, being as yet but a Priest, he converted many, chiefly the inhabitants of the great Village Duerstadt, the which now is the towne of Wic. He converted also the Citic Hagenstein, which now is a village adioyning unto Viana. And when as by the industrie of him and Wil. librodus, the number of the faithfull daily increased, at the intreatie of the brethren in Trajectum and Frifeland, both of them confented he should be consecrated Bishop. Whereupon Saint Switbers (whom Beda faith to have beene modest of life, and meeke in heart) went into England, and was consecrated by Saint Willfride Bishop of Mercia (Kenr, saith Beda, had then no Bishop) in the yeere 695. But Saint Willibrode went unto Duke Pipinus, and having gotten leave of him, departed to Rome, where the yeere following, Pope Sergius consecrated him. And although Swithert, by reason of some small time, had the start of Willibrode, yet Willibrode went before him in dignitie, for he was the first Archbishop of Trajectum, and especially by Pope Sergius, confecrated Archbishop of Frisia, and directed

to that people. And (faith Beda) Sergins changed his name, and called him Clement, because (saith Molanus) hee consecrated him on Saint Clements Even. And he also writeth, that he was Archbishop of the nations now called Frisii, Transiselani, Trajectenses, Hollandi and Zelandi, whereas Switbert is not called Bishop of Trajectum, but fellow Bishop with Saint Willibrode. Yet he is by speciall name called the Apostle of Teisterbandia, Westfalia, and of the Boructuarians: for Marcellinus writeth, that hee converted the country of Teisterbandia, and together with it, in a manner, all Batua, and the greater part of the lower Friseland unto the faith. He also exceedingly increased the number of the beleevers in the Church, at Trajectum; he founded many Churches, and dedicated the temples of Idols unto the honour of God. In the historie of Marcellinus, certaine places by especiall words are named; as in Zandwie, in the lie of Tila, which at this day cannot be found in Arkell and Hoernaer villages of the Lordship of Gorcomia, in Schoenreford, (now called Schoenrewoert) by Leerda, in Authensden, nigh Huesden in Wondrighen, (now called Worckum) in Aelborch, Giesen and Riiswijcke between Worckum and Huelden, in Almkerk (which is the territorie of Altenae) in Maelsem, Erkum and Avesaede in the Lordship of Buria, with many other places. In these countries hee hallowed Churches, continually praying with great devotion for the people which hee had converted, and with wholesome admonitions drawing them to the heavenly dwellings. He converted the Westfalians and Boructuarians, which at this day are thought to bee the people Markenses. Further, the renowned Duke Pipinus gave him Werdaupon the river of Rhene, for his good and for the establishing of his principality: which place is elsewhere called the Iland of Saint Swithert, though now it be part of the continent or maine land. Pipinus gave him also great store of treasure, wherewith he builded there a Monasteric, and replenished the same with a great company of the servants of Christ. In the end, this Saint Swithert died in the yeere 717. and lyeth buried in the Monasterie of VVerda-Cæsaris which he had founded:

Werda given to Saint Swif-

> Beda writeth, that Willibrode lived in his time, and went on the thirtieth and fixt yeere of his confectation, Archbilhop of Friseland: Molanes delivereth his end, that namely he ended his dayes at Westervoert, and was buried at Elste in Gelderland; but of Egbert and Wigbert the Martyr (before mentioned) he reporteth out of Beda and Marcellinses, that Wigbert was one of the companions of Egbert, and for the space of many yeeres, had led an Anchors life in Ireland, that he failed into Prifeland, and for the space of two whole yeeres, preached unto that nation, and to their King Radbodus, and seeing that he could doe no good among them, returned againe to Ireland. And when as Egberson the fervant of God, had fent the fecond time unto the Friselanders and Saxons, famous men for life and learning,

Acca, Willibaldus, Winiboldus, Lebuinus, Werenfridus, Marcellinus, Adalbertus, Ewaldus senior and junior, together with Wellibrode, he sent the said Wigbert, who no looner landed, but King Radhod caufed him cruelly to be tormented to death in Fosetes landt, an Iland in the confines of Friseland and Denmarke, for that the Christians of that place by his preaching of the Gospell, had destroyed there the Idoll groves of Inpiter and Fosta.

There was a later Wigbertus, Patron of Hersweldia, remembred in the Martyrologe, whom I would have the reader take notice of, to avoid the confusion of times. And last of all, of Willibrode and Wilfram, there is a storie, how that Raboldus after long persuasion, seemed willing to be baptized, and having one foot in the water, demanded where be the nobilitie of Frizeland, my Father, Grand-father and kindred? Answer being made, that they were in hell, hee with drew himselse from baptilime, saying, I will goe after the greatell company, take your heaven to your selfe.

Molanus when hee had at large written the lives of the foresaid learned men that came out of Ireland, he maketh in his Chronicle a recapitulation of them, the which will helpe the memorie of the reader, therefore I thought good to lay it down. Egbert the second time effaied to convert Briseland and Saxonie, gathered together twelve Apostalicke men, Willibrode, Switbert, Acca, Wighert, Wilibald, Winibold, Lebuinus, Ewaldus, surnamed the blacke, (in Irish, Duffe) Emaldus the mhise, Werenfridus, Marcellinus and Adalbertus.

. I Saint Willibrod and Saint Switbert, by common confent of the bre- willibrode. thren, were elected and consecrated Bisbops. Saint Willibrode was made Archbishop of Friseland, be received by the donation of Duke Pipinus, the Citie of Traieitum, with all thereunto appertaining. He founded in the territorie of Saint Thomas, a Colledge of regular Canons In the towne of Rhen he is faid to have found the body of Cumera, one of the eleven thou sand Virgins. Hetravailed in preaching without Fristand; behad in Latharingia, two women disciples, Herlind and Relind, Numes of Maeseike, which now is of Leodium or Leege in Flanders. He conversed the Hulstenses, Axellanos, Hasuenses, Birfletanos. At Trevires, in the Church of Saint Marie and Marigres, bee founded a Monasteric of Monkes Benedittiness At Epternacum among the Luxemburgs, he founded a famous Monasterie, wherein bee was buried, Anno 726.

2. Saint Swithers was confecrated in England, and converted many Swithers. in Traicilum, Holland, Gelderland, chiefely Wiic, Hagelsteyn, Alema-Ria, Waterlandia, Gerconium, Bomelia, Tiela, Huefda, Bura, Batua with other places. Hee is called the Apostle of Teisterbandia, Westfalia, and of the Bornetuarians. He builded a Monastericin Werda Cafaris, where he ended his dayes, Anno 710.

2 Accament into England to the confectation of Saint Switbert, and Sans Gg 2

when Switbert returned, he became Bishop of Lindisfarne.

Wigbert is faid to be marty red in Fostilandia adjoyning upon Friseland by Radbodus King of Frifeland, who also flue Saint Egelmund the Martyr.

5.6 Wilibaldus and Winiboldus being brethren, went to Aistadium in Germanie.

7 Lebuinus converted the Transifelanians, and resteth among them in Daventria.

8.9 The two Ewaldes went to Nabia, preached Christ, and were martyred by the old Saxons.

10 Werenfridus converted many to the faith at Arnhemium in Westervaert, and at Neomagum in Elst.

11 Marcellinus preached 65. yeeres, chiefely in Trenta, Twenta, Oudenzeel and Daventria.

12 Adelbertus was the first Archdeacon of Traiethum, preached in Kenemaria, together with Engelmund an Englishman before (boken of and lyeth buried at Velsen in Egmondan monasterie.

He writeth farther of wiron and Plechelinus, Bilhops of Friscland, who came thither together with Orgerus a Deacon, out of these parts. and were entertained by Pipinus, Duke of Brabantal I profession with

Farfælls, Foilance Vlianus.

Many other

learned men

76

Many things are written by Beda, Capgrave, Surius, Baronius, Molanus, Lippeloo and others, of Furfaus, Foilanus, of whom Beda calleth Fullanus) and Vitanus. They were three brethren, and the base somes of a King of Leinster, they flourished about the yeare fixe hundred fiftie and odde. Fur faus is faid to have had many visions and dreadfull conflicts with divels and infernal spirits. He preached unto the Irish. Scots, Britaines and Saxons, hee went into France, where he wrought many miracles; (faith Molanus) and because of the same that went abroad of him one Ercanaldus gave him ar Latiniacum, a parcell of land to build a Monalteric, also hee gave him another piece of ground at Perona, sometime a towne in Flanders, but now of France, and parcell of Gallia Comata, where he builded another Monasterie, and drew unto him, (saith mine Author) germanos fratres, Foilanus and Visanus, and there ended the way of all flesh. They of Cambray dochonour him as a Bishop not that hee was a Bilhop, but an Apostle of certaine places. The martyrologe of Sarum reporteth, how that after his dearly the angels and the deuils strove for his soule, how that the soule returned to the body againe, and how that helived afterwards. Here the Author is deceived, for it was a trance that he was in jour of which after certains conflicts, he came to himfelte againe, and finally in godly fort ended his dayes. I findein the life of Macoeinoge, that there was one Fur-

With Furfaus there were at one and the selfe same time, many facontemporane mous men of Irillabirth, renowned for learning and fanctitie, which With Furfaus. S 19 22

gave themselves to travaile, and dispersed themselves to farre countries, as Foilanus and Plianus (before mentioned) also Mombelus, Boetius, Eloquius, Adulgifius, Columbanus, Hetto, Helanus, Trefanus, Germanus, Veranus, Gobanus, Corbrican, Dicull, Fredegandus, Colmanellus, Madelgarius, Algisius and others. After they had visited Rome, they came backe (faith Molanus) into France and Flanders. Furfaus and Adelgifius into Perona, Foilanus and Vleanus into Foffa, Eloquius and Algisius into Theoras, the reverend Prieft Hetto,un. to the lake adiovning unto Corbriolum, where he builded a Monasterie called domus Petri. Further, faith Molanus, in the confines of the Attrebates, there is a Village called Buym, which hath a Church called Saint Hetto, whereupon is written, In hoc loco Hetto Hiberniensium Episcopus mansionem habuit, in another place of the Church, Hic reposuit Hetto Hibernensis Episcopus reliquias de corpore sancti Clementis Papa de Martyris. In another place he writeth of Hetto, Goban, and Corbrican, that they were three brethren, and in their returne from Rome, died at Walciodorum, and lie buried at Fesca. Beda left but a bare mention of Goban and Dicull, onely this, that they were companions of Foilanus.

of IRELAND.

Foilanus was flaine in a place in Flanders, called Carboriar. Saint Foilanus. Bernard writeth, that in the place where he was flaine, there is a Monasterie builded by the name of Saint Foilane ordinis pramonstratens, in the Diocesse of Cambray.

Fredegand preached in Antverp, where now hee resteth, and is Fredegand. greatly honoured.

Mombolus became an Abbot in the Monasterie of Fursæus in Mominius France, a perceiving a conspiracie of his covent against him, for sook the place, and withdrew himselfe, together with a few of his company, unto a place of old called Condrynus, upon the river Isara, where he led an hermites life, and ended his dayes. There was another of that name, a Saint of Burdeux, but not of Irish birth.

Eloquius preached most painefully throughout France and Saxo- Elequius. nie, and being seated at Latiniccum in the Monakerie which Fursaus had founded, perceived some creacherie practifed against him, withdrew himselse (as formerly Mombolus had done) to a solitarie place called Grimacum, upon the rivers of Some and Isara, where he departed this life, afterwards his body was translated to Walciodorum in Flanders, and there he refteth.

About this time, Saint Authere, borne in Ireland, was Bishop of Saint Autherig Cambray; he converted Hannonia, and is called the Apostle of Flanders; of him Molanus writeth thus, Authorsus had beene for certaine yeeres, Hibernia gubernator, governour of Ireland, (the which I take to be some ecclesiasticall charge) by which occasion, many singular good Preachers beretofore mentioned, came the more willingly out of Ire-Land unto us.

COMMENDS

Trithe-

Trithemius reporteth of this time in this fort, There were many Monasteries of Irish men in Germanie, Herbipolis and other places, but when their zeale waxed cold, and that they fell to remisse and dissolute life. they were expulsed, and their habitation became maste and deso-

Saint Chilian,

Saint Chilian (otherwise written Kilian) whom Bale calleth a Scot. Surius, Baronius, and Lippeloo, write that hee was an Irish man of Noble Parentage. Molanus writeth, in Hibernia regio fanguine procreatus, that he was begotten in Ireland of royall blond; another faith he was a Kings base sonne. This man became a Monke, went to Rome. together with Colman a Priest, and Totnan a Deacon of the same country birth, in the time of Conon, Bilhop of Rome, about the yeere 687. to fue unto the Bishop there, that Ireland might be released of the curse that was denounced against the land, and the inhabitants thereof, for the Pelagian herefie. Molanus writteh, that he ferved in Saint Peters Church in Rome, eleven vecres, but he was directed another course, for he was consecrated Bilhop of Herbipolis in the East parts of France, and together with his fellowes fent away. There they converted Gosbert a French Duke, which had married one Geila his brothers wife. It is Iohn Baptifts case, he rebuked him for it, and shee hearing thereof, fent certaine lewd persons in the night, which mur. thered them all three, and privily buried them, left so horrible a fact should come to light; but God that will have no such villany concealed, brought it out, the tormentors became madde, and confessed the whole. Beda in his Martyrologe reporterb, how that at Wirciburge in Austria, the birth day of Kilian the Martyr, and his two companions, is folemnly kept the eight of July-

Saint Figere.

Molanus faith, that in his travaile he met with Saint Fiacre, fometime his fathers fervant, but he following carefully his direction, staid not with him, but passed on in his journey. This Saint Figore, (faith the Martyrologe) was base some of some King in Ireland, went into France, and became an heremite, there are small remembrances of him in Surius and Lippelao, faving that for a womans fake which called him a Witch, Sorcerer, and Inchanter, hee commanded that no woman should put foot into his Cloister, and if any should doe so, he prayed that God would lay some plague upon her; to try this, a woman fent her maide to take the ayre of the Gloyfter, but she tooke no harme; upon a fecond tryall, a fairer then the prefumed to farre; that her thinne, her knee, and her thigh, (faith mine Author) and fome parts above, tooke swelling, and that went for a punishment. In an antient manufcript Degendof the life of Congellus or Congallus, I finde that Saint Bidere keturned into Ireland, and became Abbot of Airard in Leinster upon the river of Berba, now called the Barrow, in the Barony of Odrone, and that he went to the Abbey of Beanchor in Vister to visite Congellus, at whose hands Congellus received the Sacrament,

Sacrament, and gave up the Ghost. There also it is further alledged, that this Fiacre builded a Monasterie in Leinster, in the honour of Saint Concellas.

The martyrologe aforesaid, remembreth Saint Cataldus a Bishop, Saint Cataldus. Saint Finan an Abbot, Saint Sacodine a Virgin, who forlooke her Szint Finan. husband, and entred religion, to have lived then: and how that In- State Sacodine. drake, a King of Ireland, for sooke his royaltie, went to Rome with his King Indrake, fister Dominica, led a private life, and died beggers. Capgrave calleth Dominica. him Indraktus, faying that he was a Kings fonne, and tooke with him,

belide his fister, nine persons more.

About this time, (saith Capgrave) one Muriardachus, Monarch Muriardachus of Ireland, together with his wife Sabina, lived in the true faith and Monarch of feare of God, who being mighty and wife, commanded in good fort all the Princes of the land. In this his good fuccesse and peaceable governement, he was envied, fo that a petite King his neighbour, came upon him in the night, murthered him with his Queene, and all his familie, excepting one daughter, whole life hee faved for her beauties sake. This cruell tyrant after assaulted this faire Gantlewoman to his filthy luft, and when with faire perswasions he could not prevaile, at length by force he oppressed her, so that shee conceived and bare him a sonne, called at the time of his baptisme, Milluboc, but afterwards, Cuthbert.

This Cuthbers being borne (asmy Author writeth) at Kilmacro- Saint Cuthbers. drike, some three miles from Dublin, his mother tooke him to Scor-Jand to her two brethren, Meldan and Estan, that were Bishops. Meldan and Estan, that were Bishops. From thence hee went into the North parts of England, and was somes to the brought up among the holy Monkes of those dayes, in the Monarch of rie of Mailros, under the Abbot Boifilius, whom he succeeded in the Ireland. Tame Monasteric. Anno 651. And Anno 676 he went to the Ile Farne, which was uninhabited, and continued there nine yeeres, building, teaching and preaching, and (as Beda writing his life delivereth) working in harvest time with his owne hands. The fame of his vertues and holinesse went farre abroad, so that Egfride, King of the Northumbers, made him Bishop of Lindesfarne, to which dignitie hee was confectated at Yorke by Theodorus the Archbilliop, Anno

In his time, the aforesaid Egfride sent Brith with a great host into Anno 634. Ireland to be revenged of them, for that he was given to understand, land, they had aided his enemies against him, these Saxons over ranne the land, killing, burning, and spoyling, they spared neither Church nor Monasteries for writer h Beda Berthus vastavit misere gente innexa, & nations Anglorum semper amigistimam Berthus pritifully spoiled the Bedaectes, his. hanmelessepoople, who alwaies most kindely affetted the English mation. Cushbens reproved him for it, and the Handers offed unto the heavens, and prayed God to avenge their cause. Beda reporteth farther,

how that he bent his forces afterwards against the Pictes and Scots. and would not be advised by Cuthbert and Egbert, and that his bloudv course had no good successe, and that then Egfride, the glory of the Saxons began to decay, the which Florilegus attributeth to the crie of the Irilh, and the courage of the Pictes and Scots, and Bris taines. In his time, faith Carodoc, it rained bloud in Britaine and Ireland: the Milke likewise and the Butter, turned to the colour of

bloud, and the Moone appeared all bloudie.

Cuthbert, when he had beene Bishop two yeeres, forsooke his Bishopricke, and went to the Ile Farne, where hee led an hermites life, and left the world, Anno Dom. 687. It is written of him that he forbade his Monkes and Priests, the company of women, and that they should not come within any Cloyster, for that the devill appeared unto him in his Church in the shape of a woman most faire and beautifull. Yet I finde that he converted much with Ebba and Verca, and with Elfleda, King Egfrides sister, and repaired of to their Nunneries, did eate and drinke with them, and fent Elfleda a linnen or threed Girdle for a token, which tooke away a swelling and crampe that troubled her, and that he was shrouded in the winding sheete, which the Nunne Verca had fent him. Anno 875. Ardulphus, Bishop of Lindisfarne, fearing the incursion of the Danes, who destroyed Churches, and defaced Tombes, tooke the corps of Cuthbert, and attempted the transporting of it into Ireland, but the winde was against them, and compelled them to land in England, then they brought it to Cuncacester, some sixe miles from Durham, where it rested some yeeres. Anno 925. (though Stow referre it to the yeere 995.) Aldunus (who was the first Bishop of Durham) preventing (as formerly Ardulphus did) the invalion of barbarcus people, removedit to a place full of bushes and thornes, now called Durham, and with the aide of Earle Prhred, builded a Church over it, where(now at length) it resteth. Edmund the second Bishop of Durham, enlarged the Church, and beautified the place of his buriall, and long after, were brought thither, the bodies of Balther and Bilfride, that had beene Anchors, Acca and Alkmundus that had beene Bishops, Ebbathe Nunne, and familiar of Cushbers, Boifilus the Abbot his mafler, King o swine, and the bones of Beda that rested at Girwin, so writeth Caperave. He that will see farther of Cuthbers and his patrimonic, (so called in the Bishopricke of Durham) of the endowments and grants given by Christian Princes, and of the reverend opinion held of the place, because of the sanctitie of Irish Cuthbert, let him repaire to learned Gamdens Brigantes, the which for that they concerne the antiquities of England more then Ireland, I omit.

Now to come to the 700. yeere of Christ. I will beginne with Adamannus, who flourished Anno 701 as Florilegus writeth, in the sime of Alfred, King of Northumbers, whom Beda highly commen-

deth, and as it may be gathered and borrowed out of his workes, many things to furnish his historie of England. I finde of divers reported, that he was in Ireland, and did much good. I take it he was of Irish birth, for I cannot finde the contrary. Bale summarily out of Beda and others, writeth in his life as followeth. Adamannus Co. Adamannus his ludius, by profession a Monke, not vomed, but of the Apostolike order, lic. and governour of that famous Monasterie, which of bld, Columbanus the disciple of Congellus had founded in the Ile Hu, made himselfe a patterne of vertue to be followed of many; bee was a man fludious and fingularly well feenesn boly Scripture, as Tritemius witneffeth, neither ignorant of prophane literature, wife and faire spoken; hee was for his life and conversation, renowned, and for opinion of sanctitie, recounted the father of many Monkes, so that hee travailed in a manner all the North regions of Britaine; he was a notable Preacher, instructing with heavenly admonitions, Irish, Scots, Pictes, and Anglosaxons. Hie millingly gave eare to all fuch as made report of any memorable acts of Palestina by their travaile, and of other places of the holy Land, with the fite thereof, trusting thereby to attaine unto a better fight in the boly Scripture. Then it fell out (say the Chronographers) that one Arnulphus, a Bishop of France, comming from Ternsalem, and being windes driven to that place, arrived there, and throughly enformed Adaman. nus, the which he shorely after committed to writing, and dedicated unto Alfred, King of Northumbers, with these titles.

With certaine Epistles. So farre Bale. I have seene beside these, a Manuscript worke of his, of the life of Saint Columba in three bookes.

About theyeere 740. faith Lippeloo, Gualafer Bishop of Dublin, Gualafer, Biwas famous, who by his prayers obtained that Cecilia, wife to Da flop. wid King of Scots, and daughter to the King of Sicilia, being bar- zachar. Lip de ren, did conceive & beare a sonne called Rumoldus, who after the de villa santi. ceale of Gualafer, was made Bishop of that See, and consecrated by tom.3. the Archbishop of Canterbury, and two other Prelates. He went into England, afterwards to France, and came to Rome, Anno 752. in the time of stephen 2. he refigned his Bishopricke, from thence hee went into Brabant, and by his prayers (faith mine Author) got one Eliza, Wife to Earle Mao, of the age of 66. yeeres, to conceive. In the end he went to repaire an old Church, agreed with workemen, wrangled with them so, that they for one quarrell and other, and especially for that they held him to he rich, hoping to get fome part of his wealth, knocke him in the head with a hatchet, and there lay

Saint

Anne 701.

Mesblin.

Saine Rumolde. Molanus in discreet sort examineth this historie, and delivereth that this Rumoldus tooke with him beyond the seas, one Saint Himelin, now Patron of Fenacum, the place in Dutch is Sijnte Himelijns Villenaken, some said he was of his bloud, others some, that 10. Molanus nat. he was of his bloud and bone. His words are thefe. Some suppose that Schtorum Belgi Saint Rumold was the sonne of Erfinus King of Scots, after whom succeeded in the kingdome, the third and fourth fonne, Fergusius and A. chains, but the names of the first and second some are not extant. They adde happely unto the rest, that because he was the King of Scots his sonne, it stood him upon to for sake the Bishopricke of Dublin, when Solvathius that raigned betweene Fergusius and Achaius, warred against the Irish, and upon this occasion, be tooke his iourney to Rome. and at his returne, preached the Gospell at Mechlin. All which, by conferring the times, would have some great probabilitie, unlesse the ansient Monuments and Records of Mechlin, had avouched him to have beene the some of one Davida King, and to have beene brought forthinto the world, by the intercession and devout prayers of Gualafer, Bishop of Dublin, and of him baptized, whereby I gather, that he was the fonne of some King of Ireland. Neither is it any mervaile, though we reade not of this David, when as Saint Bernard witneffeth, that Ireland was not governed by one King, but by many; the orderly succession of which Kings, I suppose for the most part is now perished. If you urge that hee. came of the Scottish bloud royall, I admit it, for it is fo fung every where throughout the Diocesse of Mechlin, but that of old the Irish men were understood and comprehended under the name of Scots, by the life of Saint Patricke and ellewhere, is very manifest. To this purpose is that which Beda affirmeth, that Ireland is properly the country of the Scots, and Ionas also writeth in the entrance to Columbanus his life, bow that the Scottish nation inhabit the Iland of the Irish. This Rumolaus died, Anno 775. and is honoured in Mechlin for their Patron.

D'irgilius foliva.

Virgilius Solivagus, borne in Ireland, and descended of noble Parentage, in his yeeres of discretion, forsooke his native soile, and together with certaine companions of the same countrey birth, went into Germanie, where Anno 754. hee was made Abbot of Salifburge, by Odilo, Duke of Bavaria, and shortly after, Bishop of Iuvaviens; the name of which Bishopricke, hee procured to bee changed, and called it the Bishops See of Salisburgh, wherehe builded a sumptuous Cathedrall Church, and was the first founder thereof. In his eime, one Boniface an English man, and the Popes Legate in Germany, tooke upon him to rebaptize, contrary to the Canons of the Church, fuch as had beene (as hee thought) formerly not rightly baptized. Virgilius (having had conference with Sydonius, Archbishop of Bavaria) opposed himselfe against him. The matter came to hearing before Pope Zacharie, who gave sentence, that Virgilius was in the right, and Boniface his Legare (for all his great authority) in the

wrong opinion. Hee prudently governed his Church some thirty yeeres, and gave place to nature. So farre Bale, out of Gaspar Bruf-

Learned Camden alledgeth out of Rhegino, that in the time of Ca- Invesions of rolus magnus, which must needs bee about the yeere 767. certaine Norwegions Norwegians or Normans entred Ireland, and were repulled, and fur- and Danes. ther of them I have not read: but in the British Chronicle of Caradoc Llancarvan, I finde that Anno 799. the Danes came into England, Anno 799. and destroyed agreat part of Lindsey and Northumberland, overranne the most part of Ireland, and destroyed Rechreyn.

The accidents of the eight hundreth yeere after Christ, now, follow. And first of all, Functius offereth occasion to write, how that Anno 820. Regnerus, King of Denmarke, invaded Britaine, and how that his prosperous successes in Britaine, Scotland, and the Orchades, puffed him up, and emboldned him so much, that he passed into Ireland, flue the King of the land, tooke the Citie of Dublin, where hee remained an whole yeere, and then returned to Denmarke.

Next commeth Turgefius his time to bee examined, who was of Norwey, and came with great power of Esterlings into Ireland, vanquished King Edlumding, or Edlimidus, or in Irish, Felim Mac Edmund, and raigned thirty yeeres. Here (gentle reader) observe certain errours or escapes (whether of ignorance, wilfulnelle, or negligence, I know not) the which I finde betweene Cambrenfis, Polychronicon, Fabian and others, touching Gurmand and Turgefins. First, that Gurmund and Turge sus should be one man, the end of them both by a generall confent of Writers, reproveth that, for Gurmand dyed in France, and Turgefius was flaine in Ireland. Secondly, (whereat Giraldus marvaileth) how that the Antiquaries of England make mention of Gurmand, but nothing of Turgesius, and that the Writers of Ireland speake of Turgefius, but little or nothing of Gurmund; so that Turgefius by reason of his raigne and continuance was knowncunto them, and Gurmand, if he were here, made small abode, (as I have formerly written) and therefore became a man unknowne. Thirdly, that Turgesius should be Gurmunds deputie in Ireland, or his brother (as I reade in Fabian) cannot possibly fland with the truth: for on all fides it is agreed, that Gurmund came to Britaine, and loyned with the Saxons against Caretieus, who began his raigne in Britaine, anno 586. but, as faith Cambrensis, Turgesius Captaine of the Norwegis ans, Danes or Esterlings, came to Irclandin the daies of Fedlimidias, which was 400. yeeres from the comming of the first Paricke into the land, in the which time there had raigned thirty three Kings or Monarchs; then this knot with facilitie may be untied, for Patricke Tungefun came the history.

came to Ireland (as I have formerly delivered) An. 432. adde 400. to Ireland, to it, then Turgefins came to Ireland, Auno 832. But forward with

When

When these Norwegians or Esterlings had got footing in the land to their content, and planted themselves the space of thirty vecres, they builded Castles, Fortes and Wardes, they cast up Trenches. Bankes and Dirches for fafegard and refuge. Toward the end of the terme before mentioned, Turgesius was enamoured on a faire Gentlewoman, the onely daughter of Omalaghlin, King of Meth, and desired her for his Concubine; he practised with the father for obtaining of his purpose, the father not willing to yeeld, nor daring to displease, resolved him thus: Appoint the day, the houre, and the place, and sequester your selfe from your Court and retinue, and I will fend my daughter unto you with twelve or fixteene Gentlewomen, of the choice and beautifullest maidens of my country, and take vour choice of them; if my daughter please you best, she is at your command.

When the time appointed came, and the Lecher longed to fatis. fie his filthy lust, Omalaghlin attired his daughter in princely fort, and fent her to King Turgefins, with fixteene young men in womens attire, which had long Skeines under their Mantles. These young foringals were faire, beautifull, effeminate, and amiable to look upon: they were brought to his chamber, and presented before him, he taketh the Gentlewoman by the middle, and killeth her, the Striplings Turgestian stains out with their Skeines, and stabbed him, having the Lady in his armes, whereof he presently dyed, whilst they fell upon a few loose and dissolute persons that were about him, whom they killed every one.

Omalaghlin that lay in ambush all this while with certaine horsemen, (expecting the end of this exploit) reloyced greatly when hee faw his daughter and her company make so speedy a returne, and understanding that his practife was effected as he defired, sent Scoutes and Cursitors, Messengers and horses over the whole land, declaring what had happened. Immediately, Meth and all Leinster are in Armes, the Princes and Lords from every place throughout Ireland, repaired to Omalaghlin, and being glad of liberty, reioyced with him at the destruction of Turgesius and his Guard. To make the story short, (for they made short worke with it) they set upon the Norwegians and Danes, killed them every mothers sonne that escaped not by flight, seized upon all their possessions, so as together with their lives, they lost all their lands and goods: and, saith the Irish Chronicle, tune cepit conquestus Hibernicorum, Then the Irish began to

Jacob. Grace. Thad. Douling.

> This omalaghlin King of Meath, being in great trust, credite and favour with Turgefins (no man greater at that time) demanded of him (concealing the plot that lay hidden in his heart against the Norwegians) by what meanes certains ravenous and pestiferous fowle (hee meant the Norwegians) lately brought into the land, which greatly annoved

annoyed the country, might be destroyed? Turgesius answered, if they breed, destroy their egges, birds, and nests; which answer, the Irish made good upon the Norwegians.

Not long after (faith Cambrenfis and Polychronicon) after what? They meane, after the murthering of Turgefius, and rooting out of all the Norwegians and Esterlings, there came againe out of Norway, and the Northerne Ilands, as remnants of the former nation, and whether they knew of them selves, or by relation of their Parents and Ancestours, the land to be fruitfull, & commodious; thither they came, not in warlike fort, but in peaceable manner, to use the trade of merchandise; when they had entred certaine Ports and Havens of Ireland, with the licence of the Princes of the land, they builded therein divers Cities. For the Irish nation, (they speake of that time) naturally given to idlenesse, would not sulcate the seas, neither give themselves to merchandise, so that by one consent of the whole land, it was thought good, that some certaine nation, by whose industrie the commonities of other regions wanting in Ireland, might be bither transported, should be suffered to dwell in some parts of the land. Their Leaders and Captaines were Amelanus, Sitathree brethren, Amelanus, Sitaracus and Ivorus, when they had first racus and huilded those Cites Dublic traces and and reserved to the look for the torus. builded three Cities, Dublin, Waterford, and Limericke, the command . of Dublin fell to Amelanus; Waterford to Sitaracus, Lymericke to Tworus, and from these by degrees, in processe of time, they gave themselves to build other Cities in Ireland. This nation (qua nunc Oassman. nica gens vecatur) which now is called the Esterting nation, or East men, at their first comming, demeaned themselves toward the Kings of the land, in a most royall and peaccable mander, but when the numbermultiplied of their owne kinne, and they had fortified their Cities with wals and trenches, they began to revive the old hatred that was hid in their hearts, and obstinately to rebell. They were called Oostmanni of their corrupt Saxon tongue, as men of the East. Of these and the former Norwegians, the Irish tooke the use of the Sparthes, now called Galloglas axes. So farre Cambrenfis verbatim, and Polychron in fubflance.

Divers have diverfly delivered their opinion, and mifreckoned themselves in their computation of yeeres, when these Cities before spoken of were builded. Staniburst in his descripțion of Ireland, referreth it to the yeere 155. and that they were builded by Amelanus; in another place healledgeth it was after Gurmundus his dayes, done in like fort by Amelanus. It is such an errour as I cannot well impute it to the Printer. Cambrensis and Polychronicon doe not lay down the yeere, but the time about the yeere: what beside is added, is but fancie and conjecture, for their testimony is the ground of all. For where they write that these brethren came to Ireland after the death of Turgesius, then it was after the yeere 862: wherein hee died, but how soone or how long after, there is no certaintie. That they builded

these Cities, I doe not beloeve, I had rather say with Staniburst, that they reedified them, for those places were after a fort builded, and inhabited many yeeres before their arrivall. I take it that as Merchants, they builded themselves dwelling houses, walled the townes, and made keyes to moore their shippes, neither doe I hold it that every one severally builded a Citie, but all three together with the aide of their country Merchants upon their arrivall in their safe Ports, builded and planted their country people, and rested not long, for the Irish fell upon them, and banished them out of the land, for their riches, pride, and rebellion.

Patricke, the Abbot.

Saint Patricks

Purgatory.

In the yeere 850. lived Patricke the Abbot of Ireland, Abbot and Confessor. For there were two Passickes, the first a very learned and godly man, the second a Abbot, and given to superstition, and founder of the fabulous Purgatorie, which goeth in Ireland under the name of Saint Patrickes Purgatorie; fo write Ranulphus, Monke of Chester, and Bale, Bishop of Oslory, though Staniburst allow not of it, but attribute it to the first Patricke, and that without warrant.

In his time there role a great rebellion in Ireland, so that hee fled into Britaine, and lyeth buried in Glastenbury. The Martyrologe of Sarum reporteth, that in Ireland they keepe the feast of Patricke the Abbot, the 24. of August. Staniburst to further his credite, delivereth that he wrote a booke of Homilies, and certaine Epiftles dire. Eted to the Irish. The sounder opinion is, (the which Staniburst at unawares remembred out of Claudianus) that the place there, was in like fort as it is now in the time of Paganisme, and was long before Saint Patrickes dayes, And it seemeth to be after the manner of concavities in the bowels of the earth, where the ayre entring naturally to avoid Vacuum, and the winde following, whilteleth and crieth like dolefull ghofts; the filly ignorant and simple people being deceived through perswasion of coverous Priests, that some soules and spirits doe penance there for their finnes, call it a Purgatorie. And further we see by reason and daily experience in Miners, that if any be much under grownd, the dampnesse of the earth takes away their lively colour, and makes them looke ghaftly, and if they continue any long while there (the vitall spirits being barred of their usuall course) they are mightily tormented, cast into trances, and distracted, and being once delivered from the place, report things at randon of heaven and earth, beleeve them who lift.

Albertus Kraniz Dan. lib.z.

Albertus Krantz, reckoning up reports given forth out of severall countries touching visions, apparitions, voyces, illusions, inscreet among them, Patrickes Purgatorie in Ireland, and concludeth, that Ant. chron. p 2. they are to be accounted among old Wives fables. Antoninus alledg. eth Vincentius for his Author, how that in those dayes, the historie de fosse sancti Patrici of Saint Patrickes pit or ditch, was not of many allowed, the reason is alledged, for that it is there avouched, that the

soules in that Purgatorie, goe not straight to heaven, but into some terrestriall Paradice, whereas the received opinion is, (saith he) that there is no middle place betweene Purgatorie and the celestiall Para-

In the time of Alphred, alias Alured, King of West Saxons, anno 872. as Fabian and Cooper have noted, there was a grievous maladie raigning among the people, called the euill ficus, which also tooke the Evill Ficus. King, fo that (lay mine Authors) an Irish maid came out of Ireland, called Modwen, whose Monasterie in time of rebellion, was destroy. Modwen. ed, and cured the King. In recompence whereof, the had land given her in the North, whereon two Monasteries were sounded, and now the resteth at Aundersey by Burloa. Polychronicon and Holinshead report the historie, as if Alphred had gone into Ireland unto her. I alledge this historieto put the reader in minde, how that formerly I have written of one Modwen, who lived immediately after Saint Patricke, and was of Irish birth, about 400. yeeres agoe, Were it not for the time, by many circumstances, they both should be one, but to remove all doubts, and to uphold the credite of antiquaries, I will fay they were two, of one country birth, and now rest in one place:

There was great amitie betweene Alphred or Alured before men? Anno 877. tioned, and Gregory, King of Scots, in whose time, Anno 877. (Grafton, Cooper, and Buchanan are mine Authors) great troubles and misery fell upon Ireland; the circumstances in briefe were these. The Citizens of Dublin found themselves grieved, and mightily wronged by the Scots of Galloway; that whereas certaine tall ships of theirs were wind-driven thither, the Scots fell upon them, rifled them, and thereof made a prey. In revenge whereof, the people of Dublin gathered Irish forces, arrived there, and preyed the country. Gregory the King having intelligence thereof, hastened with his forces, to encounter with them; the Irish fearing the worse, got them with their pillage aboard their shippes, and hoised up sailes for Ireland:

Gregory prepareth his navy, and thortly after arriveth in Ireland. The King at that time (laith Buchanan) was but a childe, whose Brian and name was Duncanus, or Donatus, or rather Dunachus; the Protectors Cornelius, or chiefe commanders of the land about the King, were Brian and Cornelius, who had drawne the land into two factions. The Irish hering of the comming of Gregory, fortified themselves upon the river of the Band, but there the Scots overthrew them; Brian was flaine, Scots at the and Cornelius put to flight. The Scots left them not fo, but purfied Bandoyer. them, preyed the country without relistance, constrained the townes throw the before them to yeald and begins by the way the Canadian and leaving by before them to yeeld, and hearing by the way that Cornelius gathered all the forces of Ireland against them, made ready to joyn battaile, in the which, Cornelius and all his forces were foiled, so that for a safeguard of his life, hee fled to Dublin, and his armic dispersed themselves abroad. Gregory followed him, laid siege to Dublin, and

Dublin receive the Scots. Cormack, Bi-

by reason there were so many received within that fled from the field. they could not long indure the strength of the puissant King of Scots without, wherefore by generall confent of the Citizens, Cormacke, Bishop of Dublin, opened the gates, received the King of Scots, without losse of any man of either fide, or damage of goods. Immediately Gregory the King of Scots, went to his cousin Duncan the young King, saluted him, and delivered unto him that he came not for his kingdome, ne for gold nor filver, ne for commodities of his country, but onely to be revenged of them that had formerly injured his subiects. And as for you, faid he, coufin Duncan, I beare you no malice, without bloud I came into the Citie of Dublin, without bloud I will depart; recompence of the Citizens of Dublin I seeke none, the inhabitants betweene this and the Band have fatisfied me and my people, let the Citizens pay it them againe, and make no more such rash attempts into Scotland. With this they lovingly departed, and continued friends, to the great honour of the King of Scots.

Doctor Hanmers Chronicle

After this, Anno 897. poore Ireland had another scourge, for faith Carados Llancarvan in his British Chronicle, and likewise Polichronicon, this country was destroyed with strange wormes, having two teeth, so that there was neither corne nor graffe, nor food for man or beaft, for all was confumed that was greene in the land, at the

season of the yeere: The ninehundreth yeere followeth.

Anno Dom. 900.

Anno 399.

Strange

wormes.

Danes in Ireland.

The Saxons that divided Britaine (as formerly hath been declared) into many kingdomes, began now to grow weake in their estate; and the Danes that troubled in a manner all Christendome, were falling to naught: yet Anno 905. faith the British Chronicle, the Danesentred Ireland, preyed, spoyled, and fired the country, flue in the field, Garmos, (so he calleth him) alias Cormac, Monarch of Ireland, and the some of Cukeman, a man both godly and religious; and also Kyrvalt, sonne of Morgan, King of Leinster. Then they roved round about England, hulling upon the seas, and landing where they espied advantage, destroyed with fire and sword as much as lay in them.

Anno 91 1. they came againe into Ireland (faith Cooper) holding on

in their former outrages.

Angleley ipoy-led by them of Dublin.

Anno 913. (faith Carodoc) the men of Dublin with great forces came to Anglesey, preyed and destroyed the Iland, and returned to Ireland: the cause I finde not, but that sea and land was bent to mischiefe, the fire upon the land, and piracie upon the sea.

Anno 925: the second yeare of the raigne of Adelstane, the base sonne of Edward the first, (called Edward Senior) King of West-Saxons, was a great armie gathered by the said Adelstane, against Hawlaffe, King of Ireland, the sonne of Sutbricus, and a Painym, faith Polychronicon, who came with the whole power of the Scots Bromford seith and Danes against him, and gave him battaile at Brimesturie, where Adelstane had the victory, and flue the faid King Hawlaffe, and the King of Scots, and five Kings of the Danes and Normans, and twelve Earles, so that he brought all the land of England and Scotland into subjection, which none of his Predecessours had ever attempted. So farre out of Caradoc in the British Chronicle.

Polychronicon writeth of Hawlaffe, that he was the sonne of Siricus, and had married the daughter of Constantine, King of Scots, and by his aide entred the mouth of the river of Humber, with a strong navy, and when both armies had encamped themselves, Hawlaffe used this policie; He tooke a Harpe, and in Harpers attire, went to Adelstanes Tent, where he harped, and viewed their diet, disposition, and behaviour, tooke money for his musicke, which in heart he disdayned, he secretly, as he thought, hid the money in the ground. and went away. A fouldier that sometime served Hawlaffe, espied it, and told Adelfane the whole; why, faith Adelfane, diddeft not thou acquaint me sooner? he answered, O King, the faith I owe thee now. sometime I ought to Hawlaffe, if I had beene false to him, thou wouldst have suspected measterwards; but now remove thy Tent. for he will suddenly come upon thee. For all the haste that Adelstane made, Hawlaffe came in the night, flue a certaine Bishop and his company that were fleeing, and many others: hee hasted to Adelstanes Tent, but he was provided, and in armes, and at the breake of the day, fee upon his enemies, and foiled them, as formerly is delivered.

Anno 926. (Saxo Grammaticus, Albertus Krantz, and others are mine Authors) Knatus and Herald, sonnes to Gormo, King of Denmarke, following the steps of their fathers, gave themselves to Piracie; roved, croffed, and hulled upon the feas, all was fifth that came to their nets; they arrived in Ireland, and laid fiege to Dublin. The King of Leinster sent especially, and laid an ambulh within a mile of Dublin, and whilst the Danes scaled the wals without, the Citizens manfully defended themselves within, and others were carelesse of themselves abroad; one of the espials levelled an arrow at Knutus, and gave him such a wound, that he shortly dyed thereof. The Danes prevailed, but their joy upon his death was turned into forrow; Gor. mo the father fo intirely loved this Knutus his fonne, that he vowed, whofoever brought him newes of the death of his fonne Knutus, for recompence, should die the death. Thira, daughter to Edward the Martyr, (faith Functions) the mother being a Christian (though Gormo were a bloudy Infidell) having certaine intelligence of the death of Knutus, durst not reveale it, but used this policie: shee caused in Read of her husbands princely robes, (wherewith he was on a morning to make himselfeready) mourning cloathes to bee laid before him, and fuch funerall exequies, as were used to be prepared for the witnessing of the forrow and griefe conceived for the departure of fome deare friend; woe is me (faith Gormo) now my fonne Kautes is dead, this I gather by these circumstances. Then answered Thira the

Hh a

Queene,

Saint Maries

Abbey foun-ded by Dublin

Queene, you my Lord discover it, not I. Gormo dyed for forrow, and T bira lamented in one day the departure of her Lord and husband the King, the death of her fonne, and her owne dolefull widdowhood.

Anno 939. (so writeth Caradoc) Abloic a most worthy Prince, and Monarch of Ireland deceased.

Anno 940. after the death of Athelftane, his brother Edmund raigned over Britaine. He subdued the Danes that remained in Northumberland, together with others that came out of Ireland to invade the land with Anlaffe their Captaine, faith Fabian; he flue some, and banished the rest, so writteh Cooper.

Anno 948. the Abbey of the bleffed Virgin Mary, by Dublin, was

founded by the Danes.

Molanus writeth of one Columbanus an Abbot of Irish birth that became a recluse or an anachorist, Anno 957. in the Church yard of the Monasterie of Gandavum, where he kept the space of two yeeres, and there ended his dayes. This yeere, faith Caradoc, Congelach, King of Ireland was flaine, but he sheweth not where nor how.

Anno 959. Edgar, the sonne of Edmund, beganne his raigne over England, he reduced all into one Monarchie. Camden found in a Charter, where Edgar delivered of himselfe, that it pleased God of his mercy to grant unto him, together with the command of England, to Subdue all the Ilandish kingdomes of the Ocean, together with their fierce and mighty Kings as farre as Norwey, and the greatest part of Ireland, with Dublin the most noble Citie thereof, unto the king dome of England.

Anno 966. Rodericke, the sonne of Edwall Voell, Prince of Wales. was flaine by Irish men that landed there for a prey, spoyled the country, and destroyed Aberfraw. Caradoc so complaineth of them.

Foyananus his

Molanus writeth of one Forenanus a Bishop, which flourished, Anno 980. he termeth him Bishop of Domenormor, and Metropolitane of Ireland and Scotland: where he mightily erred in the name of the place, of the person, and his stile. For hee was Bishop of Dromore in Ireland, and no Metropolitane at all, but to his purpose hee findeth him among his Saints of Flanders, and faith, that he was warned in a vision to travaile; so that he with a company of Irish Priests, arrived in France, and came to Rome, in the time of Benedict 7. from thence he came backe to the Monasterie of VValciodorum, where hee and his Priests became professed Monkes, of the order of Saint Bemedict, for the space of twelve yeeres, and there ended their dayes. The Monkes there, faith he, were wont among other Saints at Easter, yeerely to call upon him; Santte Fordmane ora pro nobis, untill that the reformers of Bursfeld wiped him out of the Catalogue of Saints, for that he was not canonized by the Church of Rome.

Anno

Anno 988. (as Ifinde in the British Chronicle) Elmmaen, the sonne of Abloic, King of Ireland, was slaine, and a great number of people dyed with famine; that is alwaies the end of civill warres and rebellion in Ireland.

Anno 1004. the Scots (I know not the cause) entred Ireland, and Scots in Ireafter their manner, as also the Danes did then in England, preyed, bur-land. ned, and destroyed : they tooke Gulfath and Vbiad, Irish Lords, and put out their eyes, they ransacked also the Citie of Dublin.

Anno 1012. Grace and Dowlinge, the Irish Antiquaries doe con- Battaile of curre, (the English Writers are silent) and deliver how that Bernai - Clantarie. dus, commonly called Brian Bowrow, Monarch of Ireland, and his Brien Boroave. sonne Murcath, alias Murchardus Mac Brian, with other Kings of the land subject unto him, gathered great power, and met at Clantarfe, nigh Dublin, and gave a sore battaile unto Sutraic, alias Sutric, the fonne of Abloie, King of Dublin, and unto Moilmordha, King of Leinster. This Sutric, to withfrand the Monarch, had hired to his aide, all manner of strangers he could get by sea or by land, as Danes, Norwegians, Scots, Britaines, Pirates, and sea rovers. The fight was desperate, the field all bloud, a horse (they say) was sometime to his belly in bloud. There were flaine that day of the one fide, Brian the Monarch, and his sonne Murchard; of the other side, Moilmordha King of Leinster, Rodericke the Arch-Pirate, and Captaine of the frangers, with others of both fides innumerable. Surrick was fore wounded, was brought to Dublin, and shortly after died of his wound. I pray thee gentle Reader, who got by the bargaine? As farre as ever I could learne, a woman fet them together by the cares.

The Booke of Houth, after the Irish observation, delivereth the The cause of story thus. There was a Merchant in Dublin, commonly called the the field of white Merchant, a Dane, the fourth sonne of the King of Denmarke Clantarfe, our who had a faire wife of Irish birth, and he being full of icalousie, and of House, ready to travaile for merchandize into farre countries, defired of Brian Borow, Monarch of Ireland, that his wife (untill his returne) might waite upon his Lady, soiourne in his house for the safeguard of her person, credit, and honestie, the which was granted, and the King undertookeit. This Merchant made as speedy a returne as he could, and being landed early in a morning, with a privy key, entred the chamber where his wifelay and found Morogh Mac Brian the Kings forme in bed with his wife; hee wheeled about, devifing what was best to be done, at length resolving himselfe to depart for that time, tooke Moreghs (word, and put it into his owne scabbard, and his into Morogbs scabbard. Hee went to the King, and complained of the abuse here spoken of; the King answered, He is my some, give then indgement upon him, faith the Merchant, les him keepe the mbore fill, I will be revenged upon him and his partakers in the field, as some as

possibly may be, and I doubt not but all Ireland shall rue the day of this willanie. Immediately he went to Denmarke, brought over to his aide, thirty thousand Danes and Norwegians, landed at Clantarfe. whereof the field was called the field of Clantarfe; hee summoned Morogh and his favourites to fight, and thought at the first to have taken Dublin. Brian Borow fearing this, made more hafte then good speed, tarried not for the forces of the land, that were comming with his sonne Donogh to his aide, but rashly with his sonne Morogh, (the Author of all this mischiese) gave them battaile. The which battaile all the forenoone being cruelly fought, feemed all to leane on the Irish side, but in the afternoone, the Danes that were in the rere. and yet fresh for any fight they had, were directed to wheele about, and to take the voward unknowne unto the Irish, which fiercely fought and encountred with the wearie and wounded Irish, and wonne the field. Here was Brian Borow, and his sonne Morogh, and eleven thousand of the Irish slaine.

One thing further (gentle reader) note, there was a Priests sonne, accounted a tall man of armes, who in the beginning of the battaile, sledaway, searing the hardinesse of the Danes and Norwegians, and went to Donogh Mac Brian, the brother of Morogh, who was comming with forces to the field, and perswaded him to retraict; saying further, that there was no hope of good successe to bee obtained in this field. This man being taken, confessed the whole treason, and for punishment, was carried to the winde gates, twelve miles from Dublin, set alive standing in the ground, with a great heape of stones about him, as it pleased the Commanders to direct. In Staniburs I finde that the the chiefe Potentates of the Irish, were Brian Borom, Miagh Mac Brian, (whom somethy I termed Morogh) Tady O Kelly, Dolir Ahertegan, and Gille Barramed, and that they were buried

at Kilmaniham, over against the great Crosse.

Anno 1031. as it is remembred by Caradoc in the British Chronicles, there was great stirre and bloudshed in South-Wales, by the meanes of Howell and Meredith, the sonnes of Edwyn ap Evean ap Owen ap Howell Dba, that made claime unto that country against Rytherch ap 10styn, Prince of South-Wales. Howell and Meridith hired unto them a King of Ireland, (whose name is not set downe) which brought with him a great armie of Irish-Scots; the armies met, the fight was cruell, much bloud on both sides was shed, in the end, Rytherch the Prince was discomsitted and slaine, by which means they attained unto the government of South-Wales, the which they ioyntly ruled, and bountifully rewarded the Irish King.

There is at Sauntrie, some three miles from Dublin, yeerely remembrance of Saint Pappan that was borne there. Molanus calleth him Poppon. He travailed into France, builded there many Monasteries, (saith mine Author) and preferred to governe them many men,

became an Abbot himselse, and departed this life, Anno 1048. and lyeth buried at Stabuletum in France, where hee governed. Lastly, mine Author noteth, that he was a Saint, but never canonized:

Conan, the sonne of lago, Prince of North-Wales, married Remulph, the daughter of Alfred, King of Dublin, who in the warres
betweene lago his father, and Griffish the sonne of Lhewelyn ap Rinfylte, sometimes King of Wales, (saith Caradoc) was driven to shee
into Ireland for safegard of his life. This Conan, Anno 1941, came
with Alfred his father in law, with great power out of Ireland so
recover his country: they shortly landed in Wales, and by weafon,
secretly tooke Griffish the King, and carried him towards their ships,
but when it was knowne, the country upon the sodaine rose, armed
themselves, followed the Irish men, made great slaughter of them,
rescued their Prince, and drove Alfred and Conan, with the rest of
their forces, to their shippes, and so to Ireland.

Stow following Fabian, writeth how that Anno 1049. certaine forces out of Ireland, (whom hee calleth Irish Pirates) with 36. ships, entred the mouth of Severne, landed in a place called VVestlapham, and with the helpe of Griffith King of South-Vales, spoyled along those coasts, and did great mischiese. Afterwards Griffith, and those Irish Pyrates, ioyning their powers together, passed over the river Wie, and burnt Dumenham, and slue man, woman, and childe, leaving nothing behinde them, but bloud and ashes. Worcester, Glocester, and Heresordshire, rose in Armes against them, but many of them in cruell fight being slaine, the rest put to slight, the

Irish returned home merrily, loaden with spoyle.

Anno 1050. Conan gathered an armie of his friends in Ireland, attempting the second time the recoverie of his inheritance, he hoy-fed up faile towards VVales, but on a sodaine there arose such a tempest upon the seas, that scattered his Navie, and drowned the most part of his ships, so that hegave over the voyage for that time.

About this time (wherein the English and British historiographers doe agree) Robert, Archbishop of Canterbury, accused Earle Godwin and his sive sonnes, (especially Swaine and Harold) of treason, and Queene Editha the daughter of Godwin, of adulterie, who being called before the King, resused to appeare, and therefore were banished the land, and the Queene was put away from the King. Godwin and Swaine fled to Flanders, Harold and Leoswin (Warmell saith Holinshead) to Ireland, and the Queene was sent with one Maid to the Monasterie of Wiston. Immediately the King disposed of all their possessions. It was not long after cre Godwin and Swaine got shippes, men, munition, and all necessaries in Flanders, the like did Harold and Leoswin in Ireland, they all met upon the seas, to wit, the father, the mother, and the five sonney, heath, Folkeston, Dover,

Saint Pappan.

of IRELAND.

94

and Sandwich, and entring the Thames, destroyed Sheppey, and burned the Kings houses at Mielton. Then they met with the kings Fleet upon the feas, and being ready to fight, Bishop Sugand stept betweene them, and reconciled both fides in such fort, that the King restored them their lands and goods, tooke home the Queene, and banished Robers the Archbishop, with all the French men which had

put buzzes and suspitions into the Kings head.

Anno 1054. as Powell in his annotations upon Caradoc, hathlearnedly collected, King Edward by evill counfell (as it was thought) banished Algar, Earle of Chester, which had treason laid to his charge, whereupon Algar gate him into Ireland, and there providing him eighteene shippes of warre, well appointed and manned with stalworth men, of Irish birth, returned and joyned himselfe with Griffith, King or Prince of Wales, who both together, invaded the country of Mercia about Hereford, where Ranulph, Earle of that country (who was sonne to King Edwards fifter, named Goda, by her first husband Walter de Manus) came against them with a great armie, and met them about two miles from Hereford, where after a fore fight, by the space of three houres, Ranulph and his armie were discomfitted, and about 500. of them flaine, and the rest put to slight, whom Griffith and Algar purfued to Hereford, and entring the towne, set the Cathedrall Church on fire, and flue the Bishop named Leogar, with seven of the Canons, and most lamentably (as it falleth out in warres) spoyled and burned the towne. King Edward being advertised hereof, gathered an armie, and sent Harold the sonne of Earle Godwin against them, who pursuing the enemies to North-Wales, passed through Stradlewyde to Snowdon: but Griffith and Algar being loath to meete Harold, got them againe into South-Wales, whereof Harold being advertised, lest one part of his armie in North-Wales, to refift the enemy there, and returning with the residue to Hereford, caused a great trench to be cast round about the sowne, with a high rampire, strongly fortifying the gates of the same. After this, by meanes of a parlee had with Griffith and Algar, at a place called Biligellagh, a peace was concluded, whereupon Algar being pardoned by the King, and restored againe to his Earledome, returned home to Chester.

About two yeeres after, Algar was accused againe of treason, and the second time exiled the land, fled into Ireland, where he was most ioyously received of his old followers, and offered more kindenesse, then he requested, for hee had most honourably deale with the Merchants and owners of the former ships, and most kindely intreated, and bountcously rewarded the Irish souldiers, the which then in his second extremity, was not forgotten. With shippes, men and munition out of Ireland, he bent his course to Wales, repaired to his old friend Griffish, Prince of Wales, where he was most welcome,

and shortly restored agains to his Earldome by the meanes and intreaty of certaine strangers, which had lately there arrived out of Norway.

Camden writeth how that Anno 1066. Godred, furnamed Cronan, the sonne of Hirald niger, of Island, invaded the Ile of Man, thence came into Ireland, did the like unto Dublin, and a great part of Leynfler, made great spoyle, and went backe againe.

The British Chronicle reporteth of Dermot, (a King in Ireland) that in Anno 1068, he was murthered, but the manner hee sheweth not; the commendation he giveth of him is this: He was the worthi-

est and noblest Prince that ever ruled in Ireland.

Polychronicon reporteth, how that Anno 1072. at Winforebefore William the Conquerour, and the Cleargie, the controversie between the Archbilhops of Canterbury and Yorke was heard at large, and decided, and that Bedaes historie was shewed, where it appeared that from Austen the Monkes time, till Bedaes death, (about 140 yeeres) the Archbilhop of Ganterburie had primacie over all Great Britaine & Ireland, that he had held Councels by Yorke, summoned Bishops of Yorke, confecrated Bishops, and punished Bishops of Yorke for their offences, and iudicially removed them.

Philip Flatesburie a great Antiquarie, whom Staniburst followeth, and lames Grace of Kilkenny, with Dowlinge his iount Collectour doe write, how that Anno 1074. Patricke, Bishop of Dublin, was consecrated in Pauls Church in London, by Lanfranke, Archbishop of Canterburie, upon commendatorie Letters of Teridionatus, alias Terdilnacus, Monarch of Ireland, and Godericke. King of Leinfter, and with tefte of the Clergie and Laytie of that Diocesse of his lawfull and orderly election. Further I finde recorded, that it was the manner to consecrate Bishops in this sort, and that the Monarch of Ireland in regard of his royall principalitie and title of honour with other priviledges belonging to his Monarchie, had negative voyce in the nomination of Bilhops throughout his Realme. Secondly, how the Archbishop of Canterbury took of him that was so consecrated, a corporall oath of Canonicall obedience (as his predecessours formerly used) to him and his successors; and lakly, gave him letters testimoniall thereof to the Monarch and King of Leynster:

Cambrensis sheweth the reason of this consecration, namely, how that in Ireland as then, there was no Archbishop, but one Bishop confecrated another, untill that Anno 1148. Iohannes Papiron, a Priest Cardinall, sent from Eugenius 3. together with Christian, Bishop of Lismore, Legate of all Ireland, came to the land, and brought with them foures Paales. But of this more in another place.

The same Flattesburie writeth further, how that the said Zand franke in like fort consecrated Donatus, Bishop of Dublin, Anno 1085.

About this time, Godwin and Edmund, fonnes to King Harold, (my Author is Thomas Walfingham, Monke of Saint Albans) which formerly had fled into Ireland for fuccour, unto Dermotte Mac O Nell, King of Ireland, returned with 66. faile, landed in Sommerfetshire, (faith Stow) where Brian, the sonne of Eudo, Duke of Brabant, met them and gave them battaile, wherein (faith Stow) the brethren gare the victory, and the Irish men with many great preyes out of Cornewall and Devonshire returned into Ireland. But Walfingham (which seemeth more true) writeth that it was a bloudie battaile, wherein 1070. of the English and Normans, with certaine of the Nobilitie of the land, were flaine, and the enemies with aide of their ships, fled, and brought heavy newes home to their decreft friends in Ireland.

It is very like that William the Conquerour immediately upon this, lent greatforces into Ireland, to bee revenged of them for relieving or affilting his enemies: for Stow writeth out of William of Malmsbury, thus: Lanfranck, Archbishop of Canterbury, being in such favour with King William, that the fatd William thought not good to deny any thing that hee requested, procured by his industrie, that the faid King left his ill custome of felling his prisoners which hee scoke in Ireland, which was a thing hardly granted unto him, and to Wolstan, Bishop of Worcester, the gaine that the King had by the sale

of those Irish men was such.

The British Chronicle reporteth how that Anno 1087, and the last veere of William Conquerour, the sonnes of Blethlyn ap Conwyn, fometime King of Wales, gathered their ftrength together against Rees ap Tyder, who not being able to meete with them, fled to Ireland, and there he purchased to himselse great friends, and got an are mie of Irish men and Scots, to whom hee promised great rewards when he should obtaine his kingdome, & so landed in South-Wales with these strangers, and when his friends heard thereof, they drew unto him, and the other came in all haste to vanquish him before hee had made a head, and gathered forces together; to bee short, at Wechryd they gave battaile, where they were discomfired, and two of the brethren flaine, to wit, Madoe and Kirid, and the other fled and for sooke the country. As soone as Rees was in quiet possession of , his country, he sent away the Irish men with great rewards.

All the Lords of the Ilands fent messengers unto Murchard, alias Moragh O Brien, King of Ireland, that it would please him to send them some worthy man of royall bloud to betheir King, during the nonage of Olanus, the sonne sonne of Godred, King of Man. Whereupon he fent unto them one Dopnald Mac Tady, whom hee deepely charged to governe that kingdome, which of right appertained not to him, with all kindenesse, love and modesty; but hee was no sooner warm in the kingdome, but he forgot his instructions, and the charge his Lord had given him, he poled, he pilled, and practifed all kinde of

tyranny, for the space of three yeers. Then all the Lords of the llands role in armes against him, and banished him out of those parts, so he fled into Ireland, of whom they never heard any further newes.

Stanihurst findeth that Anno 1095. there came certaine Esterlings to the North side of Dublin adjoyning to the Liffie, and seated themselves there, so that of them to this day, the place is called Oftomonfelves there, to that or them to this day, the place is called Choichens, Saint Michans towne, and corruptly, Oxmonton, and the Parish, Saint Michans lived, Anno of one Michanus a Dane and a Bishop which founded the Church, 1095. unto whom Murchard, or Moragh King of Leynster, gave that parcell of land to that use. The faire greene or Commune, now called Oftmontowne greene, was all wood, and hee that diggeth at this day to any depth, shall finde the ground full of great rootes. From thence, Anno 1098. King William Rufus, by licence of Murchard, had that frame which made up the roofe of Westminster Hall, where no English Spider webbeth or breedeth to this day.

Cambrensis in his Irinerarie of Cambria, reporteth, how that King William standing upon some high rocke in the farthest part of Wales, beheld Ireland, and said, I will have the shipper of my kingdome brought hither, wherewith I will make a bridge to invade this land: Murchard King of Leynster heard thereof, and after he had paused a while, asked of the reporter; bath the King in that his great threatning, inserted these words, if is please God? No, then (said he) seeing this King putteth his trust onely in man, and not in God, I scare not

his comming:

Anno 1095. Murchard, (fo writeth Holinshed) alias Morogh, King Samuel, Bithop of Leynster, with the Clergie, and people of the Citie of Dublin, eleeted one Samuela Monke of Saint Albans, an Irish man borne, to the government of the Church, and Bishops See of Dublin, and according to the antient custome, presented him by sufficient letters of testimony unto Anselme Archbishop of Canterburie, to be consecrated by him, who (according to their request) did so, and tooke of him an oath of Canonicall obedience after the usuall manner:

Anno 1097. the Citizens of Waterford perceiving that by reason Malebus, Erft of the great multitude of people in that citie, it was necessarie for Bishop of them to have a Bilhop, obtained licence of their King and Rulers, to Waterferd, erect in their Citie, a Bishops See, and besought them to write to Anfelme, Archbishop of Canterburie, to have his consent therein, and permitted them to nominate a man meete for the place. Hereupon Morogh King of Leynster, wrote unto Anselme, informing him of the whole matter, wherein one Malebus was commended and prefented unto him to be admitted and confecrated if he thought good, thele letters were subscribed by Murchard, King of Leynster, Dermotte his brother, Bishop Dufnald, Idiman, Bishop of Meath, Samuel Bishop of Dublin, and Ferdemnachus, a Bishop in Leynster. And felme confidering their request to be honest and necessarie, examined

the man, gave him the oath of Canonicall obedience, and confecra-

ted Malcus Bishop of Waterford.

About this time, to wit, Anno 1098, the Normans having flaine Rees ap Twyde, Prince of South-Wales, they bent their forces against Griffith ap Conan, Prince of North-Wales, by the conduct of Hugh de Montgomerie, Earle of Saloppe and Arundell, (called of the Welchmen, Hugh Gough,) and of Hugh Vras, Earle of Cheffer. Griffith the Prince fled to the mountaines, and sent for aide into Ireland, (faith Caradoc) where he received cold comfort, then to avoid farther mischiese and treason, which hee suspected to have beene wrought against him, fled into Ireland. In the same season, Magnus King of Norway (fo Stow calleth him) the some of Olavus, the some of Harold Harvager, came with great forces, and subdued the Iles of Orknay, with the Ile of Man, entred into Anglesey, incountred with Hugh, Earle of Salop, who withflood his landing, in the which skirmilh, Hagh the Earle had an arrow shotin his face, which pierced his braine, of which he died, whereupon the Normans retraited. Magmus invadeth Ireland (faith Saxo Grammaticus) and Griffith the Prince of Wales returned to his country, and made peace with the Normans, and governed the same fiftic yeeres. Many things worthy of memory are recorded of this Griffieb ap Conan. Powell writeth that hee was an Irish man by his mother, daughter of the King of Dublin, and also by his Grandmother, and that hee was borne in Ireland, and that he brought over with him out of that country into Wales, divers cunning Musitians, who devised in manner, all the instrumentall musicke upon the Harpeand Crowth that is there used, and made lawes of minstrelsee to retaine the Musitians in due order.

I have not yet done with Magnus the Norwegian, of him Camden writeth a worthy storie. Magnus (saith he) caused a fleete to bee in readinesse of an 160. saile, and sailed into the Orkeneys, the which he forthwith subdued, he passed through all the Ilands, made them subject unto him, and arrived in the He of Man; when hee beheld how pleasant the Iland was, he made choice thereof for habitation, fortified therein, which of him to this day beares his name. Hee lo hampered the inhabitants of Galloway in Scotland, that hee made them bring him timber to his Port for the frame of his fortifications. Afterward he failed to Anglesey in Wales, where he met with two Hughs, both Earles, the one he flue, the other he put to flight, and made the Iland subject unto him. The Welsh men gave him many gifts and rewards, he bade them farewell, and so returned to Man. He sent to Murchard, alias Morogh, King of Ireland, his shooes, commanding him to hang them upon his shoulders upon Christmas day as he passed through his Hall, in the sight of his Embassadors, that thereby he might under fand that he was subject to Magnus the king. When the Irish men heard thereof, they tooke it in ill part, and

chased exceedingly, but King Morogh, a wiseand a sage Prince, smiling at the conceit, with great modesty and discretion gave this air. fwer. I will not onely beare his shooes, but I had rather eate them, then that King Magnus should destroy any one Province in Ireland. Whereupon he fulfilled his command, honoured his Ambassadors, fent many Presents unto King Magnus, and concluded a league. The Ambassadors upon their returne, related all circumstances gave great report and commendation of the land, delivered how pleasant and fruitfull the foile was, the temperature of the ayre, and how healthfull the dwelling was. Magnus hearing this, immediately it ranne in his head to conquer all Ireland, he commanded a great fleet to be in a readinesse, and he himselse going before with sixteene saile privily to espie and search out the strength of the land, and unadvifedly ranging from his shippes, was upon a sodaine compassed and hemmed in by the Irishmen, and slaine, with all in a manner that were with him. Thus Magnus is become Minimus, in fine, hee was buried in Saint Patrickes Church of Downe. So farre Camden in fubstance. The British Chronicle writeth, how that before this insolent attempt, he had procured for his sonne, a daughter of King Morogh in marriage, and that he made him King of Man, but I doe not finde that he enjoyed it.

Carodoc writeth, how that Anno 1101. Robert de Mountgomerie, Earle of Salop, and Arnulph his brother, Earle of Pembroke, rebelling against King Henry, Robert sent for aide to Magnus, but could get none, Arnulph sent Gerald of Windefore, his Steward to Murchard, alias Morogh, King of Ireland, to defire his daughter in marriage, the which hee obtained with promise of great succours, which did encourage him the more against the King; whereupon Arnulph went with all haste into Ireland for his wife and Irish forces. Earle Robert seeing himselfe disappointed, sent to the King, desiring him that he might forfake the Realme, which thing the King granted, and he failed into Normandie. Arnulph received message from the King, that either he should follow his brother, and depart the land, or yeeld himfelfe to his mercie, he chose to forsake the land, and fled into Ireland. Not long after, Owen the sonne of Gadogan, after hee had done great mischiefe and spoile upon the English, Normans, Flemings, and Welfh men, fled into Ireland to King Morogh, who joyfully received him, for he had beene there before, returned to Wales, and fled this ther the second time, and in like fort the third time.

Anno 1113. or thereabout, Griffith the sonne of Rees ap Twyder, Prince of South-Wales, who for feare of the King, had beene of a childe brought up in Ireland, came to Gerald, Steward of Pembroke his brother in law, and others of his friends, to recover his country, whom the King by secret policies and practiles pursued, so that hee

was forced to fice againe.

in grant

In the time of King Henry the first, I finde that there was great stirre betweene Murchard or Morogh, King of Leynster, and the Citizens of Dublin, for it seemeth that hee used grievous exactions and tyrannies over them, so that the Dublinians in revenge of him, fent for Godred, King of Man, and the Ilands, to writeth Camden, and made him their King. Morogh mustereth his country, gathereth forces, procureth aide, marcheth against his enemies, pitcheth his campe at the towns of Coridelis, fent his brother (by the mother fide) ofbell, with three thousand horse well appointed to Dublin, where hee was flaine by Godred, and by the men of Dublin, and the rest discomfited and put to flight. Godred found himselfe well satisfied with spoiles, and returned to Man; they of Dublin likewise thought themselves in some fort reasonably well revenged of their King, quitted themselves for a while, and by mediation and intercession after many Presents and Gifts were reconciled. There was great banquetting and feafting, and ioy outward of all fides, but inward, lay venome and treason, like sparkles of fire covered with ashes, which broke forth not long after, as I am readie to deliver. Staniburft, Grace and Dowlinge doe write, that the Councell of the Citie determining to establish and decree many good lawes and orders, for the publike weale of the towne, and commons of the same, appointed a solemne day of meeting, fent for Morogh their King, humbly craving with all loyall circumstances, his presence, counsaile, and affistance among them at the day appointed, the which hee granted, when the day came, and that they had debated many matters, the King as he late merrily in his chaire, sporting himselfe, and reporting some pleasant historie, one suddenly stept unto him, and tooke away his weapon, the rest came upon him, and stabbed him to the death; they were not content with this, but they cast him into a base grave, and in turther contempt and dispute of his person, they threw a dogge upon him, and earth upon them both, the which Dermotte his sonne revenged afterwards, as shall appeare in processe of the historie.

About the yeere 1124. after Function his computation, one Harold, borne in Ireland, (so writeth saxo) gathered forces, and became the terrour of Norway, affirming withall, that he was the sonne of Magnus the Dane that invaded Ireland, and for truth thereof, he would declare it by fire. When the time and place was appointed, with his bare feet he trode upon a fierie plate, and felt no hurt: the Norwegians admired, and would make him their King, which was the roote of many mischiefes in Norway. He was a man faire spoken, strong, hardy, and swift of foot, and it seemeth, after the manner of Ireland, that he went much bare, fo that the foles of his feet were as hard as horne, and could not easily take harme by fire, by which meanes he deceived the Norwegians. Nicholaus, King of Denmarke, corrupted Magnus of Norway by secret meanes to cut him off.

Magnus practifed with Ericus a Danish Captaine, to dispatch him immediately after his Coronation. To bee fhort, Ericus came with great forces to Scypetors, (a Village where Herald was) in the night time, laid siege to his Pallace, and by the breake of day, pulled him and his sonnes forth by the head and shoulders, and put them to

In the time of Henry 1. King of England, flourished Celfus, Bishop Celfus, Bishop of Armagh, and ended his dayes with the entrance of King Stephen to the Crowne. He descended of Noble Parentage in Ireland, whom Saint Bernard with others, for divers rare and fingular gifts, highly commendeth; he had beene brought up in the Universitie of Oxenford, where in the liberall sciences, and profound literature, he excelled others of his time; when he perceived by the infirmities of his body, that age hastened to an end, and that his naturall course was in short time to be finished, he desired of them that were present, their favours, and prayed them to use meanes unto others that were abfent, and especially unto the two Kings of Mounster, (so Bernard writeth) that Malachias might succeed him in the Bishopricke of Armagh. He was a married man, and died of great age, and lyeth buried with his wife and children in the faid Church.

Malachias in the time of King Stephen, succeeded Celfus in the Bi- Malachias, Bishopricke of Armagh, whose life Saint Bernard, Abbot of Clareval-shop of Ar. lis, Capgrave, and Conganus, an Abbot of Ireland have written at magh large. He was borne in Ireland amongst barbarous people (saith Bermard) yet in his birth and native foile, hee sucked of them no more barbarousnesse, then the Sea fish take of the salt water. His Parents for wealth and might, were in great account in those dayes; he was brought up at Armagh, under Imarius the Anachorite, where Cellus made him both Deacon and Priest at the age of 25. yeeres, from thence with licence of Imarius and of Celfus, he went to Malchus, Bishop of Lismore in Mounster, a man of Irish birth, that had beene a Monke sometimes in the Abbey of Winchester in England, and from thence advanced to the Bilhopricke of Lilmore. And to make the historie plaine, there was at that time, great warres betweene Cormacke, King of Mounster, and his brother for the Soveraignty; the brother prevaileth, Cormacke fleeth to the Bishop of Lismore, and in his distressed estate, tooke a Monkes Cell, and led a private life. Malachias was appointed his Tutor, where Cormacke continued untill that a King there adjoyning, pittying his miserie, gathered forces, and reflored him to his kingdome. who should not a standard light to he co

Immediately after this, Letters came for Malachias in most carnest fort, that he should come to Armagh, where not farre off, an Vacle of his, a man of great command, a Lord of a country, rich and potent (that held in his hands all the wasted Monasterie of Bencher, alias Bengor) dwelled; of which Monasterie I have spoken before in

Miles es

the raigne of King Arthure. Malachias upon his comming, restored these possessions, and reedifieth the old Monasterie, and appointed one Malchus, brother to Christianus, Abbot of Mellefont, governour of the place, when Malachius was thirty yeeres of age, he was made Bishop of Conor, (Conorets saith Bernard) where her mer by his ownereport, (more then I am willing to lay downe in writing) so rude and barbarous a people, as worke could not be found upon the face of the earth, yet the holy man ceased not to travaile among them by preaching and teaching, and by all meanes possible to winne them; not long after, a certaine King of Vifter destroyed Conor, and put the people to the fword, burned and spoyled, and made havocke of all, whereupon Malachias with a hundred and twenty brethren, fled to Mounster, where King Cormake gave him great entertainement, and ayded him greatly in the building of the Monastery of Ybrak. By this time, Celfus spoken of before, fell sieke and dyed. The rude people thrust in Mauritius that usurped the place some five yeeres, then Malchus, Bishop of Lismore, and Gislehertus the first Legate that came to Ircland, from the Pope, called the Bilhops and Princes of the land together, appointed Melachias for the place. And when death had swiftly cut off the intruder Mauritius, that damnable nation thrust in Nigellas, but he prospered not long, so that Malachias enjoyed it quietly. Of the injury done to that Church, and the abuse of that time, heare Bernard, (as he learned of Conganus and others) report. The see of Ardmach (saith Bernard) for the reverence and honour of Saint Patricke the Apostle of that nation, which converted that whole land to the faith, in the which See living, he ruled. and in which dying, he refted, is had of all men from the beginning, in so great reverence, that not onely the Bishops and Ministers of the Clergie, but the Kings and Princes of that nation, carry themselves in all obedience unto their Metropolitane, so that he being one, ruleth all: but there crept in a most detestable custome, through the divellish ambition of certaine mighty men, that the holy See was obtained by inheritable succession, neither were any suffered to enjoy the Bishopricke, but such as were of their tribe and samilie, neither did this execrable fuccession hold for a small time, but for the space of fifteene generations, now in this diabolicall malice elapsed. And so farre this wicked and adulterous generation had confirmed to it felfe this lewd interest, year ather an injurie to be punished with all manner of death, that if at any time there should want Clerks of that race, yet never wanted Bilhops. To be short, there were before Celfus, eight Bilhops married men, besides himselfe, without orders, yet learned men; from hence over all Ireland, iffued that diffolution of exclefiastiall difcipline, which Malachies found in Conor, therooting out of godly centure, and the abandoning of religion; from hence levery wherein stead of Christian meekenesse, was brought in cruell barbarousnesse,

yea, paganisme and infidelity under a Christian name for that which was not heard of from the originall of Christianitie, without order, without reason, the Metropolitans at their pleasure changed, and increated the number of Bilhops, to that one Bilhopricke contented not it selfe with one Bishop, and no marvaile, for how could it fare well with the members of so diseased a head? they possessed the Sanctuary of God in this fort, the space well neere of two hundred yeeres; hee meaneth unto the dayes of Celfus and Malachias. Cambrenfis in his itinerarie of Cambria, had relation no doubt unto this, where he with Baldwin, Archbishop of Canterbury, in visitation about Wales, came to the Church called lure padaen vacor, that is, the Church of great Paternus, mil-ftiled with the government therof, for thus he writeth: This Church, like as many more throughout Ireland and Wales, hash a Laye man to their Abbot, use bath prevailed, and a lewd custome bath crept in, that great and mighty men in Parishes, have beene by the Clergicappointed Patrons and defendors; afterwards have usurped unto themselves the right thereof. Immediately hee reporteth of a travailer that came hither out of little Britaine in France, that had for his further knowledge seene many countries, and falhions of fundry nations, and entring into the faid Church on the Sabbath day, waytedfor divine Service, they rung the Bell, they tould, they waited long, at length came in the Abbot, with some twenty after him in armes, and wilde lookes, every one having (fon willinge, lothe Britaines termed it) a forrest Bill on his shoulder; the travailer asked which is the Abbor, answer was made the formost, with the greatest forrest Bill; the travailer asked, hath he any other ornament, or doth he use any other weede? answer being made, no, then said hee, I have travailed farre enough, I will see no more fashions whilft I live, after that I have seene an Abbot carry a forrest Bill upon his backe. Now to returne whence I have made this digression, for the abuse of the Church cauleth me to abuse the reader.

Malachias, when he had peaceably enjoyed Ardmagh some three yeeres, with the consent of the three Bishops and Princes, he resigned his place to Gelasius, and returned to his former Bishopricke, not of Conor, but of Dune, for he had placed one in Conor before, to wit, Oedanus his disciple, here Bernard noteth that where Dune and Conor were before this time united through ambition and coverous selfes, this man of devotion and conscience, separated them againe, dividing the Churches as they had beene of old, for the good will he bare to Armagh, he tooke his journey towards Rome, landed in Scotland, came to Yorke, failed to France, and lodged at Clarevallis, hec came to Rome in the time of Innocentius a. who made him his Legate of Ireland, in the roomth of Gislebert, the old man spoken of before, which had made sure to be removed. Bonifare appointed Armagh to be a Metropolitane See, but did not effect it, and promised the pall

which

which he did not performe; Bernard maketh mention of two Metropolitan Sees, one procured by Cellus, the other by Malachias; but where and how I finde no antient record. Bale is of opinion they were in vecibus, and not in rebus, for lacke of money to pay for them. Vpon his returne hee came to Clarevallis, thence to England, so to Scotland, (where King David most royally entertained him) and lastly, to his Abbey of Benchor in Vister. Of his conversation, heare Bernard: from the day of his birth, to the day of his death, hee lived fine proprio, without claiming propertie in any thing; he had neither men servants, nor maid servants, neither townes nor villages, neither any reuenue ecclesiasticall or temporall in his Bishopricke; for his provision, (ad mensam episcopalem) hee had no certainty allotted him whereupon a Bishop might live, hee had no certaine Monastery or dwelling place, for hee daily went about all the Parishes, preaching the Gospell, and living by the Gospell, as the Lord had ordained. faying, the labourer is worthy of his reward, of his labours and fuch as travelled with him, he carried about to relieve them all to be short. Malachias neither in dyet or rayment was discerned from the rest of the brethren; when he went a preaching with footmen, he went on foor, being a Bishop and a Legate: and here Bernard exclaimeth, when he entreth into the confideration of the difference betweene him and his brethren, and the nephewes of the Apostles, so he calleth them. Towards his latter dayes, hee forrowed that Ireland had not the pall, and as oft as he thought upon Innocentius 2. his promise, he fighed, who (as formerly I have delivered) had promised, not performed; when he heard that Eugenius his successor was come unto France, he thought it a fit time to obtain his purpose, he tookeship. ping for Scotland, where King David received him as in times past, and thence unto England, where the jarre betweene the King of England, and the Pope, hindred his passage, yet he got into France, and straight to Clarevallis, where hearing that Pope Eugenius was returned to Rome, he rested himselfe, fell sicke of an ague, and there dyed, being of the age of 54. yeeres, Anno 1148. 4 Nonas Novembris, fo farre Bernard in Substance, yet Antonine faith hee dyed, Anno

In his time lived Conganus, Abbot of Benchor, who enformed Bernard of the whole life of Malachias, and wrote at large thereof himfelfe, inferting many fabulous things, and faith Nicholas Magnire, he wrote not onely the life of Malachias, but also the life of Bernard. I finde him to be the Patron of Killaskin, otherwise called Killeshin, in Monte Margeo, and the Barony of Marghagha in Leynster, spoken of before.

In this time lived Tundalus Magus, so surnamed, because suspected for a Sorcerer, borne and brought up in Mounster (in Cashell, faith Lepelo, in the West of Ireland) of Noble birth, and by calling a Knight:

Knight: Antonius out of Vincentius reporteth, that hee was fierce and cruell, and in the end became a Carthufian Monke, for that order beganne as we may reade in the life of Bruno, the first founder thereof, upon some great extremity, (whereof the Proverbe role, de-Speratio facit Monachum, desperation maketh a Monke) it seemeth that he had in his life time committed some hainous offences, and was mightily tormented in conscience, and fell into trances and extaffes;upon his recovery he delivered unto the world, strange & damnable untruths, (faith Bale) of Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, and I wot not what, for a man distracted, knoweth not what he faith. Bale Writeth, (talia ad terrorem fingebant scelestissimi; Nebolones somewhat excusing him, and extenuating his imbecillities and biddeth him farewell: Clarent Stephano Rege in Anglia dominante: & fatana apud Hybernos fuas vires exercente, hee flourished when Stephen raigned over England, and the divell dominecred over Ireland. Hee wrote a booke of Revelations, the which Melchior Canus, Albertus Crantzius, and Gobelenus have utterly condemned. He wrote also the life of Vrfula, and the 11000. Virgins, printed at Cullen, the which Zazarias Lepelo counteth for lyes and fables.

alias Donogh, King of Louth, alias Vriell, some call him Donogh o-carvell, the first Abbot was Christianus, who afterwards was Bilhop of Lysmore, and Legate of all Ireland.

Anno i 144. William, Bilhop of Winchester, by authority of Pope Gelestine 2. in a Councell held at London, brought in the use of curfing with Bell, Booke, and Candle, which liked the Irish Priests well, to terrifie the Laytie for their Tithes. Foxe.

Anno 1148 there fell great variance betweene Owen, furnamed Gwrneth. Prince of North-Wales, and Cadwallader his brother, they were both the fonnes of Griffish ap Conan, Prince of North Wales. This Cadwellader fled into Ireland, and hired to his aide, ofter Mac Offer Curbell Mat T berulfe, with a great number of Irish men, and red flankes, for 2000. markes, and landed at Abermeany in Carnarvonshire, against whom, Prince Owen came with great power, but before the Armics met, there was a peace concluded betweene the brethren, which when the Irish men understood, they kept with them Cadwallader, as prisoner, for their pay formerly promised, so that hee was faine to deliver 2000 heads of Cattell, besides many priloners and spoyles that were taken in the country; but Prince Owen as soone as he knew his brother to be let at liberty, letupon the Irish men (his flomacke was full of revengement) flue a great number of them, and recovered all the Cartell, with the prisoners, and other spoyle, so that in the end, as many as escaped with life, returned to Ireland with forrow, thame, and losse, and made no bost of their voyage; so writeth Carodoc.

The same yeere, Anno 1148. Iohn Papire a Priest Cardinall, together with Christianus Bishop of Lismore, the Popes Legate over the whole Land, being sent by Eugenius, came into Ireland. And in Anno 1151. faith Mathew Paris, but by the confent of most VVriters, Anno 1152. summoned a Councell, where in the presence of the Bishops, Abbots, Kings, Dukes, & the Antients of Ireland, by the Apostolike authoritie, Colledge of Cardinals, & confent of the Bishops, Abbots, & others there present, they ordained soure Archbishopricks in Ireland, and gave them foure pales, to wir, Ardmach, Dublin, Cashell, and Tuam. In Ardmach, then fate Gelasius, in Dublin Gregory, in Cashell Donatus, in Tuam Edanus, these werethe first Archbishops of Ireland. The records from that time to this day, of the foure Provinces, the foure Archbishoprickes with their Bishops and Suffragans, in Latine, and yulgar speech, with their titles of Saints and Patrons, together with the unions of them in processe of time following. I finde thus.

Anno 1151. these Abbies were founded, de Beatitudine, de duillio, de Magio, de valle salutis, and happily the Monasterie which Mathew Paris and Polychronicon spake of upon this occasion. There was a Knight (fay they) called Owin, of Irish birth, which had long served King Stephen in his warres, got licence to repaire unto his native foile, and to visit his friends; when hee came to Ireland, hearing the fame of the Purgatory of the second Patricke the Abbot, and not the Belbop, so I reade in Polychronicon, it came in his minde to visit the same, he being in the Cave, and concavities under ground, saw strange fights, and making report thereofunto King Stephen, obtained licence of him thenceforth to leade a religious and solitary life: he obtained also of King Stephen, (so Mathew Paris writeth) a parcell of ground in Ireland to build a Monasterie called Luden, an Abbey of white Monkes, where Gervasius became the first Abbot, and where Gilbert a Monke trayned up Owen in the order thereof. This Gilbert (faith mine Author) wrote as Owen told him all the reports that are now extant of that Purgatory, so that it seemes to be no antient matter, but a late device, first found by this owen, in the late dayes of King Stephen.

The battaile of Anno 11 52. was the battaile of Monad more fought in Ireland. Monad more. betweene Leinster and Mounster men, where (faith Holinshed) the flower and chiefest personages of Leinster and Mounster were slaine, and faith Iohn Plunker, Mounster lost the field, Anno 1154. Terdielach, King of Connaght dyed, there succeeded him, Rorie Oconochor Rowag, commonly called Roderic, who flue his owne brother that aspired to the kingdome of Connaght, and in this successe, attempted further, and became Monarch of Ireland.

crowned King Henry 2 King of England, the fonne of Mathildathe Empress, fubdued Scotland, Ireland, Orchades, and the furthest Ocean Ilands;

he was Protector of France, and was offered the kingdome of Ierufalem: this Noble Henry was crowned King of England, Anno 1154. he married Elenor, daughter and heire of William, Duke of Aquitaine, the which Elenor had been formerly married to Lewis, King of France, and upon dislike, divorced, under pretence that they were within the fourth degree of consanguinity: he was knighted by Dawid, Kingof Scors, and after many broyles, & much bloudshed, adopted by King Stephen for his sonne, and consequently proclaimed heire apparant to the Crowne of England, and thereupon after the difcease of Stephen, crowned with great ioy and applause of the people.

Anno 11 54. the same yeere that Henry the second was crowned,

the Abbey of Kyrie-elceson was founded.

Anno 1155. faith Mathew Paris and Fabian, and the first or second of Henry 2. raigne, (though Stow referre it to the 7. and Anno 1160: the King cast in his minde to conquer Ireland, hee faw that it was commodious for him, and confidered that they were but a rude and favage people, for fo the historiographers doe write, whereupon in his ambitious minde, he fent unto Adrian, Bishop of Rome, one Iohn Salsbury, (who by the faid Bishop afterwards was made Bishop of Carnolum in France) with others, delivering his fute to that effect. Adrian being a man of English birth, heard his Ambassadors the more willingly, considered the matter advisedly, together with his colledge of Cardinals, and granted him his request, as followeth: Adrian the Bishop, the servant of the servants of God, to bis most deen Somne in Christ, the Noble King of England, sendeth greeting and Apofolike benediction: your magnificence hatb beene very carefull and fludious how you might enlarge the Church of God here in earth, and increase the number of his Saints and elect in beaven, in that as a good Catholike King, you have and doe by all meanes labour and travell to enlarge and increase Gods Church, by teaching the ignorant people the true and Christian religion, and in abolishing and rooting up the weedes of sinne and wickednesse. And wherein you have, and doe crave for your better furtherance, the helpe of the Apostolike See (wherein more speedily and discreely you proceed) the better successe we hope, God will fend, for all they which of a fervient zeale and love in religion, doe begin and enterprise any such thing, shall no doubt in the end, have a good and prosperous successe: And as for Ireland, and all other Ilands where Christ is knowne, and the Christian religion received, it is out of all doubt, and your excellencie well knoweth, they doe all appertains and belong to the right of Saint Peter, and of the Church of Rome, and we are so much the more ready, desirous and willing to sow the acceptable seede of Gods word, because we know the same in the latter day will be most severely required at our hands: you have sour welbeloved Sonne in Christ) advertised and signified unto us, that you will enter

into the Land and Realme of Ireland, to the end to bring them to obedience unto Law, and under your subjection, and to root but from among them, their foule finnes and wickednesse, as also to yeeld and pay yeere. ly out of every house, a yeerely pension of one penny to Saint Peter, and besides also will defend and keepe the rites of those Churches, whole and inviolate: We therefore well allowing and favouring this your godly disposition, and commendable affection, doe accept, ratifie, and affent unto this your petition; and doe grant that you (for the dilating of Gods Church, the punishment of sinne, the reforming of manners, plan. ting of vertue, and the increasing of Christian religion) doe enser to posfeffe that land, and shereto execute according to your wifedome, what foever shall be for the honour of God, and the safety of the Realme: and further also we doe strictly charge and require, that all the people of that land, doe with all humbleneffe, dutifulneffe, and honour, receive and accept you as their Liege Lord and Soveraigne, referuing and accepting the right of holy Church to be inviolably preserved : as also the yearely pension of Peter pence out of every house, which we require to be truely answered to Saint Peter, and to the Church of Rome. If therefore you doe minde to bring your godly purpofe to effect, indevour to travell to reforme the people to some better order and trade of life, and that also by your felfe, and by fuch others as you shall thinke meet, true, and honest in their life, manners, and conversation, to the end the Church of God may be beautified, the true Christian religion fewed and planted, and all other things done, that by any meanes shall or may be to Gods bonour, and salvation of mens soules, whereby you may in the end receive of Gods hands, the reward of everlasting life, and also in the meane time, and in this life, carry a glorious fame and an honourable report among all nations. The King upon the receit hereof, was very glad, and let it lye dorment by him, untill better opportunity was offered, as hereafter shall appeare.

Anno 1166. Moragh Mac Cocholan, King of Ireland, called a great Councell at Dublin, gave battaile to the King of Leinster, and killed him, and shortly after was himselfe slaine by Ororic, which succeeded in the foveraignty; the same yeere faith Guttyn Owen in his British Chronicle, Henry 2. being at Chester, hired many shippes out of Ireland for his ayde, against North-Wales, but hee discharged them immediately, for his purposetooke no good effect, in as much as the present troubles of Normandy called him away. In this passime (so the old English delivereth) or rather the hurly burly of the world, amids the warres of France, Flanders, and England, Ireland was all

in armes, the occasion was as followeth.

Dermot Mac Moragh, King of Leinster, was a long time enamoured with the wife of Ororike, King of Meth, some call him Morice, some other Merdich, the was the daughter of Omalarghlun, whom nature had made faire, the world a Queene, and lust a Harlot: the booke of

Howih reporteth at large, how Ororic was old, his Queene young and wanton, and that in derifion, when he came from hunting, and being an hungred, the gave Apples to eate, which had beene in some undecent place of her body to be spoken of, so that the scent of them was ftrong, whereat the smiled; her Lord and husband having secretly learned her lewd practife, tooke with him the day following, two of her foster brothers a hunting, gelded them, baked their stones, brought the Pie hot to his Lady and her Gentlewomen, when hee had commended the rarenesse of the meat, the fond wantons and giglets, fell to it, when they had fatisfied themselves, faith Ororic, how like youthis Pye, excellent good meat fay they; it is (faith hee) the meat which you love raw and rosted, what is that (say they) the stones of your two foster brethren; with that she cast up a wilde look, and never beheld him cheerefully againe. Ororic her Lord and husband being in pursuit of kerne theeves and outlawes that had mightily annoyed his people in the furthest part of his country, she with all celerity, supposing it a fit time, fent for her lover Dermotte, the message was no sooner delivered, but hee was a horse backe, posting to the Harlot; to be short, he tooke her away with him, at which time (O false heart) she strugled, she cryed, as though she were unwilling, and that hee forced her. Ororic immediately heard of it, gathered his forces together, mustred his people, craved ayde, and among others,

wrote unto Roderick, Monarch of Ireland as followeth.

Though I am not ignorant, (most renowned Prince) that humane causes are to be weighed in the balance of patience, and that a man endued with vertue, will not effeminate himselse by reason of the unconstant and mutable minde of a Harlot, yet in so much this horrible crime, (whereof I am fully perswaded) came to your cares be-

fore my messenger could deliver his letters, a thing heretofore not heard of, as farre as I remember, not practifed against any King of Ireland, severity causeth me to call for justice, when charity admonisheth me not to seeke revengement. If thou behold the shame, I con-

fesse it redoundeth to me alone; if you weigh the cause, it is common to us both, what confidence shall we repose in our subjects that are bound unto us in regard of our Princely command, if this effeminate

adulterer, or rather queller of chastity, shall escape unpunished for so abhominable a fact? for the unchastised offences of Princes, notori-

oufly committed in the fight of al men, breed a most pernitious imita. tion, as precedents unto the people; in summe you have sufficient experience of my good will and affection towards you, you see mee

wounded with the cruell darts of fortune, vexed with infinite difcommodities, and now extremely driven to my utter shifts: It re-

maines, (seeing I am wholly yours) that not onely with counsell, being requested, but with armes, being urged, you revenge my quarrell:

this when you will, and as you will, not onely I aske, but require at your hands. Farewell.

The Monarch for some former quarrell against Dermot was all on fire, and joyning forces with ororic, entred Leinster with fire and fword, the people cry woc and alacke (O bone in Irilb) now are wee punished for the lewdnesse of our Prince. Dermot lulling himselfe in his lovers armes, heareth the newes, starteth upon a sodaine, beholdeth his Lady, hath no power to speake, runneth forth, calleth his men, cryeth for aid, throughout his country, none gave care unto him; the country thought now (whereas they could not) that God will be revenged on him for his exactions, cruelty, tyranny, and all other villanies practifed upon his subjects, and especially for deflouring another mans wife: when he saw himselfe quite forsaken, voyd and destitute of all ayde, he betooke himselse to the sea, and sled for England, but what became of the Harlot I cannot learne; belike shee hanged her selfe when she had set all the country in uprore. Anno 1 1 69. (John Clin and John Stow are mine Authors) now that Dermos is fled, I am to infert a flory out of the British Chronicles of Conwey and Strotflur Abbeyes, afore I discourse of him which was in the fame veere, that he tooke the lea, how that Owen Gwyneth, Prince of North-Wales, had a sonne called Ryryd, who in the right of his wife, asic feemeth, was Lord of Clochran in Ireland, and another fonne begotten vpon an Irish woman, called Howell, and a third sonne called Madoc. This Madoc finding his country in great contention, and his brethren at civill warres, prepared certaine thips with men and enunition out of Wales and Ireland, and fought adventures by feas. he failed west from the coast of Ireland, so farre north, that hee came to a land unknowne, where he faw many strange things. This land in the opinion of Humphrey Lloyde, the great Antiquary of Britaine, must needs be some part of that country, of which the Spaniards affirme themselves to be the first discoverers since Hannes time. For by reason and order of cosmographie, this land to the which Madoc came, must needs be some part of Nova-hispania, or Florida; whereupon it is manifest that the same country was long before discovered by Britaines and Irish men, afore either Columbus or Americus Velpatime, led any Spaniards thither. Of the voyage and returne of this Madoc, there be many fables, the which I will not report. He prepared ships for a second voyage, and tooke with him men and women to inhabit that land, therefore it is to be presupposed that he and his people inhabited part of those countries, for it appeareth by Francis Loves, that in Aculanus and other places, the people honoured the Crosse, whereby it may be gathered, that Christians had been there before the comming of the Spaniards: but because this people were not many, they followed the manners of the land, and used their language. I am of opinion with others, that the land whereunto Madoc came, was some part of Mexico, first of all, for that the inhabitants of that land report, their Rulers to have descended from a strange

nation that came from a far country, which thing is confessed by Muresuma, King of that country, in his orations made for quieting of his people at his submiffion to the King of Castile, Hernando Curtecius being then present, which is laid downe in the Spanish Chronicles, of the conquest of the West Indies; secondly the british words and names of places used in that country to this day, doe argue the same, as when they talke together, (they fay) Gwrando, which is hearken or listen in British. Also if you peruse Sir Humpbrey Gilberts discovery, they have a Bird, which they call Pengwin in Brittish and Cornish, a white head, but the Iland of Corroeso, the Cape of Britaine, the river of Gwyndoor and the white rocke of Pengwyn, be Britilh or Welch words: whereby it appeareth, that it was that country which Madoc and his people inhabited: now remembring my felfe that my pen hath not carryed me so far unto forraigne countries by fea, but that I expect Dermots returne by fea and by land into Ireland. Dermot Mac Morogh came to Henry 2. in Normandie, made his moane (as formerly in substance is delivered) craved aide for his restitution into his country, being a King exiled, although distressed and void of comfort, unlesse hee might obtaine it at his Majesties hands; the Kings hands being full of warres, he granted him his favourable letters as followeth.

Henry, King of England, Duke of Normandie and Aquitaine, Earle of Anjow, ye. unto all his subjects, English, Normans, Welch, and Scots, and to all nations and people being his subjects, greeting; where as Dermot Prince of Leinster most wrongfully (as beenformeth) banished out of his owne country, bath craved our ayde, therefore for so much as we have received him unto our protection, grace and savour, who sever within our Realmes, subjects unto our command, will ayde and helpe him whom wee have embraced as our trustie friend, for the recovery of his land, let him be assured of our favour and licence in that behalfe.

Dermot returned ioyfully with these letters, and came to Bristoll, where at that time, Richard, surnamed Stranghow, Earco. Penbroke and Chepstow lay, hee shewed his letters, caused them at severall times, publikely to beread, conferred with Earle Richard, and concluded to give the Earle his sole daughter and heire in marriage, and his whole interest in the kingdome of Leinster after his decease. Richard undertooke of the other side to essect all his desire. As Dermos wayted for a winde, it came in his minde for the shorter cut into Ireland, to goe by land into Saint Davids, where he was restreshed, and greatly pittied by the Bishop there, and concluded in like fort (as with the Earle before) with Robert size Stephens, and Morie Fize Gerald, by the mediation of the good Bishop there, to restore him unto his kingdome, upon condition that hee should give them and theirs for ever, the towne of Wenford, and two cantreds of land next Kk 2

adjoyning; upon this hee tooke shipping, secretly came to Fernes. and lived privately among the Clergie all that winter, expecting performance of promises out of England. Anno 1 170. Abbatia de Castro Dei, was founded in the same yeere, and the first day of May, (so writeth Stow) Robert Fitz Stephens, with David Barrie, and Hervie de Monte. Mariscospie of Strangbow his nephew, according to his promife, with thirty Knights, threescore Esquires well mounted, and three hundred foot, being Archers well appointed, of his owne kindred, and trayning up in feates of armes, and the choice fouldiers of all Wales, landed at the Bann, not farre from Wexford; hereupon the rime runneth.

At the Creeke of Bagganbun, Ireland was left and wonne.

Here some allude unto the blinde Prophecie of Merlin, that hee should meane this noble Warrior and worthy Knight, where he faith; A Knight biparted Shall first enter with sorce of Armes, and breake the bounds of Ireland: this they would have understood of Robert Fitz Stephens, an English man, borne in Normandie, and of Nesta his mother, daughter to Rees ap Tunder Prince of South Wales, fo I finde in Cambrenfis; but if Merlin had forefight in this, I had rather take his Prophecic verified in respect of his Armes and Ensignes, which were biparted, being of two fundry changes, namely, party par pale gules and ermine, a faltier counterchanged; for commonly all Prophecies have their allusions unto Armes, and by them they are discovered, though at the first not so apparant, before the evenethere.

of take place.

The next day after, in the same place, landed Morice Prendergast, whom Staniburft calleth Prendelgast de Rofensi Wallia Demitia Provincià, as Cambrensis writeth; the which I take to be about Milford in South-Wales, accompanied with ten Knights, and a greatnum. ber of Archers in most gallant sort in two ships. Immediately, Robert Fitz Stephens direceth his letters to Dermat, who could scarce reade them for joy of their arrivall, and fent forthwith his base sonne Donald with five hundred men to falute them, and haftenerh after himselse with all speed; off goeth his poore mantle wherein hee obscurely shrowded himselfe, on goeth his princely attire; the Irish men follow him, the fame thereof is spread over the whole land: such as before in his distressed state startly for sooke him, now runne and starter, and fawne upon him; to be short, they meete, they confirme the former leagues with oathes, and toyne forces together, and they march towards Wexford, to lay fiege to the townes the townesmen a fierce & wilfull people, (to the number of 2000.) fally forth with full purpole to give them battaile in the field, but when they heard the Trumpets

Trumpets found, the horses neyghing, and beheld their glittering Armes, the ratling of their furniture, horse and men in compleat Armes, and all most comely in battaile array, (the like of them not formerly feene, neither heard of) they alter their mindes, they retire into the towne, they make fast their gates, and fire the suburbs. Fitz Stephens came to the wals, filled the trenches with armed men, and appointed his Archers to levell at the wals and turrets, if occasion were offered: the townelmen manfully defended themselves, threw over the wals great stones and pieces of timber, hurt many, and made them voyd the place, among whom, a couragious Knight, called Dawid Barrye, adventured to scale the walles, but with a great stone which fell upon his head-piece, he was cast downe to the ditch, and carried away by his fellowes with fafeguard of his life, upon this they goe to the sea strand, and fired all the ships and vessels which they found there.

The next day after, upon better advice and deliberation, they approach unto the wals, and gave a new affault, the townefmen within beganne to distrust their state, being upon this sudden arrivall of the strangers, not sufficiently provided of men, munition, and victuals, to encounter with them, and remembring againe, how most unnaturally they had rebelled against their Prince and Soveraigne, they sent messengers to Dermot, to intreate for peace, (alas it was farre from the heart) the which was granted, and tooke of them pledges and hostages for the performance thereof. Lastly, Mac Moragh, according to his former promise gratified these first adventures, hee gave unto Robert Fitz Stephens, and Morrice Fitz Gerrald, who was as yet in England, the towne of VVexford, and the territories thereunto adioyning, and unto Hervie de Monte Morisco, two cantreds on the sea

fide, betwixt Wexford and Waterford.

Dermot Mac Moroch and his company now take heart, they encrease their Army with Wexford men, and become 3000. strong. The next iourney they bend their course towards Osfory, where one Donald, or Mac Donell was Prince, whom Dermot hated deadly, and for this cause Donald suspected Dermots sonne and heire to have much familiaritie with his wife, and therefore in his jealous humour, apprehended him, imprisoned him, and pulled our both his eyes, (but fay they) though fight failed him, his feeling did not, for the loved him the more, in so much that she satisfied his lust, and ranne away after him. When Robert Fitz Stephens, and the Gallants of Britaine entred the country, they found neither dastards, nor cowards, but valiant men with horse and soot 5 they found the country fast with woods, bogges, and paces trenched and plashed; yet the valour of the adventurers was luch, preluming upon former fortunes, to have the like future successes, with loose wings drove them out of the woods and bogges, into the plaine and champion land, where the Kk 3

horsemen with their speares overthrew them, and the foote finding them groveling, runne them thorow, and ended their dayes; the Gallowglasses followed, and cut off their heads. And here Dermot Mac Morogh is mightily condemned, he being originally for exaction, extortion, cruelty, tyranny, and other damnable offences, infly exiled, now sheweth no Princely stomacke, but a base Wolvish minde: for when 200. of the Offory mens heads were throwne at his feete, (alas they had not offended) hee viewed them all, and finding one whom he knew, and mortally hated, he held him by the head and cares, and most brutishly with his teeth, bit the nose and lips of the dead, whom without the ayde of the Britaines, hee durst not behold in the face. In this bloudy course, Dermot directed these worthy warriours, they more affecting the prey for their present maintenance, then the bloud of any person, to spoyle, burne, waste the country, and murther the poore and feely people, which God wot, meant no harme: whereupon Donald, Prince of Offory, despiting Dermot Mac Morogh, by the advice of his Councell and friends, fent to Robert Fitz Stephens in writing as followeth: Sir Knight of Noblerace. renowned for martiall prowesse, Donald Prince of Ossory lendeth greeting: Dermot that damnable adulterer in his owne person, with the King of Meths wife, and in his sonnes person with my wife, have drawnethee and those Gallants, (most worthy Knights) into this poore country and naked people: I will yeeld my selfe (it is for the good of my poore followers) into thy hands, peace I crave, and peace let me have. Robert Fitz Stephens acquainted Dermot Mac Morogh with the premises of all sides, the Irish dissembled, (as hereafter shall further appeare) peace they granted, and they acknowledged Dermot for their Lord and Soveraigne. In all this service, I may not conceale what Cambrensis delivereth. David Barry and Meilerins, effeed fingular exployes, and deserved no lesse commendations. As soone as the good successe of Dermot and the strangers lately arrived, was spread abroad, Rory Oconochor, alias Rodericke, King of Connaught, Monarch of Ireland, called the Princes and Nobles of the land together, and layeth before them the dangerous estate and imminent perill of the whole land, how Dermot guilefully had trayned in strangers, how hee and the strangers were like to ouer-runne all, unlesse with all expedition, this mischiese were prevented; in fumme they concluded, that every man shall to his Armes, and make ready horse and foot, and set upon these invaders.

Dermot Mac Moregh, having certaine knowledge of this great fer paration and mischiese intended, and his salse harted subjects, that lately sawned upon him were sled to the enemies, searing the pulsance of the Monarch, and the forces of the whole land, called Robert Fits Stephens, and said unto him; Fortune is sickle, our state is an ague that commeth by fits, my friends sleet away, and argue false hearts, no

marvaile though I bee disquieted, if you flick not to mee i am undone? Robert Fitz Stephens replied, Wee have left behind us our deare friends and our native soyle, wee have fired all our shippes, not upon intent to runne away wee have already in armes ingaged our lives, fall out as fall out may, wee will live and dye together, bee you true to us, wee will not bee false to you : Dermot hereupon gathering his spirits together, got him and his followers to a certaine fastenesse, not farre from Fernes, where hee intrenched and plashed himselfe, being invironed with woods, hils, rockes, bogges and waters, a place to mans feeming inacceffible and invincible, to endure for a while wandring clowds, and threatning stormes of his adversaries, to vanish and bee caried away with waving winds of fortune and unfortunate warres: Whose foresight and ready wit Robert Fitz Stephens highly commended, Immediatly there came a Messenger from Roderic the Monarch unto Robert Fitz Stephens with this message: The Britans may not by the Lawes of Armes, difflay their Banners and Ensignes in forreine possessions, and dispose the lawfull beires of their inheritance, but they are with licence of the Irish to pack home whence they came: It is a blemish for the Brittish nation, injuriously to give aide to a shamefull fact, neither may the lechery of Dermot, be mantled under British cloaks, wherefore depart and for sake him that is for saken of God and man. and here by my messenger receive to defray your charges, and trans. port you to your native foyle. Robert Fitz Stephens answereth; your present I will not accept, faith and troth I have pawned to my friend Dermot, I will not breake : bee for fakes not me, I will not for fake him neither leave him diffressed; you speake of lechery, what is that among martiall men? I heare you have Bastards your selfe, to what end is your embassie? If Roderick give councell, we need it not; if he Prophecie, we credit not his oracle; if he command as a Prince, we obey not his autority; if beethreaten as an enemie, a figge for his Monarchy. The meffenger returned with small welcome, going and comming; Roderic bethought himselfe againe, and sent letters to Dermot, perswading him to be at peace with his country people, and to banish the strangers out of the Land; he rejected his councell and despiseth the messenger : Roderic seeing that his private practises tooke small effe &, put himselfe in armes, affembleth his forces, and delivereth unto them these speeches: You right worthy and valiant defenders of your Country and liberty; Consider with what people and for what sause wee are now to fight and wage battell, the enemy of his owne Country, the tyrant over his owne people, the exile fugitive, behold bee is returned backed with strangers, and purposeth to destroy us and the whole Nation ; bee being an enemy, hath brought in thefeenemies, which have beene ever hatefull unto us all, and are most greedy to have the Soveraignty and Dominion over us all, protesting openly and firmely avouching, that by fatall destiny they are to bee Commanders

over this land. And so farre bath be poured out his venome, that there is no favour, nor mercy to be looked for at his hands. O cruell beaft, (wea more cruell then ever mas beaft; who lately bit with his owne teeth, the nose and lips of the dead: he to satisfie his insatiable malice and bloudy minde, spareth neither man, woman, nor childe: he deserveth well to be based of all, that opposeth himselfe an enemy to all; wherefore my loving and deere country men, be well advised, looke about you, and confider advisedly, how by the like meanes, (I meane civil warres) all Realmes and nations for the most part have beene overthrowne and brought to utter ruine. Iulius Cælar attempted the invalion of Bris taine, was twice foyled, and indured the repulse, but when Androgeus Duke of London fell at variance with the King, to be revenged, lent for Iulius, who thereupon returning, subdued the land. The Britaines being at discord, and hating their vicious King Careticus, the Saxons finding opportunitie to over runne all, fent for Gurmundus the arch-Pirate and terror of the Ocean feas, who lonning forces together, foyled the Britaines, and banished their King: not long after, Hembert aspiring to the Crowne of France, procured the faid Gurmund to his ander behold the end, Gurmund was slaine, Isembert overthrowne, and his whole practife came to nought. Wherefore let us with one minde, like those valiant Frenchmen in our rightfull cause, in the defence of our country, and safeguard of the lives of our wives and children, couragi. ously give the onset upon our enemies. And whiles these strangers are but few in number, let us stoutly iffue out upon them. The fire while it is but in embers and parkles, may easily be covered with ashes, but if is breakeinto flames, it is hard to be quenched. wherefore it is expedient we stoppe beginnings, and prevent sicknesse when it creepes least; when it takes roote, it will hardly becared: wherefore cheere my hearts, wee fight for our country and liberty, let us leave unto our posterity anima mortall fame, let us march on, and lustily assault them, that the overthrow of a few, may be a terrour to many, and that is may be a president unto all forraigne Potentates, never to attempt the like againe.

Dermot Mac Morogh and his men receive intelligence of this march, and the approach of the enemy, and beholding his men, somewhat dismaid, turned him to them with loving countenance: yee men of Leynster, my naturall subjects, of my flesh and bloud, whom loyalty, truth and kindred hath hitherto lincked together; let us live together, and dye together, in the defence of our persons and country, you see how that wicked and ambitious minded Rodericke, the Author of many mischieses, not contented with his owne country and kingdome, seeketh now the soveraignty and dominion over the whole land, the which, I hope, God will not permit. You see his glory, his pride, and audacious attempts, how he listeth up his head, and looketh alost: he trusteth to his multitude, doubt you not but that God is on our side, and the rightfull cause ours, though wee of country

birth, to you Leinster men I speake, bee not so many as they are, neither so well appointed, it forceth not, for victory is not measured by multitude, but by valour and courage, and oftentimes, weeknow, that a few stout and hardy men have soiled troupes of sluggards, dastards and white liverd Souldiers: If you mistrust any defect in your selves, behold a present supply at your back and cloow.

Doe not you fee the fe Worthy Knights , the fe Valiant Warriers the fe Noble gallants, the flowre of Brittaine? their valour in part you have sufficiently tryed, their furniture excelleth, their order and aray is most comely, they have for saken their native soyle, their friends and kindred, and all for our fakes ; will they fly? no, they have burned their Ships, the Land will yeeld them neither saccour nor refuge, neither will the bloody tyrant Roderic shew any mercy; wee are sworne the one to the o. ther, while breath lasteth and life endureth. If the enemy pretend with the sword to chastife us for our sinnes, as it appearesh by their saunde. rous & shamelesse reportszalas, what have you done? God knoweth, your consciences are cleare, your canse honest, to take Armes in defence of your Prince, and Countrey? Why doe they not behold the blemishes, nay the bainous enormities and villanies that raigne among them? Their carrows, their kerne, their theeves, their murders, their sweering. their lying, their drunkenneffe, their whordome and bloody minds who reformeth? The Tyrant Roderic bath murdered his owne naturall brother, hee hath three wives alive, he hath eleven bassards by severall women : O villaine, to behold a mote in our eye, and cannot fee a beame in his owne. If the tyrant make challenge and pretend title to Leinster. because the same hath sometimes beene tributarieto some one King of Connoght; by the same reason also may wee demand and challenge all Connoghe; for our ancestors bave beene sole Governours of both, and Monarchs of all Ireland. The Lawes of all Nations doe permit, and allow to relift and with stand force and injury, with force and strength; Let us be of good courage, wee stand upon a good ground, our seat is na. turally very strong of it selfe, to now by our industry made more defenfive ; feare nothing, quit your selves like men. When Dermot had made an end of his Irish Oration, Robert Fitz Stephens in the Brittish tongue turneth him to the Brittaines. You my companions in martiall affaires, you lusty young gallants that have endured with me many perila, yet still retaine your noble and valiant courage; consider whence mee came, what wee are, and the cause we have in hand; we are lineally descended from Troy, whose same hath filled the whole earth, and now lately some of us out of Normandy, have seated our selves in Brittaine, and have to our mives, children, and kindred of the ancient and noble Brittish race; of the one we cary our valiant and noble mind, of the other wee learned the experience in feates of Armes ; wee are not come his ther as pirats and theeves, to robbe and spoile (as it is well knowne unto you) wee had our native foile to inhabit, wee had our kindred about us,

and the countenance of great persons, wee came after the course of the World as Marshall men (but in an honest cause) to take our adventures. Heere wee are, our friends are with us, our foes are in armes against us, wee are well appointed, the enemy is but a wilde, naked raseall and favage people : feare nothing, our caufe is good; Dermot fought us, we fought not him, bee loveth our nation, and our friends in former times have found friendship in his Countrey, hee is a Prince lately exiled, whose fall is more to be pittled then envied; we are to comfort him. to aide him, and to restore him to his Kingdome. It is more bonorable to make then to be a King, and to restore then to exile: he is a Prince of a bountifull mind, bee bath promised large for us and our heires after us, bee bath in part already most faithfully performed, his yeeres are many, and his daies are but few; after him wee shall enjoic his, and if we overcome the enemy, wee shall possesse all : feare not death; it is but a short delay betweene transitory and eternall life, it is but a short paffage from vaine and temporall delights, to certaine and perpetualijuics, if we conquer here, wee shall inheris here, and purchase unto us immortall fame; if we miffe here, we are fure of a Kingdome in another world. Roderic considering with himselfe, the events of warres how doubtfull and uncertaine they are, wrought all meanes to intreat for peace, being timerous to adventure battaile with strangers, whose force hee mightily feared, and whose puissance and valour being renowned, he was loth to encounter withall; he fent messengers unto Dermot Mac Morogh, promising him that hee and his heires should in peace and quietnesse enjoy all Leinster, and acknowledge him for his chiefe King and Monarch, and to yeeld unto him the service and homage that to that belonged; and that he should deliver him his sonne Cunthurus (Cnothurinus faith Stanyhurft) for pledge and hostage. Andif the peace were truly kept and performed, Roderic promised to give him his daughter in marriage, and in the end when Leinster should bee quitly setled and reduced to the old Irish order, Dermot should drive away the Brittans and strangers, and procure no more into the Land; all this was concluded vpon, and folemnely undertaken by oathes on both sides, yet all was but flat dissimulation. In the nock of this, landeth at Wexford Maurice Fitz Girald, brother to Robers Fuz Stephens by the mothers side, in two ships, having in his company, tenne Knights, thirty horsemen, archers and foot a hundred, whercof Dermor was very glad and mightily encouraged on everie fide . And immediately tooke with him Morice Fitz Girald, and bent his forces towards Dublin, to be revenged on them, for many wrongs, and especially for the death of his father, whom they murthered in their Councell house, as formerly hath beene delivered, and after for more despite buried him with a Dog: They left Robert Fitz Stephens behind bufily imployed in building of a Fort or a strong hold some two miles from Wexford, in British and Irish called the Carricke

ricke. As they drew neere Dublin, they preyed, they spoyled, they burned all before them. Dublin trembled for feare, the townssimen intreated for peace, the which was granted upon the delivery of certaine pledges and hostages:

In the meane while, no small stirre arose betweene Rodericthe Monarch, and Donald, Prince of Limerike for chiefery. Whereupon there arose deadly hatred and martiall warres: Roderic drew all his forces against him; Dermot Mac Moroogh sent to Robert Fitz Stephens, that in all haste he should draw forces to the ayde of Donald Prince of Limirike his sonne in law, which was accordingly affected, where Roderic was foyled, lost his chiefery, and with shame enough returned to his own country. Now Dermot Mac Morogb is puffed up with these prosperous successes, and whereas a while agoe, he would have contented himselfe with Leynster alone, now Connaght and all Ireland seeme little enough unto his aspiring minde. Secretly hee acquainteth Robert Fitz Stephens, and Maurice Fitz Gerald with his purpose, and offereth any of them his daughter and heire with his inheritance after, upon condition, that they should send for supplies of their kindred and country men, to effect his enterprises, they modestly thanked him for his offers, and refused his daughter, for that they were both already married, and withall wished him to write for Richard Strangbow, with whom he had formerly concluded to that effect, unto whom he addresseth his messenger, and directeth his letters in this forme:

Dermot Mac Morogh, Prince of Leinster, to Richard Earle of Chen. flow, the sonne of Earle Gilbert, sendeth greeting. If you doe well confider the time of men and matters, as we doe which are distressed, then would you regard whether we have cause to complaine of men, or to malique and curse the infortunate time. Even as the feely Storkes and Swallowes with their comming, prognosticate the summer season, and with westerly windes are blowne away: we have observed times and seafons fit for your arrivall and transporsation, if your affaires had correspondently accorded unto our expectations. East and West no doubt would have fitted our purpofe, but hitherto being frustrated of your long defired presence and promises, unlesse the most valiant Knights of your country birth, (whose valour and prowesse my penne is not able to paint unto the posterity) had upheld our state and dignity. We beseech you againe and againe, in the league and amitte of Princes, not to use further delayes, our successe hisberto bath beene to our hearts desire. Leynster is our dwine, your comming will inlarge our bounds, the speedier it is the more gratefull; the bustier, the more joyfull, the sooner, the bester welcome. Richard Strangbow was pleased with these letters, glad of the successe of Robert Firz Stephens, and cast with himselfe, how hee might speedily passe for Ireland: Herepaired to King Henry 2. humbly befreching him, either to restore him to such possessions, as by

right of inheritance did belong unto him, or to give him Passe to seek adventures in some forraigne country, and among some strange nation. Staniburst excellently conceited, layeth downe the Kings an-Swer: Henry (miling within himselfe, saith, Loe, whether and where thou wilt goe and wander for me, it shall be lawfull for thee, take Dedalus wings and flye away. Strangbow betweene least and earnest. takes this for a sufficient licence, and makes ready for Ireland, and fends before him, Reimondle Groffe, nephew to Robert Fitz Stephens, and Morice Fitz Gerald, sonne to William Fitz Gerald, the elder brother, which land at Dundorogh, commonly called Dundenold, West of Wexford, with tenne Knights, forty Esquires, and fourescore Archers and foot; whereupon o molagblin ophelin, Lord of the Decies, raised the country, consulted with the townssmen of Waterford, and concluded that it stood them upon with all expedition, to fet upon the strangers; they made ready 2000. men by land, they runne up and downe the shore, they row; their fong was kill, kill, kill, Reimond ftraight upon his arrivall, had fortified himselfe, the Waterfordians march against him in battaile array, the Britaines being but fixfcore and ten, came forth to make good the field against 2000. Reymond perceiving in the skirmish that the enemy over-laid them, retired to his Fort, the Irish perswading themselves at that instant to give the Britaines an utter overthrow, thicke and thinne, with all haste pursued them, and the formost entring at the soote of the last Britaine into the Fort, had his head cloven in two with Resmonds fword, immediately faith Reymond, strike the drumme, follow mee fellow souldiers; the Irish being disordered, and out of battaile array, and discouraged with the death of one man, flie away; then they which in this doubtfull skirmish were like to be vanquished and quite overthrown, became victors, conquerours, & wan the field; they chafed the Waterfordians that were out of order, & at their wits ends, & flue of them, faith Cambrenfis, above 500 persons, and being weary of killing, they cast a great number of those whom they had taken prifoners, headlong from the rocks, into the sea. In this service, Sir William Ferand, a Knight, deserved singular commendations, and was the onely man of all the Britaines, saith Staniburst that was flaine: Thus fel the pride and rash attempt of Waterford, thus decayed their strength and force, and thus became the ruine and overthrow of that Citie, which, as lit bred a great hope and consolation to the Britaines, fo was it the cause of a great desperation and terrour to the enemy. They tooke 70. of the best men in Waterford prisoners, they enter into confultation, and call a martiall court, what was to be done with them. Reymond full of pittie and compassion, delivereth his opinion; you my noble and valiant companions, and fellow fouldiers, for the increale of whose honour, vertue and fortune, wee presently seeme to contend, let us consider what is best to bee done with these our prisoners,

prisoners and captives: for my part I doe nor thinke it good, nor yet allow that any favour or curtefie should be at al shewed to the enemy, but understand you, these are no enemies now, but men; no rebels, but fuch as be vanquished and cleane overthrowne, and standing in defence of their country by evill fortune and hard deftiny, are fubdued; their adventures were honest, and their attempts commendable, and therefore they are not to be reputed for theeves, factious persons, traitors, nor yet murtherers; they are now brought to that diffresse and case, that rather mercy for example sake is to bee shewed, then cruelty to the increase of their milery to be ministred ! furely our anceftors in times past, (although indeed it bee very hard to be done) were wont when fortune favoured, to temper their loofe mindes, and qualific their unruly affections, with some one discommoditie or other: wherefore let mercy and pitty, which is in man most commendable, worke fo in us, that we that now have overcome others, may fubdue our owne mindes, and conquer our owne affections: For modefly, moderation, and differetion, are wont to stay hasty motions, and to stoppe the course of rash devices. O how commendable and honourable is it to a Noble man, that in his greatest triumph and glory, he counteth it for a sufficient revenge, that hee can revenge, and be wreaked! Inline Cafar, whole conquests were such his victory so great, and his triumphs to many, that the whole world was noyfed therewith, he had not fo many friends who reloyced for the fame, but he had many more enemies that maligned and ennied his succesfes, not onely in flanderous words, and evill reports, but many also fecretly conspired, devised and practifed his death and defirection, And yet he was so full of pitty, mercy, and compassion, that he never commanded nor willed any to bee put to death for the fame, faving onely one Domitius, whom he had of meere clementy for his lewd. nesse before pardoned, for his wickednesse released, and for his treachery acquirred. And thus as his pitty did much increase his honour, to did it nothing hinder his victories. On how beattly then and impions is that cruelty, wherein victory is not loyned with pitty! for it is the part of a right Noble and Valiant Conquerous to count them enemies, that doe wage the battaile, contend and fight for the yietory, but fuch as be conquered, taken prifoliers, and kept in bonds and captivitie, to take and repute them for men, that hereby fortifude and force may diminish the battell, and end the quarrell, as also humanitie may increase love, and make peace. It is therefore a great commendation, and more praise worthy to a noble man, in mercy to be bountcous, then in victory to be cruell. For the one onely lycihin the course of fortune, but the other invertue. And as it had been a great increase of our victory, and an augmentation of honour, if our enerdies had beene flaine in the field, and overthrowne in the Bartaile, forthey being now taken and laved, as it were men returned from

rebels to the common society, and sellowship of men. If wee now should kill them, it will bee to our great shame, dishonor and reproach for ever. And for as much as by the killing and destroying of them, wee shall bee never the neerer to have the command of the country, and never sooner to be Lords of the Land) and yet the ransoming of them very good for the maintenance of the Souldiers, the good same of us, and the advancement of honour) wee must need thinke that it is better to ransome them, then cruely to kill them; for as it is requisite, that a Souldier in the field fighting in armes, should then thrist for the blood of his enemy, triethe force of his sword, and valiantly stand to his tackle for victory; so when the fight is ended, the warres ceased, and the armour laid downe, and all strongnesse of hostility set apart, then in a Noble man must humanity take place, pitty and commiseration must be shewed, and all kindaesse of curtesse must be extended.

With this they were all drawen to some mildnesse and remorse, and ready to shew favour in hope of friendship againe. Henry de Monte Marisco, who came thither to salute Reimond, stands vp in oppolition, bent to blood and villany, in whom there was neither manhood in battell abroad, nor mercy in confulration at home, and spake as followeth: Reimond hath very exquisitly discoursed of pitty and mercy in fet speeches, uttering his eloquence hath shewed his mind, and declared his opinion, perswading and inducing us to beleeve that a strange land were to be conquered sooner by mercy and fond pittie, then by fire and fword; but I pray you, can there bee & worse way then to hold that course. Did Iulius Casar or Alexander of Macedonia, by such meanes or in such order conquer the whole world; did the Nations from out of all places runne to submit themselves under their command, and imperie in respect of their pitty and mercy, and not rather compelled to to doe for feare and perforce? For people whilst they are yet proud and rebellious, all pitty and mercy fet apart, are by all manner of meanes and wayes to bee fubdued: but when they are once brought under subjection and bondage, & ready to ferve and obey, then they are with all curtefic to be intreated and kindly dealt withall, so that the state of the Government be in fafety and void of dager, herein & in this point, must pitty be used; but in the other severity or rather cruelty is more necessary: here elemency is to be shewed, but in the other rigour without favour is to be ministred. Reimond perswadeth that mercy is to bee extended as upon people already subdued and subjected, or as though the enemies were so few and of so small a number, as against whom no valiant service nor chivalry can be exploited; and yet they are ready to joine with us, whereby our force may bee increased, and our power augmented: but alas, doe not we see, how that the whole notion and people of Ireland are fully bent and (not without cause) a together conspired against us? surely me thinks Reimond is contrary to him-

selfe, for why? his coming hither was not to dispute of pitty. norto reason of mercy, but to conquer the nation to subdue the people: Oh what an example of impious pitty were it then, to neglect our owne fafety, and to have remorfe and compassion upon others distresses ! moreover wee have here in the field and in armouramore enemies then friends, we are in the middle of perils and dangers, our enemies being round about us in every corner: and shall wee thinke this to be nothing, but that we must bee also in the like distresse and danger among our selves: Round about us our enemics are infinit. and within our selves, some there be which practise and work our de-Aruction: And if it should happen that our Captives and Prisoners should escape, and breake loose out of their bonds, which are but wery weake and slender, no doubt they would forthwith take our own armour and weapons against us; well, well, the Mouse's in the cubbord, the Fire is in the lappe, and the Serpentis in the bosome, the enemie is at hand ready to oppresse his adversarie, and the guest is in place with small curtesie to requite his host. If our enemies, when they come in good array, and well appointed to give the onfet, and to wage battel against us, if they should happen to have the victories &the vpperhand over us, would they deale in pitty and mercy? would they grant us our lives? would they put us to ranfome? Tulh, what needs many words, when the deeds are apparent; our victory is to bee used, that the destruction of these few may bee a terror to many, whereby all others, and this wild and rebellious nation may take example, and bewar how they meddle and encounter with us of two things we are to make choice of one, for either we must valiantly and couragiously stand to performe what we have taken in hand, and all fond pitty fet aside, boldly and stoutly to overthrowe and wanquish this rebellious and stubborne people, or (if we shall after the mind and opinion of Resmond altogether be pittiful and full of mercy) we must hoise up our sailes, and returne home, leaving both, the Country, and all that we have already gotten, to this miscrable and wretched people. When Herveie had made an end of his speech: they put it to voyces, and the voyces went on Herveis fide; whereupon the Captaines (as men condemned) were brought to the Rockes and after their Limbs were broken, they were cast head long into the Seas, and drowned every mothers sonne.

Vpon the 23: of Angust, being Saint Bartholomenes Eeve, and yeare aforesaid to mit. Anno 1170: Richard, surnamed Stranghow Earle of Strigulia (whose original and of spring in another place her, after (it God permit) shall be elaid downe) landed in the Haven of Waterford, where Dermas Mac Morogh, Robert Fire Stephens, and Mabrice Fire Gerauld, and Reimond le Grosse met him, and joyned their forces together? Reimond le Grosse was madegenerall of the field, they tooke small rest after their arrivals for upon Bartholomen.

Lla

day being tuesday, with Banners displayed, in good aray they assaulted the City by water and by land, the townefmen manfully defended themselves, and gave them two repulses: Reimend having compassed the towne, espied without adjoyning unto the towne wall (where now standeth a strong Bulwarke) an old Cabban, propped with old timber, and entred into the old wall, the which proppes they fawed asunder, then downe falleth the cabban, and withall a great part of the wall: the breach thus made, the Brittains doe enter, and in the ftreets kill man, woman and child, and there left them in heapes: In Reignald tower, upon the wall of the tower they found one Reignald (I take it the tower beareth the name of him) and Omalaghlin Ophelim, Lord of the Decies, whose lives Dermot Mac Merogh laved: they found there other two, whom they put to the sword, they rifled the houses, they ransacked the City, they made havock of all, lastly they left there a strong ward. Then according to precedent covenants, Dermot gave his daughter Eva in marriage to Richard Strangbow, and after folemnity thereof, they all marched with their forces towards Dublin: For Dermot bare them a deadly hatred, and hitherto winked at them, untill further oportunity ferved, for the villany and cruelty they shewed to his father, the townsmen of Dublin foreseeing his revenging mind, procured to their aid as many as they could throughout the land, they trenched, they plashed in paces, ftreets and narrow places, all the wayes along to Waterford, to hinder their march. Dermet was not ignorant theireof, whereupon he led the army from our the common and beaten way, through the Mountaines of Glandelogh, and came fafe to the walles of Dublin. There the Citizens fent messengers to intreat for peace, and amongst others, Laurence O Toole Archishop of Dublin: while they parled without for peace, Sir Remond le groffe, and Sir Miles Cogan scaled the wals, for, faith Cambrenfis, they were more defirous to fight under Mars in the field, then in the Senate to fit with Iupiter in Councell; they made a breach, they enter the Citie, they put all to the fword: in the meane while, Haffalphus the Commander of the City, with a great many of the better fort, with their Riches and Iewels, escaped and fled by the Sea to the North Hands.

VVhen the Earle had spent a few daies in the towne, he left Miles Cogan Governour therof, and by the persuasion of Dermot Mat Moregh, he drew his forces into Meth to be avenged of Ororicke, whom some call Morice, some Mordiob, who was the cause of his exile, and whose wise Dermot had formerly taken away. The Earle no sooner entred the Countrey, but the Army was given whosly to the spoiles, they robbed, they spoiled, they burned, and wasted all before them: Roderic King of Conoght and Monarch of Ireland, seeing his neighbours house set one fire, thought it high time to looke to his owner, and wrotte to Dermot Mass Morogh, contrary to the order of Peace,

formerly concluded, thou hast procured and allured a swarme and multitude of strangers, to invade this land, all the while thou didst containe thy selfe within compasse of thine owne territories, we winked at thy proceedings, but forasmuch as now thou not caring for thy oath, nor regarding the safety of thy hostages, hast so fondly and fals passed thy bounds, I require thee that thou wouldest retire, and withdraw these excourses and invodes of strangers, or else, to begin, I will not faile to cut off thy sonnes head, and send it to thee with speed.

Dermot despised the messenger, and would scarce vouchsafe to reade his letter; upon the messengers returne, Roderic was mad, and in his rage, caused his pledges head, the sonne of Dermot Mac Mo. rogh to be cut off. In this troublesome time, the Primate of Armagh called the Prelates and Clergic to a Synod; at Armagh, affembled a Councell; where, according to their wisedomes, they endeavoured to finde out the cause of these miseries that fell upon the land, they inquired not whether the Bishops had bought their Bishoprickes for money, whether their Parsons did pray, whether their Ministers were lettered; what whoredome, symony, or lechery, with other enormities, raigned among the Clergie, but simply, like themselves, posted over all to the Laytic, and concluded (insipienter) that the inst plague fell upon the people, for merchandizing of the English nation; for then they bought and fold of the English birth, such as they found, and made them bondslaves; so they served Saint Patricke, calledthe Apostle of Ireland, who was a bondman sixe yeeres in Ireland, but Patricke preached Christ, and the English nation reformed the land. Here the facred letters reconcile all, the flone which the builders refused, is become the corner stone, and why for the answer followeth, it is the Lords doing, and it is marvellows in our eyes. But I may not so leave my Prelates, they synodically decreed as followeth: that all the English men within the land, what soever they were, should bee manumifed; a worshipfull piece of worke, and no thanke to them all, for the English (word was then ready to cut off the Irish heads: this reformation was but a sweeping of a house with a Foxes tayle.

The prosperous successes of Earle Richard, surnamed Stranghow, were no sooner effected, but same flyed abroad, and flatterers carried it to Henry the seconds eares, and made him jealous, as Kings commonly are, that a subject as Richard was, should not onely in the right of his wife, content nimselse with Leinster, but most presumptuously without licence, as the King alledged, attempt the conquest of a kingdome, where he formerly by grant of Adrian, was interested. Whereupon the King in his icalous rage, indeavouring to stop the Springs and Water-courses, proclaimed: We, Henry Gre. Forbid and inhibit, that from henceforth no shippe from any place of our dominates, shall traffique or passe into treland; and likewise charge that all our sabjects upon their dutie of allegiance, which are there commo-

TI3

ant.

rant, shall returne from thence into England before Easter next following, upon paine of forfeiture of all their lands, and the persons so desobeging to be banished our land, and excled for ever 1919 (1919)

The Earle seeing himselfe in this distresse, being in perill to lose his friends, and to want his necessaries out of his native soile, by entercourse of Merchants, calleth a Councell, where it was agreed and concluded, that Sir Reimond Legrosse should bee sent over to pacific the King (who then was in Aquitaine) with these letters. Most paissant Prince, and my dread Soveraigne, I came into this land with your Majesties leave and savour (as farre as I remember) to aide your servant Dermot Mac Morogh; what I have wonne, was with the sword, what is given me, I give you, I am yours, life and living at your command.

Vpon the receit of these letters, therefell of all sides, three disasters, the King was mightily incensed against Earle Richard, and therefore delayed Sir Reimond Legrosse, and gave him no answer, secondly the death of Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury troubled him exceedingly, and to helpe the readers memory with the time, it was as the rime delivereth,

Englis (manglish di prochestatione trata di katanga trataga kalaba kalitica

Annus millenus, centenus septuagenus en 19th ne cu il trouga se Primus erat, primas quo ruit ense Thomas guod versi rocks re-

The third was that Dermot Mac Morogh a most bountifull Prince, died and was buried at Fernes.

Anno 1171. Hastulpus, late Governour of Dublin (of whom I have formerly spoken) returneth, and entreth the haven of Dublin, with threefcore faile to his aide, of Ilanders, Norweglans, and Esterlings, they forthwith landed, and unshipped themselves, and had to their Captaine, faith Cambrenfis, one John Wood, fome call him mad John, for the prankes he playd, for wood and mad beare one lenfe. Staniburft calleth him Pewood, Douling, Heywood. They were all mighty men of warre, and well appointed after the Danish manner, being harnessed with good Brigandines, jackes and shirts of maile their Shields, Bucklers, and Targets, were round, and coloured red, and bound about with iron, and as they seemed in armes, so were they no lesse in mindes; iron-strong and mighty; they marched in battaile array towards the East gate of the Cities Miles Cogan the Governour, with a faire company (yet but a handfull to the number of the enemy, fallied forth, and gave them barraile, where both fides loft manya tall man. Miles Cogan feeing himfelfe overlaid with the furious rage and multitude of his adversaries, gave backe, and retired into the towner by this time. Richard Cogan his brother had lecretly issued out with a good company, at the South posterne gate, compasfed the Danes, and being at the foot of the rereward, made mighty

cry and shout, whereat the Danes were amazed, and the two brethren had the killing of them before and behinde. The Danes brake their array, threw their Armes away, fled towards their ships; where many also for haste were drowned. In this skirmish, foling where many also for haste were drowned. In this skirmish, foling was slaine, and Hastulphus taken prisoner, and put to his tansome. The prodigalitie of this Hastulphus was such, that he contented not slimingly with life, but braved and bragged of his exploits, in the heating of Miles Cogan, and therewithall delivered, that that attempt was nothing, but a taste or proofe of the Irish valour, and shortly, they should see another manner of forces assault them, what statempt was not cogan is it not enough for him to have his life, but he must the chief with further rebellion; goe, take him, and cut off his brad. And thus the blabbe of his tongue, turned to his consustion.

Shortly after, the Irish and country birth, lying aloofe, wayting for all opportunities, and understanding of some linkindehesse and displeasure conceived by King Henry the second, against Earle Richard, and in that quarrell generally against all the Britaines and inwaders of Ireland; they put their heads together, they plot, they draw their draughts and devices, to lay fiege to recover the Citie of Dublin, and the chiefest instrument was Laurence O Toole, Archbishop of Dublin, who wrote unto Roderic, King of Connaght, & unto Gorred, alias Godfrey, King of Man, and to all the Princes of Ireland, that it would pleafe them (some in regard of neighbourhood, othersome in regard of naturall affection unto their native foile and diffrested country men of Irish birth) put to their helping hand, loving their forces together, lay siege to the Citle of Dublin by sea and by land, relieve their brethren, rid them from the Britaines hands, and restore them to their former liberty. The Bilhop for the good opinion that was held of his learning, gravitie, and fanctine, prevailed, infomuch, that Gorred, King of Man, came into the harbour of Dublin, with thirty faile. Roderic the Monarch and forces of Ireland came by land, and incamped within light of the towne. VVithin the towne, were Eatle Richard Strangbow, Maurice Fitz Gerald, Reimond Legroffe, lately arrived from out of England, Miles Cogan, Richard Cogan, with other worthy men and Citizens, to the number of thirty thouland fighting men As they were prepared for battaile, (as commonly one miletiefe falleth in the necke of another) Donald, the base some of Dermot Mar Meroch, came in post to the Earle, and delivered how that Robert Flez Stephens in his Fort of Garreck by Wexford, was befreged with three thousand men of VVexford and Kinfele, by the conduct of Donald, Prince of Limeric, some in law to Deemot Mac Moragh, who before time in his extremity, and in the wartes betweene Him and Roderic the Monarch, for chiefery, (at the request of Dermet Mac Morogb, was relieved by Robert Fitz Stephens, and to aided, that he foiled his enemy; and thus good is recompenced with evill. In

this perplexitie and doubtfull danger, Maurice Fitz Gerald full of courage, turneth him to the Earle, and the martiall men in these words: you most valiant men, wee came not into this land, neither were we procured hither to be idle, or to live deliciously, but to try fortune, and to feeke adventures; wee flood fometime upon the top of the wheele, and the game went of our fide, now mee thinkes fortune wheeles about, let us not be difinaid, for that which is low now. will be up againe, and so we must tarry and take our time; such is the mutability among the sonnes of men, the fickle and uncertaine course of humane causes, so that prosperitie and adversitie, enterchangeably doe follow the one after the other. After day, commeth the night, and when the night is passed, the day dawneth againe; the sunne rifeth, and spreads his beames over the face of the earth, holdeth his course to his fall, passeth the night season, and riseth againe; we who before this time have made great triumphs, and had the wings of forsune to flye withall, and are now clowded and inclosed by our enemies on every side, our victuals are scant, the King our Soveraigne Lord frowneth upon us, we are barred of release by sea and by land, our friends cannot helpe us, our enemies are ready to devoure us: plucke up your hearts, if God be with us, we care not who is against us; but alas my brother Fitz Stephens, whose valiantnesse, and noble enterprise brake the yee, and made way for us into this Iland, is now shut up in a weake hold, and feeble place, with wife and children, too weake and flender to keepe out to great a force. O trayterous Donald of Limiric, O trecherous and halfe-hearted people of Kensele and Wexford! peace is war, trust is trechery, and truth is falshood among them: why then doe we tarry, why doe we linger? is there any hope of reliefe from our native foile? no, no, the matter is now otherwise, and we our selves are presently in a worse case, for as our nation at this present is odious and hatefull unto the Irish men, so are we also mis-led with some disgrace in our country, wherefore in so much as fortune favoureth the forward and couragious, and discourageth the dastard and faint hearted, while our wits are fresh, while our bodies are able, while wee are all on heart, let us give the on-fetthough we are not so many in number as they are, our courage and valour is knowne to exceed theirs, they are but naked wretches, and unarmed people. Reimond Legrosse immediately breaketh out in these speeches. My Vncle Maurice hath gravely delivered his minde, he hath pithily adviced us, and prudently councelled us; this is no time to fit in councell, to spend time in speeches, or to use delayes, the danger is at hand, the enemy is at the doore, wee are compassed by sea and by land, there is no flying, we must fight it out; our provision is spent, England dares releeve us no more, Ireland defieth us, the Kings Maicstie (I know) dispraiseth not our activities, and yet graceth not our successes he discommendeth not our valour, yet envieth

all our glory, though in words he reporteth well of our fervice, yet in deeds fecretly hindereth the course thereof; lastly, he feareth that which we meant not, and doubteth of that which we thinke not of; wherefore all doubts and delaies fet apart, let us, as becometh men of our fore, try the course of fortune, and proue the force of the effemy; let that appeare unto them which is knowne unto us; of what race we came, and of what stock wee are discended. Camber the first King of Cambria our native Country, was our Ancestor, and the forme of that Noble Brates, the first and sole Menarch of Brittaine, whole Ancestor was Troos, the founder of that most antient City of Troy, who descended from Dardanis the son of Impiter, from whom is derived unto us, not onely the flemme of antient Nobility, but allo a certaine natural inclination of valiant minds , and couragious fromachs refolutely to follow all exploits of prowelle and chivalry; and shall we now like sluggarts, degenerate from to noble a race, and like a fort of Cowards, be afraid of these naked and unarmed Raskals, in whom there is no valour, by reason of knowledge or experience in Armes? Shall fuch a rable of favages plane us up within the wals of little Dublin! When in times past all the Princes in Greece kept warres the space of ten yeeres and odde months, against out Ancecestors in the samous City of Troy; and could not prevaile against them, untill they used treasons, and practised treachefies which bred unto them a more infamous victory, then a glorious Triumph ? Let it never be faid, that the blood of the Trojans shall be stained in our putillanimity, and receive reproach by our previff dallardy. Fortune, though the be pourtraied to be blind, as ever void of right judgement, and to fland upon a rolling flone, as being alwaies flitting and unconstant, yet for the most part, thee helpeth such as be of couragious minds, & valiant Romachs; you wil fay, we are but a few, and the enemy infinit in number; what then? Victory confilteth not in multirudes, neither conquest in numbers: Did not Thomiris the Scylbian Queene, with hundreds, overthrow cyrus with thousands, and tooke him and flew him? Did not Lasmedes the Spartant encounter (having but foure thouland Souldiers) with mighty xernes, who brought five hundred thouland to the field, and overthrew him? Bld not Alexander with a few Macedonians, ouerthrew Davisis, the great Monarch of Perfit ! Did not he take him, his wife, and daughters prisoners, and make a Conquell of Persia? Have not wee in our persons (all praise be given to God, the giver of Victory) even you, right honorable Earle at Waterford, my uncle Fuz 374phene at Wexford, my felfe at Dondorogh with a few given many thefoile; what remains, fifth time thall fooner faile then matter want? let is like men liew relolute minds in this fervice. And to conclude, my mind then and opinionis, that we doe iffue out upon them as lecicily and as luddenly as we may, and give the onler.

121

And for so much as Roderic of Conoght, is the generall of the field, in whom lyeth the chiefest force, and on whom all the rest doe chiefly depend, it shall be best to begin with him, and if we can give him the overthrow, all the rest will slie, and we shall obtaine a glorious victorie; but if we shall tall into their hands and be slaine, yet shall we leave an honorable report and an immortall fame to our posteritie. He had no fooner ended his speech, but every man armed himselfe to goe forth, and give the onfet. They divided the Army in three batgailes, and although at the first, they contended for the Vanguard, vet quickly they were accorded and marched forward. Reimond le Groffe resolutely given, with twenty Knights, and souldiers well appointed, tooke the Vanguard. Miles Cogan with thirty Knights, and many a worthy warriour, kept the maine battaile. Earle Strangbow, and Maurice Fitz Gerald, with fourty Knights, Gentlemen and common fouldiers, took the Rereward, in every ward wereplaced some of the Citizens, and other some with martiall men, left at home for the guard and fafety of the City: early in the morning when the enemy was unarmed & out of order, little thinking that lo lew within durst attempt to give the onfet to fo many without, they fell upon them, killed without mercy, and therere was so forward, that they came with the Vanguard by wheeling about to the flaughter of the enemie. Roderic all this while trusting to his troupes and multitude of people, feared nothing, he took his case and pleasure, and was bathing himself; but when the larum was up, & that he saw his men on every fide fell to the ground, never tarried, called for man nor Page to array him, but tooke his mantle and ranne away all naked, and hardly cicaped with life. The Britaines pursued after, and had the killing of them all that day, in the evening they returned into the Citie, not onely with the honour of the field, but rich booties, and praies of vi-Quals, armour and other pillage, as muchas man and beaft could cary: Immediatly, also the rumor hereof, the other Campes were dispersed, namely, Laurence the Archbishop (whom it had beseemed better to have beene at home with his porthouse, then in Campe with rebels) Mathelan Machalem, Gillemehelmocus, Otuetol, Ororic Prince of Meath, Ocarel, alies Ocarvell Prince of Vriell, Machfalin, Ochadefe, with many other great Commanders, where every man shifted for himselfe; of Gotred, alias Godfray King of Man that came by Sea, I find nothing, for upon this disaster he tooke him to the seas the next day, without any further deliberation; Miles Cogan is left to governe Dublin, and the Earle with his Army marched towards VVexford, to raife the fiege at the Carreke to relieve Robert Fitz Stephens as he passed by Odrone, the forces of Leinster, by the conduct of Donole Obrene Prince of Limerik, and Donald Prince Ofery let upon him, and fought a cruell fight, but he went on with the lotte of one man. As he came to the borders of Wexford, certaine mellengers

Doctor Hanmers Chronicle

met and informed him of the mischance that happened to Rober File Stephens, and the firing of the Towne of Wexford adding moreover, that the Wexfordians were fully determined, if the Earle came any further towards them, they would cut off all the heads of Fitz Stephens and all his company, and fend them unto him; whereupon with heavy cheere and forrowfull heart he changed his mind & turned to Waterford. But afore I proceede any further, I am to deliver the manner of the treachery and villany shewed unto Robert Fitz Stephens: Donold of Limric, sonne in Law to Dermot Mac Morogh, while his father lived, he was one that favoured the Brittains, and not without cause; but now forgetting humanity returneth to his vomit, bends his course towards Wexford, and while other states of Ireland by East and by North, with might & maine practifed the rooting out of the Brittains, he flies to the South, and raiseth VVexford, & Kensile to lay fiege to the Carreke, the fort of Robers Fisz Stephens. First they begin with force, and seeing that failed them, they fall to guiles and subtilities under color of peace, pretending nothing but pure love, tender affection and safeguard of his person, and all that were with him; they bring with them two Bilhops, the one of Kildare, the other of Fernes, in their formall moods, with other Religious persons (O damned Prelats) and they had with them the Masse Booke, the hoft, with certaine Reliques : upon these they take corporall oathes, and sweare with great solemnity and protestations as followeth: (For the good will and affection wee beare unto you) whom we have alwaies found a curteous and bountifull Prince, we are to fignifie unto you this much, how that Dublin is taken, the Earle Strangbow, Maurice Fitz Girald, Reimond le Groffe, Miles Cogan, with all the English are put to the sword, and now Roderic the Monarch, with all the power of Conoght and Leinster posteth hither to rase even with the ground, all the Forts, Holds, and Castles, which the Englishmen have, and especially to apprehend you Robert Bit & Stephens, and Willam Not, that were the forerunners into this Land of all this milchiefe; wherefore take this for truth and be well advised what to doe. if they take you there is no mercy; if you will put your selfe with your company and goods into our hands, in the faith of Christianisty we sweare we will safely transport you and yours unto Wales, so shall you not lose so much as a haire of your head; wherefore the great Army being at hand, yeeld, come forth and shippe your selfe for Wals. Robert Fitz Stephens (who would not in this case give credit) yeelded himselfe into their hands, immediatly (more like Icwes then Christians) they strippe them out of all that ever they have, they hang one, they throw another over a rocke, they breake anothers necke, one hath his eyes puld out, another hath his tongue cut, some they scourge with thongs, other some they take, and with fledges breake their Armes and thighes, the greatest kindnesse they

shew is iron and imprisonment, the which Robert Fitz Stephens endured; now leaving these bloody Massacers and themselves, I will turne to Waterford after Earle Strangbow . When Earle Strangbow came to Waterford, he found there Hervie de Monte Marisco newly arrived out of England, with letters from the King, requiring him forthwith to repaire unto his Majesty. Strangbow together with Herwy tooke the first wind and went for England, and found the King at Newham not farre from Glocester, where he was in readinesse with a great Army to saile out into Ireland, whereaster sundry altercations passed betweene them, at length (as they say) by meanes of Herry, the Kings displeasure was appealed, and it was agreed that the Earle should sweare alleageance to the King, and veeld and surender unto him the City of Dublin, with the Cantreds thereunto adjoining, as also such Townes and Forts as were bordering upon the Sea fide, and as for the refidue he should have and reteine to him and his heires, holding the same of the King and his

Stranghom was no sooner knowne to be in England, and Reimond at VVaterford, but Ororic Monoculus, the one eyed Prince of Meath, mustred a great number of Souldiers, and laid stege to the City of Dublin. Miles Cogan the Governour withall his company (while the enemy was carelesse) upon a sudden issued out and fell upon them unawares, and made a great slaughter of them, among whom both Ororic and his sonne were slaine.

In the British Chronicles copied by Owen Cretten out of the Abbies of Conwey in North-wales, and Stratflur in South-wales, I find recorded that when King Henry the 2. made preparation for the conquest of Ireland, Richard Stranghow Earle of Strigale, Marshall of England, being reconciled to the King, had all his Lands in England and Normandy restored unto him againe, and thereupon the King made him Seneschall (Steward, saith he, of Ireland). Then came Rees prince of South-wales, and offred the King to further his Conquest, 300. Horses, 400. Oxen, and for performance of all services gave him 14. pledges, when they were presented the King made choice of 30. principall Horses, gave backe all the rest, confessing himselfe greatly pleasured at his hands.

Anno 1172. upon Saint Lukes day the 18. of Ottober, Henry the

2. the 17. yeere of his raigne, the 41. of his age, entred the Haven
of Waterford so writeth Cambrensis that lived then, and being
landed to the harty joy of the English, and fained welcome of the Irishmen, had by them of Wexford formerly spoken of, Robert Firz
Stephens in irons presented before him, whom the Wexfordians
(herein I commend Staniburss indifferent dealing) rather of malice
& cankard spight, then for just cause, did charge with many hainous
crimes. The king advised y to pacific the rage of surious people, for

for the present time, committed him to prison, whence shortly after, he was with honour and credit, discharged, and advanced to his great preserment.

After that the King had a little rested himselfe, and the messengers scattered themselves with newes over the land, the Princes were amazed, they knew the Kings greatnesse was such, if faire meanes would not, force should constraine them, and therefore in policiere-folved themselves to yeeld allegiance, homage and seastic. Whereupon Dermos Mac Carty, Prince of Corke, began, became tributaric, sware faith, truth, and loyaltie to the King of England And the King thereupon gave the kingdome of Corke to Robert Fitz Stephens and Miles Gogan as hereaster more at large shall appeare.

From Waterford the King raifed his army, and marched towards Lismore, where he tarryed two daies, and from thence he marched to Cashill, not farre from the Shure, and thither came to him, Donald O Bren, Prince of Limric, who submitted himselfe, became tributarie, and swore fealty; whereupon the King as hee had formerly done with Gorke, appointed a Governour for Limric: then also came in Donall, Prince of Offorie, and Omelagblen Ophelin, Lord of the Decies, with all the chieftaines of Mounster, submitting themselves, as others had formerly done, furrendring unto the Kings hands, their territories, and holding them againe at his pleasure. Thence the King returned to Waterford, left there his houshold, and Robert Fitz Barnard, governour of the towne, and marched with his army towards Dublin. In his journey there came unto him of the chiefest commanders of the land, Omathelan, Machelan, Ophelan, O Mac Chelweie, Gille Mac Holemoc, O tuell helly Ocathdheff, O Caraell of Vriell, and Roric the fonne of Monoculus of Meth. But Roderic the Monarch came no neerer then the Shanon, where Hugh de lacy, and William Fitz Aldelme, by the Kings command met him, and hee desiring peace, submitted himselfe, swore allegiance, became tributarie, and did put in (as all others had done) hostages and pledges for the performance of the same. Thus was all (reland, saving Vister, brought in subjection, and every Prince of the other parties, in his owne person, faving Roderic King of Connaght, submitted himselfe: but he subtilly alledged, that he submitted Connaght, but not the command of all Ireland, the which hereferved for the Monarch and his fuccessors: but of this hereafter if God permit.

Christmas drew on, which the King kept at Dublin, where hee feasted all the Princes of the land, and gave them rich and beautifull gifts, they repaired thither out of all parts of the land, and wonderfull it was to the rude people to behold the Majestie of so puissant a Prince, the passing, the sport, and the mirth, and the continual musicke, the masking, mumming, and strange shewes, the gold, the filver, and plate, the precious ornaments, the dainty dishes, surnished

Mm

rieh

with all forts of fish and flesh, the wines, the spices, the delicate and fumptuous banquets, the orderly service, the comely march, and seemly array of all officers: the Gentlemen, the Esquires, the Knights. and Lords in their rich attire (fuch as rugged Mantles and Irish Trooffes were never acquainted withall) the running at Tilte in compleat harneffe, with barb'd horfes, where the staves shivered and flew in folinters, safer to sit, then upon an Irish Pillion that playeth crosse and pile with the rider, the plaine honest people admired and no mervaile: but now to more ferious matters. Henry 2 having thus conquered Ireland (with the envy of the French and forraigne Princes) without one drop of sweat, without drawing of sword, or shedding of one drop of English bloud, (as inbecame his Princely calling) turaned himselfe to reforme the state Ecclesiasticall, and the misdemeamours of holy Church, whereof Cambrensis writeth: In the geere of Christs incarnation 1172. and in the first yeare, when Henry the most Moble King conquered Ireland, Christianus, Bishop of Lismore, and Legate of the Apostolike See, Donatus, Archbishop of Gashill; Laureance Archbishop of Dublin; and Catholicus, Archbishop of Tuemond, with their Suffragans, and fellow Bilhops, Abbots, Priors, Deanes and Archdeacons, and many other Prelates of the Church of Ireland, by the commandment of the King, did affemble themselves. and kept a Synod at Cashill and there debating many things concerning the mealth, estate, and reformation of the Church of Trelund, did prowide remedies for the same. At this Councell, in behalfe of the King. (mhom be bad fent thisber) there were Raffe, Abbot of Buldendy, Raffe, Archdeacon of Landaffe, Nicholas, the Kings Chaplaine, with divers other Clerkes: fundry good features and wholefome lawes were there devifed, which were after subscribed and confirmed by the King him felfe, and under his authority, which were thefe that follow.

Birft, it is decreed that all good and faithfull Christian people throughout Ireland, shall refraine and forbeare to marry with their neere kinsfolkes and coufins, and match with such as lawfully they might dec.

Secondly, that children shall be cate chized without the Church door, and baptized in the Font appointed in the Church for the same pur-

Thirdly, that every Christian doe truely and faithfully pay yeerely, the tithes of his Cattell, Corne, and all other his increase and profits, to she Church or Parish where he is a parishioner.

Fourthly, that all the Church lands and possessions throughous all Treland ball be free from all fecular exactions and impositions, and especially that no Lords, Earles, or Noble men, nor their children nor family shall export or take any cony and livery, cosheries or cuddies, or any other like suftome from thence, forth, in or upon any of the Church land and territories; and likewise that neither they, nor any other perSon, doe thenceforth exact out of the said Church lands, old wicked and detestable customes of cony and livery, the which they were wont to extort upon fach sownes and willages of the Churches, as were necre, and next bordering upon them.

Fiftly, when earlk or composition is made among the lage people, for any murther, that no person of the Clergie, (though he be a kinne to any of the parties) shall contribute any thing thereunto, but at they bee guilsleffe of the murther, le shall they be free from paying of money for

any such release for the same.

Sixtly, that alland every good Christian, being sicke and weake, Shall before the Priest and his neighbours, make his last Will and Testament, and his debts and servants wages being paid, all his moveables to be divided, (if he have any children) into three parts, whereof one part to be to the Children, amother to his Wife, and the third part to be for the performing of his Will; and if so be that bee have no children, then the goods to be divided into two parts, whereof the one moytie to be to his Wife, and the other to the performance of his Will and Testament. And if he have no Wife, but onely Children, then likewife the goods to be divided into two pares, whereof the one to himselfe, and the other to bis childrens

Seventbly, that every Christian dying in the Catholike faith, shall be reverently brought to the Church, and to bee buried, as appertai-

Eighth and lastly, that all the divine Service in the Church of Ireland, shall be kept, used, and observed in the like order and manner as it is in the Church of England; for it is meet and right, that as by Gods providence and appointment, Ireland is become now subject, and under the King of England: fothe same should take from thence, the order, and rule, and manner bom to reforme themselves, and to live in better fort.

Gelasius, Primate of Armagh, was not at this Synod, but at his comming to Dublin, hee concurred with his Collegues, and confirmed the premiles. He was a man of great learning, godly life, and great age, when by reason of age, fight, and strength, and stomacke failed him, as he travailed, he had with him alwaies, a white Cow that gave himmilke, and was his onely suffertation. Gilbert succeeded this Gelasius in that See. The Antiquaries of that time have recorded, that the winter during the Kings abode in Ireland, there role fuch stormes and tempest by sea and by land, that no newes could be heard either out of England or Normandie, neither Shippe or Barke crosse the seas, untill mid-Lent, at what time with an easterly winde, there came out of England, and Aquitaine in France, newes unto the King, how that there came into Normandy in France, two Cardinals from Alexander the third, to wit, Albertus and Theodimus, to enquire of the death of Thomas, Archbilhop of Canterbury: thurs Mm 2

Where-

Whereupon the King sent in post before him, to signific that he was returning with all speede, and that he would conferre with them in Normandie. And leaving Ireland, hee was very forry that time and leifure ferved not to lay things in better order for the flay of the land. And also suspecting the greatnesse of Richard, Earle Strangbow, whom at that time he tooke with him into England, hee appointed to go. vern: Dublin, Hugh de Lacy, to whom he had given in Fee, the territorie of Meth, with twenty Gentlemen to his Guard. Robert Fitz. Stephens, and Morice Fitz Girald, with twenty others to attend their persons. Likewise he lest Governours over Waterford, Humfrey de Bohune, Robert Fitz Bernard, and Hagh de Granns devil with forty persons to their guard. Lastly, hee assigned over Wexford, William Fitz Adelme, Philip de Bruefa, and Philip de Haftings, with twenty to their guard, and tooke shipping at Wexford, Munday in Easter weeke, by fixe a clocke in the morning, with full saile, and landed the same day about noone, at Saint Davids in Wales; so writeth Cambrensis in his vaticinal historie, and in his Itinerarie of Cambria. What time the King was in Ireland, there fell a great plague in his army, which was some cause of his departure from Dublin to Wexford. Cambrensis out of the mouth of the common people, attributeth it unto certaine Archers, cessed at Finglas, that cut downe the trees of the Church-yard, and therefore were they juffly punished, and left their bones there every one; but the British Chronicle, and Holinshed also, more likely to be true, affirmeth that therefell a plague among the Kings fouldiers in Ireland, by reason of the change of the ayre, and victuals, and concourse of people, corrupting the same.

The names of the men of account orderly as they came to the con-

quest of Ireland.

Dermot Mac Morogh, Prince of Leinster, after his returne out of England, wintred at Fernes, expecting the comming of these Conquerours.

Robert Fitz Stephens, the Kings Constable at Abertivy:

David Barry.

Amo 1 170 .

Hervie de Monte Marisco, married Nesta, daughter to Maurice Fitz Girald.

Willin Nott.

Maurice Prendregast.

Meilerss:

Maurice Fitz Girald.

Reimond le Groffe, nephew to Robert Fitz Stephens, married with Basilia, the sister of Earle Strangbow.

William Ferrand.

Richard Strangbow, Earle of Penbroke.

Miles Cogan. 2 brethren & nephewes to Robert Fitz Stephens, Richard Cogan. Sand Maurice Fitz Girald.

Henry

ARRO ELTZ.

Neffa the

danghter

of Rees ap

THYders.

127

Henry 2. King of England, &c. Hugh de Lacy.

William Fitz Adelme.

Raffe Abbot of Bulldewa in Normandie.

Raffe, Archdeacon of Landaff.

Nicholas, the Kings Chaplaine.

Humphrey de Bobune.

Robert Fitz Bernardo

Hagb de Grandevilla.

Philip de Brenfa.

Philip de Hastines.

Silvefter, Giraldus, Barry, Cambrenfis.

John Ridensford

Girald.

Alexander. Sthe two sonnes of Maurice Fitz Girald. William Makrell.

Philip Mercras.

William Morice, Fisz Girald his eldeft fonne, married with Elen.

fifer to Earle Strangbow.

Griffin the fonne of William Fitz Girald the elder brother.

Philip Welfh.

Adam Herford & brethren.

..... Purcell, Lievetenant of the Army, slaine by the Waterfor-

1011

Nich. Walling ford a Prior, afterwards Abbot of Malmesburie.

David welft, nephew to Reimund.

Teffrey Wellh. Mind 5 2117

Reimund of Kantan.

Reimund Fitz Hugh.

Mile of Saint Devid.

Robert Poer Onik Oibert of Fictiford:

Willin Bendeger

Adam of Gernemie.

Hugh Tirell.

John de Cources

Hugh Cantwell.

Redmend Cantimore

Mm a

Whereupon the King sent in post before him, to signific that he was returning with all speede, and that he would conserve with them in Normandie. And leaving Ireland, hee was very forry that time and leisure served not to lay things in better order for the stay of the land. And also suspecting the greatnesse of Richard, Earle Strangbow, whom at that time he tooke with him into England; hee appointed to go. verne Dublin, Hugh de Lacy, to whom he had given in Fee, the territorie of Meth, with twenty Gentlemen to his Guard. Robert Fitz. Stephens, and Morice Fitz Girald, with twenty others to attend their persons. Likewise he lest Governours over Waterford. Humfrer de Bohane, Robert Fitz Bernard, and Hugh de Graunt devil with forty persons to their guard. Lastly, hee assigned over Wexford. William Fitz Adelme, Philip de Bruefa, and Philip de Haftings, with twenty to their guard, and tooke thipping at Wexford, Munday in Easter weeke, by fixe a clocke in the morning, with full saile, and landed the same day about noone, at Saint Davids in Wales; so writeth Cambrensis in his vaticinal historie, and in his Itinerarie of Cambria. What time the King was in Ireland, there fell a great plague in his army, which was some cause of his departure from Dublin to Wexford. Cambrensis out of the mouth of the common people, attributeth it unto certaine Archers, cessed at Finglas, that cut downe the trees of the Church-yard, and therefore were they july punished, and left their bones there every one; but the British Chronicle, and Holinshed also, more likely to be true, affirmeth that there fell a plague among the Kings fouldiers in Ireland, by reason of the change of the ayre, and victuals, and concourse of people, corrupting the same.

The names of the men of account orderly as they came to the con-

quest of Ireland.

Dermot Mac Morogh, Prince of Leinster, after his returne out of England, wintred at Fernes, expecting the comming of these Conaucrours. Robert Fitz Stephens, the Kings Constable at Abertivy:

David Barry.

ANNO I 170.

Hervie de Monte Marisco, married Nesta, daughter to Maurice Fitz Girald.

Willis Nott.

Maurice Prendregaft.

Meilerus:

Maurice Fitz Girald.

Reimond le Grosse, nephew to Robert Fitz Stepbens, married with Basilia, the sister of Earle Strangbow.

· William Perrand:

Richard Strangbow, Earle of Penbroke.

Miles Cogan. 2 brethren & nephewes to Robert Fitz Stephens, Richard Cogan. Sand Maurice Fitz Girald.

Henry

ARNO 1172.

Henry 2. King of England, &c. Hugh de Lacy. William Fitz Adelme. Raffe Abbot of Bulldewa in Normandie. Raffe, Archdeacon of Landaff. Nicholas, the Kings Chaplaine. Humphrey de Bohane. Robert Fitz Bernard Hagh de Grandevilla. Philip de Brensa. rus do "grade") **jezec**. (" Philip de Hastings. Silvefter, Giraldus, Barry, Cambrenfis, Iohn Ridensford. Girald. Alexander. Sthe two lonnes of Maurice Fitz Girald. of Rees up William Makrell. 7 14 W El 85 Philip Mercros. William Morice, Firz Girald his cldeft fonne, married with Elen, fifter to Earle Strangbow. Griffin the fonne of William Pitz Girald the elder brother. Philip Wellh. Adam Herford ? Herford brethren. Purcell, Lievetenant of the Army flaine by the Waterfor Vento, Care for or smit Nich:Wallingford a Prior, afterwards Abbot of Malmesburie. David Wellh, nephew to Reimund. Ieffrey Wellh. Dis Reimand of Kantan. Reimand Fitz Hugh. Mile of Saint David.

Robert Poer Out Osbert of Heriford: Willin Bendeger. Adam of Gernemie. Hugh Tirell. Iohn de Cources Hugh Cansmell. Redmond Cantimore.

201

Mm 3

Allinge

eling of the fands Seen

Alliance of the chiefe Conquerours of Ireland.

THenry the first CHenry CHenry Fitz Henry. Loved King of Eng Stather Meiler Fitz Henry. Zland, father to 2to CRobert Firz Henry. Nefta the CRobert CRafe, daughter Steven Cuftos 2 Fitz 2 Meredecalias Meredith of Rees ap castri Abertivi. (Steve (Milo. Tuyder. Prince of Willia Reimund le Groffe. Southmaried Fitz who married Bafilia. Wales. twice, Girald Strangbowes Sifter. Griffeth. who had if-William married Elfue, len, Sifter to Strang-Geraldof bow, Camb. or by o, Windfor. thers, Alma, Daugh-MAHter of Strangbow. zice. Girald. Fitz Alexander Girald Nefts, married to Hervie de monte Marifco. Milo Or Miles David, Bishop of Saint Davids e Adamoi Geinemic. Angh'T well. John de Convers Reed Contineth Bedevond Campibuore

Man 3

Not

Not long after the Kings departure out of Ireland, Ororic of Meth craved a parlee, with Hughe Delacy , pretending reformation of abuses, and establishing of perfect love and amiry ; bur meant nothing elfe, faving fallhood, treason and villany: the place being appointed (Cambrenfis calleth it Orories Hill, I take it to be the Hill of Taragh) and oathes taken of each fide, with conditions that all armes should be laid aside, and few persons approach to the place, Ororic contrary to the covenants, laid an ambush, that upon a figne or token given by him, they should forth with iffue out of the bushes, and dirches, and effect his traiterous devices. The night before the parly, Griffith the nephew of Robert and Morice, being the sonne of william the elder brother, dreamed in his sleepe, that he saw a great heard of wild hogges, rulh upon Hugh Delacy, and his uncle Mairice, and that one of them being more furious and raging then the reft, had rent them with his tuskes, and tore them in pieces, if he had not with his force rescued them, and killed the Bore : this dreame troubled him exceedingly, wherewith he acquainted his company; and made him and the rest be the more upon their keeping, to prevent treachery: The houre of parlee came, they met and confered roge. ther. Griffith not forgetting his dreame, made choice of feven tall men of his owne kindred, in whom he reposed great trust and confidence, well mounted, with swords, sparthes, and sheilds; raunged the fields (as nighthe Hill as they might) and made fundry Carreers and brave Turnaments, under pretence of recreation and pleasant pallime; yet alwaies casting an eye to the Hill, to see the end of this parice.

Haghe Delacy and Ororic, being somewhat long together, ororic to worke his treason, stept aside, faining to make water, upon the signe he gave his men brought him his horse, and sparth, the which he taking upon his shoulder, ment therewith to have cloven Hughe Delaity his head, if the interpreter had not stept betweene, whose arms was cleane cut off and himselfe wounded to the death.

Marrice Firz Girald and Griffith his nephew rush in the traitours of the one side, the true men of the other are together by the cares; when Ororic the traitor tooke horse to runne away, Griffith with his launce runne him through, and killed him and his horse and three of his men, our off his head and sent it to the King of England this was the end of Orirics treason; and the effect of Griffiths dreame.

Immediatly upon this, Earle Richard (being formerly upon reconcillation made with the King, appointed Senelchall of Ireland) is now feir out of Normandy, by especially commission from the King with Reimondle grasse his brother in Law, in joint commission to governe the whole land, & to be his Lieutenant in Ireland, which he found the Irish faith Camprenss, constant in inconstancy, sirmein

wavering, and faithfull in untruthes . he found emulation betweene Herry and Reimond, and the Army in a mutiny, for lacke of pay at Herveies hands; whereupon he made Reimond Lievetenant of the forces. Reimond immediatly mustred his men, drew them forth to the Decies among the Rebels, where they preyed and spoiled. Secondly, they marched to Lismore, where they did the like. Lastly, along the Sea cost, they goe with their booties, preyes and rich pillage towards Waterford; and finding at Dunganan some thirteene botes out of Waterford and other places, they lade them with their preys, intending by water to faile for Waterford; while they waited for wind, Corke men envyed their successe; prepared 32. Barks. manned and furnished them out out of their Towne, to overthrow Reimond and the English men, and to recover the preyes; they met they fought cruelly: Corke men are overthrowne, and their Captain Gilbert Mac Turger was flainc, by a valiant Knight Philip Welfb, and finally Adam Herford with all his charge, fately arived in Waterford. Reimond was not at this skirmish, but by the way he met with Dermot Mac Corty Prince of Desmond, who with great power was come to the aid of the men of Corke. They likewise skrimished and fell to a cruell fight, where Dermot for looke the field with small credit, and Reimond went to Waterford with fourethousand head of cattell.

Immediatly upon this, newes came out of England unto Reimond, that William Fitz Girald his father, was departed thislife; whereupon he failed to Wales, and Hervey De monte Marife was appointed by the Earle, Lieutenant of the forces. This Hervey to advance his credit, purposed to worke some exploits, and drew out of Dublin the Earle to Cashil; there also after consultation by mandat from the Earle, he appointed the Souldiers that were at Dublin to meet him: When they came as farre as Offorie, Donald Prince of Limirik, having by his espials before hand intelligence thereof, stole upon them in the morning; flue of them foure Knights, whereof o Grame an Irish man was one, and source hundred souldiers; with this the Earle was discouraged, and went to Waterford; the Irish gathered heart and determined to roote out al the Englishmen. So that Rederic Prince of Gonoghttooke this opportunity, passed the Shannan, and wasted all to the walles of Dublin. The Earle being in this perplexity wrote unto Reimond, that was in Wales. As foone as you have read those our letters, make all the haste you can to come away, and bring with you all the belpe and force you can make, and then according to your own will and defire you shall affuredly enjoy that which you long looked for. Immediatly he prepared himselfe, together with his confin Meilerim; thipped 30. young Gentlemen of his own kindred. 102 horsemen, with 200 archers & foot, of the best & chosen men of all Wales, and in 20. Barkes arrived in Waterford: It was at fuch time

as the Waterford men had determined to kill every Englishman within the walles; but when they saw the Barkes come in with flags, and banners displaid, they were associated, and said their course.

Remond entreth the towne of VVexford, letteth all in order, taketh the Earle with him, and all their forces, and went to Wexford; bee had left behinde him one Purcell his Lievetenant to guard therown, whom the Waterfordians flue, and put to the Iword, of English birth, man, woman and childe; but fuch as had fled to Regulate towic, plagued them fore afterwards, drove them to intreate for peace, the which they obtained with hard conditions: And, faith the booke of Houth, the VV aterfordians were ever after the leffe beleeved. For all the troubles in England and Normandie, and these treasons and rebellions in Ireland, the King was not unmindefull to quiet the people, and to chablish himselfe and his heires in the kingdome; first, he lent Emballadors to Rome to cleere himselfe of the death of Tho. mas of Canterbury: secondly, he sent messengers thither concerning the state of Ireland, whereunto Alexander the third, answered as forloweth, Alexander the Bishop, the fermant of the servants of God; to his dearely beloved some, the Noble King of England, greeting grace and Apoltolike benediction. For amuch as things given and granted upon good reason, by our predecessors, are to be well allowed of, ratified and confirmed; wee well confidering and pondering the graunt and priviledge for and concerning the dominion of the land of Ireland to us appertaining, and lately given by Adrian our predecessors we following his steps, doe in like manner confirme statistic and allow the latne, referving and faving to Saint Peter, and to the Church of Rome, the yeerely pension of one penny out of every soule, as well in England, as in Ireland; provided also that the barbarous people of Ireland by your meanes be reformed and recovered from that filthy life, and abhominable conversation; that as in name, so in life and manners they may be Christians; and that as that rude and difordered Church, being by you reformed, the whole nation may also. with the profession of the name, be in acts and deeds, followers of the fame. And faith the booke of Houth, Alexander the third befought the devill to take them all that gainelayed this Kings fitle, Amen. Henry 2. Sent this priviledge to Ireland by Nicholas Walling. ford, a Prior, afterwards Abbot of Malmesbury, and William Fire Adelme. And then being at Waterford, they caused an assembly, and a Synod of the Bishops and Clergie within the land to be gathered to. ether, where, in open audience, this priviledge of Mexander, and the other of Adrian (formerly spoken of) were read, and published, and ratified. Reimond having fetled his affaires at Wexford, marched towards Dublin, the noyle of his comming drave Rederic the rebell of Connaghtaway; he was no fooner come to Dublin, but the newes of the rebellion of Limric followed after, where Donald o bren

having

having sworne faith and fealty unto Henry 2. is now revolted and turned to his vomit. Reymond maketh preparation, mustereth his men, chose out 26. gallants, 200. horsemen, and 200. Archers, and foote, and commeth to Lymeric, where he found the Bridges drawn, the river swift and impassable, the townesmen upon the walls, with all manner of desence for their safeguard. David Wellh, a lufty Gentleman, maketh no more adoe, but putteth spurres to his horse, and with good guiding thereof, croffeth the river, and got to land; immediately he calleth to his company, come, I have found a Ford yet for all that, none would follow, but leffery Welfh, and Meilerine Fig. Henry. Then Reimond turneth him to the army with these words: You worthy men, who of nature are valiant, and whose Prowesse we have well tried, some away, the way heretofore not knowne, and the river hitherto thought not pasable, by our adventures, a foord is now found therein; let we therefore follow him that is gone before, and belpe him being now in distresse; let us not suffer nor see so worthy a Gentleman thus for our common cause and bonour, oppressed, so perish, and to be saft away before our eyes, and in our fight, for want of our help, and by meanes of our dastard cowardize. It is no time to use many words, the shortnesse of the time, the present necessitie of this Noble Gentleman. and the flate of our own bonour, urgeth expedition, and requireth hafte. And even with the words, he put sources to his horse, and adventureth the river, after whom, followed the whole company, every one striving who might be formost. And as God would, they passed all over lafe, saving two souldiers, and one Gwydo a Gentleman: when they had recovered land, the enemy fled, whom they purfued, and in the chase flue a number of them, they entred the towne, got great spoyles and riches, but greater honour and fame. When all was quiet, Reimond left there a strong Garrison, and Miles of Saint Davids, Lievetenant over them, and returned to the borders of Leinster.

Envy hardly fleepeth, but is still devising of mischiese; Hervie de monse Mariso, though now by marriage allyed unto Reymond, yet by malice worketh his overthrow, enuying his honour and prosperous successe, sendeth secret letters to the King against him, which are not worthy to be recorded, being but the finke of secret malice. The King, (as the nature of Princes is to be jealous and suspitious of any greatnesse) is easily brought to credit Hervie, and thereupon sendeth source of his servants to Ireland, Robert Poer, Osbers of Herlotte, or Hereford, William Bendeger, and Adam of Gernemies, two of them to stay with Earle Richard, and the other two to bring Reimond away with them; as Reymond was ready to goe for England, newes came that Donald, Prince of Lymeric had besieged the towne, and that the garrison was greatly distressed, and in want of victuals: the Earle, with Reimond and the source Gentlemen, sell to consultation, what course to hold, they sound in the army a secret mutiny, where the soulders

faid flatly, they would not ferve that way, unleffe Reimond were their Capraine, to be short, it was concluded that Reimond should undertake the fervice; when he had muftered and made choice of horfeand foot, he marched rowards Lymeric: Donald, Prince of Offory, who bore private grudge to Donald of Lymeric, Morego of Keneile, with other Irills men, then ferved and attended upon Remond By the way a Post came, and certified Reimond, that Donald 8f Eynicife Had raised his siege, and was come to the pace of Calhill to give him bartaile; this pace of it felfe was naturally very firong, but by trenching, and hedging, and plathing of trees, it feemed invincible. When of each fide they were ready to joyne battaile, Donald, Prince of Sc. fory being desirous to see his enemy of Lymeric and Thomond o. verthrowne, turneth him to the English then with these words 37bu worthy, Noble, and valiant Conquerours of this land, you are this day valiantly to give the onfet upon your enemies, which if you abe after your old and accustomed manner, no doubt the victory will be your's; for we with our parthes, and you with your swords, will sharpely burfue them, as they (half very hardly escape our hands; & avoid our force, but if it fo fall out (which God forbid) that you be overthrowne, and bovethe worle lide, be you assured that wee will leave you, and turie to our enemies, and take part with them. Wherefore be of good courage. and looke well to your felves, and confider that you are now farre from any Fort or place of refuge, and therefore if you (bould be driven to five. the same will be long and dangerous was you. As for us, ye may nos truft to us, for we determine to flicke to them who hall barbe the dicto. Ty, and will pur fue and be on the jackes of them who shall flye and runne away: and therefore be no longer affured of us, then whilf yee be Conquerours: Meilerius, who had the foreward, being fomewhat hildved and warmed with those words, suddenly like a blatt of winde, entred the Palle, pulled away the builles, brake downe the hedges, the Pioners filled the trenches, and speedily made plaine the way, with no finall flaughter of the enemies, and to they marched without any great perill to Lymeric, where they releaved the army, and fer things in order, and refted a flore time Roderic of Counaght and Donald of Thomond finding themselves weake, craved a paries, it was granted them: Roderic would needs keepe on the water, and Do. salakept the wood. Who would truk them that would trull no other? Reimond chole the midst betweene them both; to be short, a peace was concluded, they both submitted themselves, gave hostages, made fealtie, and swore to be true thenceforth for ever to the King of England, and to his fuccessors after him. This fervice was no sooner performed, but there came messengers to Reimond from Dermot Mac Carly Prince of Defmond, humbly craving his aide, against his eldest son Cormac o Lechan, who was in armes against his natural father: with the advice of his Councell, Reimond granteth aide, lice marcheth

marcheth towards Corke and subdueth the rebell, the sonne dissembleth with the father and clapt him in prison: the father requiteth the sonne with like: he got him in under colour of peace, clapt himin prifon and cut off his head.

And not long after, faith Cambrensis, themen of Corke at a parlee not farre from the Towne, flew their Prince Dermot Mac Carry, and

most of his company.

Anne 1 177. (fo writeth Holinfbed) Henry the 2. held a Parliament at Windsore, where Laurence Archbishop of Dublin was prefent ; as what time Roderic King of Conoght fentthither the Archbishop of Tuam, the Abbot of Saint Brandon, with one Laurence his Chaplen , offring all submission and loyalty. The King willingly heard them, and gladly concluded a Peace at the importunate fuit of his Messengers to avoid further trouble; injoyning Rederic to pay him in token of subjection, a tribute of Cow hides, the Charter of agreement was drawne and subscribed as follow-

Hic est finis & concordia que facta fuit apud Windefore, in Octabis tweene Henry Sancti Michaels, Anno gratia 1175. Inter Deminum Regem Anglia 2.K ng of En. Henricum fecundum; & Rodericum Regem Conacia, per Catholicum gland, and Ro- Tuamensem Archepiscopum & Abbatem C. Sancti Brandani, & Magistrum Laurentium Cancellarium Regis Conacia.

1. Scilicet quod Rex Anglia concedit predicto Roderico Ligio homini suo Regnum Conacia quamdiu ei fideliter servict, vt sit Rex sub eo, paratus ad servitiu suu, sicut bomo suus & ut teneat terra suam, ita bene d'in pace sicut tenuit antequam Dominus Rex. Anglia intraret Hiberniam; reddendo ei tributum : & totam illam terram & habitatores terra habeat sub se, & justicia ut tributum Regi Anglia integre per solvant, & per manum ejus sua jura sibs conservent, & illi qui modo tenent, teneant in pace, quam din mansuerint in sidelitate Regis Anglia, & fideliter & integre persolverint tributum & alia jura Sua qua ci debens, per manum Regis Conacia, salvo in omnibus jure de honore Domini Regis Anglia & suo.

2. Et si quiex cu Regi Anglia, & ci rebelles fuerint, & tributum & alia jara Regis Anglia, per manum ejes solvere neluerint, & a fidelitate Regu Anglia recesserint, iple cos justitiet & amoveat, & fo eos perse justitiare non poterit; Constabularius Regie Anglia & familia sua de terra illa juvabunt cum ad hoc facienaum, quum ab ipso fuerint requifit, & ipfividerint quod necesse fuerit, & propter bunc finem reddet predictus Rest Conacia Domino Regi Anglia tributum singulis annis : scilicet, de singulis decem animalibus, unum corium placabile mercatoribus, tam de tota terra sua quam de aliena.

3. Excepto quod de terru illis quas Dominus Rex Augua resource in dominio (uo, 6 in dominio Baronum suorum nihil se intromittes : Excepto quod de terris illis quas Dominus Rex Anglia retinuit Scilicet Duvelina cum pertinentijs suis, & Midia cum omnibus perti-

nentijs suis, sicus unqua Murchare Wamai Leth Lachlin, eam melius de plenius tenuet, aut aliqui qui eam de co tenuerint. Et excepta Wesefordia cum omnibus pertinentijs suis, scilicet cum tota Lagenia, & excepta Waterf. cum tota terra illa qua est a Waterf.usque ad Dungarvan; ita ut Dangarvan sit cum omnibus pertinentijs suis, infra terram illam.

4. Et si Hibernenses illi qui aufugerint redire voluerint adterram Baronum Regis Anglia, redeant in pace reddendo tributum predietum quod aly readunt, vel faciendo antiqua servitia qua facere solebant pro terris fuis, et boc sit in arbitrio Deminorum suorum, et si aliqui corum redire nolucrint, Domini corum et Rex Conacia accipiat obsides, ad omnibus quos ei Comiste Dominus Rex Anglia ad voluntatem Domini Regis et suam et ipse dabit obsides ad volunt etem Domini Regis Anglia illos vel alios, et ipsi servient Domino de Canibus et Avibus suis singulis annis de present is suis, et nullum omnino de quacunque terra Regis sit, retinebunt contra voluntatem Domini Regis. Hys testibus Richardo Episcopo Wintonia, Gaufrido Episcopo Eliensi, Laur entio Duvelinensi Archepiscopo , Gaufrido , Nicolao , et Rogero Capelanis Regis, Guilelmo Comit. Esex, et aliis multis.

Moreover at that Parliament, the Kinggave an Irishman named Augustine, the Bilhopricke of Waterford, which was then voyd, and fent him unto Ireland, with Laurence the Archbishop of Dublin,

to be confecrated of Donatus Archbishop of Cashill.

Anno 1876. Bertran de Verdon founded the Monastery of Crokisan. As Reimond marcheth towards Leinster, newes came unto him from the Lady Basilia his wife, that Strangbow was dead, the which hee concealed with good countenance; and called a fecret councell of the wifer fort and trustiest friends, how to dispose of the State of the Land, afore the Irish were acquainted therewith: it was agreed upon for that the enemy were many, the forces but few, they should strengthen all their holds upon the Sea cost untill the K. pleafure were further knowne, and withdraw the midland garrisons to supply and compleat the same. And among others they thought good to take the garrison out of Lymerik and deliver the Towne to the charge of Donald Obrien of Thomond Prince of Lymericke; he being sent for, came in poast, understanding Reimonds pleasure, was the gladdest man that might bee, and undertooke the charge, Viz. to keepe the Towne to the Kingsuse, and at his pleasure to redeliver it, as also in the meane time to keepe the peace: this he undertooke with Corporall eathes, and folemne vowes; and thereupon delivered hostages. But the Englishmen were no sooner over the one end of the Bridge, but Donald broke the other end, and fet fire in the foure quarters of the Towne, faying there shall no English race rest here any longer: This they beheld with their eyes, to their no small gricfe of mind. Cambrenfis inveyeth against this Donald Obrien calling him traitour, wicked, impudent, perfidious, perjured and what

not? This was in Anno one thousand, one hundred, seventy seven. Earle Strangbow left behinde, one daughter of tender yeeres, and lveth buried in the Church of the bleffed Trinity in Dublin, over against the Pulpit, in the body of the Church, whose exequies, Laurence O Toole, Archbishop of Dublin did solemnize with great reverence; whereupon the King fent into Ireland, William Fitz Adelme to be his Lievetenant, with the allowance of twenty Gentlemen of his houshold, and joyned with him in commission, Iohn de Courcy, with the allowance of tenne men to attend his person. Robert Fitz Stephens, and Miles Cogan, who had nobly served him in his wars two yeers, with the allowance of twenty men to attend their persons: at which time, faith Holinshed, the Irish men paid the King a tribute of twelve pence yeerely for every house, or else for every yoke of Ox-

en, (alias plow) which they had of their owne.

Richard, surnamed Strangbow, had to his father, Gilbert, likewise furnamed Strangbom, for his valour & strength; this Gilbert was E. of Ogye in Normandie, & Lord of Totenha, Alverdiston, & Wolaston in England, so created by Henry 1. William the son of Osbert, a Norman, E. of Ogie in Normandie, had iffue, Richard, E. of Ogie, this Richard had iffue Walter & Gilbert, aforefaid father to Richard E. Strang. bow; William Fit ? Osbert came into England in the ayde of William the Conquerour. And as far as I can learn, Walter was the first Earle of Penbroke (the Britaines call it Penbraich More, the head of an arme of the sea) whence both the Countie, and the most noble Earldome have their denominations. Arnulph de monte Gomerik, the yonger sonne of Roger de montegemerik, that was by William the Conquerour created Earle of Arundell and Shrewsbury, builded the Castle of Penbroke, where Henry the seventh was borne, William the Conquerour gave him Divet and Cardigan, hee was Earle of Ogie, and the second Earle of Penbroke, and married the daughter (by the mediation of Girald de Windsore, Constable of his Castle) of Morogb, King of Leinster in Ireland. Gilbert, surnamed Strangbow, was created by King Stephen, the third Earle of Penbroke, hee was Earle of Ogie in Normandie, Lord of Totenham, Alverdiston, Wolaston, and Cardigan, and in England succeeded Arnulph. Henry the first made him Earle of Strigule, now called Chepflow, and gave him Cardigan; this Gilbert builded Castrogie, alias Castrum Ogie, in Gwent, and the Castle of Stratmirike.

Richard, furnamed Strangbow, succeeded his father Gilbert: his file as I take it is thus. Richard, furnamed Strangbow, Lord of Torenham, Alverdiston, Wolaston, and Cardigan; in England, Earle of Penbroke, Earle of Strigule, alias Domonius de Chepstow in England, Earle of Ogie in Normandie, Earle of Leicester, Earle Marshall of England, Vicegerent of Normandie, Lord Lievetenant of Ireland, and Prince of Leinster in the right of Eva his wife, sole heire of Dermos Mac Morogh, King of Leinster.

This Richard had iffue by his first wife, a sonne, a fine youth, and a gallant stripling, who following his father with some charge in bartaile array, as he passed by Idrone in Leinster, to relieve Robert Fitz Stephens in Wexford, upon the fight and cry of the Irish men, when his father was in cruell fight, gave backe with his company, to the great discouragement of the host, yet the Earle got the victory, and commanded with the teares in his cheekes, that his sonne should be cut in the middle with a sword for his cowardize in battaile; he was buried in the Church of the bleffed Trinitie in Dublin, where now his father resteth by his side, and caused the cause of his death for an Epitaph to be fet over him.

Nate ingrate mihi pugnanti terga dedisti, Now mibi, sed gentily regno quoque terga dedisti.

My sonne unkinde didst flye the field, the father fighting hard, Nor me, nor English birth didst weigh, nor kingdome didst regard.

How the sonne pleaded with his father for the place of service, and how the father answered, Staniburft hath many circumstances hereof, and delivered, that his owne father in his fury, and in the face of the enemy, cut him off, and marvaileth that Cambrenfis would conceale it, and in the end taketh it as a matter of truth, both by the testimony of the Tombe in Christ Church, as also by the industry of Sir Henry Sidney, Knight, a great favourer of Antiquities, in preferving the same, to the knowledge of the posterity.

Richard Earle Strangbow by his second wife Eva, the daughter of Dermot Mac Morogh, had iffue, one daughter, Ifabell, whom Richard the first gave in marriage to William Maxfield, Lord Maxfield, Earle Marshall of England, of whom (God willing) I shall have occasion

to speake further, when'I come to his time.

The same yeere that Strangbow dyed, viz: 1177. (so Holinsbed writeth) lebn de Courcy entred Vifter, discomfitted the Irish, and wanne the Citic of Dune, where the body of Saint Patricke, Saint Colme, and Saint Brigide the Virgin rests, whom Courcy calleth tria jocalia Hibernia, the three jewels of Ireland; At the winning of Dune, Roderic King of Connaght, and Monarch of Ireland, (at feverall times before Iworne to the King) raised a mighty army against Courcy, where Roderic was overthrowne, and the Bishop of Dune taken prisoner among other rebels; the which Bishop, at the request of Cardinall Vinian (then present) was set at liberty. This Cardinall, faith mine Author, intitled Santti Stephani de monte Celio, was fent from Alexander 3. and comming into England without licence, was pardoned by Henry 2. and permitted to goe into Scotland, and the north parts, where his commission directed him; when he had ended

his businesse in Scotland, he passed over into Man, where he held his Christmas with Gorred, King of Man, and after the Epiphanie, sailed from thence into Ireland, and came thither (faith Newbrigienfis) the same time that the English men invaded the country, and was entereained by Rederic, and the Bishop of Dune, and others, with great reverence.

The Irish men aske councell of Vivian the Legate, what in that case he thought best to be done, whether they should fight, or yeeld unto the English nation; he gave counsell, forgetting what Adrian a and Alexander 3. had formerly granted and faid, fight in defence of your country. This Legate (craftily preventing all milhaps) took the Church of Dune for his lanctuary, and had in readinesse the Popes commission, and the King of Englands Passe unto the Captaines of Ircland for his fase conduct: From thence he went to Dublin, called the Prelates, held a councell, and filled his bagges with the finnes of the people, the English Captaines understanding of it, gave him in charge, either to depart the land, or to goe to the warres, and serve for pay with them, and no longer to receive money for nought.

In the booke of Howth it is further alledged, how that this Legate in his Synodat Dublin (whether it were to curry favour with the English men, and to colour his other pranckes, it forceth not greatly) shewed and published openly the King of Englands right to Ireland, with the Popes grant and confirmation, and accurfed all those that

gainefaid the fame.

Now to the true history of Sir Iohn de Courcy, as worthy a Knight for martiall prowesse, as ever trode upon Irish ground, whom Cambrensis lightly overskipped, partly upon private grudge, for that Sir Ichn de Courey allowed him not for Vicar generall in Ireland, and Secretary to the State, partly in favour of Sir Hugh Delacy, who maligned and envied the honor and renowne, and prosperous successes of Courcy, lastly for feare of King Iohn, into whose displeasure Courcy fell, through the falle acculation of Lacy and his faction, yet the certainty of his exploits hath beene preserved, and in Latine committed to Paper by a Fryer in the North, the which booke Oneil brought to Asmagh, and was translated into English by Dowdall, Primate there, Anno 1551. He was by father a Norman, by mother a Cambrian or Britaine, and married the daughter of Gotred, King of Man; he was a Gentleman descended, as it seemeth by his coate, of an antient house, of whom the Irish men hold that Merlin prophecied, where he wrote: A white Knight fitting on a white horfe, bearing birds in his shield, shall be the first which with force of Armes, shall enter and subdue Vister.

He served King Henry the second in all his warres, and in France he met with a worthy Knight, Sir Americus Trifferam, who married Courcy his fifter, and whether it was derived of the Ladies name,

or for that they were married on Saint Laurence day, ever after hee and his posterity after him, was called Sir Amoricus de Sancto Laurentio, whence the Noble house of Homib is lineally discended, wherof hereafter in another placemore at large. These two Knights became sworne brethren in the Church of our Lady at Roane; where folemnely they vowed to serve together, to live and dye together and equally to devide betweene them what they wanne by the (word, or should be given them in regard of their service: Thus they continued in France, Anjou, Normandy, and England; and when Sir Iohn de Courcy was joyned in commission with William Burgh Fitz Adelme and others : Sir Amoricus de Sancte Laurentia, accompanied him into Ireland, where Coursy receaved a graunt of the King, by Patent for him and his heires or affignes after him, to enjoy in that Land all that he could Conquer with the fword, referving to the King homage and fealty; they landed at Houth and there fought a cruell fight by the fide of a Bridge, where Sir Iohn de Courcy being fickly, taried abord the shippe. Sir Americus being Chistaine and Generall of the field by land, behaved himselfe most worthily; many were flaine on both fides, but Sir Amoricus got the victory, with the lose of seven of his owne blood, sonnes, uncles and nephewes, wherupon for his fingular valour and good fervice there performed, that Lordship was allotted unto him for his part of the conquest, with other things which Sir John de Courcy gave him. Immediatly, Sir Iohn de Courcy, Sir Amoricus de Saint Laurence, and Sir Roger Hoer, so well appointed as then contented them, directed their course towards the North; the principall cause that moved them (besides their valour) was the hard government of William Fitz Adelme, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, whose conditions Cambrensis who then lived and was converfant with him, delivereth in this fort. He was covetous, proud, malicious, envious, a favorite of wine and women and good to none, but to his back and belly : and by his backe he understood his kindred, and by his belly he ment his children, for he opposed himselfe, most enviously against the Garraldins, Fitz Stephens and Barries, the first most valiant Conquerors of the Land, and against their posterity,&c.

While Courcy is on his way, give me leave, gentle Reader, to eternise the Memoriall of Maurice Fitz Gerald: As he was of birth and parentage nobly and worshiply discended, so was he in condition and for martiall prowesse every way renowned. Cambressis his kinfman commendeth him greatly and no leffe then he deferved. He left this world to the great griefe of all the true harts in Ireland, and lieth buried in the Monastery of grey Friers without the wales of Wexford, his formes whom William Fitz Adelme maligned, builded the Caftle of Fernes. In his time, (faith Cambrenfis) at Wirlo, where Maurice Fitz Girald dwelled, there was a Monster, begotten MARINO,

Nn 2

by a wicked man of that nation upon a Cow, a vice (faith he) at that time too common among that nation. It had the body of a man, but all the hinder parts of an oxe, from the anckles of the legges, and the wrifts of the armes, he had the hoofes of an oxe; his head was all bald faving a few small and thinne haires; his eyes, great, round, and blacke like an Oxe; nose he had none, but two holes; speake hee could not, but onely bellow like a Cow: this Monster did daily refort to the house of Maurice Fitz Girald about dinner time, and such meat as was given him, he tooke it in his hoofes, and put it to his mouth, and so fed himselse. Diviners in those daies construed this of the government of Fitz Adelme, the which in their opinion was monstrous, but

there I leave, and returne to Courcy. Iohn de Courcy after foure dayes, some miles come to Daud without resistance, and unlooked for, contrary to all mens expectation, the which in a word hath beene spoken of before: strange it is to see what a sudden feare will worke. Dunlenus, (whom I take to be O Dowell) no base nor meane Commander of that place, fled away, lest armes, men and munition behinde, happy was hee (in his owne opinion) that he had escaped the hands, he wist not of what enemy; the grumpets founded, the armour ratled, the women clapt their hands, the children cryed, the townesmen to goe, the leaders entred, the souldiers ryfled, the towneupon a sodaine was ransacked, doores, windowes, cupboards, chefts flew open, the army after long march, and fore travaile, being in great want and weakenesse, had their housing, firing, dyet, and fare of the best, bedding, cloathing, gold, filver, plate, and rich booties, without checke or controllement of any, and respite for certaine daies to breath, rest, and recreate themselves. In the necke of this out of Scotland, the winde blew one Pinianus a Cardinall (spoken of before) which tooke upon him to intreate a peace betweene the two nations, but could not prevaile. After eight dayes, Roderic the Monarch, and O Donnell, King of Duune, had mustred their men, gathered forces, gotten great ayde, and prepared an hoast of tenne thousand fighting men, and came to beliege the City. Sir John de Courcy, having but seven hundred, thought best not to bee cooped within, nor caged like a Bird, prepared to give them battaile abroad, marched forth, and ordered his army as followeth; he divided his men into three companies, the horsemen being seven score, were fet in a winge on the left hand, under the leading of Sir Americus de Saint Laurantie, every horseman having a bowman behinde him. On the right hand, Sir Roger Poer, who had married Sir Amoricus Necce, led the foot company, close by a bogge side, in the midft came Sir Iohn de Courcy, with his company; the way was narrow where they should encounter, and the English men had the vantage of a great hedge and ditch of the one hand, and a bogge on sheother to gall the enemies horses, where no horse could enter

within them. Odonell feeing the Horsmen to be but a few, commanded his foot and maine battaile to make a stand untill hee fent them word to march on, meaning to make short worke with the Horsemen, and so to breake the necke of the strength of the battaile; the Horsemen joyne battaile, the Archers gall Odonels horses with arrowes, whom the English launce slew not, the horse unsadled, and when the English quiver was empty, the archer with his sword haught the horses and dispatched the men that were unhorsed and cast to the ground. O donels horsemen being somewhat discomfitted retired, Sir Americus cals upon Courcy and Peer, to bring on the foote, who metting with the foote and maine battaile of the Irish(that expected newes from Odenell) fought most fiercely: No instrument of Warre could be heard, the cry of both fides pierced the clouds, the gald horfes grievously complained, the maimed fouldiers groueling on the ground and gasping for breath gave pittifull groanes; the Irish flang darts and stones, the English shoote arrowes, the Irish with sparthes and galloglasseas, the English with speares and swords encounter on bothsides most valiantly; the splints of broke staves fly about their cates, and eyes, sparkles of fire from their swords and targets, and the blowes upon their helmets yeelded the found of hammers working upon anviles, both fides deserved honor and singular commendations; the slaughter was great on both sides, and continued long; many of the English were slaine, and a number of the Irish were left alive, they determined to make an end of the English that day; the rere of the Irish march couragiously, the English had the bog of the one fide, and the ditch of the other, and the entrance to them was ful of heads, legs, and armes, dead corps, armor and horfes dead, and lying a long striving with death, that they could not approch, whereupon they broke their battaile aray, dispersed themselves, and from the paces entred the plaines. Sir Amoria watching his opportunity, called leffrey Montgomery his fifters sonne and standard bearer, and faid: Have not we quitted our felves like men this day, and shall wee dishonour she field so much as to suffer youder company to escape our hands ; come, advance your Standard, let us wheele about and give the on-fet : Montgomery replied, it feemes ftrange unso mee, to fee your stomach passe your strength, we have wonne bonour advisedly, and shall we now rashly lose it? of seven score, we have but forty horses less, the rest are wounded sired and not fit for service : then faid Amorich give me the Standard, I will beare is my felfes, if that be your pleasure (faith Mountgomery) you shall not beareafter charge me with comardife, under this Standard bave I got bonour, and under this Standard (if God fo so please) I will dye. With this they wheeled about and overtooke the foot of the Irilla, being loden with armes, and wearied with fight, with their launces they strooke them to the ground, they gave the on-fet a fresh upon the horsemen which were about 200, and had รอดเซียดเวล

Connor O Laghlin to their leader, who retreated in battaile array, reas dy to answer the fight. Sir Amoricus in that skirmish was twice vinhorsed, and by his men lift up againe, afterwards in a filthy foord he was unhorsed againe, and his horse slaine under him: whereupon some of his troope lighted, stood very stoutly by him, tooke weapons out of the dead mens hands that lay along the way, & kept the Foord from horse and man, untill Sir Iohn de Courcy came to the rescue, at which time many of the Irish were slaine, and the rest fled a way: thus in the end God gave the victory unto the English men, after the losse of many a brave man, and especially Lyonell Saint Laurence, nephew to Amoricus, whose death was greatly lamented. When they had buried their dead, and gathered their armes, they returned to Dune.

The Midsummer following, Courcy fought the second battaile nigh the walles of Dune (faith Staniburs) and overthrew fifteene thousand men in Vister. And faith the booke of Houth, after that field, Vifter men had fmall stomacke to give any onser upon the English men: yet I finde the field to have beene bloudy of both sides, and that Sir Amoricus was fore wounded, laid under a hedge, eating hony fuckles for his reliefe, where he left much bloud, and was carried away betweene foure men; his wounds were so many and so dangerous, that no Physitian or Surgeon could promise life the space of nine dayes, yet in the end, recovered. Next unto him was his sonne Sir Nicholas Saint Laurence, a most valiant Knight so fore wounded in nine severall places, that he was once left for dead, but at length re-

covered, to the great comfort of his friends.

The third battaile that Sir Iohn de Courcy fought, was in Ferng, a gainst eleaven thousand Irish men: the occasion was thus, Cource had builded many Castles throughout Vister, and especially in Fern, where Mac Mahon dwelled; this Mac Mahon with folemne protestations vowed to become a true and faithfull fubicat, gave Courty many gifts, and made him his Goship, which is a league of amitte highly effecmed in Ireland. Whereupon Courcy gave him two Caffles with their demeanes to hold of him. Within one moneth after, this Mac Mahon returning to his vomit, brake downe the Castles, and made them even with the ground. Sir tohn de Courcy fent unto him to know the cause that moved him to fall to this villahie: his answer was, that he promised not to hold stones of him, but the land, and that it was contrary to his nature, to couch himselfe within cold stones, the woods being so nigh, where he might better warme himfelfe, with other flender and fcornefull answers. Courcy to be revenged of him, faw no better course then to prey his country, mustred his men, entred the land, and swept all the cattell before him. The prey was so great, that it could not be driven, unlesse it were devided into three parts, and to that end, this company in like fort was proportioned

portioned betweene the foremost of the voward, and the last of the rereward, there was three miles distance; the paces were narrow, the way miry and boggy, with thicke bushes on either side, the Irish being (as I said before) eleven thousand in number, stood upon all advantages, had their espials upon them, divided themselves likewise, and stept in betweene every of the English companies, and upon a fudden, made fuch a cry, and gave fuch a shour, that the woods rang thereof, and the Gowes ranne like divels upon the drivers, and overthrew horse and man, so that there were more slaine and trode under foot in the mire and dirt, of the English men, by the Cowes, then by the sword of the rebels. Vpon this cry, all the Cowes were lost, and the men fell to blowes, where the Irith being acquainted with every blinde way, made better shift then the English. Courcy and his brother America, with such as were alive, hastened out of the woods, and came to a Plaine, where they viewed each other some quarter of a mile distant. Sir Amoric turned backe, and cast up his eyes, and saw Sir Roger Poer that had married his Necce, about a sevenight before, pulled and halled by the Irish, and carried away prisoner; follow me, faith he unto his company, I will rescue him, or I will dye on the place; he suddenly comming upon their heeles, fer upon them, and carried away Sir Roger Poer, with that, the Irish gave such a shout, that all the rest of their company that were dispersed and scattered among the bulhes, gathered themselves together to that place, to anfwer the cry, and stept betweene Sir Amoric and Sir Iohn Courcy, to that with great perill of their lives, and losse of many men, they came together to that place, when they met, they bewailed their losses, and being environed with bogges and marishes, they for sook their horses, and fell to kill them, and thifted for themselves; the Irish most eagerly pursued them, and at length, one William Lawyard overtooke Courcy, hee with his company turned their faces, fought a cruell fight, wherein (faith mine Author) there were flaine of the Irish men, fixe score. After this skirmish, followed Arte boy, with three hundred, and fesupon Courcy, who flue of the Irish, nine score: last of all, Mac Mohon, the ground of all this mischiefe, came blowing, and set upon Courcy, with whom the base sonne of Sir Amoricas encountred, flue him, and fourescore of his men, and drove the rest to flyes the day being thus spent, the night made an end of that battaile; as the night fell, Sir Iohn de Courcy by good hap, lighted upon an old Fore of his owne, moted or trenched about, where there was a good watch kept, he being glad of them, and they of him, camped there with his forces that night, and the enemy within halfe a mile of them, as it appeared by the great fires they made after their travaile. Sir Amarie Saint Laurance after a short napor slumber, tookea few with him, went to espie the enemies campe, and made a speedie returne, he prefied upon his brother Courcy and the campe, to wake them, and

delivered unto them these speeches: I have sound abroad, and spared you in your heavie sleepe, I viewed the enemies campe, whom I take to be 4000. strong, and that by the scope of their cabbins; wee are but 500. fighting men, all wearied with fore fight, long travaile, and somewhat discouraged with hard forsume, not fit to make any great enterprize, or to verforme any worthy exploit nay a worse matter, there are among ses such as have deadly wounds, but the dead sleep suppresset their complaints, and further, our men watch without sufficient release, and the enemy bath his fill every way; our case is desperate, if the enemy set upon us to morrow, we are not able to withstand him, wee shall be saine every mothers sonne; wherefore I thinke best that we now set upon them that are now feating and fleeping, voyd of all feare of us, whom in their opinion, they hold for men quite overthrowne, and never able to make ahead againe, and that we leave some of our lickemen here to ward, and take some of the fresh men with w. When hee had ended his speech, there was silence for a certaine space, wherein one looked upon the other. Then Sir Iohn Courcy spake, I looked all this while for some of these young gallants, and your fellow souldiers to deliver their courage; but one thing further, Sir Amoric, where are their horses beflowed? he answereth, your white horse, and my blacke gelding, I havecunningly conveyed away, and the rest I can point you to with my finger. Then faith Sir Iohn Courcy, this is mine advice : Let two men ride these two horses, and gather their horses together, and orderly in each fide drive them upon the enemy, all wee in armes will comeafter, and suddrnly give the short upon them in their slee pes, and lerve them with their horses, as they served us with our kines Every man liked well of this course, and when they came to the place, they had the killing of them at their owne defire. There the English came, victualled, apparrelled, armed, and horsed themselves, never better in their lives. Of 5000. Irish, there escaped not above 200. which ranne so fast, (saith my Author) that a horse could not hold them. Of the English, the day before, 400. men were missing, but in that mornings worke, onely two. Lastly, Sir Iohn Courcy, with some hearts case, returned to his old Fort, where hee had camped that night, rested there a while, and sent to Dublin and elsewhere among his friends, for supplies of men and other necessarie provisions. There are some out of the schoole of envy, with grace, to disgrace Courcy, (whom I have in part touched before) that report the flory otherwife, which deliver not wherein he was to be honoured, but wherein he was foyled, fortuna de la guerra, that hee was driven with eleven persons in armes, to travaile a foot some 30: miles, for the space of two dayes, the enemy still pursuing, (the which they lay not downe) all fasting without any reliefe, untill hee came to an old Castle of his owne, which savoureth not altogether of truth, but forwards with the history.

The fourth battaile that Sir John Courty fought was in Vriell, for this cause: Courcy had sent certaine of his servants into England, for victuals, munition, and divers necessaries; the ship was by foule weather driven into a creick in Vriell, cald Torshead; O Hanlan with others being acquainted with all circumstances, bord the ship, put men and mariners to the sword, and make a prize and havocke of all: Courcy hearing of this, gathered his forces together; draweth towards the Nury to come into Vriell to be revenged of them for this injury; by the way he was given to understand, that all the Irish of those parts were in armes prepared for him in their defence, to justifie their doings, and that they had camped by South of Dundalke, and by North of the river Dondoygon. Courcy having marched to a place within a mile and a halfe of the Irish campe, made a stand, cald his brother Amoric, Sir Roger Poer, with others, and consulted what course was best to be held. Sir Roger Poer being full of courage, begins: I thinkebest to hold still with us the favour of Fortune; they are many, we are butfew, the longer we behold them, the worfe wee shall like them; the souldiers would be set a worke, and the more we linger, the more doubts and buzzes will enter his braine; for often wee see, that the fight maketh, and the fight marreth.

Next, Sir Amorio delivereth his opinion: we came not hither to make hasty worke, but advisedly to performe service; true it is, as you have delivered, they are manie we are but few in comparison of their number; afore we give battaile, there are 3. things (as I take it) requisite to be considered, the cause wherefore we fight, the number of both sides, that they be somewhat equally matched, and the place where both joyne battaile together. I would not have any ofmy speeches drawn to discourage or dismay any valiat mind. To the first, our parentage is knowne, we are no base people, our valour is tryed, our enemy hath the proofe thereof; we come not to steale, but to be revenged of the theeves that murthered our men, & robbed us of our necessary provision. Secondly, where we find our company small, and our side weake, and the ground not fitting us for any advantage, where force cannot further, let policie take place, my advice is that a begger or a Frier shall goe from us to the Irish campe, and informe them, that Sir Hugh Delacy came yesternight with a great force, to Drogheda, and that he faw two miles off a great army of horse and foot, somewhat westerly of him, which he supposeth to bee the English Army, that marched all night from Tradaftowards Dundalke; in the meane while, my fonne Nico: with twenty choice horsemen, together with our lackies and horseboies, for the greater shew upon our hackneis and garrans, shall wheele Westwards on the right hand, that it may concurre with the Fryers tale, and give us a figne what we shall doe, and we will march after to see the event; when the enemy hath discried us, we shall perceive by his stirring what he meanes to doe; if they turne face to us and offer fight, our foot shall recouer Dondalke afore theirs, and with our horses wee will so handle the matter, that we shall sustaine no great losse: if they fly and take the river, the sea comes in, we shall overrake them afore halfe passe over. All were well pleased with his device, and followed the direction. Nico. Saint Laurence with his company, wheeles before, Sir Iohn de Courcy a loofe followeth after, Sir Roger Poer takes the rereward: the enemy having discried them takes the river : Sir Nico. gave the figne, whereupon the English Army give a great shout and follows eth their heeles; the Irish breake their araie, they tumble one upon another in the water: the cariage drowns some, the sea and the swift. nesse of the tyde take others away; such as would not venter the water, were flaine by the English; Othanlan and his company that had passed the water, seeing the slaughter of his men, could not come to the rescues, by reason of the salt water : the Englishmen having quitted that place, were directed by the Fryer to a foord on the left hand, where they passed over, and pursued the rest: The Horsemen overtooke the Foot of the Irish, and skirmished with them, untill Sir John de Courcy came by that time; the sea likewise had stopped the Irish from flying, at a great water, a mile from the Lurgan on the Southfide of Dundalk. The Irish seeing themselves in this strait, turne their faces, choose rather to dye with the sword like men, then to be drowned in the seas like beasts. There were in that place, some 6000. Irish, and about 1000. English, there was no advantage of ground, it booted not to fly on any fide; the coward must in that case try himselfe a man, the fight was fore, no mercy but dead blowes : The foot of the English drew backe, Sir Iobn de Courcy their leader, was left in the midft of his enemies with a two handed fword, washing and lashing on both sides, like a Lion among sheepe (saith my Author) Nicolas posteth to his father Amoric, that was in chase of ths scattred horsemen of the Irish, and cried, alas father, mineuncle Sir John is left alone in the midst of his enemies, and the foot have forsaken him; with that Sir Amoric lighted, killed his horse and said, here my sonne take charge of these horsemen, and I will lead on the foot company, to the rescue of my brother Courcy; come on fellow fouldiers faith he, let us live and dye together. He gave the on-fet upon the foot of the Irish, rescued Sir Iohn Courcy that was fore wounded, and with cruell fight in manner out of breath; with the fight of him, the fouldiers take hare and drive the Irish to retreit; the flaughter on both sides was great, few of the Irish and fewer of the English were left alive: The Irish got them to the Fewes, and the English to Dundalke; but who got the best there is no boast

Not long after, Sir Iohn de Cearcy went into England, where the King

King in regard of his good service, made him Lord of Conoght and Earle of Vlster; upon his returne (saith Staniburst) which was in the Canicular daies, he fought at the Bridge of Ivora a cruell battaile, and prostrated his enemies, with great honour; and for that I find litle written thereof, I thought good thus lightly to passe it over, as others before me have done: After this he builded many Cassles in Vlster, made bridges, mended high wayes, repaired Churches, and governed the Country in great peace, untill the dayes of King Iohn, where I shall have further cause to discourse of him.

Amids these tumules in the North, Miles Cogan bestirred himselse, in the VVest; he passed the Shannon into Conoght with \$40. men, where (saith mine Author) never Englishman entred before, whereupon the Conoght men, drove before them, all their cattle into the fastnesses, carried with the as much as they could, fired the rest, with their Townes, Villages, Houses and Cottages. Mile marched as far as Tuam, where he rested 8. dayes, and finding man and beast fled, and the Country barren of victualls, hereturned towards the Shannon, and by the way met with Roderic the Monarch, which lay in ambush with three Companies waiting his comming: At their meeting, they skirmished a long while, and sought a cruell fight, where the enemy lost many, and Mile but three men, then hee passed the riever and came safely to Dublin.

Anno William Fitz Adelme, the Kings Lievtenant is called into England: Hee was a man that did no honour to the King, neither good to the Country, whom every good man in his life time detected, and all Irish Chronicles after his death have defamed. In his roome the King appointed Hugh Delacy Deputy of Ireland, and joyned in Commission with him Robert Poer Seneschal of Wexford and Waterford.

Not long after, the King sent into Ireland Miles Cogan and Robert Fitz Stephens with others, and gave them (in regard of their service) all South Mounster, to wit the Kingdome of Corke in Fee for ever, to be equally divided between them, except the City of Corke, and one Cantred thereunto adjoyning; also he gave unto Philippe de Bruse all North Mounster, to wit the Kingdome of Lymerick. After they had pacified Dermot Mac Carty, Prince of Desmond, quieted the Country, and divided their territories, they conducted Philippe de Bruse to Lymerick to take possession of the Kings graunt given him in those parts.

As they came to the walles of Lymerick, the Citizens of spight in sight of them all; to the end that no Englishman should rooft there, set the Town on sire. Philippe de Bruse was therewith al discouraged, and his Company, in so much that when Robert Fitz Stephens and Miles Gogan, offred to adventure their lives in the recovery of the Kingdome of Lymerik, with all their aide and assistance; he refused

 \mathbf{O} o

it, and returned with them to Corke, esteeming it farre better to lose Lymric, and with fafetie to dwell among his lovers and friends, then to lose life and kingdome by dwelling among such Iewes, as will fire

their owne houses, and cut all English throats.

In a while after, Miles Cogan, and Raffe the sonne of Robert Fitz Stephens, who had lately married Miles daughter, went towards Lifmore to parke with Waterford men, and determined that night to lodge with one Mae Tyrid, who had folemnly invited them. As they waited in the field, expecting the comming of the Waterfordians, this Mac Tyrid unawares stealing upon them, most traiterously slue them, and five of their company, whereupon the whole country was in uproare, infomuch that Dermot Mac Carty, and all the Irish in those parts, together with Mac Tyrid, that most perfidious traitor, were in armes, determining thenceforth to be no longer the Kings loyall subjects; when they had gathered their forces together, they laid siege to Corke, meaning to cut off Robert Fitz Stophens, and all the English men there. Robert Fitz Stephens being distressed in Corke, fearing the open enemy without, and mikrustring the secret enemy within, fent post to Wexford to his nephew Reimondle Grosse, praying him to come to his aide. Reimand forthwith with twenty knights, and one hundred foot and bowmen, entred the Lee, landed at Corke, encountred with the enemies, killed some, drove other to flye, and compelled the rest to submit themselves, and sue for peace.

When the King understood of this, he sent Riebard Cogan, brother unto Miles, to supply his brothers roome in the kingdome of Corke, a man no way inferiour to his brother for valour and martiall prowesse, in his companie came Philip Barry, and Girald Barry his brother, (otherwise called Silvefter Giralden Cambrenfis, the famous learned man) nephewes of Robert Fitz Stephens, with a jolly troupe of horse and foot, chosen and picked men. Robert Eitz Stephens, and Richard Cogan enjoyed this kingdome of Corke peaceably for certaine yeeres, and in processe of time, for want of heires male of them, it came to two daughters, the one of them was married to Robert de Carem, the other to Patricke de Courcy, and they in right of their wives, enjoyed the same during their lives, and after them, their heires, untill fuch time as by a division growne (as I take it in England) betweene the two houses of Yorke and Lancaster, the Irishmen expelled them, and recovered the country unto themselves. Anno 1178. The Monasterie, Beata Maria Rosea wallis, called Roseles, Was founded. Yet others thinke it was in Anno 1189. I may not forget Harvey de moste Marisco, (of whom often mention is made before) who after many spitefull parts, treacheries and false accusations exhibited by him unto the Kingagainst most noble servitors, became a Monke: the man was fore troubled in conscience, and in his course he made the common faying true (desperatio facit Monachum.) Hee

had founded (faith Felcon) the Monastery of our blessed Lady, de Portu Donbrodihi, he gaue unto the Monasterie Saint Trinitatis of Canterbury, his territories & advousons along the sea coast, between Waterford and Wexford, and there cloystred himselfe; I would (faith Cambrensis) he had changed his conditions with his habit.

The same yeere (saith Holinshed) there came from Pope Alexander 3. into England, two Cardinals, Alberto desuma, and Petro de Sancta Agatha, whose commission was to summon the Bishops of England, Ireland, Scotland, with the Isles, and Normandie, to the generall Councell of Lateran in Rome: after they had obtained licence to passe through his dominions, the King swore them upon the holy Evangelist, that in their Legateship they should not attempt any thing that might be hurtfull to the King or his dominions, and that upon their returne, they should visite him homewards: whereupon out of Ireland there went thither, Laurence, Archbishop of Dublin, and Catholicus, Archbishop of Tuam, with some other five or fixe Irish Bishops, whom the King likewise swore, that they should

not procure any damage to his Realmes and dominions.

The Realme of Ireland at this time was fingular well governed by Hugh de Lacy, a good man, and a wife Magistrate, who for the good of the land and the people, established many good orders : he made Bridges, and builded Townes, Castles, and Forts, throughout Leinster, as Sir Iohn de Courcy did in VIster in his time; the Priest kept his Church, the Souldier his Garrison, and the Plow-man followed his Plough, yet cankred envy quieted not her selse, practised mischiese against him, so that he was charged before the King, to attempt the Crowne of Ireland, and make himselse absolute Lord of the land, and that he had married the King of Connaghts daughter, (saith Holin-(hed) contrary to the Kings pleasure. The King immediately (as Princes are jealous of great men) called him into England, appointed governours, 10hn Constable, and Richard Peche. This Lacy behaved himselfe so discreetly and dutifully in England, that he elected himselse of all suspition, that the King was resolved of his truth and side. lity, and sent him backe againe into Ireland, with further credit then formerly he had done, and that within three moneths, and gave him the absolute command and Lievetenantship of the land, and joyned as affistant unto him, Robers Salisbury, calling home the former go.

It was not long, but he wasupon malitious occasion, the second time fent for into England, and one Philip of Worcester, (Cambrensi is mine Author) a valiant souldier, a bountifull and a liberall man, with a most brave troupe of horse and soot, arrived in Ireland, with command to fend over Hugh de Lacy, and he to remaine there as Governour of the land, untill John his sonne came over. Staniburst is of opinion, that he went over into England, and cleering himselfe, spee-

dily returned againe, which cannot well fand with the course of the history; for when Philip of Worcester tookeupon him the governement, Lacy hastened the building and finishing of the Castle of Derwath (where of my penne immediately shall make report) and there ended his dayes. And now to Philip of Worcester, and his companion Hugh Tirell, Cambrensis, and Stanihurst especially, write most bitter of them: of Philip, how that first of all he resumed and seized unto the Kings use, the lands of Ocathesie, and divers other parcels which Hugh de Lacy had fold away, and these he appointed to serve for the Kings provision, and the Governours diet. And after the winter was past, he assembled and mustred his men and companie. and began to travaile from place to place. In March about the middle of Lent, he came to Armagh, where he extorted, and perforce exa-Sted from the Clergie there, a great masse of money and treasure, and from thence he went to Dune, and from Dune to Dublin, laden with gold, filver, money, and monies worth, the which he extorted in every place where he came, and other good did he none. Hugh Tirell his fellow scraper, tooke from the poore Priests at Armagh, a great braffe panne or brewing fornace, which served the whole house: sce the just judgment of God, (the which then was so constraced, as Cambrensis hath delivered in his Vaticinall history, and likewise in his topagraphie) Philip at the townes end of Armagh, was taken with a fudden pang, and the same so vehement, that it was supposed hee should never have recovered it. When he came to himselfe, a poore man standing by faid, Let him alone, he must have breath till he come to the divell, and then the divell will have him, and all that he extorred from us. Hugh Tirell that carried the panne as farre as Dune, and the Priests curse withall, in night time had his lodging set on fire, where house, and houshold stuffe, and all that he had there, was confumed to ashes, together with the horses that drew the same (and so no thankes to him) he left it behinde him for lacke of carriage. The Castles which Lacie builded for the good of the Land, were these: First, Laghlen, of old called the Blacke Castle, upon the Barrow betweene Offory and Idrone, of which Castle by Henry 2. commandment, Robert Poer had the charge, untill in cowardize fort he gave over the same, and for sooke it; whereupon Cambrensis then living, maketh this invective: O what worthy Champions and fit men for martiall feates, were this Poer and Fitz Adelme, to inhabit and command such a nation asis destitute of noble and valiant mindes? but a man may espie the variable sleight of fortune, disposed to smile at soolery, how from the base dunghill, hee advanceth to high dignities: for why? they two had more pleasure in chambering, wantonnesse, playing with young girles, and on the Harpe, then in bearing of shield, or wearing of Armour: but in sooth it is to bee admired, that fo Noble a Prince as Henry 2. is, would fend such cowards to com-

mand, or to direct in place of service. But to the history. This blacke Castle now called New Leighlin, for difference of Old Leighlin, which is the Bilhops scare, standeth in the Barony of Ydrone, which was the antient inheritance of the Carews: who being Barons of Carew in Wales, so farre as I can learne, one of them married the daughter and heire of the Barron of Ydrone, and so the Carewes became, and were for the terme of many yeeres, Barons of Ydrone, untill the troublesome time of Richard 2. when the Carewes with all the Ent Colles builglish of Ireland, in manner were driven to forsake the land. He buil- ded by Sir ded in Leix for Meilerius Tachmeho, alias Cachmehe, and as for Kil- H de Lacy. dare, with the country adjoyning, the which, as Cambrensis writeth, was by Earle Strangbow given him, the Governours in Hugh de Laicy his absence, subtilly tooke it away from him, under colour of exchange, and gave him Leix, a wilde favage country, with woods, pas ces, bogges, and rebels farre from fuccour or refcue. In Meth, he builded Clanarec, Dunach killar, alias Killairie, the Castle of Adam de Jeypon, alias sureport, and Gilbert de Nugents of DelvynoIn Fotheret of Onolan, alias Fethred Onolan, in Latin, Rotherio, he builded a Cafile for Reimond, and another for Griffin his brother; the fornes of William Fitz Girald, for Walter of Ridensford, he Builded in Omorchu, alias Moroghs country Triffeldermor, otherwife called Trifdels dermot, about five miles from Caterlogh, and likewife Kilka, in the country of Kildare. For John de Hereford, he builded a Gastle in Collach, otherwise called Tulacfelmeth: for Tohn declarifa; alize Clavell, he builded a Castle upon the Barrow, not farre from Leighlin, now supposed to be Carlogh, though some attribute it to Etta, Earle Strangbom his wife; yet it is evident next after the Danes, that the English men builded all the Cassles of Ireland. He builded also neere A. boy, a Castle that he gave to Robert Bigaret, another not farre from thence, which he gave to Thomas Fleminge, another at the Narach on the Barrow, for Robert Fitz Richard, laftly, he builded the Caffle of Derwath, where he made a tragicall end; for on a time when each man was builly occupied, fome lading, fome heaving, fome playstering, some engraving, the Generall also himselfe digging with a Pick axe, a desperate villaine among them, whose toole the Lord Lievetenant used, claying both his hands occupied, and his body bent downewards, with an axe, cleft his head in funder, his body the two Archbishops, John of Dublin, and Mathew of Cashill, buried in the Monasterie of the Bectie, that is, in Monasterio Bearindinis, and his head in Saint Thomas Abbey at Dublin, whose death (I read in Ho. linshed) the King was not forry of, for he was alwayes jealous of his

Vpon the death of Lacy, Sir Reger le Poer a most worthy Knight, who served valiantly in Vister, in company with Sir Iohn de Courty, being made Governour of the country about Leighlen in Ossorie, was

Oog

it

in most lamentable fore traiterously slaine; and upon that occasion, there was (faith Cambrensis) a privy conspiracy over all Ireland a. gainst English men: But gentle Reader, I must backe a little, to bring

on the yeeres to concurre with the history.

Anno 1880. The Monastery De Choro Benedicti, and of Ieripons was founded. The same yeere dyed Laurence Archbishop of Dublin (whose life foraine Writers, as Surius, Baronius, Molanus, and Leppelo with others have written) his father hight Manrice, his mother Imiabre Principis filia, a great Commander in Leinster; the Martyrologe of Sarum faith he was bastard: This Maurice being at continuall warres with Dermot Mac Morogh King of Leinster, upon a league of amity concluded betweene them, delivered unto him for pledge his youngest sonne Laurence; Dermot sent him to a desert folitary place and barren soile to be kept, where he was like to perish with famine: Maurice hearing thereof, tooke 12.0f Dermots principall followers, clapt them in prison, and sent Dermot word, that hee would cut off their heads, unlesse he would release and send him his fonne out of that flavish and miserable servicude: Dermot released the youth, and delivered him not to his father, but to the Bishop of Glandelogh, and the Bishop charged his Chaplen with his bringing up; the Chaplen trained him up so vertuously, that in a short time after he was made Abbot of Glandelogh, & shortly after that againe, upon the death of Gregory Archbishop of Dublin, he was chosen to fucced him. So holy a man was he, as some of mine Authors doe write, that he caused one of his men to whippe him twice a day, belike he had deserved it in his youth. His Legend reporteth that in sime of famine and scarcity in Ireland, he releeved daily 500. persons at his doore for a yeres space. Henry the 2 did not favour him for he had both in publicke and private at fundry times (as formerly in part hath beene touched) beene an instrument of rebellion and of many mischiefes against the English nation, and at the Councell of Lateran, contrary to his Oath, inveighed bitterly against the King; Stainhar [b excuseth him, saying, that hee pleaded for the immunities of the Churches of Ireland, somewhat prejudiciall to the Kings prerogative. He came to the King at Canterbury, where the Monkes received him with folemne Procession, and hee gave himselfe one whole night to prayers before Saint Thomas his shrine, for good successe in his affaires with the King: A foole espied him in his Pontificall weed, wholly devoted to Saint Thomas Beeket: And faid, I can doe no better deed then to make him equal with Saint Thomas; With that tooke a club, ranne through the throng, and gave him such ablow upon the pat, that the blood ran downe his cares, the man was fo fore wounded, that it was thought hee would streighway yeeld up the Ghost; the cry was up, the foole runne away, the Bilbop taking breath called for water, and in a short time after was healed; his sure

unto the King was, (as foraigne Writers deliver) for Deroneg King of Ireland; but faith Holinshed, which is likelieft to bee true, it was in the behalf of Roderic King of Conoght, which had often promifed true subjection and fidelity unto the King, but never performed he had brought with him Roderic his sonne as a pledge for performance of convenants, formerly passed betweene them; as the payment of tribute and fuch like; but the King neither liked the one or the other, but charged the Archbishop not to depart without his li-

The King shortly after tooke shipping at Sandwich and sailed into Normandy. The Archbilhop followed him, and there dvedof an Ague; whereupon (as Holinshed writeth) the King sent leffray De Haile, one of his Chaplens and a Chaplen also of Alexander the Popes Legarinto Ireland, to seize the Archbi. see into his hands, and further it is alleaged, that being the Popes Legate of Ireland; he abhorred incontinency fo much, that for augmentation of penance, hee would absolve no dissolute Priest, but sent them to Rome for absolution; and proved in regard of former favours, there, Amicus Curia, fo that he sent thither out of Ireland at one time, 140. Priests, saith the Legend, De peccaso Luxuria convittos Romam misit absolvendos; convicted of Lechery . Behold gentle Reader, the holy lives of the Prichts of that age, and the Sanctity of the Romane Sea, in pardoning of them all, propter quid , alias propter quas. Pope Honorius the 2. Anno Pontificatus 9. vel 10. Canonized this Laurence for a Saint. who is Galendred the 14: of November, or as the Bull of his Canonization hath, the 18. of the Calends of December, which is all one;

the which Bull followeth in these words.

Honorius Episcopus, servus servorum Dei, univerfis Christifidelibus, in Rothmugensi Provincia constitutis salutem, & Apostolicam benedictionem. Ineffabilis providentia Des congruentibus singulis quibusq, temporibus ordinarie, difenfans in plendoribus Sanctorum Ecclesiam fram, quast ex utero genuit Deum, in exordio ip fius nalcentis Ecclesia crebro miraculorum fulgore abstupefaciens gentes, ac prodestinates in Fide generans lesa Christin Cujus hoc fieri nomine & virtute videbant, ipfos filiorum adoptionis numero aggregavit. Deinde crescrute numero de multitudine populi vocasi de tenebris, ambulantes iuxta Isaia Vaticiniam in lumine Domini Dei sui, mirabilis dispensator in pluviam fulgare sua fecit, dum fignis suis & miraculis (que non erant jam fidelibus necessaria) intermisso, super novos populos pastores qui cos pascerent scientia de doctrina sent per os Ieremia promiserat, suscitavit Doctores Ecclesia; qui terram cordis sidelium imbre dostrina complerent, & extirpatis fenfibus vitiorum cum ad proferen dum virtutum germen & fructum bont operis facundaret. Caterum quia Charitate frigescente ab exercitio boni operis, torpet Catholicas : errore devio abducente, delirat bareticus; cecidit velamine adbuc

super cor permanente, sudaus; de in tenebris ambalat fide lucis nondum libi oriente, Paganus : Misericors Dominus qui neminem vult perire signa interdum innovat, de miseratus immutat ex numero illorum quos in Ecclesia triumphante glorificat aliquorum sidem et merita in militante miraculis declarando, ut per ea Catholici mentis discusso ad boni operis excitentur instantiam, heretici errore dimisso

abisto reducantur ad viam veritatis et vitam.

Sancta ergo memoria Laurentio Dublinensi Archepiscopo, apud Ecclesiam Sancta Maria de Ango Rathmagensis Diocesos, ubi corpus ejus feliciter requiescit, divino munere coruscante miraculis . V enerabilis frater nofter Archepiscopus, et dilecti filij Capitulum Rathmagense, una cum Abbate et Conventu Ecclesia supradicta, multisa alus Archiepiscopis et Episcopis, Abbatibus et Religiosis viris, ejus venerabilis vita, insignia coruscantia miracula, suis nobis literis intimantes bumiliter supplicarunt ut ip sum Sanctorum Catalogo a scribere curaremus; quatenus autoritate (ficut convenit) Apostolica, dianus honor illiexhiberetur in terrus, qui (ficut claris fignis et evidentibus arque mentis apparet honoratur in calis. Licet igitur quos divina honorat dignatio, humana devotio prompto affectu debeat honorare, volentes in bujusmodi negotio secundum consustudinem Apostolica sedis, matuvitate debita procedere; prafato Archiepiscopo & Decamo & Thesamrario Rathmagensi, dedimui in mandatis ut superdicti viri vita de miraculis inquirerent diligentissime veritate, & eam nobis fideliter intimarent, ut ea plane comperta pro supplicantin de siderio securius annuere valeremus. 1pfi autem mandatum nostrum cum diligentia exequentes quod de prefati viri conversatione ac vita istis certificare nequibant, eo quod per partes illas transjectus factens, in Ecclefia pradicta correptus infirmitatus decubuit & infra octavum ab hac luce migravit diem, Gripserunt venerabile fratri nostro Archiepiscopo Dublinense ut veritatem saper hoc inquisitam is per suas literas intimaret, qui citra mare Hibernicum illustris Regis Anglorum negotiis occupatus & volens id inquirere per se ipsum, venerabili fratri nostro Darensi Episcopi suffragano suo, ac Priori Sancta Trinitatis Dublinensis commisit in bujusmodi negotio vices suas, ac demum liter as corum, sanctitatem vita & conversationis sape dicti viri plenius continentes suo de ipsorum sigillis munitas destinarunt eisdem, quas una cum depositionibus testium super miraculis captorum nobis cum sigillis propries transmiscrunt. Colligimus vero ex earum serie litterarum, quod sape dictus vir Regis & Regina Hibernia filius extitit, & ab infantia Sacris Litceris eruditus, fenilem gesit in juventute gravitatem de mundanarum illecebras vanitatum à se ultra quam atas illa solebas, abdicavit. Deindein Archeps Copum Dublinen fem affumptus, sic de virtuse in virsutem profecerit, ut in oratione assiduus, austerus in maceratione proprii corporis, ac in Eleemosinarum largitione profusus se totaliter Domino dedicarit.

Per depositionem verà testium predictor constitit evidenter sanctam vitam ejusdem esse tot sequentibus miraculis comprobatam que non parva texerent bistoriam si quis vellet ea singula scribere seriatim: sed ut non pratermittamus claudi gressum, caci visum, surdi auditum, muti loquelam, leprosi mundationem & varys afflicti languoribus sanitatem ad invocationem ejes nominis de ea sola que inter catera emicuerunt miracula breviter perstringamus. Nam idem santius, (imo Deus ob iplius merita gloriofa) septem mortuos (quorum quatuor triduani erant) mirifice suscitavit. De ipsus sanctitate tantis certificati miraculis divinumque secuti indicium, quod eius glorificatio nobis tam evidentibus innotuit argumentis eundem sanctiss. Catalogo sanctorum adscripsimus of annumerandum decrevimus, sanctorum Collegio Confessorum ac inter eos Christi sidelibus venerandum statuentes, ut eins veneranda festivitas de cetero annis singulis decimo ottavo Kalendas Decembris solemniter celebretur. Monemus igitur universitatem vefram, de bortamur in Domino quatenus Deum devotis mentibus col. laudantes de studentes proficere tanta virtutis exemplo, ejusdem gloriosissimi Confessoris apud Deum suffragiahumiliter imploret. Nos antem de Dei omnipotentis misericordia de beatorum Petri de Pauli authoritate confisiomnibus vere penitentibus & confessis qui ad prefatam Ecelesiam, in die solemuitatis ejus dem gloriosissimi confessoris vel infra Octabis cum devotione accesserint ejus orationum suffragia petituri 20. dies de iniunctis sibi penitentijs miserecorditer relaxamus. Dat. 2. Idus Decembris pontifitates nostri anno decimo.

Molanus writeth of this Laurence, that he favoured Monkes greatly, and hearing of the fame of the 28. Monasteries of Aroatia, in the confines of Atrebatum in the low Countries, made the secular Priests called Cannons in Dublin, become regular cannons, according unto the order of Aroatia. After his discease, John Comin, an English man, a Monke of Evelham (an Abbey in England) by the Kings direction. was made Archbishop of Dublin, confirmed by Pope Lucius at Viterbium, and also made a Cardinall (so writeth Cambrensis) Anno 1148. the Monasterie legis dei, that is, of Leix, was founded, Anno 1185. Iohn, the fift sonne of Henry 2. of the age of twelve yeeres, landed at Waterford in the Realme of Ireland, from the first arrivall of his father, thirteene yeeres, from the first landing of Earle Strangbow. fourteene yeeres, and from the first entrance of Robert Fitz Stephens, fifteene yeeres. In the Chronicles of England I finde, that Anno 1177. in a Parliament held at Oxford, Henry 2. created his fonne Iohn, King of Ireland In Anno 1185, he dubbed his sonne lohn, Knight, and ser him in a readinesse for Ireland, sending the new Bishop John of Dublin, as his precurfer thither for all things necessarie. Item the same yeere he obtained of Pope Prhan 3. a licence to crowne which hee would of his fonnes, King of Ireland, and for reformation thereof. fent him a crowne of Peacocks tayles, I would say feathers, after a

feat manner woven in with gold; lastly, how that Vrban 2. fent two Legates, Octavianus, a subdeacon Cardinall, and Hugh de Novant from the Court of Rome, to crowne Iohn, King of Ireland, but Henry 2. delayed it so, that it was not effected; hereof (as I suppose) it rifeth that oftentimes we finde him called King John afore he was crowned: but to the Irish history. At the first landing and entring of the Kings sonne at Waterford, a great many of the chiefest commanders in those parts, who since their first submission unto King Henry, continued faithfull and true, being advertised of this his arrivall, came and resorted unto him in peaceable manner after their best manner, to salute him and congragulate his comming, one made curtefie, another kneeled, some tooke him by the hand, other some offer to kisse him. The new gallants and Normans, fuch as had not beene before acquainted with the country, neither the homelinesse of the people, set them at nought, laughed at their Mantles and Trooffes, derided their glibbes and long beards, one takes a sticke, and pass the Irish man on the pate, another halls the mantle, and pricks him behinde with a pinne, some have their glibbes and long beards pulled, and departing, have flappes on the lippes, thumpes in their neckes, and the doores clapt on their heeles, with diversother abuses, and undiscreet entertainement: These men (not without cause) being mightily displeased, shifted themselves out of the towne, and in all haste got them home. And from thence (saith Cambrensis) with their wives, children, and houshold, departed, and went some to the Prince of Lymcric, some to the Prince of Corke, some to Roderic, Prince of Connaght, and so some to one Lord, and some to another; and to these they declared orderly, how they had beene at Waterford, and what they had seene there, and how they were evill intreated, and that a yong man was come thither, guarded with beardlesse boyes, and guided by the councels of young men, in whom there was no stay, no sobriety, no stedsastnesse, no assurednesse, whereby they and their country might be secured of any safety.

These Princes, and namely they three of Connaght, Corke, and Lymeric, who were the chiefest, and who were then preparing themselves in a readinesse to have come and salute the Kings Sonne, and to have yeelded unto him their dutisual obeysance, as faithfull subjects; when they had heard these newes, they began forthwith to bethinke themselves, that of such evill beginning, a worse ending would ensue; wherefore with one consent, they concluded to stand and iowne together against the English nation, and to their uttermost power, to adventure their lives, and to stand to the desence of their country and liberties, and for the performance thereof, they enter into a new league among themselves, and swore each to other, and by that meanes, enemics before, are now become friends, and reconciled, as of old, Ephraim against Manasses, and Ma

masses against Ephraim, and both against the Tribe of Inda. Hered against Pilate, and Pilate against Herod, both become friends to crucific Christ. To be short, there followed a generall revolt and rebellion over all Ireland. Cambrenfis alledgeth a second cause of this revolt. How that when Robert Fitz Setphens first entred the land there were certaine Irish men which tooke part with him, served faithfully, and were as reason required, rewarded for their service, and had for recompence, certaine lands given them, which they quietly held and peaceably enjoyed, untill the comming of the Kings fonne, then new commers wanting both living and governement, had it given them to furnish them in their foolish prodigalitie, so that these Irish men flying unto the enemies, became not onely enemics, but were espials upon the English, and conductors of the enemy against them. A third reason of ill successe, Cambrensis urgeth against England; first, how that the Britaines or Cambrians (lo he termeth them) entring this land, and breaking the ice to the conquest of Ireland, were afterwards by William Fitz Adelme, and others, envied, and every way maligned: secondly, how that the English commanding the land. were by the English disgraced, and one often times articling, accufing, and different one another: thirdly, how that the Normans comming in place, overthrew all, for the King being borne beyond the seas, affected them most, they were of his Councell at home in time of peace, and made Commanders abroad in time of warres: these comming with the Kings sonne into Ireland, were fine in their apparrell, delicate mouthed, feeding upon dainties, they could not difgest their meat without Spice and Wine at every meale; they could not endure the service in the Marches and borders, they would not remaine in remote places, they brooked not the Forts, Holds, and Garrison places; but liberty they liked of, so it were in a walled town. a warme chamber, a Ladies lappe, a fost bed, a furre gowne, and their Lords fides to guard and attend, pleased them well; they would talke and bragge of service, sweare and stare at home, stand upon the pantofles of their reputation, disdaine others, and especially the I. rish, and durst not shew their faces in the field. These were they that gave themselves to command the Irish, that would not be commanded by them, they polled, pilled, extorted, and what not.

In the space of eight moneths that Earle Iohn stated in Ireland, I finde that he built three Castles, Tibrach, Lismoore, and Archsinan, alias Ardsivin: at Ardsivin upon Midsummer day, (so Cambrensia reporteth) the Prince of Lymeric bent and animated to rebellion, slue source Knights, and the greater part of the Garrison there: shortly after, the same rebels of Lymric, by a slight, drew out the Garrison to seize upon a prey, and lying in ambush, killed many of them, but these revolters escaped not scotsree in all the parts of the land: for at this time when the Irish men of Kennally with great forces had

entred

168

entred Meth, killing, burning, spoiling, and preying the Country. William le Petit, Governour or Justicer (faith Cambrensis) drew a head against them, rescued the prey, put them to flight, made a great slaughter of them, and lent a hundred heads of the principall of them to Dublin.

The Kings sonne hearing of these troubles, hastned away unto England, left the land tumultuous, troublesome & al upon an uprore; committed the charge thereof (faith Staniburst) Bruseo, Courceo, Giraldidis, dec. in primis Hugonis Lacai virtuti, where in truth I find no fuch matter, for Cambrensis (whom herein I must relie unto) being then in Ireland with the Kings son, reporteth how that Henry the second, hearing of the course which these greene heads held in Ireland; thought good to call them all unto England, and fend thither no more such young commanders, and by the advice of his Councell committed the charge and absolute command thereof, unto Sir Iohn de Courcy, whom hee appointed Lord Lievtenant of Ireland (the Booke of Houth also testifieth the same.) Earle John immediatly gathered forces, travailed over the whole land, pacified for the time Corke, Tumound and Conoght, From the death of Hugh Delacy, who was flaine, Anno 1186. unto the time Hugh Delacy the yonger came to be Lord Iustice, of whom hereafter more at large. Here gentle Reader, Cambrensis leaveth us, who most faithfully continued the affaires of Ireland, some 30. yeeres and odde: he was by father a Barry, by mother a Gerraldin, nephew to Morice Fitz Geraldand Robert Fitz Stephens, that first entred to the Conquest of Ireland; hee was borne in Pembrok. shire, and was Archdecon of Saint Davids and Brechnoc, and diverfly imployed by Henry the second, in whose time, among others, the first Conquerors & his kindred, he came into Ireland againe, and became Tutor unto 10hn the Kings sonne, and accompanied him into Ireland; he wrote many learned workes, and among other, the Conquest of Ireland, the Topography of Ireland, and Mirabilia Hiberma. Whereof hee dedicated one unto Richard Earle Strangbow, and another unto Henry the second; he, was elected Archbishop of Saint Davids, but at Rome he was out-bid, by him that had more money, and missed the Cushin; hee departed this life, when hee was about foure score yeeres old, and resteth at Saint Davids. Yet one thing further of him which he reporteth of himselfe, how that he at the time of his being in Ireland, had Conference with Mathew Archbishop of Cashill, and he saying among other things : You have many Saints in Ireland, but I doe not find any martyr amonst you: the Bishop taking it in ill part, as spoken in derision of the Nation, answered with great anger, Sir, it is so that our people is rude, savage and barbarous, yet there is none so brutishand bloudy, as to lay violent hands upon a Priest; now it fals out that wee are to be governed by such a Nation as is not guiltlesse of Prelats deaths.

deaths, and it is like, (if it stands with Gods pleasure) that shortly we shall make up a number of Irish martyrs this he spitefully spake meaning the death of Thomas of Canterbury.

In a while after that Sir Iohn de Courcy had brought the whole Sir H de Lasy. land to a good passe, and pacified the Irish tumults (this I find in the the yonger L. Booke of Houth) Sir Hugh Delacy the younger is fent over into Ire- Inflice of lie, land as Lord Itiltice, to take the absolute Command of the Realme. He had no sooner landed but he sent very imperious letters unto Sir Tobin de Courcy, to discharge him, and all that were authorized by him of their places, and command, and in like fort (like the green heads spoken of a little before, which landed with Earle 1060) they braved it out, disdained old experimented fouldiers, and offered sundry difgraces unto the rest of the English; so that thereof role much heartburning division, quarrels and bloody brawles. The Irish leeing this fudden alteration, this division among the English, this undiscrees government, thought now to find fit opportunity publikely to releale themselves of that, which they had oft secretly intended; by their runnagades they fummoned at a day a place, all the Chiefraines of Irilli birth to a parlee , where after many doubts debated, many griefes opened, they concluded with full refolution to invade all the English, and roote them wholly our of the land; and first they swoare to bee true one to another, throughout that wholerancke of rebels, as farre as life, lands, and goods would reach to effect this enterprife! Secondly, they swoarenever to yeeld obedience to the English nation againe in the tender of the person of the analysis and the side of the second of the s

Overnor King of Conaght becomes the mouth of the Irish, per- oconnor K. of fwades to his liking, diffwades where fancy pleafeth not, and ga- Conaght with thered together in short time, an Army (as mine Author saith) of 20000 men. 20000. fighting meh; his policy was first, to cleare Conoght, and afterwards all Vifter, and so by degrees the whole land, the which he doubted not of as he delivered to his followers. Sir Tobn de Courof understanding this , and doubting what hee should finde at Sir Hugh Delaises hands fent letters in post to his brother Sir Amorick Saint Banrence who hortly to his and marched towards the North. with 30. Knights and 200. foot. Ocener hearing this, lyeth in am bulk in most feeret will, and fendeth feours of horse and foot before him, to apprehend and cut off all espials, which might bewray his ambuille, and give intelligence to Sir Amorick to prevent the dans ger Sir Minerick boldly marchethon, mildoubting nothing, for that he understandeth by his espials nothing to the contrary, till he came to the Divels mouth, where upon a fidden, beholding oconor and his hugo Wrmy peeping out of their ambulh; was aniazed, made a fland, and confulting with his company, will not what to doe; there was no flying, there was no fighting, one to a hundred was no equal matchi, a horieman whole hame was Mountgomery, in a few words

171

faid this. Let us fly and fave our lives, as for the foot company wee can doe them no good by figting; by flying and faving our owne lives, we may succour their wives, children and kindred. By that time Sir Amorick his brother (leader of the foot company) came to the consultation, and said, I see by all circumstances, that you meane to flie, and you Sir Americk my noble brother, what meane you to give care to these cowardly horsemen, will you leave us here as sheepe in the mouths of this mercilesse people, and ravening wolfes, ready to rent usin peeces? Have you forgotten the bloody battels we followed you in? and do you not fee that we have left our Country, our wives, our children and dearest friends, and now stand at deaths doore, to be forfaken of you whom weenever left so disolate and diffressed: if you weigh not our lamentable estate, regard your owne honour, and the house you are descended of. Will you lose in an houre, the honour you wanne in many yeeres? Call to remembrance, most worthy Knight, how that in Vriell in manner in the like distresse; you dismounted your selfe, slew your horse, led the foot, animated the company, recovered your selfe, and ended with honour? Wee are your flesh and your blood, wee come hither to fight, to live and to dycrogether; I know the worst. I am resolved, if we fight we dye, if we fly we are flaine; is it not better for us to dye in fight like men, and so winnehonour, then to bee saine in slight like beafts, and gaine shame for ever? With this Sir, Amarick turned him to the foot company, and hardly gathering breath with the forrow of his heart, resolved himselfe thus: I have no power to fly and leave my frinds, my flesh and blood, in this extreme distresse. I will live with them, who for my sake came hither, if it so please God, and I will dye with them, if it bee his pleasure, that ending here wee shall meet againe bodies and foules at the last day. God and the World beare witnesse, that wee doe as Christian Knights ought to doe, I yeeld my foule into Gods hands, my body to returne whence it came, my service to my natural Prince, my heart to my wife and brother, Sir Iohn de Courcy, my might, my force and bloody sweat to the avd of you all that are in the field: He lighted, kneeled upon his knees. killed the croffe of his fword, ranne his horfe through, faying thou shalt never serve against mee, that so worthily hast served with mee. The like did all the rest; then looking about with a chearefull countenance, as if he had not beene the man, that was formerly difmaid. charged two young Gentlemen of the company to get them to the top of an Hill, hard by adjoyning, and beholding the battell, upon their returne homwards make true report to his brother Coursey and others of that daies service. Immediatly they prepared to battaile, the enemics marvailed leeing them approch, that they durft being fo few) abide the field; they made likewise a stand, and cast doubts, whether the Englishmen in this attempt had not some great supply;

Doctor Hanmers Chronicle

rescues are maine battaile following after, they would not give the on-set, before they had certain knowledge thereof, by scoutes and espials: to be short, they joyne the battaile, where to deliver the whole in few words; Sir Amorick was flaine and all his company. It was a bloody day, when all the one fide, and a 1000. of the other fide, fell to ground. Oconor and his company feing the end of this field, durst never againe give battell unto the English, but sued to Sir Hugh Delacy then Lord Iustice for peace, which he obtained, vowing, as he had many a time before, faith, truth and perfect subjection: This Ocener after his reconciliation made report unto Sir Hugh Delacy, of that daies work, that he thought verily, there was never the like feen upon the earth; how that the Englishmen not being able to fland in fight, turned backe to backe, with sparthes and two handed swords, untill the last man was slaine. The lamentation that Sir John de Courcy made, when this was bruted abroad, I will not stand to rehearse.

I am now to end with King Henry the second, a most worthy Prince, whose troubles every way troubled not him so much, as the unnaturall rebellion of his sonnes, and the Icalousie of his Queene; he raigned 34. yeeres,9. months and two dayes: his Epitaph in Mathem Paris and in others I find thus.

Rex Henricus eram, mihi plurima regna subegi, Multiplicique modo Duxque Comesque fui: &cs

Of late King Henry was my name, Which Conquered many a Land And divers Dukdomes did possesse, And Earldomes held in hand, And yet while all the earth could scarce My greedy mind suffice; Eight foot within the ground now ferves Wherein my Carcas lyes. Now thou that readest this, note well My force, with force of Death; And let that serve to shew the state Of all that yeeldeth breath:

Do good then here, fore flow no time, Cast offall worldly cares 3 to the first in a ton city on the For brittel world full soone doth faile, And death dorb strike unwares.

the first of ham the standard of the standard of the first on the first of

resident a finish to the accord. Ring, with the wing

. ได้เคราะเรื่อนแบบสมโด ส

Richard the first, the third some of Henry 2. began his raigne over England the 6. of July, Anno 1189. For his valence, he was called Cœur de Lyon, the Lyons heart; he was affianced, but never married, to Adela, or Alice, daughter to the French King, and in his journey to the holy land, he tooke to wife in the Ile of Cyprus, the Lady Berengaria, daughter to Garlias (some fay Santiico) King of Nauarre, and died without iffue, when he had raigned nine yeeres, nine moneths, and two and twenty dayes. It is noted by the Antiquaries. that upon the death of his father, he had three notable windfals, the first was the Crowne of England, the second was his fathers treafure, which he found at Salisbury, amounting to nine hundred thoufands pound in coyne, besides Plate, precious stones, Iewels and apparell; lastly, in the Coffers of Jeffrey Ridley, Bishop of Elye, who dyed intestate, he found towards his coronation 3260. pound in filver, five markes in gold, which was better; for his coronation was most Royall. Iohn Comyn Archbishop of Dublin was aris. Mathew Paris in Latine, and Holinshed in English have penned it verbatims Will. K. of Scors did him homage, and when he was the second time crowned King, bare a fword before him. King Richard the first yeere of his raigne, gave the Lady Ifabell, fole daughter and heire of Richard, furnamed Strangbow, Earle of Penbroke, to William Maxfield, Lord Maxfield, and Earle Marthall of England, Anno 1189:

This William, his furname was not Marshall, as Sir John Plunkes his collection hath laid downe, but Maxfield, his descent I finde thus; with William the Conquerour, there came into England to his ayde, one Walter Maxfield a Norman, that was his Marshall, this Walter had iffue, William, William had iffue, Walter, Walter had iffue, John, Iohn had issue, this William Maxfield, that married Ifabell, the daughter of Strangbow, who was made Earle Marshall of England, Earle of Penbroke in Wales, and Prince of Leinster in Ireland, in the right of his wife. This William was in great favour with King Richard the first, that gave him the Lady Isabell to wife, and honoured him fo at his coronation, that he bare a regall Scepter before the King, in the top whereof was let a Croffe of gold, and when the King with full determination passed over into Normandie, and from thence into the Holy Land, he affigued him the third governour of the Realme, John Earle of Morton, Anno 1199. after the death of his brother Richard, sent this William among others into England, to set all things in a readinesse for his coronation, the which being the 27. of May, and yeere aforesaid, gave him his full creation to the Earledome of Penbroke, and girded him with the fword; not long after, King Iohn fent him with others, as Embassadors to the French King, with sundry other imployments; he was also in great favour with Henry 3.as shall be shewed when I come to his raigne. He had five sonnes, and five daughters, his sonnes all succeeded him in the Earldome of Penbroke,

and office of Marshalsie, together with the Principality of Leinster, and dyed all without issue. The daughters were all honourably matched in the life time of their father and brethren, and had his territories and possessions in Wales and Ireland, orderly divided among them; the which they and their posterity peaceably enjoyed. This William Earle Marshall the elder, came to Ireland, Anno 1207. hee builded the Gastle of Kilkenny, and gave the towne a Charter, with priviledges wich they enjoy to this day the founded there also the Monasterie of the blacke Fryers, and ended the way of all shesh at London, Anno 1220. and lyeth buried in the temple of his Lady Isabell at Tinterne in Wales.

William Marshall his eldest sonne succeeded him, both in the office of Marshall, and Earldome of Penbroke and Ogie, and Principalitic of Leinster; he granted a Charter to the towne of Kilkenny, Anno 1223. fixt of Aprill, with the restate of Thomas Fitz, Antony, Lord of Thomasstowne, Seneschall, of Leinster, Fulkoe, Carnae; Walter Pursell, William Grace, Haman Grace, Amnar Grace, and others, he ended his dayes at Kilkenny, Anno 1232 and resteth in the Monastery there, which his father had formerly founded:

Againe, of this William I have seene another Charter, exemplified Anno 1329. by King Edwardthe third, with an inspexim. Edwardus Dei gratia Rex Anglia, Dominus Hibernia, Dux Aquitanie omnibus Ballivis & Ministris omnium villarum & villasorum Lagenie dy ceteris quibuscunque deissem partibus salutem. Supplicavit nobis superior et communitas villa de Kilkenny quod cum Willielmus nuper Comes Mariscallus et Pembrochie (tempore quo idem Comes extiterat Domini totius terra Lagenia concesserit Burgensibus et Communitati ville predicte qui pro tempore fuerint, diversas libertates, inter quas videlicet, quod ipfi in perpetuum per totam Lageniam terrane, & potestatein suam tam villa qua alibi essent quieti de theulonio lastagio, poritagio de omnibus aliijs consuetudinibus quibuscunque, quam quidem cartam inspezimus, &c. Teste Iobanne Darcy Iusticiario nostro Hibernicapud Kilkenny, 8. die Iulij anno regninostri 3. per billamipsius Iu-Sticiary. Yet Holinshed writteh that this William Marshall the younger, deceased at London, and lyeth buried by his father in the new

Richard Marshall the second brother succeeded; he was Earle Marshall of England, Earle of Penbroke in Wales, and Ogie in Normandie and Prince of Leinster in Ireland. In the yeere 1233 and the Moneth of Aprill, in a battell nigh Kildare, upon the great Heath called the Curragh, fighting against the Oconors, hee tooke his deaths wound, whereof shortly he dyed. Hee lieth buried by his brother William in the blacke Fryers at Kilkennye, which was the foundation of William, Earle Marshall, his father. Henry the third lamented his death, and protested that he lost then the worthics Captaine of

PP3

his

his time. His tombe (with the tombe of eighteene Knights that came over at the Conquest, and resting in that Abbey) at the suppression of the Monasteric, was defaced, and inhabitants there turned them to their private uses; and of some they made fwine troughs, so as there remaineth no Monument in the faid Abbey, fave one ftone, whereupon the picture of a Knight is portraied, bearing a shield as bout his necke, wherein the Cantwels armes are infeulped; and yet the people there call it Ryddir in Curry, that is, the Knight Claine at the Curraghe. John Clyn, guardian of the Fryers there, in his Annals of Ircland writeth thus.

Post incarnatum lapsis de virgine natum Annie millenie eribus triginta ducentie In primo mensis Aprilie, Kildariensis Pugna die Sabbati fuit in tristitia facti Acciderant stallo pugna Comiti Mariscallo.

And upon his Tombe.

Hic Comes est positus, Richardus valnere fassus Cujus fab fossa Kilkennia continet offa.

After the decease of Richard Gilbert, Marshall, the third brother was Earle Marshall of England, Earle of Penbroke and Ogie, and Prince of Leinster, Anno 1239. King Henry the third held his Christmas at Winchester, where there rose a grudge betweene the King and this Earle Gilbert, by reason that this same Earle, with his fervants, having tip staves in their hands, comming to the Court, were not suffered to enter within the gates, but were kept backe by the Porters and others: of which injury when hee complained, the King made him an overthware answer. Whereupon the Earle not well pleased therewith, estranged himselfe from the Court, and went into the North country, so that thenceforth, he and his brother Walter gave final attendance upon the King; and to end with this Earle Gilbert, it fell out on a time, in a Turnay which hee had attempted without the Citic of Hereford, contrary to the Kings pleasure, that his unruly horse cast him, so that of the hurt which he tooke with the fall, he shortly after departed this life, in the years 1241 and was but ried in the new temple Church at London: hee had married the Lady Margaret, the fifter of Alexander, King of Scots, who by her had no iffue, the also dyed Anno 1 245.

Walter Marshall succeeded Gilbert in all the former honours and possessions, both in England and Ireland, who because he had procured the turnament wherein his brother was flaine, hardly obtained of the king the same. He departed this life at Godrike Gastle by Monmouth and was buried at Tintern, Anno 1245. leaving no issue behind him.

Anselme Marshall the fite sonne of william Earle Marshall such ceded Walter, hee was the last of the Maxfields, and died without issue. Hee had married Mathildia or Mand daughter of the Barle of Hereford, ane because hee had entred without downg of homage unto the King, his wife after his decease could have no dowry, wheref among the statutes of England I find the cause by especial words thus overruled.

When any dyeth and bis beire entreth invo the Dand, that his An. cesters held of the King, the day that he died before he hath done homage to the King, and received feifin of the King, hee shall give no free hold thereby ; and if hee dyed feifed during that time, his wife shall not be indowed of the same land as came late in ure; by Mand the daughter of the Earle of Hereford, wife of Angiline the Marshal. Who after the death of Walter Marshall of England his brother, tooke his feilin of the Castle and mannor of Strogill, and died in the fame Calle; before hee had entred by the King, and before hee had done homage unto him, whereupon it was agreed, that his wife should not be indowed, because that her husband had not entred by the King, but rather by trufion.

This Anselme died in England, and was buried at Tinterne. After the death of these five brethren; Flordegen writeth thus. All the sonnes of William the great Marshall (it is not knowne what sinne required the same) according to the Prophecy of the Countesse their mother, without iffue left behind them, as shadowes departed our of this world; yet all successively became Earles, even as their mother by a Propheticall spirit foreshewed, and so the Noble sheild or buckler of the Marshalls, dreadful to so many and so great enemies of England, vanished away. Mathew Paris wrote the story at large. The atorefaid William, as Warlike and flour, called Marshall, as if hee had beene Mars his Seneschall while in Ireland hee gave himselse to slaughter, and burning, and got to himselse large posses. fions, he tooke away by firong hand and injurioufly, from an holy Bishop ewo mannorsor Lordships belonging to his Church, and prefumptuously usurped them, as though he might, by just title polfelle them, as if he had wonne them with the fword. The Bilhop after many admonitions, and receiving many froward answers, thundred against him (and not without cause) the sentence of Excommunication, the which the Earle despised, and pleaded for excuse; the warlike feafon keeping injuries upon injuries. Whereupon not without advisement one Maister Gervasius de Melekeria, framed of him this distinction and shrowded himselfe in his person:

Sum quem Saturnum sibisensit Hibernia, Solem Anglia, Mercurium Normania, Gallia Martem.

Iam whom Ireland Saturnehight, and England Sol me cals, Amids the Normans Mercury, and Mars among the Gauls

The meaning in a word is how that he in his time had tamed the wild Irish, and had beene the shining beame of honour unto the English, as an Ambassadour to pacific the Normans, and an invincible Knight among the French nation, but forwards with Paris: the aforesaid Earle held those mannors all his life time, and annexed them unto his dominions: Within a few yeeres after, the Earle ended the way of all flesh, and was buried in the new Temple at London: the Bishop hearing of this (for he was the Bishop of Fernes, a Cistertian Monke, by birth Irish, and samous for Sanctity) not without great paine in travaile, he went unto the King who then was in London, exhibited a grievous complaint of the injury done unto him, and how that hee had justly excommunicated the Earle, and humbly befought the King, that by his foveraigne authority and Princely mandat, and also for the good of the said Earlewilliams soule. he would fee his mannors restored unto him, that in so doing (though he were dead) yet might reape the benefit of absolution. The King with this was moved, and willed the Bishop to repaire to the Earles grave and absolve him, and he would diligently labour for his satisfaction; the Bishop together with the King went to his Tombe and in the hearing of althat were present, as if they had been both alive, said, O William, that here lyest interred, and wrapped in the bonds of Excommunication, if the thing which thou hast injuriously taken away from my Church, beerestored by the king, or by thine heire, or by some one of thy kindred or friends, with competent satisfaction, I absolve thee, o her wise I doe ratifie the said sentence that thou being ever wrapped in thy finnes, maiest remaine damned in hell. The King hearing this, was moved and sharply rebuked the immoderat rigour of the Pontificall Prelate. To whom the Bilhop replied, my Lord ann dread foveraigne, marvaile not, though I be our of patience, for he hath spoiled my Church to his great commoditie. The King then fecretly conferring with Walliam the eldest sonne of this Earle, and heire to the whole, and now invested in the inheritance and Earledome, and certaine others his brethren belought them by the restoring the mannors unjuftly taken away, mercifully to deliver their fathers soule; To whom William the heir made answer, I doe not beleeve, neither is to be credited, that my father tooke them injuriously, for that which is gotten by the fword, may lawfully be enjoyed, for if that old and doting Bilhop hath given a wrong sentence, let the

curse light upon his owne pate. I will not weaken my estate, nor diminish the inheritance wherein I am invested, my father dyed seized thereof, and I have rightly entred. Vnto these words all the brethren yeelded their consents. The King being then of tender yeeres, and under Tutor, would not give cause of heavinesse unto so great and Noble a personage; when the Bishop understood this, hee was more waspish, and moved with the countenance of the somes, then with the former iniury of the father, and turning him to the King, fpake aloud; what I have said, I have said; what I have written, I have written, never to be blotted out.

To be short, the Bishop with great sorrow departed, and in bitternesse, prophecied of the ill successe of the children, who dyed and lived in great honour all the dayes of their lives: but these matters we

are to referre to the secret judgement of God.

After the decease of these five brethren, five Earles, and five Princes of Leinster, leaving no issue behinde them, the five daughters their fisters, Ioane, Mathilda, Isabell, Sibilla, and Eva, being honourably matched, had their fathers and brethrens possessions and territorics in Ireland orderly divided amongst them; Ioane, the eldest daughter of William Earle Marshall, and eldest fister of the five brethren (before spoken of) was married to Warren de Mountchensen, who in right of her, had allotted unto him, the County of Wexford; they had iffue, one daughter, Ioane that was married, Anno 1247 to William de Valence, a Norman, the sonne of Hugh Brune, Earle of March, and Turryn, Vicount of Curce, &c. hee was halfe brother to King Henry the third, by Queene Isabell, daughter and heire of Americ, Earle of Angolesm, the widdow of King Iobn. This William in the right of his wife, was Earle of Penbroke, and Lord of Wexford and died Anno 1296. he had iffue, two formes and two daughters, William de Valence, Omdomare alias Aimer de Valence, Tabell and Toanes William fucceeded his father in the Earldome of Penbroke, and Lord-Thip of Wexford, and died without iffue. Aymer his brother after him, was Earle of Penbroke, and Lord of Wexford, and died withoutifluc, whereupon the inheritance fell to the two fifters, Isabell and loane. Ifabell was married to lehn Hastings, Lord Hastings of Abergevenny, who in the right of his wife had one halfe of the county of Wexford allotted nato him, and had iffue, Elizabeth, which married Reynold, Lord Gray of Ruthin. Ioane the fecond fifter was married to Iohn Lord Comyn, who in her right, had the other halfe of Wexford, and he had iffue, two daughters, Elizabeth and Ioane; Elizabeth married Richard Lord Talbot, and Ioane was married to David, Earle of Atholl in Scotland, and thus the County of Wexford was divided.

Mathilda, or Mawde, the second daughter of William, Earle Marshall of England, had the county of Cattelough, slins Carlogh,

affigned unto her: she was married to Hugh Bigod, Earle of Norfolke, father of Ralph Bigod, whose daughter and heire Isabell, was married to Sir Gilbert Lacy, who had issue, Margery and Mawd, Margery was married to Iohn Lord Verdon, of whom the Earle of Shrewesbury, and the Earle of Essex are descended. Mawd married Ieffery Genivill, father to Peter Genivill, whose daughter and heire was married to Roger Mortimer, Lord of Wigmore, and the first Earle of March:

Isabell, the third daughter of William, Earle Marshall of England, had to her portion, the county of Kilkenny. She was married to Sir Gilbert de Clare, Earle of Glocester and Herford, whose discent is before spoken of. Hee was slaine by the Scots in King Edward the seconds time, and died without issue. I have seene a Charter granted by him to the towne of Kilkenny. Gilbert Clare, Earle of Glocester and Herford, to our Seneshall of Kilkenny, and to our treasurer of the same, greeting; know you that we for the common profit of the towne of Kilkenny, of our especial I favour have granted to our loving Burgesses of the same towne, &c. the whole in substance is, that none shall sell victuals there; but it shall be prized by the officers of our towne. After the decease of Sir Gilbert Clare, then the Earledomes of Glocester and Herford, and the County of Kilkenny, fell betweene his three sisters, begotten upon Isabell asoresaid, to wit, Elenor, Margaret, and Elizabeth. Elenor was married to Hugh Spencer the younger, Margaret was married to Peter Gavefton, and after his death, to Hugh Lord Audely; Elizabeth was married first to William Lord Burgh, Earle of Vifter; the second time to Ralph Roch, Baron of Farmoy thirdly, to Theobald, Lord Verdon; and laftly, to Roger Damary, and had iffue by every one of them.

Sibilla the fourth daughter of William Earle Marshall, had to her part the Countie of Kildare, and was married to William Ferers, Earle of Ferers and Darby, who had iffue, Agnes, Isabell, Mathilda, Sibilla, Cecilia, and a second Sibill, Agnes was married to Villiam de Vescy, who had iffue, Iohn de Vescy, who had iffue, Villiam de Vescy that died without iffue in his fathers life time. Lastly, this County of Kildare was given by the King unto Iohn Fitz Thomas, the first Earle of Kildare, as hereafter in more convenient place shall ap-

peare.

Eva, the first daughter of VVilliam Earle Marshall, had to her portion, the Mannor of Dounmas in Leix, and was married to VVilliam Bruse, Lord Bruse of Gower, who had issue, Mathilda, Elenor, and Ewa. Mathilda was married to Roger Mortimer, Elenor was married to Humphery de Bohun Earle of Herford and Eva, to Cantilupe, alias VVilliam de Canlow: Of the line of these Mansfields, I meane of Vvilliam Earle Marshall of England, the pedigree & discent of this Noble samilie, the properties and purports holds of the daughters. I have seene sundry copies, Nicholas Magwir, Bishop of Leighlen persected

perfected an abstract of the division of the land in Ireland, among the daughters and the particularities thereof, which is to be seene in the red towne-booke of Kilkenny: and now forwards with the history, from whence I have somewhat digressed.

Anno 1190. (in which yeere the Citie of Dublin, by foule mishap, was fired to ashes) King Richard set all in a readinesse for his journey into the holy land, gathered masses of money together, and among o. thers it is remembred, what a fumme of money he received of Hugh Pudsey a Norman, and Bishop of Durham, that gave an inestimable fumme to be made an Earle, whom the Antiquaries doe condemne for his intolerable pride, and damnable covetousnesse, whom the King also flowted after hee had received the coune; saying, Loe, I have made a young Earle of an old Bilhop: In this voyage and preparation for the recovery of Ierusalem, and the ayde of the Christians in Asia, there went Fredericke, Emperour of Almaine, Richard, King of England, Philip of France, VVilliam of Cicilia, Otho, Duke of Burgundie, the Venetians, Pisanes, Frisones, Danes and Flemings. Now that the King is on his journey abroad, let us talke a little (gentle Reader) of little Iohn at home: Stanihurst leads me into the history, and reporteth that Anno 1189. he came into Ireland, and sojourned at Dublin; the storie goeth (and especially in Hector Bostins, and Iohn Major, Antiquaries of Scotland) how that in those daies, there were many outlawes in the North parts of England; of these outlawes, Robin Hood, and little Iohn were Chiefetaines: It was faid of Robin Hood that he was an Earle, and after outrages by him committed, he kept the woods; his company was of some hundred persons, all chosen and picked Archers, of singular strength to handle their weapons, and such as durst encounter with 400 others: they robbed none burthe rich, as Tanners, and Grassers, and Vsurers, and Bishops, Pricits, and fat Abbots; they shed no bloud, they killed no man, releeved themselves and the poore also with their spoyles. Robin Hood after many theevish feats, fell sicke, went into a Nunnery in Scotland, to be let bloud, where he was berrayed, and bled to death: wherupon the company brake, and the crue dispersed themselves, every man to hist for himselfe; little Iohn came to Ireland, with many of his confederates, and found in the woods, enough to fit his humour, and fell to much to his old occupation, that he was faine to flye the land. In the end, he went to Scotland, and there died. There are memorableacts reported of him, which I hold not for truth, that he would shoot an arrow a mile off, and a great deale more; but them I leave among the lyes of the land.

Anno 1191. the Monasterie de ingo Dei, was sounded Anno 1193. King Richard after many most valiant exploits in the Holy Land, (the which I hold not so necessary for this place) after the drowning of Fredericke the Emperour, and after the sudden and envious depar-

eurc

ture of Philippe King of France; hearing the conspiracy of the said Philippe, and the treason of his brother John aspiring to the Crowne of England; made peace with the Saladine for three yeres, and with a small company returning homewards, was taken prisoner by Leopold, Duke of Austria, who brought him to Henry the Emperour, and there kept him in prison a yeere and 5. months, untill he had paid his

ranfome, which was Anno 1194.

Hee was received into England with the joy and applause of all true harts, and having setled the affaires of the Realme in due sort; he went into France, where he had much a doe with the French King, the which for brevities fake, I doe omit, and yet one memorable act of his I may not omit, and thusit was: There came unto him one Falco a Priest, who with great courage and boldnesse faid: Then halt, o Mighty King three daughters very vicious and of evill disposition, take good beed of them, and betimes provide them good husbands; to whom she King in rage answered: theu errant lyar, and shamelesse bypocrit, thou knowest not where thon art, nor what thou sayest, I weene thou art not well in thy wits, for I have never a daughter, as the world will beare me witnesse, get thee out of our presence. To whom Fulco replyed, If it like your Grace, I lye not, but fay truth, for you have three daughters which continually frequent your Court, and (more is the pitty) wholly possesse your person; I meane, Pride, Covetonsnesse and Leachery. The King thereat smiled and called his Lords and Barons unto him, and related what Fulco had delivered unto him, and thereupon gave his resolution: Here before you all I doe presently bestom my three daughters. First, I give my daughter swelling Pride, to the proud Templars : my greedy daughter Avarice, so the covetous Order of the Cistercian Monkes: and my daughter Leachery, to the wanton Prelats of the Church. This noble King went to befiege a Town called Chalus Cheverell in Poirou, in the confines of Britaine, where unlooked for, from the wall of the Towne, he was wounded with a venomed arrow out of a Crosbow; whereof shortly after hee died: afore his death hee fent for him, that was the cause of his death, forgave him, yea & gave him money in his purse; but after his death he was apprehended and cut off with cruell tortures. Lastly, King Ria chard tooke order for his buriall, thus he bequeathed his body to Fount Ebrad, there to lye at his fathers feet, whom in his life time he had offended; his heart to Roan that had alwayes been true unto him; and his bowels to Chalus Cheverell where he tooke his death, for that filth was fit for them, that had beene unto him both falleand rebellious, Mathew Paris hath is Epitaph thus.

The conceit is that Chalus wascalus lucis.

Ad Chalus cecidit Rex, regni cardo Richardus, His ferus, his humilis, bis agnue, his Leopardus

Casus erat lucis Chalus. Per secula nomen Non intellectum fuerat, (ed nominis omen Non patuit, res clausa fuit ; sed luce cadente Proditt in lucem pro casu lucis adempta.

Againe of his legacie.

Pictavus exta ducis sepelit, tellusque Chalutis Corpus dat claudi sub marmore fontis Ebrandis Neustria tuque tegis cor inexpugnabile Regis; Sic loca per trina se sparsit tanta ruina: Nec fuit hoc funus, cui sufficeret locus unus.

John the fift sonne of Henry the second, Earle Morson, alias Morsaigne and Lord of Ireland, as formerly hath beene delivered, by the gift of his brother King Riebard the firb, Earle of Cornwall, Dorfet, Sommerset, Nortingham, Darby, Lancaster, and in the right of his marriage, Earle of Glocester, was Crowned at Westminster, King of England, Anno 1199. Hee was first married to Ifabell (whom the Britaines called Hawife, and the Cornish Avis) daughter to Robert Earle of Glocester, who for that they were found within the third degree, were divorced; so that King John left both the Lady Isabell and the Earledome of Glocester, whereupon by the advice of Philip King of France, he matched in holy wedlocke with Ifabell daughter to Amerie, Earle of Angolesme. This Isabell (if not married) had beene affianced to Hugh Brune, Earle of March, a Noble man of Aquitaine, who gave battaile in that quarell to King Iehn, and was discomfitted, yet after the death of King John, hee had her to

Immediatly upon the Coronation of Henry the third (who fuccecded him) broyles beganne in England, France and Ireland, which had every way a tragicall end. Bruse in England, Arthure in France, and Courcy in Ireland, are testimonies thereof: But orderly of these as the Nature of the Historie requires; Arthure the sonne of leffry Plantagenet nephew to King John, lived when his uncle John afpired to the Crowne, being 16. yeeres of age, he was affianced to a daughter of Philippe the French King, the faid Philippe Knighted him in the field; he was Duke of Britain, Earle of Anjou, Poiners, Maine and Turrow of Normandy. He did homageunto his uncle for some, and to Philippe for the reft; his uncle had him in Icalousie, first lest that in processe of time, he would make claime to the Crowne: secondly, for that he adhered too much to the French, and the young Prince upon conference, with bold spirit told him, that he did him wrong, and that hee was bound in bonour to deliver unto him the Crowne of England, with all that thereuntoappertained. Shortly after, it fell

Cafees

182

out that King Iohn took this Arthure confederate against him with William de Bruse, Hugh Brune and others, imprisoned him in Falaise in Normandy; from thence he was brought to Roane, and there clapt in the Tower, under the custody of Robert de Veipont, where shortly after he finished his life, whether by leaping into the ditch, thinking to make his escape, or by meane of some privy hand, which murther it is not as yet agreed upon Vinam (laith Mat. Paris) non ut fama refert invida; by occasion whereof, K. Iohn was ever after had in great suspition, whether justly or unjustly the Lord knoweth King Iohn fearing the secret practiles of his adversaries, and doubting the revolt of his Barons, fent for his further security, unto those whom he most suspected for hostages and pledges of their loialty, and among others, unto William de Bruse a Normandborne, but Lord of Brechnek, faith Guttin Owen, and a great commander in South-wales. The wife, like a quicke Dame, taking the answer out of her husbands mouth, gave this round speech; that shee would not give any of her sonnes to King John, who already had slaine and murthered his owne nephew, Arthur. These words being lavishly delivered unto the King, fet him in fuch a heat of displeasure against her husband (though hee had rebuked her sharply for the same) that the L. Brufe with his wife and children fled the Realme, and got them unto Ireland for safeguard of their lives; and when King 10hn came unto Ireland, they fled to the Ile of Man, where they were apprehended and sent to the Castle of Windsore in England, and there (as the common fame went) familhed to death. But William de Bruse himselfe escaped the hands of the King in Ireland, and sled into France, died at Corbell and was buried in Paris. The next that comes upon the stage is Sir Iohn de Courcy Earle of Vister, Lord of Conaght, that had lastly beene L. Liev. of Ireland, who governing the land with great circumspection, together with Sir Hugh de Lacy the younger, who maligned him fecretly, and envied his prosperity, in fo much that hee accused him to King John, saying, that he laid to the Kings charge the murthering of his nephew Arthure; whereupon King John sent for him into England; and gave commission unto Sir Hugh de Lacy, and his brother Walter Delacy, to attach his person. Sir Iohn de Courcy having secret intelligence of their drift, kept himselse aloose : Sir Hugh Delacy finding that levied an army, and invaded Vifter; the Country role against him and drove him to flie. Then Lacy praclaimed him traitor, and marched towards him with all the forces he could make. Courcy in like fort prepared for his comming.

At Dune they met and fought a cruell battaile, where the field was all blood, and many flaine on both fides, but in the end the victory fell to Courcy, and Lacy went back with shame enough. Then Lacy practiced how he might betray him.

It

It is faid among the Irish, that Courcy offred the combat, and that Lacy refused it aleadging that it was not for him, that represented the Kings person, to hazard his life with an inferior, being a subject and a traytor. Lucy makes proclamation, promising a large reward to him that should bring him in Courcy either alive or dead, but it would not be; then privily he dealt with some of his servants that if they would undertake the apprehension of him, they should have great rewards ; it was concluded, and this advice the betraiers gave. Sir Iohn deCourcy is a mighty man in armes, and of fuch strength, that no one man dares be so hardy as lay hand upon hims and againe lice is alwaics both in publick and privat well provided : Yet we can direct you a course to bring your purpose to effect upon good Friday yearly he weares no armes, but is wholly given to divine contemplation, and commonly walketh all solitary round about the Churchyard of Dune: if you provide a troope of horsemen in a readinesse, and fend your espiall before, there you shall have him, apprehend him and worke your will, and hither they came, and laid hands upon him. Courcy now unarmed and altogether diffressed; ranne to a wooden croffe that flood in the Church yard, tooke the pole therof and laid about him lustily ; Gourcy at that time had but a few attending on him, and they armelesse; of which number, were two young Gentlemen, the sonnes of Sir Amorick Saint Laurence which were flaine; to bee short, the Author of the Booke of Houth reporteth, that Courcy in that Skirmish slew 13. of Lacy his men, that died not upon the Croffe, but under the Croffe, but in the end he was carried away, conveied beyond the seas, clapt in the Towre of London, and condemned to perpetuall imprisonment: Whereupon Lacy for that fervice, had the Earledome of Vlster given him, and the Iudases that betrayed their Master had their hire. Then they craved of Sir Hugh de Lacy a pasport into England, with the relation of the good service they had done in Ireland, which was granted upon condition, that upon the paine of death, they should never returne into Ireland againe, neither to open the same afore it were demanded of them. It was as followeth.

Shine of IRELAND.

I Hugh de Lacy Lord luftice of Ireland, servant to my dread Soversigne Lord King John: To all them that shall read these few lines, greeting; know you that these men, whose names are under written, scrued sometimes Sir John de Courcy late Barle of Vister, but now in durance in the Towre of London, and for a summe of money, betraied their owne Mafter into my hand. I deeme them no better then Indas the traiter: how bardly seever I have conceived of Course, I hold them at boufand times more damnable traitors. Wherefore let no fubjett within any of the Kings dominions, give them any entertainment, but fit in their faces, and suffer them to roque about and wander as Iemes. He provided them a barke, with faile and victuall, but gave

them no Pilots nor sea-faring men, for want of skill they could not take the seas, but were tolled with winde and weather, along the Coast, at length the Tyde brought them into the river of Corke; they were no fooner landed, but they were apprehended, examined, and brought to Sir Hugh de Lacy, and forthwith all foure hanged cheeke

by jole.

Not long after, there fell some difference betweene Ichn King of England, and Philip, King of France, for the right of some Forting Normandie, who to avoyde the shedding of Christian bloud, agreed of each fide to put it to a combat; of King Philips part there was a French man in readinesses King John upon the sudden wist not what to doe for a Champion to encounter with him; at length, one attending upon his person, enformed him that there was one Course in the Towre of London, the onely man in his dominions (if hee would undertake it) to answer the challenge. King Iohn joyfull of this, sent the first, yea second, and third time, promising large rewards, and rich gifts, and that it flood him upon as farre as the honour of his Crowncand kingdome did reach, to make good the combat. Courcy answered very frowardly, (the which wastaken in good part in regard of the urgent necessitie) that he would never fight for him, neither for any such as he was, that he was not worthy to have one drop of bloud spilt for him; that he was not able to requite him the wrongs he had done him, neither to restore him the hearts ease he had bereaved him of: yet notwithstanding all the premises, he was willing, and would with all expedition, be ready to venture his life in desence of the Crowne and his country. Whereupon it was a greed, that he should be dyeted, apparrelled, and armed to his content, and that his owne sword should be brought him out of Ireland. The day came, the place appointed, the Liste provided, the scaffolds fet up, the Princes with their nobilitie of each fide, with thousands in expectation. Forth comes the French Champion, gave a turne, and rests him in his tent: They sent for Courcy, who all this while was truffing of himselfe about with strong poynts, and answered the mefsengers, if any of their company were to goe to such a banquet, I thinke he would make no great hafte. Forth he comes, gave a turne, and went into his Tent. When the Trumpets founded to battaile, forth come the combatants, and viewed each other. Courcy beheld him with a wonderfull sterne countenance, and passed by. The French man not liking his grimme looke, the strong proportion and feature of his person, stalked still along, and when the Trumpers sounded the last charge, Courcy drew out his sword, aud the French man ranne away, and conveyed him to Spaine. Whereupon they founded victory, the people clapt their hands, and cast up their cappes; King Philip desired King Iohn that Courcy might bee called before them, to shew some part of his strength and manhood, by a blow up-

on a Helmer, it was agreed, a stake was fee in the ground, and a shire ofmaile, and a Helmerthereon; Courcy drew his Iword looked wonderfull flernely upon the Princes, cleft the helmet, the thirt of maile, and the stake so farre in, that none could pull it out but himselfe. Then the Princes demanded of him, what hee meant to looke fo fowrely upon them; his answer was, if hee had miffed his blow upon the blocke he would have cut off both the Kings heads! All that hee faid was taken in good part: King John discharged him out of allihis troubles, gave him great gifts, and reftored him to his former pofferfions in Ireland. It is written further, that hereupon hee failed into England, came to Weltchester, offered himselfe to the sea, and was put backe againe fifteene times by contrary windes which role upon a sodaine, to the English shore. And in the booke of Housh it is delivered, that upon every repulse, the night following, the was admonished in a vision, not to attempt the leas, for to faile into Ireland, and that he should never set foot upon any land there; and withall that the reason was yeelded thus. Courcy, thou hast done very ill, for thou haft pulled downe the mafter, and fer up the fervants for he had translated the Cathedrall Church, and the Prebendaries of the bleffed Trinitie in Dune, into an Abbey of blacke Monkes, brought thicher from Chester, and consecrated the same to the honour of Saint Patricke. VV hereupon remembring himselfe that he had done very ill in taking the name from God to a creature, gave lentence upon himfelf. that he was worthily punished. Immediately hee altered his course. went into France, and theredied: now forwards with the biffory, according to the due course of time in the raigne of King John, so the booke of Honth reportethe land whose father was the base some

of King Henry the first, founded the Abbey of Cownall ; hee came into Iteland with the first Conquerours, being a young stripling, and is highly commended by Cambrensis for his great valour, and worthinesse in martiall prowesse: he lest this world, Anno 1220, his Epitaph I finde in Iohn Clynng. he was and broken W gu polison

and the find they have hearth in authorit and the state of Conduntur tumulo Meyleri nobilis offd, man odagainition and Indomitus domitor totius gentis Hiberna. Taldo mint an angonid

one area, for founding because the Mercattery of Bronard Intombed are the bones of him they Noble Melen call, most AVho was the tameleffe tamer of the Irish nationall. Manigue

the forms time, in this views 2000 the below there of Pette was forms Anno 1307. in the seventeenth yeere of the raigne of King tobn, Theobald Fire Walter, Fire Gilbert, Becket the fire Lord Butler of Ireland, founded the Monastery of Wethencia, alias Wethran, alias Wethenoya; alias Voghney, in the country of Limericathis difference I finde in Dowling, Grace, and others in surround bestove all the

Frenklik

Anno 1206. Saint Monon an Irish man, and a Martyr, (Molanus layeth him downe among the Saints in Flanders) flourished; he is reputed the Patron of Nassonia, under the command of the Abbot of Saint Hubert, in the Lordship of Audianum, he was the Disciple of Saint Remalch, and Saint Iohn Agnus, Bishop of Trajectum, and of Irish birth this Monon was murthered at Ardevenna, (faith Molanie) by some bloudy massacres, & lyeth buried at Nassonia, in the Church which he there had founded.

A rebellion la Thurles,

Anno 1208. (I findeit in Dowlinge and Grace) Sir Hugh de Lacy the younger, being Lord Justice, entred into Thurles, where the country being in rebellion, offered him battaile, he laid fiege to Castle Meiler, wanne it, brake it downe, and made it even with the grounds but he lost there more men, (say the Irish) then he tooke away with him, the chiefe Rebell was Ieffery Mac Moris, alias Morish.

Blacke Monday:

> King Iohn in Ireland.

Anne 1209. the occasion of blacke Munday, and the originali remembrance thereof role at Dublin. The Citic of Dublin by reason of some great mortality, being wasted and desolate, the inhabitants of Bristoll flocked thither to inhabit, who after their country manner, upon Holy dayes, some for love of the fresh ayre, some to avoyd idlenesse, some other for passime, pleasure, and gamings sake, flocked out of the towne towards Gullen wood upon Munday in Easter weeke. The Birnnes and Tooles, (the mountaine enemies) like VVolves lay in ambush for them, and upon espiall finding them unarmed, fell upon the. & flue some 200. persons, besides women & children, which they led in their hands, although shortly after, the towne was upon the report thereof, eftloones peopled againe by Bristolians; yet that dismall day is yeerely remembred, and solemnly observed by the Maior, Sheriffes, and Gitizens, with feast and banquer, and pitching up of tents in that place in most brave fort, daring the enemy upon his perill, not to bee so hardy, as once to approach neere their feafting campe, and whereas the Irish heretofore accounted Tuesday their fatall and infortunate day, (for Lymric was twice wonne, VVexford yeelded up, Waterford was befreged, and Dublin was facked upon a Tuesday) now they have Munday in memory, making difference of dayes, not fitting the minde of the Apolle, which forbade the superstitions or vaine observations of daies, &c. Gal.a.

Anno 1211, (or somewhat before) the Monastery of Grenard was founded by Richard Tute, who shortly after miscarried at Athlone, by the fall of a Turrer, and was buried in the same Monastery. About the same time, in the yeere 1209. the Monastery of Forte was sound

ded by Walter Lacy, Lord of Meth.

Anno 1210. and the twelfth yeere of his raigne, King John came into Ireland, and landed at Waterford with an huge army, marvellous well appointed to pacific that rebellious people, that were univerfally revolted, burning, spoyling, preying, and massacring the English

English. Fabian and Graffion alleage the cause that moved the Irishmen to this rebellion, to have been for that the King endeword to lay grievous taxes upon them towards his aide in the warres againft the French King, which they could not brooke, and therefore rofe in armes against their Soveraigne. When hee came to Dublin the whole Countrey fearing his puillance, craved peace and flocked unto him along the fea cost, the Champian Countries and remote places receiving an oath to bee true and faithfull unto him. There were 20: (Reguli) of the chiefest rulers within Ireland, which came to the King to Dublin, and there did him homage and fealty, as appertained. Harding nameth them Lord o Neale, and many more. Walfingham remembreth Catelus King of Conaghe, it foreeth it not though they misse the right names of place and person; it is a fault in manner common to all foraigne writers.

After this hee marched forwards into the land, and tooke into his hands, divers Fortreffes, and ftrong Holds of his enemies, that fled before him, for feare to be apprehended; as William le Bruse, Mathilda his wife, William their fonne with their traine, of whom I spake before; also Walter de Lacy Lord of Meath, and Hugh de Lacy Earle of Vifter, and Lord Iuftice of Ireland, fearing his prefence, fled into France; their exaction, oppression and tyranny was intolerable. Likewise they doubted how to answer the death of Sir John de Courcy Lord of Ratheny and Kilbarrock within 3: miles of Dublin, whom they had murthered, of especiall malice and deadly ha-

tred.

First, for that he was of the house of Sir Iohn de Courey, Earle of

Vister, (whom the Lacies alwaies maligned.)

Secondly, for that he had made grievous complaints of them in England to King lobn, the tryall whereof they could not abide. Voengland to King 100m, the tryan whereofthey could not able of 10bn Graye B. on the fight of the Lacies, King 10bn made 10bn Gray Bilhop of Norwich Norwich his deputy. Of these Lacies it is further remembred in the L. Deputy. Booke of Honth, and other antiquities; how that in France they obscured themselves, in the Abbey of S. Taurin, and gave themselves to manual labour, as digging, delving, gardening, planting, and greffing for daily wages, the space of 2. or 2. yeares; the Abbot was well pleased with their service, and upon a day (whether it were by reason of some inkling or secret intelligence given him, or otherwise) demaunded of them of what birth and parentage they were, and what Country they came from; when they had acquainted him with the whole, hee bemoned their case, and undertooke to become a witter unto the King for them in a word hee obtained the Kings favour for them thus farre, that they were put to their fyne, and restored to their fromer possessions; so that Walter de Lacy paid for the Lordship of Meath 2500. Markes, and Hagh his brother, for Vifter and Conaght a greater fumme.

Hagh

Hugh de Lacy, in remembrance of this kindnesse which the Abbot shewed them, tooke his nephew, his brothers sonne with them into Ireland, one Alured, whom he Knighted and made Lord of the Dengle. The Monkes also, which out of that Monastery hee had brought with him into Ireland, hee honoured greatly, and gave them entertainment in Four, the which Walter De Lacy had formerly builded and bus commun Court as a dec se

King Iohn having pacified the land, ordained that the English Lawes should bee used in Ireland, appointed 12. English shires with Sheriffes and other Officers, to rule the same, according unto the English Ordinances; hee reformed the Coine and made it uniforme, (some say it was Gray his Deputy) of like weight and finenes and made it currant as well in England as in Ireland

When hee had disposed of his affaires, and ordred all things at his pleasure, he tooke thesea againe, with much triumph, and landed

in England the 20. day of August.

ingland the 30. day of August.

Anno 1213. When the French King by instigation of Feneren. 2. Bishop of Rome, prepared to invade England: King John eftfoone understanding thereof, made provision accordingly to anfwer his enterprise, and among others (the cause why the story is here inserted) Holimbed writeth how that to his aid the Bishop of Norwich, the Kings Deputy of Ireland, levied an Army of 300. foot well appointed, beside horsemen which arrived in England to the encouragement of the whole Campe. And as the French was frustrate of his purpose, so they shortly returned with great joy to

their native Country.
In the same yeere, Viz. 1213, Iohn Comin Archbilliop of Dublin departed this life, and was buried in the Quire of Christ-Church, whom Henry Loudres succeeded in the dayes of this King John. This Henry builded the Castle of Dublin, and was made Lord suflice of Ireland. His tenants nic-named him Schorchbill or Schorc-

villen upon this occasion:

Hee being peaceably stalled in his Bishopprike, summoned all his tennants and farmers at a certain day appointed, to make their perfonall appearance before him, and to bring with them fuch evidences and writings as they enjoyed their holds by; the tenants of the day appointed, appeared, thewed their evidences to their Landlord, mistrusting nothing; hee had no sooner received them, but afore their faces, upon a suddain cast them all into a fire, secretly provided for the purpose; this fact amazed some that they became filent, moved others to a stirring choller and furious rage, that they regarded neither place nor person, but brake into irreverent speeches: Thou an Archbishap, nay thou art a Schorevillen an other drew his weapon and faid, as good for me kill as be killed, for when my evidences are burned, and my living taken away from me, I am killed. The Bilhop

being thus tumult, and the imminent danger, whipe out at a backe doore: His Chaplains, Registers, and Summoners, were well knockt, and some of them left for dead. They threatned to fire the house over the Bilhops head; some meane was made for the present time to pacific their outrage, with faire promifes, that all hereafter should be to their owne contents upon this they departed, the intent of the promises I cannot learne, othersome inveigh against it, but in fine, complaint thereof being made to Henry 3. the King thought fo hardly of the course, that he removed him from his Justiceship, and hardly of the course, that nevemoved marrons ins whitecome, and placed in his roome, Maurice Fire Girald, of whom hereafter. This Girald Lord Loudreds was buried in Christ Church and and and and and

In the same yeerealso King John being mightily distressed through the practiles of hir Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, Monkes, Priests of his dominions, and the Barons of his Kingdome revolting, and the inward hatred of the French King, with forraigne powers intending an open invalion, was driven, to prevent further mischiefe, as I finde in Polychronicon, to furrender his Crowne from his head, and to fubject his Kingdomes of England and Ireland, tributarie to the See of Rome, and as his client, vasfall and feodaric to that See, to hold them of Innocentius the Bilhop: againe, England being interdicted, and Ireland likewise, werdafter released upon agreement, composition, and Charter, and homage, as in the Chronicle of England more at large appeareth.

The death of King Ishn, and the manner of it, Treferre to the Englifh Chronicles. After his decenfe, Henry the third, his eldeft fonne,

aged about nine yeeres, began his raigne, Anno 1216.

Anne 1220. and the fourth yeere of Henry the third, fo writeth Clyn. Dowling, and Grace, together with the English Antiquities, in their Irish collections; all Meth was wonderfully afflicted and wafled by reason of the private quarrels and civill warres betweene William Earle Marshall, Earle of Penbroke, &c. and Sir Hugh de Lasy. Earle of Vister, and Lord of Connaght. Trimme was belieged, and brought to a lamentable plight, and when the rage and furie of those garboiles was somewhat mitigated and appealed, after the shedding of much bloud, the same yeere to prevent afterclaps, and subsequent calamities, the Castle of Trim was builded.

About this time, certaine worthy persons of great same and renowne, to wit, Henry Londreds, Roger Peppard, and William Peppard, Lords successively, de falta Salmonis, and Meiler Fitz Henry, one of the first Conquerours, paid nature her due, sinne her debt, and ended

their daies.

It appeareth in Staniburft, that the same yeere that Henry Londreds died, viz. 1220. the Castle of Dublin was builded: I meane the walles foure square, or quadrangle wife, but the foure Turrets and the other afterwards. Sie Henry Sidney is faid to have builded the in-

blin buildeth.

Caffle of Du-

Schorchbill.

ner lodgings, in whole eternall commendation, I finde in the faid star

Gesta libri reserunt multorum clara virorum,

Laudis & in chartu sigmata sixa manent:

Verum Sidnai laudeishae saxa loquuntur,

Nec jacet in solis gloriatanta libris.

Si libri pereant, bomines remanere valebunt;

Si pereant bomines ligna manere queant;

Lignaque si pereant, non argo saxa peribunt,

Saxaque si pereant tempore, tempus erit,

Si pereat tempus, minime consumitur avum,

Quod cum principio, sed sine sine manet.

Dum libri sorent, bomines dum vivere possunt,

Dum quoque cum lignis saxa manere valent,

Dum remanet tempus, duna denique remanet avum,

Laus tua Sydnai, digna perire nequit.

Anno 1224: Abbatia de Albo tractio was founded. By generall consent of Antiquaries, after the death of Henry Loudres, spoken of before. Maurice Fitz Gerald was by Henry the third, made Lord suffice of Ireland, and afterwards fell in the Kings displeasure, and was removed, but the yeeres they agree not upon, wherein I finde great discord.

The English Chronicle of Ireland delivereth that hee was made Lord Instice Anno 1228. Florilegus and Holinshed write, that he was removed from his Insticeship, Anno 1245, and Iohn Bitz Ieffery substituted in his roome. Mathem Paris writeth that hee was removed, Anno 1248 but howsoever they have mistaken the yeeres, or whether the fault of the Printer crept in, it forceth not; I am to deliver to the reader, the truth of the history, and the most worthy service of this Noble man, with the yeeres and the time as necreas I can.

Anno 1229, in the raigne of Henry the third, Maurice Fitz Girald being Lord Iustice, (Mathew Paris and Holinshed write the storie) one Stephen Chapplen, and Nuntio to Pope Gregory, came to King Henry with the Popes Apostolike Mandates and procuration letters, requiring of spirituall & temporall throughout England, Ireland, and Wales, the tenth of all their moveables; to the maintenance of his warres against Fredericke the Emperour. At the day and place appointed when the King and his Lords spirituall and temporall met together, and the Nuntio had read his letters, the King was silent, & reputed (saith mine Author) as consenting thereto; the Earles and Barons (saith Paris) & all the Laytic said flatly that they would give the Pope no tenths, neither subject their Baronies and locall possessions to the Church of Rome; the Clergie after three or source dayes

dayes deliberation, fearing the thunderbolts of excommunication, with grudging and murmurs, and many a bitter curse, yeelded, yet Ramiphus, Earle of Chester, alone, stood stoutly in the cause, and would not permit the Clergie of his country to become in bondage, neither to contribute the said tenths, though England, Wales, Scotland, and Ireland were compelled to pay. Ireland sent likewise after their money, Irish curses, for they were driven at the worst hand to sell unto the mercilesse Merchants, their Cowes, Hackneyes, Caddoes, and Aqua vitæ, to make present payment, and were driven in that extremitie, to pawne and sell their Cups, Chalices, Copes, Altar-clothes and vestments.

Anno 1230. (as I finde recorded in the booke of Houth) Hubertus de Burgo was Lord Iustice of Ireland, as I gather, in the absence of Maurice Fitz Girald, to whom the King gave the land and Connaught, and made him Earle of Connaught, and shortly after, ob probitatem & fidelititem ex imiam, so I reade in Tpodigma Neufiria, being called into England for his uprightnesse and singular side. lity, was made governour of the King, Lord Justice of England, and Earle of Kent, by the consent of all the Peeres of the Realme; afterwards as the course of this world wheeles about, hee fell into the Kings displeasure, so that he called him old traytor, (and in his rage would have runne him thorow with his fword, had not the Earle of Chester and others runne betweene) for that (saith Stow) hee had taken five thousand markes of the Queene of France, to hinder his purpose; to avoyd the Kings displeasure, this Hubert fled to the Chappell of Brandwood in Essex, where he was taken, and by commandement of the King, sent to the Tower of Landon; all his friends forfooke him, none answered for him burthe Archbishop of Dubling wherein we may behold as in a Glasse, the disposition of seyned friends in former ages, who in the Spring of a mans felicity, like Swallowes, will flye about him, but when the winter of adversitie nippeth. like Snailes they keepe within their shels: at length this Hubert was fomewhat reconciled to the Kings favour, that he was inlarged, yet banished the Court: lastly, he ended his miseries at his Mannor house of Bansted in Surry, and was buried at the Church of the Fryers Preachers at London, which was then in Holborne; unto the which Church he gave his noble Palace at Westminster, the which afterwards Walter Grey the Archbishop of Yorke bought of them, and made it his Inne, fince commonly called Yorke House, but now White-Hall So farre Stow, Holinfled, and others.

The yeere aforesaid, I finde one leffery March, alias Maurish, (so Holinshed calleth him) in Mathem Paris, Galfridus de Marisso, so have beene Lord Instice of Ireland: so it may be in the absence of Maurice Fitz Girald, who made three journeys to King Henry the third; one with great power out of Ireland to ayde him beyond the seas;

fecondly,

secondly, to cleare himselfe of the death of Richard Marshall Earle of Pembrook: lastly, with Irish forces against the Welshmen. Mat. Paris and Holinshed, make report of his good service; How that when an Irish petit King in Conaght, understanding that both the King of England, and the Earle Marshall and Maurice Fitz Gerald were gone over into France, and fo Ireland left without any great aide of men of warre, on the English part, raised a mighty Army, and with the same entred into the Marches and borders of the English dominion. spoiling and burning the Country before him. And how that Ieffray de Maurisco then Lord Iustice, being thereof advertized; called to him Walter de Lacy, Lord of Meth, and Richard de Burgh, affembling therewithall an hugh Army, the which he divided into three parts, appointing the said Walter de Lacy and Richard de Burgh with the two first parts, to lye in ambush within certain Woods, through the which he purposed to draw the enemies. And marching forth with the third, which he reserved to his owne government, he profered battaile to the Irishmen, the which when they saw but one battaile of the Englishmen, boldly assaid the same.

The Englishmen according to the order appointed, faining as though they had fled and so retired still backe, till they had trained the Irish within danger of their other two battailes which comming forth upon them, did fer on them eagerly, whilest the other which seemed before to fly, returned back againe, and set upon them in like manner; by meanes whereof, the Irish men being in the midst were beaten downe : if they flood to it, they were before and behind flaine; if any offered to fly hee was overtaken, thus in all parts they were utterly vanquished, with the losse of 20000. Irish, and the King of Conaght taken and committed to prison. This Noble Ieffray de Marisco (of whom Holinshed writeth) a man some time in great honour and possessions in Ireland, fell into the displeasure of the King, was banished; who after he had remained long in exile, suffred great miserie, ended the same by naturall death: Thus the un-Stable Wheele goeth round about : and yet I may not fo leave it hee bad a sonne called William de Maurisco, who together with the father (the Inflice of God requiring the same) came to most shamefull ends: Matthew the Munke of Westminster and Matthew Paris the Munke of Saint Albones, doe write the Story: While the King was beyond feas, a certain noble man of Irish birth to wit Willielmus de Maurisco, an exiled and banished man, the some of Ieffray de Maurisco, for some bainous offence laid to bis charge, keps him selfe in the Isle of Eundy, not farre from Briftall, preying, robbing and ftealing, as a notorious Pirate; at length being apprehended, together with 1 7. of his confederacy, and by the Kings commandement adjudged to cruell death; be was drawne at London with his consederats, at horse tailes to the Gibbet, and there banged and quartered. His father one of the mightiest men of Ireland.

Ireland, by name Galfridus de Maurisco, hearing thereof, fled into Scotland, and scarce there could heelye safe; who pinnig away with grief and forrow, some after ended a miserable life, with wished death; againe after in another place he writeth, Galfridus de Maurisco reckened among ft the most Noble of Ireland, an exile and a banished man, died pitifully, yet not to be pitied; whom being banished Ireland, expulsed out of Scotland and fled out of England, France received for a begger, where hee ended an unforsunate life, after the most shamefull death of bis sonne Willielmus de Maurisco.

These things therefore I deliver more at large unto the hearers, that every man may wey with himselfe, what end is alloted unto treason, and especially being committed against the sacred person of a Prince. His father against Richard Earle and Marshall in Ireland, and bis fon William against the King, unadvisedly and unfortunatly adventured

to practice mischiefe.

Paris addeth the name of this William was very odious unto the King, for so much it was reported, that through the councell of leffray his father, he had conspired the death of the King, and that he had traitorously fent that varlet, which came in the night scalon, to Woodstock to flay the King, and last of all, that hee had killed at London in presence of the King; one Clemens, a Clerk, messenger of some Nobleman of Ireland, that came to informe the King a. gainst him.

About this same time, florished a Learned man of Irish birth, one Cornelius Historicus, so called, because hee was an exquisit antiquary Bale: and Staniburst have briefly written his life and his commandations out of Helior Boetius, who was greatly furthered by this Gornelius, to the perfecting of the Scotish History, hee wrote as

Multarum rerum Cronicon. lib. 17

Hans About this time, Viz. Anno 1230. there role a doubt in Ireland, so that they fent to England to be therein resolved: the King, by his learned Councell answered as followeth.

Henry by the grace of God, &c. King of England, Lord of Ireland, Duke of Normandy and Guian, &c. Trufty and welbeloved Gerald Fitz Maurice Lufticer of Ireland, greeting V bereas certien Knights of the parties of Ireland lately informed us that when any land doth discend unto sisters, within our dominion of Ireland, the Instices errant in these parties are in doubt, whether the younger sifter ought to hold of the claeft fifter, and dee homage unto her or not. And for a finech as the faid Knights have made instance, to bee certified how it had beene afed before mithin our Realme of England in like cafezat their instance we doe you wit that such a Law and Custome is in England in this case, that if any holding of us in chief happen to die, having daughters to hu heires our ancestors, and we after the death of the father, have

alway had and received bomage of all the daughters, and every of them in this case did hold of us in chiefe. And if they happned to be within age, we have alway had the ward and marriage of them, and if hee bee remant to another Lord, the lifters being within age, the Lord shall have the ward and manage of them all, and the eldest onely shall doe ho. mage for herfelfe, and all her fifers, and when the other fifters come to full age, they shall doe their service so the Lord of the fee, by the bands of the eldest lister: yet shall not the eldest by this occasion, exact of her younger fifters bomage, ward, or any other subjection: for when they be all sisters, and in manner, as one heire to one inheritance; if the eldest should have homage of the other lifter, or demand ward, then the inhea risance should seeme to be divided so, that the eldest sister should seeme to be segnioresse and tennant of inberitance, simul & somel, that is to say, heire of ber owne part, and segnioresse to her listers, which could not stand well together in this case, for the eldest can demand no more then ber lifters; but the chiefe meafe by reason of her auncienty. Moreover, if the eldest lister should take homage of the ronger she should be as a fegnioresse to them all, and should have the ward of them and their heires. which should be none other, but but to cast the Lambe so the Wolfe to be de voured.

And therefore wee command you that you canfe the aforefaid out flomes that bee used within our Realme of tingland, in this case to bee proclaimed throughout our dominions of Ireland, and to be straightly kept and observed, in testimony whereof, fyc. I witnesse my selfe as Westminster, the ninth of February, the thirteeneth geere of our Raigne.

Anno 1233. or as some will have it, 1234. the 7. of Aprill, there appeared as it were source Sunnes, besides the naturali Sunne, of a red cosour, and a great Circle of Christall colour; from the sides whereof went out halse Circles; in the divisions whereof, the source Sunnes went forth. There followed that yeere great warre and cruell bloodshed, & general great disturbance throughout England, Wales, and Ireland, so write Matthew Park and Stow.

This troublesome yeere died Gnalter Lasy Lord of Meath, leaving behind him two daughters, coheires to inherit his pollession (to wit) Margret that was maried to the Lord Theobald Verdonand Mathilda married to Ieffray Genevile.

Amids these troubles in the flourishing daies of Maurice Fire Gerald, Hubers de Burgo, Jeffray de Moriso, and Gualter de Lacy, whose ends followed according: The Noble Earle Richard Marifeld Lord Maxifeld, Earle Marshall of England, spoken of before and being by them maligned, was traitorously cut off by sundry devilish draughts. Musthew Paris wrot the Story at large, laid downs their practice on both the sides of theseas, their forged letters; and secretly as it were by stealth, fixing thereto the Kings scale: Hee cal-

leth them traitors, Iudasses; and Ieffery de Morisco he termeth Achitophell that gave wicked counsell. Hubert had a lamentable end, Ieffery dyed in misery, Lacy was shortly cut off, and Maurice Fitz Girald was with dishonour removed from his Iusticeship. This Maurice of the King desired to bee reconciled to Gilbert Marshall his brother, whom he greatly seared, and offered in satisfaction to build with all speed, a noble Monastery, and to endow the same with large posses, and to surnish it with a reverent covent, to pray for the soule of Richard Marshall: at length with much adoe, and importunate intreaty of the King and Nobility of England, Gilbert Marshall granted him peace; but of Earle Richards end I have spoken somewhat before.

About the yeere 1233. or 34. Hagh Mapleton, Bishop of Ossorie, whose Episcopall see was then at Achboo, in upper Ossorie, began the foundation of the Cathedrall Church, now standing in the Irish towne of Kilkenny, in the honour of God and Saint Canicus, (of whom the towne of Kilkenny hath the name) and is reckoned the first sounder. Hee ordained three Canons for the service, hee gave them divers Churches and tithes for their maintenance, as in the soundation of those Chanons more at large doth appeare. He builded the Bishops Court of Aghor, adding thereto sish-ponds, sishings, and other necessaries. Such good men lived in those dayes.

At the same time came the King of Connaught, exhibiting a grie. vous complaint unto Henry the third (faith Mathew Paris) against John de Burgo, the sonne, as I suppose, of Hubert de Burgo before spoken of; that he had entred his country with forces, and wasted the same with fire and sword, that it would please his Majestie to doe him justice, and command such rash attempts to be bridled, alledging that he was his loyall subject, and paid for his kingdome, an annuall penfion, mounting to the summe of 5000 marks, ever fince King John had subdued his kingdome, and that he would rid him of that base upflatt, or new commer which fought unjustly to disherit him. The King tendred his reasonable requests, and commanded Maurice Fizz Girald then present, to plucke up by the roote, the fruitlesse Plant, the which Hubers Earle of Kent had sometime planted in those parts. while he was in Ruffe, that it might budde no more. Hee wrote also unto the Nobilitie of Ireland, that they should banish the said Iohn de Burgo, and peaceably establish the King in his kingdome, who with these princely favours, joyfully returned into his country.

Anno 1235. (faith Cooper) the Irish men rebelled; so hee left it, and so I leave it too.

Anno 1236. Mathew Paris doth write that in the North parts not farre from the Abbey of Rochor Rupie, and also in Ireland, and the parts there abouts more apparantly, strange and wonderfull sights were seene, which amazed the beholders: to wit, there appeared Rr 2

comming forth of the earth, companies of armed men on horseback, with Speare, Shield, Sword, and banners displaid in sundry formes and shapes, riding in battaile array, and encountring together; and this fight appeared fundry dayes each after other, fometimes they feemed to joyne as it had beene in battaile, and fought fore; and sometimes they seemed to just and breake staves, as if it had beene at some triumphant justs of torny. The people of the country beheld them a farre off with great wonder, for the skirmish shewed it selfe so lively, that now and then they might see them come with their empty horses, fore wounded and hurt, and likewise men mangled and bleeding; A pittifull fight to behold, and that which feemed more strange, and most to be mervailed at, after they vanished away, the prints of their feet appeared in the ground, and the graffe trodden in those places where they had beene seene.

Petrus de Supino beus, Pope Gregories agents in Ireland, were rifled of all Emperour.

Anno 1240: Petrus de Supino came from Pope Gregoryinto Ireland, & Petrus Ru- with an authenticke papall mandate, requiring under paine of Excommunication and other centures ecclefialticall the twentieth part part of the whole land, besides donatives and private gratuities to the land and Scot-maintenance of his warres against Fredericke the Emperour, where he extorted, faith Mathew Paris, a thousand and five hundred markes, they had by the and above, faith Florilegus; at which time also one Petrus Pubeus, intitled the Popes Familiar, and kinsman, and both bastards, saith Bale, filled in like fort his fardles in Scotland. These Nuntioes were so crasty, that they needed no Brokers, they secretly understood by Posts and Curfitors, the state of the Court of Rome, which quailed them full fore, that the Pope was either gone, or panted for life; secretly by the conduct of the Monkes of Canterbury, they were conveyed to Dover, where they tooke shipping, and crossed the seas. The Emperour Fredericke, against whom this provision was made, having intelligence thereof, and secretly acquainted with the Popes state, wrote to the King of England to apprehend fuch prollers, wherein he also reproved his cowardize. The Emperour when he understood that the birds were flowne away, made fearch for the neaft, yet overtooke them in Italy; where, to be short, hee imprisoned them, their kindred and favourers rifled them of their money, and fent them to Rome to fing for more money: he that will reade the story more at large, let him repaire to Mathew Paris:

Andelmus, Pcimate of Armagh,

The same yeere faith Mathem Paris, Andelmus borne in Cullen, a man highly commended for life and learning, was by the Bilhop of Worcester, solemnly consecrated at Westminster, Archbishop of Armagh, and Primate of Ireland, in the presence of the King, the Legate, and many reverend Prelates.

The Caftle of Sligosbuilded Girald Fitz Maurice Ricardus de Burgo

in Galcoigne.

Anno 1242. Maurice Fitz Girald, Lord Iustice of Ireland, builded the Cassle of Sligoe.

Anno 1243. Clan and Domlinge Write, that Giraldus Fitz Man-

rice, Richardus de Burgo, and Hugh de Lacy, Earle of Vister in Ireland, ended the way of all flesh, and was buried at Carechfergus. Ma. them Paris giveth Lacy great commendations, that he was a most renowned warriour, and a valiant Conquerour of a great part of Ireland. This Lacy left behinde him one daughter and heire, whom Walter de Burgo married, and in her right, became Earle of Vister: of Richardus de Burgo, Mathem Paris writeth he had great possessions and lands in Ireland, by the conquest of his most Noble father.

Anno 1245. Florilegus, Powell (out of Gittin Omen) and Holinfhed. doe write how that the Welch men rebelled against the King, and his forces being foyled by David ap Llewelin Prince of Wales, hee sent into Ireland to Masrice for ayde, and was in winter time mightily distressed, the which I finde by Powell recorded and written by a

Noble man out of the campe unto his friends.

The King with his army lyeth at Gannocke, fortifying of that ftrong Castle, and we live in our Tents, thereby watching, fasting, praying, and freezing with cold; wee watch for feare of the Welch men, who are wont to invade and come upon us in the night times we fast for want of meate, for the halfe penny loafe is worth five pence; we pray to God to fend us home speedily; we starve for cold. wanting our winter garments, and having no more but a thinne linnen cloath betweene us and the windesthere is an arme of the feas under the Castle where we lye, whereto the tyde commeth, and many shippes come up to the haven, which bring victuals to the Campe, from Ireland and Chester. The King all this while expected the arrivall of Maurice Fitz Girald, with his Irish forces, mused with himselfe, fretted with himselfe, the winde serving, and yet said nothing; at length the Irish sayles are discryd, a shore they came, and Maurice Fitz Girald, (together with Phelina, Oconor) Oconoghor, faith another in battaile array, present themselves before the King at Chepstow, fay the Irish Chroniclers, but the British Chroniclers coppied out of the Abbies of Conwey and Stratflur, by Owen Gittine, deliver they landed at the Ile of Man or Anglesey, the which in mine opinion seemeth to be most likely to be true. For David ap Llewelin was Prince of North-Wales, and there kept his forces, & Chepstow is in South-Wales; and besides, it is agreed upon of all sides, that the Irish landing, spoyled the He of Anglesey, laded themselves with spoyles, and going to their ships, were driven to runne and leave all behinde; but to be short, when all the forces joyned together, the Welch men were overthrowne; the Kingmanned and victualled his Castles, returned into England, gave the Irish men leave to returne, winking a while in policie at the tarriance and flow comming of Maurice Fitz Girald: when Maurice Fitz Girald, Lord Iustice arrived in Ireland, he found O Donell the Irish enemy, upon the death of Hugh Lacy, in Armes, invading and foreannoying the Kings subjects in Vilter, and

called unto him Cormake Mac Dermot Mac Dory, with great forces. and entred Tireconell, preyed, burned, and spoyled, and vanquished the enemy there he flue Moylestaghlon O Donell, called King of Keyvayle, together with Gille Canvinelagh, Obugill, and Mao Surley, called King of Oyrifgall, with divers others, gentlemen of those parts: in like fort many English men were cast away in the river, whose past fage O Donell stopped, and slue there William Butt, high Sheriffe of Connaught, together with a valiant young Gentleman his brothers When the Lord luftice had thus atchieved his purpole, hee manned and victualled the Castle of Sligo, tooke pledges of o Neale to keepe the Kings peace, and left them in the faid Castle, gave Commake Dermot Mac Dory that came to his aide, the moytic of Connaught, and returned with a great prey.

When this noble service was performed, the King disgorged him-Lobn Fitz Leffery selfe, and what inwardly he had conceived, and for a while concei-Lord Inflice, ved against the Lord Instice, he then in writing delivered, and removed Maurice Fitz Girald out of his Iusticeship, and placed in his roome, Iohn Fitz Ieffery de Morisco, the which the Irish Chroniclers have suppressed, yet Florilegus and Holin/hed doe write, Mauritium Hibernia Iustitiariu eo quod sitte de tarde anxilium ab hibernia domi-

no Regi duxerat periclitanti a Iustitiaria Deposuit.

This Maurice departed out of this world, Anno Dom. 1256. was buried faith Clynin the habit of the Fryers Minors at Yough-halle, the which Morice had founded, of whom Mathem Paris faith thus the was a valiant Knight, a very pleasant man, inferiour to none in Ireland, who sometime swayed the land when hee had the sword of Iu. sticeship; this man lived with commendations all the dayes of his life. but peradventure falfly reported of, and stained in the end with the death of Richard, Earle Marshall.

Anno 1247. after that Henry the third, and the Clergie of England and Ireland found themselves mightily grieved at the Popes exactions and intollerable extortions in England, Wales, and Ireland, and had signified the same in writing to the Court of Rome; whereupon faith Florilegus, the Court of Rome fretted and forrowed, that their avarice was as well reproved, as restrained. Innocentius 4. devised in his conceit, a milder course to be held, that in stead of a greater summe, they should give him at that time out of those dominions, to supply his wants, but eleven thousand markes. Then saith Florilegus, Master Iohannes Rulus was sentinto Ireland, furnished with authority, diligently to collect the Popes money, as a Legate, yet not clad in scarlet, left the Pope should offend the King of England, who hath this priviledge, that no Legate fet foot on his land, unlesse hee be sent for, or licenced; but the said tohn being a sophistical Legate, vigilantly plying the papall mandate, and his owne private gaine, extorted out of Ireland; about fixe thousand markes; the which by the conduite

conduite of the Clergie, was transported and conveied to London, about the Feast of Saint Michaell the Archangell.

The same yeere, saith Florilegus, there was a marveilouse and firange Earthquake over England; but faith Felcon, over Ireland: And A great Earthall the West of the world and there followed involved in the land of the world and there followed in the land of the world and there followed in the land of the world and there followed in the land of the world and there followed in the land of the all the West of the world, and there followed immediatly a continuall untemperature of the ayre, with a filthy skurfe; the Winter ftormy cold and wet, which continued untill the Ix. of Iuly, and put the Gardeners, Fruterers, and Husbandmen void of all hope, in lo much they complained that Winter was turned to Summer, and Summer to Winter, and that they were like to lose all, and bee un. done.

Anno 1252. faith Dowling and Grace, and the English Anonimu, but Clyn and Florilegus Write, that it was 1254. King Henry gave to Prince Edward his sonne, Gascoigne, Ireland, Wales, Bristow, Stanford and Grantham, and fent him to Alphanfus King of Spaine, to take Ellionor his fifter to wife, where hee was by the faid King Knighted, and returned together with his wife into England, with great riches.

Anno 1255. Alanus de la Zouch , was made Lord Iustice : fo I finde in the Booke of Houth, after his departure out of Ireland, hee being a Lord Baron, and chiefe Iustice in England: Florilegus, Humfrey Loid and Stom, doe write the Story how hee came to his end; great firife rose in England, betweene certaine of the Nobility. about territories lands and titles, whereto each fide made claime, the matters in controversie, by direction from the King were decided in Westminster Hall; the first Controversie was betweene John Earle of Surrey and Warren, and Hugh de Lacy Earle of Lincolne, which went upon Lacy his fide. The second was, betweene this Earle Warren and Allan de la Zouch, this Zouch being Chiefe Inflice asked Earle Warren, how he held his land, Earle Warran drew foorth his fword and faid, by this mine Ancestors held the same, and by this I presently hold it, and with that rannethe Chiefe Inflice through in Westminster Hall, and in his slight wounded also his sonne; thence hee fled to his Castle at Risgare, whome Prince Edward the Kings eldest some pursued with an Army; to whom the Earle submitted himselfe, and afterwards with friends, and what with money paci-

Anno 1256. in the warres of Lewelin Prince of Wales, fo I The Irish comfind in the records of Conway & Stratflur Copied by Gettine Owen. ming toaid Ed. Edward Earle of Chester, sell to outrage one while against the King, Earle of Cheanother while against the VVelshmen; his Army was 1500. foot and their ships and 500. horse. Henry the third together with Richard Earle of suncke. Cornewall, and King of Almane wrote unto him gently, withing him to returne to his Country and keepe the peace, and not to provoke! the Wellhmen to Armes, the which he refuled to doe, but fent to the

Irishmen for succour and supplies. Prince Edward the Kings eldest sonne, understanding thereof, rigged a Navy, met with the Irish fleet, killed their men and funck their ships, few onely remaining to returne, and to make report of this hard successe in Ireland; In a while after, the King raifed warres against Lewellin Prince of Wales. and the Welshmen (faith Paris, Causa autem eorum etiam bostibus corum justa videbatur.) and was brought to a narrow straight. so that he sent to Ireland, and to Gascoigne for succour; the Irishmen not forgetting their late overthrow, were loath to come being of all sides driven to serve) in the end came, and joyned with their Kings forces. where no memorable act was performed, for God, faith Paris, defended the poore people that put their whole confidence in him.

The life of tro Bofco.

About this time, to wit, Anno 1256. Florished Iohannes De Sacro Joannes de Sa. Bosco; Bale out of Leland, will have him to be a Yorkeshire man and terme him Iohn Holyfaxe, Stanihurst writeth he was borne in Ireland at Holy Wood, in Fingall, some 12. miles from Dublin, and therefore called Iohannes De Sacro Bosco, which carried great likly-hood with it, untill they are reconciled (which side prevaileth, I waigh not greatly) I thought good to infert him, for so much as his great learning graced him unto the posterity: In his springing yeeres hee fuckt the fweet milk of good learning, in the famous Vniversity of Oxford; afterwards he went to Paris, where he professed the learned Sciences, with fingular commendations, and there flumbreth in the dust of the earth, whose exequies and funerals were there with great lamentations solemnized : first, hee followed Aristotle, afterwards gave himselfe to the Mathematikes, and addicted himselfe so much thereto, that none of the posterity (as is thought) could follow him. hee wrote.

> De Spara Mundi-leb. I. Tractatum de spara, quatuor. De Algorismo -lib. I. Omnia que a primeva rerum orig. De Anni Ratione-lib.i. Cmoputus scientiam considerans. Breviarium Iuris-lib.I. Verborum superficie penitus.

Vpon his Tombe together with the Mathematicall Astrolabe, was insculped as followeth.

The Epicaph of Johannes de Sacro Bofco.

M. Christi bis. C. quarto deno quater anno, De Sacre Bosco discrevit tempora ramus, Gratia cui nomen dederat divina Ishannes.

Stephans Effee Ireland. The battell of Downe.

Anno 1258. Stepham Espee, alias De longa spatha, that is Stepham with the long skeine or two handed sword, Earle of Salibury, as I suppose, was made Lord Iustice of Ireland, this Stepham gave battell

unto Oneile, and the rebels of Vister and Conaght, and slue of them together with Oneile (saith Clinne) in one day, three hundred fifty and two, and departed this life, faith Florilegus, 1260.

Anno 1260. William Denne was made Lord Iustice, in whose S. Willi. Denne time Greene Castle, Arx Viridis was destroyed, and the Carties Lord lustice, plaied the Divells in Desmond, where they burned, spoiled, preyed, Anno 12 60. and flue many an innocent; they became so strong, and prevailed so mightily that for the space (so it is reported) of twelve yeeres the Desmonds durst not put plow in ground in his owne Country; at length through the operation of Satan, a bane of discord was throw. en betweene the Carties and the Odriscoles : Odonovaies Mac Donoch, Mac Mahonna, Mac Swines, and the inhabittants of Muscrie, in so much that by their cruell dissention, they weakened themselves of all sides, that the Desmond in the end overcame and overtopped them all; but in the beginning of these garboils, I find that the Carties flue of the Desmonds, John Fitz Thomas founder of the Monaflery and Covent of Trally, together with Maurice his sonne; eight Barons 15. Knights, beside infinite others, at a place called Callan, where they were buried. Mine Authors are Iohn Clinne onely, and the Booke, of Homb. In the end of these rumults, dyed Sir William Denny Lord Iustice, Anno 1261. Richardus de Capella, otherwise Richardus de called Rochell (Clinne calleth him La Rochell de Capella) became Chappella Lord Iustice

Anno 1262. There role in Dublin a great firre betweene the Anno 1261. Prior and Covent of the bleffed Trinity now called Christ-Church, and the Communalty of the City, about the tithe fish of the

Anno 1264. Walter Bourke, commonly called Walterus de Burgo (spoken of before) was made Earle of Vister, hee had married the daughter and heire of Sir Hugh Delacy the younger, and in her right enjoyed the Earledome.

The Booke of Houth layeth downe the descent, that this Walzer by the faid heire of Vister had issue Walter, and hee had issue five daughters: 1. Ellen that married Robert le Brufe King of Scotland: 2. Elizabeth, that married the Earle of Glofter; 3. Johan, that married Thomas Earle of Kildare; 4. Katherine, that married the Earle of Louth . S. Margares, that married the Earle of Defmond; the 6. Ellinor, that married with the Lord Multon, notwithstanding these honourable matches and amity concluded in the outward fight of the world there role deadly warres between the Giraldins and Burks. which wrought blood theds, troubles by partaking throughout the Realme of Ireland; at the same time the fury of the Giraldins was so outragious, in so much that Morice Fitz Maurice the second, Earle of Delmond, opposed himselfe against the sword, and tooke at' Trifledermote now called Castle Dermocke; Richard de Capella the

Lord Iustice, Theoball le Butler and Iohn or Millis de Cogan, and committed them to the prisons in Leix and Donamus; but the yeere following, Henry the third not pleased with these commotions and hurly burlies, by mature advice taken of his Councell, pacified the variance betweene them; discharged Denny of his Inflicethip, and appointed David Barry Lord Inffice in his place:

David Barry Lord Iuftice, Anno 1207.

Anno 1267. David Barry tooke, by the appointment of the King, the fword of Iusticeship and the command of Ireland, and quelled or tamed (faith the English Anonymos) the infolent dealing of Morice Fitz Maurice, Cousin german to Girald.

The Fryers Minorscame to Ireland.

The same yeere, saith (Iohn Clinne) the Fryers Preachers, Preachers and first of all settled themselves at Rosse in Wexford, and the Minors at Kilkennie, and two yeeres after at Clonemell.

Maurice Fitz Defmond drowned.

Robert V fford

Lord Iuffice,

Rofcommon.

Lord Inflice.

Anno 1269.

Othebene the

Popes Legat.

Anno 1268.

Anno 1268. Conochur Obrian was flaine by Dermot Mac Mo. Girald Earle of nard; and the same yeere (saith Felcon and Clinne) Maurice Fitz Gerald Earle of Desmond, was drowned croffing the seas between England and Ireland, leaving behind him a sonne and heire, of the age of a. yeeres and a halfe.

The same yeere, Robert V ford became Lord Iustice of Ireland,

and began to build the Castle of Roscommon.

The Caftle of Anno 1269. Richard de Excester was made Lord Justice, who dyed the same yeere, together with his wife Margery de Say; the same Ric. de Exefter yeere (faith Florilegus) Othobone the Popes Legat, held a Councell at Paules in London, where he called before him the Clergy of England, Wales, Ireland and Scotland, and left among them certaine constitutions, which were afterward, commended by Linnood; and are at this day in request, the which constitutions of othe and other bon, were afterwards confirmed by the Archbishop of Canterbury in Ed. r. raigne. Holinshead.

Lames L. Audley Lord Iuflice, Anno 1270 . The Irish rebels.

Anno 1270. The Lord Iames Andley was made Lord Iustice of Ireland, and dyed with the fall of a horse; in his time Florilegus and Holinshead note, there was great commotion in Ireland, the Irish tooke Armes against the English, burned, spoiled, destroied and slue as well the Magistrates as others. Clinne goeth more particularly to worke, and delivereth how that the King of Conaght by force of Armes, in the plaine field overthrew Walter Burke Earle of Vister, who hardly escaped with life, yet dyed the yeere following, and flue a great number of Nobles, and Knights, that held with the Burk, and among others, by especiall name the Lord Richard Verdon, and the Lord Iohn Verdon, and that there enfued over all Ireland great famine and pestilence, as the sequell of warres.

About this time, lay our Antiquaries, the Bilhop of Rome feat to Ireland, requiring the tithes of all spirituall promotions for 3. yeeres to come to maintaine his warres against the King of Aragon, the which was greatly murmured at, and gainefaid, yet the Nuntio went not empty away.

Anno 1 272. the most renowned King Henry the third, having lived 65. yeeres, and raigned 56. and 28: dayes, ended his dayes, and was buried at Westminster. Edward, the first of that name, sonne of King Henry the third, furnamed Long Shankes, of the age of 35. yeers, began his raigne, Anno 1272.

Anno 1272. and the first of Edward the first his raigne, Maurice Maurice Fire Fitz Maurice was made Lord Iustice, in whose time the Irish brake Iustice, dans out into cruell rebellion, rafed and destroyed the Castles of Aldiecke, 1272 called Roscommon, Scheligath and Randon; this Maurice, (faith Clyn) not Rochfallath. longafter was betrayed by his owne followers in Ophali, taken and imprisoned.

Auno 1273: the Lord Walter Genvill (who lately returned home walter Lord from the Holy Land) was sent into Ireland, and appointed Lord In- Genevill, Lord flice in his time (fo write Dowlinge and Grace) the Scots and Red. Inflice Anne shankes out of the high land croffed the feas, burned townes and villages, most cruelly killed man, woman and childe, tooke a great prev. and returned home afore the country could make preparation to purfue them: but in a while after, to bee revenged of them, Vifter and Connaught mustred a great Armie under the leading of Richar. das de Burgo, and Sir Euftacele Poer knight, made after them, entred the Mands, and high land of Scotland, flue as many as they could finde, burned their Cabbans and Cottages, and fuch as dwelt in caves and rockes under ground (as the manner is to define out Foxcs) they fired and smothered to death, covering their entrances into the ground with great and huge stones, and so returned into Ire-

Anno 1276: What time Thomas Clare came into Iteland, and married the daughter of Maurice Fitz Maurice. The Castle of Roscommon was taken by the Irilla, and a great overthrow given voto the English men at Glynburry (Glandelory, faith Clyn) where William Fisz Roger, Prior of the Kings hospitallers, and many others, were taken prisoners, and a great number of others were flaine; at what time also Ralph Pepara, and Otholand gave o Meales fore battaile.

Anno 1277: Walter Lord Gennill was lent for into England, and Robert Vind Robert Vifford the fecond time tooke the office of Justicefhip; at this Anno 1277. time Muridath or Murtagh, a notable rebell, was taken at the Noraght, by Gualter de Fant, and executed: Thomas Clare likewise in

this rebellion, flue Obryan Roe, King of Thomond, and yet after this, the Irish drew such a draught, that they closed him up in Slew Bannv, together with Maurice Fitz Maurice his father in law, and all their forces, untill they gave hostages to escape with their lives, upon condition to make fatisfaction for the death of o brian and his followers, and in the meane while to yeeld them up the Castle of Roscommon, although the conditions seemed hard & prejudiciallto the Kings Maiesty, yet were they driven for saseguard of their lives to condiscend thereunto. In this rebellious season, to cleere himselfe, that in his owne person he came not to daunt the enemy, Robert Pfford the Lord Iustice was fent for into England, who substituted in his roome, one Fryer Robert Fulborne, Bishop of Waterford, who when he had cleered himselfe, came and resigned his place of Iustice-

Robert Ufford

Anno 1278, there role civill warres, no better then rebellion, begoing into En tweene Mac Dermot de Moylargo, and Cathgur O Conoghor, King of Connaught, where there was great flaughter and bloud shed on both Bithop of Wa- sides, and the King of Connaught slaine. Raphaell Holinshed in his Irish collection thinketh that there were slaine at that time, above two thousand persons. The King of England hearing thereof, was mightily displeased with the Lord Iustice, and sent for him into England. to yeeld reason why he would permit such shamefull enormities under his governement. Robert V ford substituted Robert Fulborne, (as before) satisfied the King that all was not true that hee was charged withall, and for further contentment, yeelded this reason, that in policie he thought it expedient to winke at one knave cutting offanother, and that would fave the Kings Coffers, and purchase peace to the land, whereat the King smiled, and bid him returne to Ireland.

The grosts, pence, halfe pence, and made.

Anno 1279. (Stow is mine Author) King Edward commanded groats of foure pence a piece, pence, halfe pence, and farthings, to be pence, and farthings were coyned, and to be currant through England and Ireland, not decrying the old; whereupon faith he, these verses were made.

> Edward did smite round penny, halfe penny, farthing, The crosse passes the bond, of all throughout the ring: The Kings side was his head, and his name written, The croffe fide, what Citie it was made in, coyned and fmitten. The poore man ne to Priest, the penny frayles nothing, Mengive God aye the leaft, they feaft him with a farthing: A thousand two hundred, fourescore yeeres and moe, On this money men wondred, when it first began to goe. steet the tip or **M**anishy by a new the rebells, who allow at all type Course de France to and executed to them as the first between

Anno 1280.the Citie of Waterford laith Chyn, through some foule Waterford mischance was all set on fire; others report that some Merchant stran-burned. ger being wronged, as they thought, by the Citizens, brought bagges of powder out of their ships, and threw them in the night season, in at their sellers windowes, and coales of fire after them, and spoyled the City in that fort, that it was long after ere they could recover of raid of their views or

Anno 1281: Robert Fulborne Bishop of Waterford, was by dire-Robert Fulborne Ction from the King, ordained Lord Instice of Ireland. This yeere Lord Instince of Ireland. there was a great rebellion in Connaught, and in upper Offory, and Anno 1283. in Archloe, which cost many mens lives, but the ringleaders were cut off. Adam Cufack flue William Berret and his brethren, which contended about lands. In Connaught, Hogken Mac Gill Patricke was cut off; in Vppfory, Murtough Mac Muroch, with Art: his brother, loft their heads at Wickloc, another faith at Artchloe, so Clyn and Domlinge doe report.

Anno 1283. (it is remembred by Clyn and others) that a great part Dublinburned of Dublin was burned. Campanile & Capitulum sancta Trinitatis, saithmine Author, the belfrie or steeple and Chapter house of the bleffed Trinity, with the Dormiture and Cloyster. Others write that certaine Scots to be revenged upon some Gitizens for wronging of them, set Skinner-Row a fire, and by that meanes the fire ranne into Christ Church, but the citizens of Dublin (therein greatly to bee commended) before they went about to repaire their owne private houses, agreed together to make a collection for repayring the ruine of that antient Church.

Anno 1284. flourished leffery, or (as Clyn writeth) Galfridus de Galfridus de fancto Leodegario, Bishop of Osforie, the second founder of the Ca- Sancto Leodoge. thedrall Church of Setus Canicus, and the first founder of the Col- 116. ledge of the Vicars of the same Church, who gave unto the Colledge and vickars of the same Church, for the maintenance of divine Service, his Manse and lodging, with the edifices thereunto adjoyning, the rectory of Kilkesh, and revenue de manubrinnio, one markesterling, of the Abbot of Duiske, for the land of Scomberlowaic with other revenues. The said leffery by combate (the combatants I finde not recorded) anno 1284. recovered the Mannor of Sirekeran in Elly, now Ocarolls country. He builded part of the Mannors of Aghboo and Dorogh, he builded a great part of the Church of Saint Ganicus formerly begunne by Hugh Mapilton his Predecessor, hee exchanged the rowne Scomkarthic, for the towne of Killamerry, with William Marshall the Earle of Penbroke, in his kinde of devotion he injoyned the collegiat Vicars of Kilkenny to celebrate the universary and ani-

verlary

Doctor Hanmers Chronicle

versary of the reverend fathers his predecessors. Walter Barkeler. Galfrid Turvill, Hugh Mapilton, and others, and his successors and Canons in the faid Church of Offory. He established other things for the good of the Burgesses of Crosse in the Irish towne of Kilkenny, as in the foundation of the Burgesses there more at large doth appeare: he dyed Anno 1286. and lyeth buried before the Chappell of our Lady, in the Cathedrall Church.

> Thus farre the Collections of Doctor Hanmer: the Continuation following is taken out of the Chronicles of Henry Marleburrough!

> > The first of a first state of the first transfer of

. के **डिडिस्ट** कर्ने देव **क्रम अंडि**क्ट कार्ने हैं के क्रम के के क्रम के के

क्षा चर्चा विकास सम्बद्धीय । जन्म सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान सम्बद्धान

The live of the state of their will be a fixed to be all the states.

o de la cipalitação de la desta de la decembra de l

The second secon

and the suggestion of the suggestion of

<u>ार हो है। वर्ष वर्ष विकास के लिए का लिए हैं है कि लिए हैं है कि लिए हैं है कि लिए हैं कि लिए हैं कि लिए हैं कि</u>

e the control of the property of the control of the

State of the Victoria and Indiana Committee of the State of the State

property on the property are only 28 divinity like

ા કે માર્કે કે તે કે માર્ક એ છે. તાલું કે પાકે જાણ છે છે છે છે કે કોલ કોલ છે. પૂર્વ જાણ કોલ છે છે છે છે છે છે

o constant in the second of the second contract of the contract of the second of the s

and the control of the second tern from a the King of the Commence of the Alberta area to

and the same of th a configuration with the sensitive confliction of the sensitive of the and the second of the second o

neis in the control of the second of the sec



HENRY MARLEBURROVGH'S IRELAND.



23

M Nno 1285. the Lord Theobald Butler fled from Dublin, and died shortly after; and the Lord Theobald Verdon loft his men and horses, going towards Ophali, and the next morning, Girald Fisz Maurice was taken prifoner, and Iohn Sam. forde was confecrated Archbishop of Dublin, and the Lord Teffery Gennill fied, and Sir Gerard Doger, and Ralph Betit were flaine.

Anno 1287. deceased Richard Decetir, Girald Fitz Maurice, Thomas de Clare, Richard Toff, and Nicholas Telinge Knights.

Auno 1288. In England a bushell of Wheate was at source pence. And Fryer Stephen Fulburne Lord Iuflice of Ireland dyed And Tobn Samford Archbishop of Dublin was made Lord suffice. And the Lord Richard Burgh, Earle of Vilter, befieged Theobald Verdon in the Castle of Aloan, and came to Trymm with a great power by the working of Walter Lacy.

Anno 1290, Was the chase or disconfiture of Ophaly, and divers Englishmen were flaine. And Mac Goghlan flue Omolagblin. And William Bourgh was discomfitted at Delvin by Mac Coghlan. And Gilbert Earle of Glocester, married the daughter of King zobnile Baylell, King of Scotland. And Sir William Kefen was made Lord Inflice of Irc-Bonathi I homound and shere he was taken prifoner by S-bush

Anno 1294. Decealed John de Samford, Archbilhop of Dublin, and John Fitz Thomas, and John de la Mare tooke prisoners, Richard Bourgh Earle of Vifter, and William Bourgh in Meath. And the Caflie of Kildare was taken, and by the English and Irish, the whole \$6.W country

countrie was wasted. And Calwagh burnt all the rolles and tallyes of that countie. And Richard was delivered out of the Castle of Leve for his two fonnes. And lohn Fitz Thomas with a great armic, came into Meath.

Anno 1295. William Dodinfell Lord Inflice of Ireland dyed, and the Lord Thomas Fitz Maurice was made Lord Iustice.

Anno 1296. Fryer William de Hothum was consecrated Archbi-

shop of Dublin.

Anno 1298. The Lord Thomas Fitz Maurice dyed, and an agreement was made betwixt the Earle of Vister, and the Lord Iohn Fit? Thomas: and Sir Iohn Wogan was made Lord Justice of Ireland.

Anno 1299, William, Archbishop of Dublin dyed: and Richard

de Feringes was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1202. The King of England (Edward the first) went into Scotland, and there Sir Iohn Wogan Lord Iustice of Ireland, and the

Lord Iohn Fitz Thomas with many others met with him.

Anno 1205. King Edward made the inquificions of Treylbaston. The same yeere Iordan Comin slue Conthir de Ophaly: and Calmagh his brother was flaine in the Court of Peirs de Birmingham at Carricke: and Balimor was burnt:

Anno 1306. Edward the second succeeded his father being dead. in the kingdome. In the beginning of his raigne, he called back from beyond the leas, Peirs de Gaveston, whose company in the presence of his father he abjured: and being wholly taken up with him, he neg. lected Ifabell his Queene, and his Nobles; for which cause the Nobles being offended they banished the faid Peirs into Ireland, where also the Kings treasure that was fent over thither, was wantonly confumed. Then Peir's was called backe againe, but in regard the Kings treasure was spent as aforesaid, the Nobles make an insurrection, and put away Peirs from the Kingto located a business of all 88 cares

Anno 1308. And in the second of King Edward the second, Peirs de Gavelton, by the Lords of England, but contrary to the Kings minde, was banished into Ireland, about the nativitie of our Lady: but the next yeare hee was called backe againe and the King met him

at Chester.

Anne 1209 The Lord Teffers Genvill becamen Fryer at Trym, of the order of the Preachers and the Lord Poirs de Birmingham b was diffeon fited at Delvin by Mar Copbla of And Abbyb

Annougu. Was the confectation of John Leeke, Archbilhop of Dublin: and Richard Boureh Earle of Wifter, with a great armie went to Bourathin Thomound, and there he was taken prisoner by Sir Rebert de Clare, and John Fitz Walter, Laty, and many others were flaine : and there dyed Sie Walter la Raint, and Sir Euftace Power. And the next yeard, Maurice Fitz Thomas, and Thomas Fitz Tohn, married two daughters of the Earle of Vifter. And Saint Fingar

was translated ; and William de Lowndres the first, and John the fon of Sir Richard Bourgh Knight deceased, and the Lord Edmund Butler made zo. Knights.

Anno 1213. Died John Leek, Archbishop of Dublin, and Theobald Verdon came over Lord Iustice of Ireland, and William de

Montency and Richard Loundries died.

Anno 1315: The Lord Edward Brufe brother of the King of Scots, entred the North part of Vister with a great Army, upon Saint Augustines day, in the month of May; and afterward hee burned Dundalke, and a great part of Vrgile : and the Church of Athirde was burned by the Irish: And in the warre of Comeram in Vister. Richard Earle of Vister was put to flight: and Sir William Boargh, and Sir Iohn Mandewill, and Sir Alan Fitz Warren were taken prifoners, and the Castle of Norburgh was taken. Moreover at Kenlis in Meath, the Lord Roger Mortimer in the warre together with the faid Edward were put to flight, and many of the men men of the said Roger were slaine and taken prisoners, and he burnt the Towne: and after this he went as farre as Finnagh and the Skerries in Leinster; and there incountred him Edmund Butler Lord Iustice of Ireland, the Lord John Bits Thomas, afterward Earle of Kildare, and the Lord Arnold Power; and every one of them had a great army to war against him: and upon the sodaine there arose a distention amongst them, and so they lest the field; and this differtion hapned upon the 26. day of Ianuary : after this hee burnt the Castle of Leye, and afterward hee returned into Vifter, and belieged the Castle of Knockfergus, and flue Thomas Mandevill and Iohn his brother at Downe, comming out of England; and then returned into Scotland.

Anno 1316. Edward Bruse before Easter, came into Ireland with the Earle of Murry and other armies, and befieged the Castle of Knockfergus; afterward they went to Castle Knock, and there tooke the Baron prisoner, and Edward Bruse lay there : and Richard Earle of Vister lay in Saint Maries Abbey neere Dublin. Then the Major and Commonalty of the City of Dublin, tooke the Earle of Vister prisoner, and put him in the Castle of Dublin and slew his men and spoiled the Abbey. Then the said Bruse went as farre as Lymmerick after the Feast of Saint Matthew the Apostle, and staied there untillafter Easter; and in the meane time Roger Mortimer the Kings Lievtenant, landed at Waterford with a great Army, and for feare of him, Edward Brufe made bafte to goe into the parts of Vifter, and Iohn Fitz Thomas was created Earle of Kildare : also Ocenthir of Conaght and many other of the Irish of Conaght and Meath were flaine, necre Athenry by the English there : also there was a great flaughter made by Edmond Buster, necre Testilldermot upon the Irith; and another flaughter by the same Edmund upon Omoribe at Balitcham.

Anno 1317. The faid Lievtenant delivered the Earle of Vister out of the Castle of Dublin, and after Whitsuntide, hee banished out of Meath Sir Walter and Sir Hugh de Lacy, and gave their lands unto his souldiers, and they together with Edward Bruse went back into Scotland: and Alexander Bignor was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 13 18. The Lord Roger Mortimer went againe into England, and Alexander Bignor was made Lord Tustice, and Edward Brase and the said Walter and Hugh de Lacy with a great Army, landed at Dundalke upon Saint Calixtus the Popes day; and there the Lord Iohn Brimingham, Richard Tute and Miles Verdon, with one thousand three hundred twenty source men incountred them, and slew the said Edward Bruse, with eight thousand two hundred seventie source of his men; and the said Iohn Birmingham did cary the head of the said Edward into England, and gave it to King Edward, and the King gave unto the said Iohn and his heires males, the Earledome of Lowth, and the Barony of Athirdee to him and his heires also Sir Richard de Clare, with source Knights and many others, were slaine in Thomond.

anno 1319. The Lord Roger Mortimer came over againe Lord of Institute of Ireland. And the Towns of Athessell and Plebs, were burned by the Lord Iohn Fitz Thomas, brother to the Lord Maurice Fitz Thomas. And the Bridge of Kilcolin was built by Maurice Inkis.

Anno 1320. The Lord Iohn Fitz Iohn, Earle of Kildare, was made Lord Iustice. And the bridge of Leiglin was built by Madrice Iakis.

Anno 1321. There was a very great flaughter made of the Oconburs at Balibagan, by the English of Leinster and Meath. And the said Earle of Lowth was made Lord Inslice.

Anno 1322. Died the Lord Richard Birmingham, Lord of Athenry, the Lord Edmund Butler, and the Lord Thomas Persival. Moreover the Lord Andrew Birmingham, and Sir Richard de la Londe, were slaine by Onolan.

Anno 1323. Iohn Darcy came over Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1329. Deceased Nicolas Fit Z Simon Gonvill.

Anno 1326. The Lord Riebard Burgh Earle of VIster died: Edward the third, some to Edward the second, after the Conquest, at the age of sisteene yeeres, in his fathers life time, upon Candlemas day was crowned King at VVestminster. In the beginning of whose raigne there was great likelyhood of good successe to follow: For then also the Earth received fruitsfulnesse, the Ayre temperature and, Sea calmenesse.

Anno

Anno 1327. Donald sonne to Art, Mac Morch, and Sir Henry Traharne were taken prisoners.

Anno 1328. Deceased the Lord Thomas Fitz John Earle of Kildare, and the Lord Arnold Power, and William Earle of Vister came into Ireland.

Canno 1329: Iohn Brimingham Earle of Lowth, and Peter his brother with many other, were flaine on Whitfun, even at Balibragan by the men of the Country: Alfo the Lord Thomas Butler, and divers other Noble men were flaine by Macgohegan and other Irishmen, neere to Molingar.

Anno 1330. There died Sir Richard Deicetir: Also the Earle of Vister went with a great Army into Mounster upon obren: Also the Prior of the Hospitall, then Lord Iustice, put the Lord Maurice Fitz Thomas Earle of Desmond, into the custody of the Marshall, out of the which hee freely escaped. And Sir Hugh de Lacy returned into Ireland, and obtained peace of the King.

Anno 1331. The Earle of Vlster went into England, and great slaugher was made upon the Irish in Okenslie; also the Castle of Arclow was taken by the Irish, and great slaughter made of the English ni the Cowlagh by Otothell, where Sir Philip Bryt and many others were slaine; and the Lord Anthony Lacy came over Lord suffice of Ireland, and great slaugter was made of the Irish at Thurles, by the men of the Country, and at Finnath in Meath; there were many of them slaine by the English: also the Castle of Fernis was taken and burned by the Irish: also Maurice Fitz Thomas Earle of Desmond was apprehended at Limerick by the Lord Iustice, upon the day of the Assumption, and sent unto the Castle of Dublin. Moreover, the Lord Iustice tooke Sir William Birmingham and Walter his sonne at Clomell by a wile, whilest hee was sick in his bed, and sent them likewise unto the Castle of Dublin on the 19. day of Aprill.

Anno 1332. Sir William Birmingham was hanged at Dublin, but Walter his sonne was delivered, by reason hee was within orders. Also the Castle of Clonmore was taken by the English, and the Castle of Bonrath was destroyed by the Irish of Thomond: also Henry Mandevill was sent prisoner to Dublin; likewise Walter Burgh with two of his brethren were taken in Conaght, by the Earle of Vister, and sent to the Castle of Norburgh: also the said Lord Instice was deposed by the King, and went into England with his wise and children; and John Darcy was made Lord Instice, and great slaughter was made upon Bren Obren and Mas Carthy in Munster, by the English of that Country.

Anno 1333. The Earle of Delmondby the Parliament held at Dublin, was fent over into England unto the King; and William Factor

Earle of Vister, in going toward Knock fergus, upon the seventh day of lune was treacherously slaine, neere to the foords in Vister by his owne people: but his wife with his daughter and heire, escaped into England; which daughter was married unto the Lord Lionell, the Kings sonne, and afterward died at Dublin; and had a daughter and heire, which was afterward married unto Roger Mortimer, Earle of March, and Lord of Trim: And to revenge the death of the faid Earle, the Lord Iustice of Ireland with a great Army, went into VIster. But before that hee came thither, the men of that Country had done the revenge: and the Lord Justice with his Army, went into Scotland to the King of England; because at that time hee was there in warre; and hee left the Lord Thomas Burgh his Lievtenant in Ireland: also on Saint Margarets Eve, great flaughter was made in Scotland by the Irish; and so what by the King in one part, and the Lord Iustice in another, Scotland was Conquered, and Edward Balioll was established King of Scotland; and John Darry came back Lord Iustice of Ireland, and delivered VValter Birmingham out of the Castle of Dublin.

Anno 1336. On Saint Laurence day, the Irish of Consght were discomfitted and put to flight by the English of the Country there, and there were slaine tenne thousand and one En-

glishman.

Anno 1342. And in the fixteenth of King Edward the 3. Pope Benediët deceased; Clement the sixth succeeded, a man truly of great learning, but exceeding prodigall, so that hee would bestow upon his Cardinals Church livings in England when they were vacant, and would goe about to impose new titles for them. For which cause the King of England about the yeere 1344. disannulled the provisions so made by the Pope, interdicting upon paine of imprisonment, and death, that none should bring any of them.

Anno 1348. There was great mortality in all places, especially in and about the Court of Rome, Avinion, and about the sea coastes of

England and Ircland.

Anno 1349. Deceased Alexander Bignor, upon the sourceenth day of Iuly, and the same yeere was Iohn de Saint Paul consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1355. Died Maurice Fitz Thomas, Earle of Defmond, L.

Instice of Ireland.

Anno 1356. Deceased the Lord Thomas de Rokesbie, L. Justice of Ireland.

Anno 1357. Began great variance betwixt Master Richard Fizz Ralphe Primat of Ardmagh, and the source Orders of begging Fryers.

Anno 1360. Deceaded Richard Archbishop of Ardmagh, upon the seventeenth day of the Kalends of December in the Popes Court,

and Richard Kilminton dyed in England, therefore the controversie ceased betwixt the Clergie and the orders of begging Fryers.

Anno 1361: and in the thirty fourth yeere of K. Edward the third, about Easter, began a great mortalitie of men, consuming many men, but sew women, in England and Ireland. Also the same yeere, the Lord Lionell, Sonne to King Edward the third, Duke of Clarence, came over the Kings lievetenant into Ireland.

Anno 1362. deceased John de Sains Paule, Archbishop of Dublin,

on the fift day before the Ides of September.

Anno 1363: Thomas Minor was confectated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1369. the Lord William Windfor came over, the Kings Zievetenantin Ireland:

Anno 1 370. there was a third great Pestilence in Ireland. And the Lord Gerald Fitz Maurice, Earle of Desmond, and the Lord Iohn Fitz Richard, and the Lord Iohn Fitz Iohn, and many other Noble men, were taken prisoners, and many others were slaine by obren and Maccoinnard of Thomond, in the moneth of July.

Anno 1372 Sir Robert Asheson came over Lord Iustice of Ire-

land.

Anno 1373. there was great warre betwixt the English of Meth, and Offerolle; in which warre, many upon both fides were flaine,

Anno 1375. Thomas, Archbishop of Dublin departed this life, and the same yeere was Richard de Wikeford confecrated Archbishop there.

Anno 1381, Edmund Morsimer the Kings Lievetenant in Ireland, Earle of March and Vifter, dyet at Corke.

Anno 1383 the fourth great Pestilence was in Ircland,

Anno 1385. Dublin Bridge fell.

Anno 1387. about Martilmas, the Peeres of England role against those that were of the side of King Riebard the second: but Robert Veer, Duke of Ireland, came over to Chester, and got together many men, and put them in array to march backe toward the King: whom the said Peeres met at Rotcotebridge, and slue Thomas Molleners, and spoyled the rest: nevertheless, the Duke of Ireland escaped. But in the same yeere on the morrow after Candlemas day, a Parliament beganne at London: in which were adjudged the Archbishop of Yorke, the Duke of Ireland, the Earle of Suffolke, &c.

Anno 1388. foure Lord Justices of England were banished into Ireland, by a decree of the Parliament: and it was not lawfull for them either to make lawes, or to give counsell, upon paine of the sentence of death.

Anno 1390. Robers de Wikeford Archbishop of Dublin, departed

this life, and the same yeere was Robert Waldebie translated unto the Archbishopricke of Dublin, being an Augustine Fryer.

Anno 1394, and in the leaventeenth yeere of King Richard the fecond, died Anne, Queene of England: and the same yeere about Michaelmas, the King croffed the seas over into Ireland, and landed at Waterford the second day of the moneth of October, and went back about Shrovetide.

Anno 1297. Fryer Richard de Northalis, of the order of the Garmelites, was translated to the Archbishopricke of Dublin, and died the same yeere. Also the same yeere, Thomas de Craulie, was conscirated Archbishop of Dublin. And Sir Thomas Burgh, and Sir Walter Birningham flue fixe hundred Irish men with their Captaine Macdowne. Moreover, Edmund Earle of March, Lord lievetenant of Ireland. with the aide of the Earle of Ormond, wasted obren's country, and at the winning of his chiefe house, hee made seaven Knights, to wir, Sir Christopher Preston, Sir Iohn Bedlow, Sir Edmund Loundres, Sir 10bn Loundres, Sir William Nugent, Walter de la Hide, and Robers Cadell.

Anno 1398, and in the two and twentieth of King Richard the fecond, on Ascention day, the Tothillis slue forty English men. Among whom these were accounted as principall, John Fitz Williams, Thomas Talbot, and Thomas Comyn. The same yeere upon Saint Margarets day, Edmund, Earle of March, the Kings lievetenant, was flaine, with divers other by Obren, and other Irishmen of Leinster. at Kenlis in Zeinster. Then was Roger Greze elected Lord Justice of Ireland. The same yeere on the feast day of Saint Marke, the Pope and Confessor came to Dublin, the Noble Duke of Surrey, the Kings lievetenant in Ireland, and with him came Thomas Crauly, Archbi-

shop of Dublin.

Anno 1399, and of King Richard the three and twentieth, on Sunday being the morrow after Saint Petronilla the Virgins day, the illuftrious King Richard landed at Waterford with two hundred shippes: and the Friday after, at Ford in Kenlis, in the Countie of Kildare, there were slaine, two hundred Irish men by Lenicho and other English men, and the morrow after, the Citizens of Dublin brake into Obrens country, flue three and thirty of the Irish, and tooke fourescore men, women, and children. The same weere King Richard came to Dublin upon the fourth Kalends of July, where hee was advertized of the comming of Henry, Duke, of Lancaster into England; whereupon he also speedily went over into England: and a little while after, the same King was taken prisoner by the said Henry, and brought to London, and there a Parliament was holden the morrow after Michaelmas day, in which King Richard was deposed from his kingdome, and the said Henry, Duke of Zancaster, was crowned King of England, on the feast day of Saint Edward the Confessor.

Anno 1400, and in the first yeers of the raigns of King Henry the fourth, at Whitfontide, the Constable of Dublin Castle, and divers others at Stranford in Vister, fought at Sea with the Scots, where many Englishmen were slaine and drowned. The same yeere on the feast of the Assumption of the blessed Virgin Mary, King Henry, with a great army, entred Scotland, and there he was advertized that Owen Glendor, with the Welsh men, had taken armes against him: for which cause he hastened his journey into Wales.

Anno 1401. in the second yeere of King Henry the fourth, Sir Iohn Stanley the kings Lievetenant, in the moneth of May, went over into England, leaving in his roome Sir William Stanley. The same yeere on Bartholomew Eeven, arrived in Ireland, Stephen Scroope, Lievetenant unto the Lord Thomas of Lancaster, the kings Lievetenant of Ireland. The same yeere on Saint Brises day, the Lord Thomas of Lancaster, the kings Sonne, and Lord Lievetenant of Ireland, arrived at Dublin.

Anno1402. on the fift Ides of July, was the dedication of the Church of the Fryers Preachers in Dublin, by the Archbishop of Dublin. And the same day the Maior of Dublin, namely, John Drake, with the citizens and townesmen, neere to Bre, slue of the Irish. foure hundred ninety three, being all men of warre. The same veere in September a Parliament was held at Dublin; during the which, in Vrgile, Sir Bartholomew Verdon, knight, James White, Stephen Gernond, and their complies, flue John Dowdall Sheriffe of Lowth.

Anno 1403, in the fourth yeere of king Henry, in the moneth of May, Sir Walter Betterley, Steward of Vifter, a right valiant knight, was flaine, and to the number of thirty other with him. The same yeere on Saint Mandlins Eeven, neere unto Shrewesbury, a battell was fought betweene king Henry, and Henry Percy, and Thomas Percy then Earle of Worcester; which Percyes were slaine, and on both fides there were fixe thousand and more flaine in the battaile. The same yeere about Martlemas, the Lord Thomas of Lancafter, the kings Sonne, went over into England, leaving Stephen Scroope his Deputy there: who also in the beginning of Lent, sayled over into England, and then the Lords of the land chose the Earle of Ormond to be Lord Justice of Ireland.

Anno 1404. in the fift yeere of king Henry, John Colton, Archbilhop of Armagh, departed this life upon the fift of May, unto whom Nicholas Flemming succeeded. The same yeere on the day of Saint Vitall the Martyr, the Parliament began at Dublin, before the Earle of Ormond, then Lord Justice of Ireland, where the Statutes of Kilkenny and Dublin were confirmed, and likewise the Charter of Ireland. The same yeers Patricke Savage was treacherously flaine in Vifter, by Mac Kilmori, and his brother Richard was given

for a pledge, who was murthered in the prison, after hee had paid two thousand markes. The same yeers upon Martilmas day, deceased Nicholas Houth, Lord of Houth, a man of singular honesty.

Anno 1405, in the fixt yeere of King Henry, in the moneth of May, three Scottish Barkes were taken, two at Greenecassle, and one at Dalkay, with Captaine Thomas, Macgolagh. The same yeere the Merchants of Droghedah entred Scotland, and tooke pledges. and preyes. The same yeere on the Eeven of the feast day of the seaven brethren, Oghgard was burnt by the Irish. The same yeere in the moneth of June, Stephen Seroope croffed the feas over into England, leaving the Earle of Ormond, Lord Justice of Ireland. The same yeere in the moneth of June, they of Dublin entred Scotland at Saint Ninian, and valiantly behaved themselves: and afterward they entred Wales, and there did much hurt to the Welch men, and brought away the shrine of Saint Gubius, and placed irin the Church of the holy Trinitie in Dublin. The same yeere on the Eeven of the feast of the bleffed Virgin, James Butler, Earle of Ormond, dyedat Raligauran, (whose death was much lamented) whilest hee was Lord Justice of Ireland, unto whom succeeded Girald, Earle of Kildare.

Anno 1406. in the seaventh yeere of King Henry, on Corpus Chrisi day, the citizens of Dublin, with the country people about them, manfully vanquilhed the Irish enemies, and slue divers of them, and tooke two Ensignes, bringing with them to Dublin, the heads of those whom they had slaine. The same yeere the Prior of Conall, in the Plaine of Kildare, fought valiantly, and vanquished two hundred of the Irish that were well armed, slaying some of them, and chafing others, and the Pryor had not with him, but twenty English men: and thus God affisteth those that put their trust in him. The same yeere after Michaelmas, came into Ireland, Scroope, Deputie Iuflice to the Lord Thomas of Laucaster, the Kings Sonne, Lord Lievetenant of Ireland. The same yeere dyed Innocent the seaventh, to whom succeeded Gregorie in the Popedome. The same yeere a Parliament was holden at Dublin, on the feast of Saint Hillary, which in Lent after was ended at Trym, and Meiler Birmingbam flue Cathole O Conghir, in the end of Frebruary; and there dyed Sir Teffery Vaula, a Noble Knightin the Countie of Carlogh:

Anno 1407. a certaine most false fellow, an Irish man, named Mag Adam Mae Gilmori, that had caused forty Churches to be destroyed, who was never baptized, and therefore hee was called Corbi; tooke prisoner Patricke Savage, and received for his ransome, two thous fand markes, and afterwards slue him, together with his Brother Richard.

The same yeere, in the feast of the exaltation of the holy Crosse, Stephen Scroope, Deputy to the Lord Thomas of Lancaster, the Kings Sonne.

fonne, Lord Lievrenant of Ireland, with the Earles of Ormond and Desmond, and the Prior of Kilmainan and divers other Captaines, and men of warre of Meath, set from Dublin, and invaded the land of Mac Murch, where the Irish had the better part of the field for the former part of the day, but afterwards they were valiantly rescued by the said Captaines, so that Onolad with his sonne and divers others, were taken prisoners. But then and there being advertised that the Burkens and Okeroll, in the County of Kilkenny, had for the space of two dayes together done much mischiese, they rode with all speed unto the Towne of Callan, and there encountring with the adversassies, manfully put them to slight, slue Okeroll and eight hundred others; and it was averred by many, that the Sunne stoodstill for a space that day, till the Englishmen had ridden 6. miles, which was much to be wondred at.

The fame yeere, Stephen Scrope went over into England, and Iames Butler Earle of Ormond, was elected by the Country L. 1. of

Ireland.

The same yeere, in England neere unto Yorke, was slaine Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolf, and the Bishop of Bangor, were taken prisoners.

Anno 1408. The faid Lord Iustice held a Parliament at Dublin, in which the Statutes of Kilkenny and Dublin were established, and the Charter granted under the great Scale of England against Purveiors.

The fame yeere, the morrow after Lammas day, the Lord Thomas of Lancaster the Kings sonne, Lord Lievtenant of Ireland, landed at Carlingford, and in the weeke following, he came unto Dublin and arrested the Earle of Kildare, comming to him with three of his familie, her lost all his goods, being spoiled and risled by the Lord Lievtenant his servants, and himselfe kept still in the Castle of Dublin, tillhe had paid three hundred markes sine.

The same yeere on the day of Saint Marcell the Martyr, the L.

Stephen Scrope died at Triftledermot.

The fame yeers, the faid L. Thomas of Lancaster, at Kilmainan was woulded, and hardly escaped death; and after caused summons to be given by Proclamation, that all such as ought by their tenures to serve the King, should assemble at Rosse; and after the Feast of Saint Filling, he held a Parliament at Kilkenny, for a tallage to be granted; and after the 13. of March he went over into England, leaving the Prior of Kilmainan his Deputy in Ireland.

This yeere, Harb Mac Gilmore was flaine in Cragfergus within the Church of the Fryers Minors, which Church hee had before destroyed, and broken downe the Glasse-windowes, to have the Iron barres, through which his enemies the Savages entred

upon him.

of IRELAND.

Anno 1409. Of King Henry the fourth in June, Janico de Artois, with the Englishmen slue sourescore of the Irish in Vifter.

The same yeere, on the day of Saint Iohn and Paul, Alexander the fifth of the Order of Fryers Minors was confecrated Pope, and Pope Gregory and Antipope Clemens were condened for heretickes: and by these meanes unity was made in the Church.

The same yeere a heretick or Lollard of London was burned,

because he did not beleeve in the sacrament of the altar.

Anno 1410. Pope Alexander died on the day, of the Apofiles Philippe and Iacob, at Bononia; to whom succeeded John the XXIII.

Anno 1411. On Thursday before Septuagesima, marriage was celebrated betwixt William Preston and the daughter of Edward Paris, and on Saint Valentines even and day, marriages were celebrated between Iohn Wogan and the daughter of Christopher Preston and Walter de la Hide, and the second daughter of the same Christopher, with a great deale of charges.

Anno 1412. About the feast of Tiburtius and Valerianus, Oconthird did much mischiese in Meath, and tooke a hundred and three

fcore Englishmen.

The same yeere Odoles a Knight and Thomas Firz Manrice She-

rife of Limerick flue each other.

The same yeere, on the nineth Kalends of Inne, there died Robert Mountaine Bishop of Meath, to whom succeeded Edward

Dandisey sometimes Archdeacon of Cornward.

The same yeere in Harvest, the Lord Thomas of Lancester Duke of Clarence, went over into France, and with him went the Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Ormond and Green Cornwall with many others.

The same yeere, on Saint Cutherts day, King Henry the fourth departed this life. To whom succeeded Henry the fifth his

eldest sonne.

Anno 1413. On the fifth Ides of Aprill, namely, the first Sunday of the Passion of our Lord, A. being the Dominical letter, Henry the fifth, was crowned King of England at Westmin-

The same yeere, on the first of October, there landed in Ireland at Clontarf, John Stanley the Kings Lievtenant in Ireland; he departed

this life the 18.0f lanuary.

The same yeere, after the death of John Stanly Lievtenant, Thomas Crawly Archbishop of Dublin, was chosen Lord Justice of Ireland, on the 11. Kalends of February; the morrow after Saint Methias day, a Parliament began at Dublin, and continued for the space of 15. daies. In which time the Irish burned all that stood in their way,

as their usuall custome was in times of other Parliaments: whereuppon a tallage was demaunded but not granted.

Anno 1414. The English flue of the Irish of the Omordris and Odemsis, neer to Kilka, Thomas Crawly Archbishop of Dublin, then Lord Iuffice of Ireland, in Triftledermor, praying in Proceffion with his Clergy, and his men, with the helpe of those of the Country, flue one hundred of the Irish enemies. In the feaft of Saint Gordian and Epimachus, the English of Meath were discomfied, and there Thomas Manrevard Baron of Skrine was flaine, and Christopher Flemnig and Iohn Dardis taken prisoners; and many others were slaine by Oconthir and the Irish. On Saint Martins Eve, Sir John Tal. bot, Lord Furnivall, the Kings Lievtenant in Ireland landed at Dalkey.

Anno 1415: In the moneth of November a right noble man that walled the suburbs of Kilkenny departed this life; and after Hallonide Fryer Patricke Baret Bishop of Fernesa Canon of Kenlis dyed,

and was buried there.

Anno 1416. On the feaft day of Saint Gervafius and Prothafius the Lord Furnivall Lord Inflice of Ireland, had a some borne at Finglasse, about this time Stephen Flemming Archbishop of Armagh, a venerable man died, after whom succeeded Iohn Suaing: And the same time dyed the Lord and Fryer Adam Leins, of the Order of the Preaching Fryers, Bishop of Ardmagh. On the day of Saint Laurence the Martyr, the Lord Furnivals sonne Thomas Talbot, that was borne at Finglasse departed this life, and was buried in the Quire of the Fryers Preachers Church in Dublin. About the same time the Irish fell upon the Englishmen and slue many of them, among whom Themas Balimore of Baliquelan was one. The Parliament which the last yeere had beene called and holden at Dublin; was this yeere removed to Trim, and there began the 11. of May, where it continued for the space of 11. dayes, in the which was granted unto the L.L. a fublidy of foure hundred markes.

Anno 1417. Vpon May Eve, Thomas Granly Archbishop of Dublin, went over into England, and deceased at Faringdon, but his body was buried in the New Colledge at Oxford. This man is greatly praised for his liberality, he was a good almes man, a great Clerk, a Doctor of Divinity, an excellent Preacher, a great builder, beautifull, courteous, of a fanguine complexion, and of a tall stature, in somuch as in his time it might be faid unto him; Thou art fairer then the fons of menigrace and eloquence proceeded from thy lips: He was 80 yeeres of age when he died, and had governed the Church of Dublin almost

30. yccres in great quiet.

Annunciation of our Lady was in Eafter weeke, and shortly after, the Lord Deputy spoiled the tenants of Henry Crus and Henry Bethat; also at Slane upon the feast day of Sa

Iohn and S. Paul, the Earle of Kildare, Sir Christopher Presson, and Sir Iohn Bedlow were arrested and committed to ward, within the Castle of Trim, because they sought to commune with the Prior of Kilmaynan. Vpon the 29. of Iune, Mathew Husseil Baron of Galtrim deceased, and was buried in the Covent of the Fryers Preachers of Trim.

Anno 1419, upon the eleventh of May, dayed Edmund Brel fometime Major of Dublin, and was buried at the Fryers Preachers of the same City. A Royall Councell was holden at the Naas, where were granted unto the Lord Lievtenant 300. markes. At the

same time died Sir Iohn Loundres Knight.

The same yeere upon Cene thursday, Othoill tooke fowre hund dred Cowes belonging unto Balimore, breaking the peace, contrary to his oath. The fourth Ides of May, Mac Morthe, chiefe Captaine of his Nation, and of all the Irish in Leinster, was taken prisoner: And the same day, was Sir Hagh Cokesey made Knight. The last of May, the Lord Lievtenant and the Archbishop of Dublin, with the Major, rased the Castle of Kenini. The morrow after the feast of Processus and Martinianus, the Lord William de Burgh and o. ther Englishmen, slue five hundred of the Irish, and tooke Okelly. On the feast day of Mary Magdalen, the Lord Lievtenant John Talbot went over into England; leaving his Deputy there the Archbishop of Dublin, carying along with him the curses of many, because hee being runne much in debt for victuall and divers other things, would pay little or nothing at all. About Saint Lawrence day, divers dyed in Normandy, as Fryer Thomas Butler, that was Prior of Kilmainan, and many others. Whom Fryer Iohn Fitz Henry succeeded in the Priory. The Archbishop of Dublin, being Lord Deputy, made an affault upon Scohies, and slue thirtie of the Irish, neere unto Rodiston. Also the thirteenth of February, Iohn Fitz Henry, Prior of Kilmainan departed this life; and William Fitz Thomas was chosen to succeed in his place, & was confirmed the morrow after Saint Velentines the Lord John day. Also the morrow after Talber Lord Furnivall delivered up his place into the hands of the Lord Richard Talbot Archbishop of Dublin, who was afterward chosen to be Lord Justice of Ireland.

Anno 1420. about the fourth des of Aprill, Iames Butler, Earle of Ormond, Lord Lievetenant of Ireland, landed at Waterford, and shortly after he caused a combat to be fought betwirt two of his coufins: of whom one was slaine in the place, and the other was carried away fore wounded unto Kilkenny.

On Saint Georges day, the same Lord Lieverenant held a Councell at Dublin, and there summoned a Parliament, and after the midth thereof, he made great preyes upon Q Rely Mac Mahon, Mac Gynoys.

And the seventh of Iune, the Parliament began at Dublin, and there were granted to the Lord Lievetenant, seaven hundred markes, And that Parliament continued for fixteene dayes, and was adjourned againe to Dublin untill Munday after Saint Andrewes day. And in the faid Parliament were reckoned up the debts of the Bord tohn Talkat. late Lord Lievetenant, which amounted to a great fumme. Alforon the morrow after Michaelmas day, Michael Bodley departed this life. Voon Saint Francis Eeve, dyed Fryer Nicholas Talkot. Abbot of the Monastery of Saint Thomas the Martyrat Dublin, whom Fiver John Whiting succeeded. The morrow after the feast day of the Apostles Simon and Inde, the Castle of Colmolin was taken by Thomas Fitz Girald. And on Saint Katherines Eeven, Buttler. Sonne and heire unto the Earle of Ormond, was borne: and the Munday after Saint Andrewes day, the Parliament was begun at Dublin, and continued for thirteene dayes, and there were granted unto the Lord Lieverenant. three hundred markes, and then againe the Parliament was adjourned untill Munday after Saint Ambroseday. Then rumours were forcad abroad, that the Lord Thomas Fitz John, Earle of Defmond, was departed this life at Paris, upon Saint Laurence day, and that he was buried in the Covent of the Fryers Preachets there, the King of England being there present. After whom succeeded his Vncle lames Fitz Girald, whom he had three severall times renounced, alledging that he was an unthrift, and had wasted his Patrimony both in Ircland and England, and that hee gave or would give lands unto the Monastery of Saint lames of Keynisham.

Anno 1421. Our Lady day fell out to be upon Munday in Eafter weeke. Also the Parliament began the third time at Dublin, the Munday after Saint Ambroses day; and there it was ordained that agents should be sent over unto the King for reformation of matters touching the state of the land; namely, the Archbishop of Armagh, and Sir Christopher Preston, Knight. Atthe same time Richard Ottdian, Bishop of Casshell, was accused of John Gefe, Bishop of Lismore and Waterford, upon thirty articles: among other, one was, that he made very much of the Irilh, and that he loved none of the English nation, and that he bestowed no Benefice upon any English man, and that he counselled other Bishops not to give the least Benefice to any of them: that he counterfeited the Kings Seale and letters Patents: that he went about to make himselse King of Munster; and that hee had taken a Ring from the image of Saint Patricke, (which the Earle of Defmond had offered) and bestowed it upon his Concubine And he exhibited many other enormious matters against him in writing, by whom the Lords and Commons were troubled. Also in the same Parliament, there arose a contention betwixt Adam Payn, Bishop of Clone, because the said Adam would have united unto his See, the Church of another Prelate, and the other would not give way unto

it; and so they were dismissed unto the Court of Rome, & the Parliament continued eighteene dayes. Then newes were stirring, that the Lord Thomas of Lancaster, Duke of Clarence, was slaine in France, and many other with him. Vpon the seventh of May there was flaughter made upon the Earle of Ormonds, the Lord Lievetenants men, by Omordris, neere unto the Monastery of Leys, and there were seaven and twenty English men slaine: the chiese whereof were Purcell and Grant, tenne Noble men were taken prisoners, and two hundred fled unto the said Abbey, and so saved themselves. About the Ides of May, dyed Sir Iohn Bedloe, knight, and leffery Galon, fometime Major of Dublin, who was buried in the house of the Eryers Preachers of the same City. About the same time, Mac Mahon an Irish Lord, did much hurtin Vrgile, by wasting and burning all before him. Vpon the seaventh of June, the Lord Lievetenant entred into the Country, about Leys, upon Omordris, leading a very great army, and for the space of foure dayes together, slaying the people, till the Irish were glad to sue for peace. On the feast of Saint Michael the Arch-angell, Thomas Stanley, with all the Knights and Esquires of Meath and Irel, tooke Neyle O Donnell prisoner, and slue the rest, in the fourteenth yeere of the raigne of King Henry the fixt.

Here endeth the Chronicle of Henry Marleburrough.

FINIS.



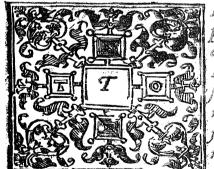
RIGHT HONORABLE THOMAS

LO. VISCOVNT VVENTWORTH; LO. DEPVTY GENERALL OF TRELAND

LO. PRESIDENT OF HIS

MATESTIES COUNCELL ESTABLISHED IN THE NORTH PARTS
OF ENGLAND, AND ONE OF
HIS MATESTIES MOST
BONORABLE PRIDIE
COUNCELL

RIGHT HONORABLE,



HE sence of that happy peace, which by the divine providence this Kingdome hath enjoyed, since the beginning of the raigne of his late Najestie of ever sacred memory, doth then take the deeper impression, when

these our halcyon dayes are compared with the former turbulent and tempestuous times, and with the miseries (of severall kindes) incident unto them. Those

z characters are fieldy feterally and to the life z

The Epitie IX

RIGHT HONORABLE THOMAS

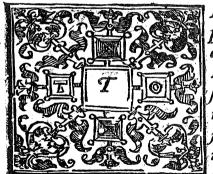
LO. VISCOVNT VVENTWORTH, LO. DEPVTY GENERALL OF TRELAND,

LO. PRESIDENT OF HIS

MAIESTIES COUNCELL ESTABLISHED IN THE NORTH PARTS
OF ENGLAND, AND ONE OF
HIS MAIESTIES MOST
HONORABLE PRIVIE

COUNCELL.

RIGHT HONORABLE,



HE sence of that happy peace, which by the divine providence this Kingdome bath enjoyed, since the beginning of the raigne of his late Najestie of ever sacred memory, doth then take the deeper impression, when

these our halcyon dayes are compared with the former turbulent and tempessuous times, and with the miseries (of severall kindes) incident unto them. Those

The Epistle Dedicatory.

calamities are fully set out, and to the life by Mr Spenser, with a discovery of their causes, and remedies, being for the most part excellent grounds of reformation. And to much may be juftly expected from him in regard of his long abode and experience of this Kingdome. In these respects, and for other good uses, which the collections (now communicated) doe afford for matter of history and policy, f am incouraged to dedicate them to your Lordship, and humbly to desire your favourable, acceptance of them, and of LO. PRESIDENCIÓ

ACRIBITES COTTICELL AS

kyleder **halo**ydd digodd ar codgairail old o'r y ol

(applicated the fielder) in elder his wife in the

a Enterprise and tomped them in her and a selection of

Your Lordhips ever humbly devoted

RIGHT HONORABLE

IAMES VV ARE.

The Inverse.

THE PREFACE.

Ow far these collections may conduce to the knowledge of the antiquities, and state of this Land, let the fit reader judge: yet something I may not passe by touching Mr Edmund Spenser & the worke

it selfe, lest I should seeme to offer injury to his worth, by others so much celebrated. Hee was borne in London of an ancient and hoble family, and brought up in the Vniversitie of Cambridge, where (as the fruites of his after labours doe manisest) he mispent not his time. After this he became Secretary to Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton, Lord Deputy of Ireland, a valiant and worthy Governour, and shortly after for his services to the Crowne, he had bestowed upon him by Queene Elizabeth, 3000. acres of land in the Countie of Corke. There hee finished the later part of that excellent poem of his Faery Queene, which was soone after unfortunately loft by the disorder and abuse of his fervant, whom he had fent before him into England, being then a rebellibus (as Camdens words . Annal. rer. are) è laribus ejectus & bonis spoliatus. He decea- Anglic. & His.

sed at Westminster in the yeare 1599. (others have it wrongly 1598.) some after his returne into England, and was buried according to his owne desire, in the collegiat Church there, neere unto Chaucer, whom he worthily imitated, (at the costes of Robert Earle of Esfex,) wherupon this Epitaph was framed,

Hic prope Chaucerum situs est Spenserius, illi proximus ingenio, proximus ut turbulo. Hic prope Chaucerum Spenfere poeta poetam conderis, & ver su quam rumulo propier. Anglicate vivo vixit plausity poesis, nunc moritura timet te moriente mori.

As for his worke now b published, although it 44 Remi inchris. fufficiently testifieth his learning and deepe cobi viscili dr. chief. Armacha. judgement, yet we may wish that in some passents and deepe judgement, yet we may wish that in some pasfages it had bin tempered with more moderation. The troubles and miseries of the time when he wrote it, doe partly excuse him. And surely wee may conceive, that if hee had lived to see these times, and the good effects which the last 30. yeares peace have produced in this land, both for obedience to the lawes, as also in traffique, husbandry, civility, & learning, he would have omitted those passages which may seeme to lay either any particular aspersion upon some families, or generall upon the Nation. For now we may truly say, jam cuntti gens una sumus, and that upon just cause those ancient statutes, wherein wherein the natives of frish descent were held to be, and named Irish enemies, and wherein those of English bloud were forbidden to marry and Commerce with them, were repealed by act of via lib. Statut.

Parlament, in the raigne of our late Soveraigne Dubl. an. 1621.

Dubl. an. 1621.

Dubl. an. 1621. King I A M E s of ever bleffed memory.

His proofes (although most of them conjecturall) concerning the original of the language, customes of the Nation, and the first peopling of the severall parts of the Iland, are full of good reading, and doe shew a sound judgment. They may be further confirmed by comparing them with Richard Creagh's Booke de lingua Hibernica, which is yet extant in the original manuscript, & althogh mixed with matter of story, leaning too much to some fabulous traditios, yet in other respects is worthy of light.

Touching the generall scope intended by the author for the reformation of abuses and ill customes, This we may say, that although very many have taken paines in the same subject, during the raigne of Queene Elizabeth, and some before, as the dauthor of the booke intituled Sa- deloruit fob inilus populi, and after him Patrick Finglas, cheife Hornit Inb Baron of the Exchequer here, and afterwardes cheife Iustice of the common pleas, yet none came so neere to the best grounds for reformation, a few passages excepted, as Spenser hath done in this. Some marginall notes I have added, although not intending any, untill the fourth part of the Booke was printed.

posters hich kinde of foeech, is die manner rather of indperate men

powish his different descriptions that to apply the beit indealyour of squill of second of the second of the second of the start of the second of the seco

very many, ecalmon want of the property of the service of the contract of the

memorinite and By Gamuna Openjer. Liquid. In the second control of the control of

Councels cast already about reformation of that Realme, but they fay, it is the fatall defliny of that Land, that no purpoles what foever which are meant for her good, wil prosper or take good effect, which whether it proceed from the very Geniu of the foyle, or influence of the starres, or that almighty God hath not yet appointed the time of her reformation, or that heereferveth her in this unquiet state still, for some secret seourge, which shall by her come unto England, it is hard to be knowne but yet much to be feared, bound he wind on

Eudox. Surely I suppose this but a vaine conceipt of simple men; which judge things by their effects, and not by their causes; for I would rather thinke the cause of this evill, which hangeth upon that Countrey to proceed rather of the unfoundnes of the Councels, and plots which you fay have bin oftentimes laid for the reformation or of faintnes in following & effecting the same, then of any such fatall course appointed of God, as you misdeeme, but it is the manner of men, that when they are fallen into any abilirdity, nor their actions fucceede not as they would, they are alwayes readic to impute the

blame thereof unto the Heavens, so to excuse their owne follies and imperfections. So have I heard it often wished alfo Geven of some whose great wisedomes in opinion should seems to judge more. foundly of so weighty a confideration) that all that land were a Sea poole: which kinde of speech, is the manner rather of desperate men farre driven to wish the utter ruine of that which they cannot redress. then of grave Councellors, which ought to thinke nothing to hard but that thorough wisedome, it may bee mastered and subdued fince the Poet faith, that the wifeman shall ruleeven over the Starres, much more over the Earth, for were it nor the part of a desperate Phistian to wish his diseased Patient dead, rather then to apply the best indeayour of his skill for his recovery. But lince we are so farte entred let us, I pray you, a little device of those exils, by which that country is held in this wretched case, that it cannot (as you say) be recured. And if it be not painefull to you, tell us what things during your late continuance there, you observed to bee most offensive, and greatest impeachment to the good rule and government thereof.

tren. Surely Eudox. the evils which you defire to be recounted are very many, & almost countable with those which were hidden in the basket of Pandora. But since you please I will out of that infinite number, reckon but some that are most eapitall, & commonly occurrant both in the life & conditions of private men, as also in the managing of publicke affaires and pollicy, the which you shall understand to be of divers natures, as I observed them. For some of them are of verie great antiquity and continuance; others more late and of lesse indurance; others dayly growing and increasing continuallie by their evill octasions, which are every day offered.

Endow. Tell them then, I pray you, in the same order that you have now rehearled the, for there can be no better method then this which the very matter it selfe offereth. And when you have reckoned all the evils, let us heare your opinion for the redressing of the: After which there will perhaps of it selfe appeare some reasonable way to settle a found and perfect rule of government, by shunning the former evils, and following the offered good. The which method we may learne of the wise Phisticians, which sirst require that the malady be knowne throughly, and discovered: Afterwards to teach how to cure and redresse it. And lastly doe prescribe a dyes with straight rule and orders to be dayly observed, for feare of relapse into the former disease, or falling into some other more dangerous then it.

tren: I will then according to your advisement begin to declare the evils, which seeme to the, most hurtfull to the common weale of that land, And first those (I say) which were most auncient and long growne. And they also are three some. The first in the Lawes, the second in Customes, and the last in Religion.

Endox: Why Irenau can there be any evill in the lawes, can things which are ordained for the good and fafety of all, turne to the evill and hurt of them . This well I wore both in that State, and in all.

other

other, that were they not contained in duty with feare of law, which reftraineth offences, and inflicteth sharpe punishment to misdoers, no man should enjoy any thing; every mans hand would be against an or ther. Therfore in finding fault with the Lawes, I doubt me; you shall much over-shoote your selfe, and make me the more dislike your other dislikes of that government.

ing right well that all Lawes are ordained for the good of the common-weale, and for repressing of licentiousnesse and vice, but it fallethout in Lawes, no otherwise then it doth in Physick, which was at first devised, and is yet daylie ment, and ministred for the health of the Patient. But neverthelesse we often see, that either thorough ignorance of the disease, or thorough unseasonablenesse of the time, or other accidents comming betweene, in stead of good, it worketh hurt, and out of one evill, throweth the Patient into many miseries. So the Lawes were at first intended for the reformation of abuses, and peaceable continuance of the Subject; but are sithence either disanulled, or quite prevaricated thorough change and alteration of times, yet are they good still in themselves, but in that commowealth which is ruled by them, they worke not that good which they should, and sometimes also that evill which they would not.

Endox. Whether doe you meane this by the Common-Lawes of that Realme, or by the Statute Lawes, and Acts of Parliaments.

Iren. Surely by them both for even the Common law being that which William of Normandy brought in with his conquest, and laid upon the neck of England, though perhaps it fitted well with the state of England then being, and was readily obeyed thorough the power of the Commander, which had before subdued the people unto him, & made easie way to the setling of his will, yet with the state of Ireland peradventure it doth not so well agree, being a people very stubborne and untamed y or if it were ever tamed, yet now lately having quite sheoken offtheir yoake, & broken the bonds of their obedience, For England (before the entrance of the Conqueror) was a peaceable Kingdome, and but lately inured to the milde and goodly government of Edward surnamed the Confessor, besides now lately growne into a loathing and deteffation of the unjust and tyrannous rule of Harold an usurper, which made them the more willing to accept of any reasonable conditions, & order of the new victor, thinking furely that it could be no work then the latter, and hoping well it would be as good as the former, yet what the proofe of first bringing in & establishing of those lawes was, was to many full bitterly made knowne. But with Ireland it is farre otherwife, for it is a Nation ever acquainted with warres, though but amongst themselves, & in their owne kinde of military discipline, trayned up ever from their youthes, which they have never yet beene taught to lay afide, normade to learne obedience unto Lawes, scarcely to know the name of Law, but in stead thereof have alwayes preferred and

kept their owne Law, which is the Brehon Law.

Endox. What is that which you call the Brehon law, it is a word

unto us altogether unknowner

Iren. It is a rule of right unwritten, but delivered by tradition from one to another, in which oftentimes there appeareth great shew ofequity, in determining the right betweene party and party, but in many things repugning quite both to Gods Law, and mans: As for example in the case of murder, the Brehon, that is their judge, will compound betweene the murderer, and the friends of the party murdered which profecute the action, that the malefactor shall give unto them, or to the child or wife of him that is flain a recompence, which they call an Eriach: By which vilde law of theirs, many murders amongst them are made up, and smothered. And this Judge being as hee is called the Lords Brehon, adjudgeth for the most part, a better share unto his Lord, that is the Lord of the soyle, or the head of that Sept, and also unto himselfe for his judgement a greater portion, then unto the Plantiffes or parties greived.

Eudox. This is a most wicked law indeed: But I trust it is not now used in Ireland, fince the Kings of England have had the absolute do-

minion thereof, and established their owne Lawes there.

Iren. Yes truly, for there be many wide countries in Ireland which the lawes of England were never established in nor any acknowledgment of subjection made, & also even in those which are subdued; & feeme to acknowledge subjection, yet the same Brehon law is practifed among themselves, by reason, that dwelling as they doe, whole nations and fepts of the Irish together, without any Englishman amongst them, they may doe what they list, and compound or altogether conceale amongst themselves their owne crimes, of which no notice can be had by them which would and might amend the same, by the rule of the Lawes of England.

Eudox. What is this which you say And is there any part of that Realme or any Nation therein, which have not yet beene subdued to the Crowne of England. Did not the whole Realme univerfally accept and acknowledge our late Prince of famous memory Heavy the

Viiith for their onely King and Leige Lord's

Iren. Yes verily: in a Parliament holden in the time of Sir Antho. my Saint-Leger then Lord Deputy, all the Irish Lords and principall men came in, and being by faire meanes wrought thereunto, acknowledged King Hemy for their Soveraigne Lord, referving yet (as some say) unto themselves all their owne former priviledges and Seignories inviolate.

Endox. Then by that acceptance of his Soveraignty they also accepted of his lawes. Why then should any other lawes be now used

amongst them?

Iren. True it is that thereby they bound themselves to his lawes & obedience, and in case it had beene followed upon them, as it should have beene, and a government thereupon settled among them

agreeable thereunto, they should have beene reduced to perpetuall civilities and contained in continual! dutie. But what bootes it to breake a Colte, and to let him straight runné loose at randome. So were these people at first well handled, and wifely brought to acknowledge allegiance to the Kings of England: but being fraight left unto themselves and their owne inordinate life and manners, they effloones forgot what before they were taught, and so soone as they were out of fight, by themselves shooke off their bridles, and beganne to colte anew, more licentiously then before.

Eudox. It is a great pittle, that fo good an oportunity was omitted, and so happie an occasion fore-flacked, that might have beene the eternall good of the Land. But doe they nor still acknowledge รายครับไรการที่ เกิด เพื่อเกาะโดยการครับไรการกระที่

that fubmission?

Iren. No, they doe not: for now the heires and posterity of them which weelded the same are (as they say) either ignorant thereof, or

doewilfully deny, or stedfastly disavow it wood a the party and and

Eudex. How can they so doe justly? Doth not the act of the Parent in any lawfull graunt or conveyance, bind their heires for ever thereunto? Sith then the Auncestors of those that now live, yeelded themselves then subjects and Liegemen, shall it not tye their Childrento the same subjection &

They fay no: for their Auncestours had no estate in any their Lands, Seigniories, or Hereditaments, longer then during their own lifes, as they alledge for all the Irish doe hold their Land by Tamiline; which is (lay they) no more but a personall estate for his life rime, that is, Tunist, by reason that he is admitted thereunto by ele-Clion of the Countrey it ad as so says or whelbhild a

Endown What is this which you call Taniff and Tanistry ? They

be names and termes never heard of nor knowne to us.

tren. It is a custome amongst all the Irish, that presently after the death of any of their chiefe Lords or Captaines, they doe prefently affemble themselves to a place generally appointed & knowne unto them to choose another in his steed, where they doe nominate and cdest for the most part, not the eldest some, nor any of the clistdren of the Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the eldest & worthieff as commonly the next brother unto him if he have any or the next coufin, or fo forth, as any is elder in that kinred or fept, and then next to him doe they choose the next of the blood to be Tanif. who shall next succeed him in the said Captainty, if he live therunto.

Endox. Doe they not use any ceremony in this elections for all barbarous nations are commonly great observers of ceremonies and

fuperstitious rites.

Iren. They vie to place him that shalbe their Captaine, upon a ftone alwayes referved for that purpole, & placed commonly upon a hill. In some of which I have seen formed & ingraven a foot, which they say was the measure of their first Captaines foot, whereon hee standing receive an oath to preserve all the anneienr former cu-

Romes

6

stomes of the Countrey inviolable, and to deliver up the succession peaceably to his Tanifi, and then hath a wand delivered unto him by some whose proper office that is: after which, descending from the stone, he turneth himselfe round, thrice forward, & thrice backward.

Endox. But how is the Taniff chosen.

Iren. They say he setteth but one foot upon the stone, and re-

ceiveth the like oath that the Captaine did.

Endox. Have you ever heard what was the occasion and first beginning of this custome? for it is good to know the same, and may perhaps discover some secret meaning and intent therein, very mate-

riall to the state of that government.

Iren. I have heard that the beginning & cause of this ordinance amongst the Irish, was specially for the defence and maintenance of their Lands in their posteritie, and for excluding all innovation or alienation thereof unto strangers, and specially to the English. For when their Captaine dieth, if the Signiorie should descend to his child, & he perhaps an Infant, another peradventure step in between, or thrust him out by strong hand, being then unable to defend his right, or to withstand the force of a forreiner, and therfore they doe appoint the eldest of the kinne to have the Signiorie, for that he commonly is a man of stronger yeares, and better experience to maintain the inheritance, and to defend the Countrey, either against the next bordering Lords, which use commonly to incroach one upon another, as each one is stronger, or against the English, which they thinke lyestill in waite to wype them out of their Lands and Territoryes. And to this end the Tanifi is alwayes ready knowne, if it should happen the Captaine suddenly to dye, or to be slaine in battell, or to be out of the Countrey, to defend and keepe it from all fuch doubts and dangers. For which cause the Tanist hath also a share of the Country allotted unto him, and certaine cuttings and spendings upon all the inhabitants under the Lord.

Eudox. When I heard this word Tanif, it bringeth to my remembrance what I have read of Tania, that it should signific a Province or Seigniorie, as Aquitania, Lustania, and Britania, the which somethinke to be derived of Dania, that is, from the Danes; bur, I thinke, amisse. But sure it seemeth, that it came anciently from those barbarous nations that over-ranne the world, which possessed those Dominions, whereof they are now fo called. And foir may well be that from thence the first original of this word Tanif and Tanifiry came, and the custome thereof hath sithence, as many others els, beene continued, But to that generall subjection of the Land, whereof wee formerly spake, me seemes that this custome or tenure can be no barre nor impeachment, seeing that in open Parliament by their faid acknowledgment they waved the benefite thereof, and submitted themselves to the benefite of their new Soveraigne.

Yea but they say as I carst tolde you, that they reserved Iren. their

their titles tenures and Seigniories whole and found to themselves. and for proofealledge, that they have ever fithence remained to them unrouched, fo as now to alter them, should (fay they) be a great wroned the day the contract of the bearing the west all it is the real of the contract of

Eudox. What remedie is there then, or meanes to avoide this inconvenience of for without first cutting of this dangerous custome, it seemeth hard to plant any found ordenance, or reduce them to a civill government, fince all their ill customes are permitted unto them.

Tren. Surely nothing hard: for by this Act of Parliament whereof wee speake, nothing was given to K. Henry which he had not before from his Auncestors, but onely the bare name of a King, for all other absolute power of principality helhad in himselfe before derived from many former Kings, his famous Progenitours and worthy Conquerors of that Land. The which firhence they first conquered and by force subdued unto them, what needed afterwards to enter into any fuch idle termes with them to be called their King when it is in the power of the Conqueror to take upon himself what title he will, over his Dominions conquered. For all is the Conquerours, as Tully to Brutus faith. Therefore (me seemes) instead of so great and meritorious a service as they boast they performed to the King in bringing all the Irish to acknowledge him for their Liege, they did great hurt unto his Title, and have left a perpetuall gall in the minde of the people, who before being absolutely bound to his obedience, are now tyed but with termes, whereas else both their lives, their lands, and their liberties were in his free power to appoint what tenures, what lawes, what conditions hee would over them which were all his: against which there could be no rightfull refiftance, or if there were, he might when he would establish them with a stronger hand.

Eudox. Yeabut perhaps it seemed better unto that noble King to bring them by their owne accord to his obedience, and to plant a peaceable government amongst them, then by such violent means to pluck them under, Neither yet hath he therby loft any thing that he formerly had, for having all before absolutely in his owne power, it remaineth so ffill unto him, he having thereby neither forgiven, nor forgone any thing thereby unto them, but having received fomthing from them that is a more voluntary and loyall subjection. So as her Majesty may yet when it shall please her alter any thing of those former ordinances or appoint other lawes, that may be more both for her owne behoofe, and for the good of that people.

Iren. Not lo: for it is not so easie, now that things are growne unto an habit, and have their certaine course to change the channell, & turne their streames another way; for they may have now a color rable pretence to withstand such innovations, having accepted of other lawes and rules already.

Eudox. But you fay they do not accept of them, but delight rather to leane to their old customes & Brehen lawes, though they be more unjust and also more inconvenient for the common people, as by your late relation of them I have gathered . As for the lawes of England they are furely most just and most agreeable, both with the government and with the nature of the people. How falls it then that you feeme to diflike of them, as not so meete for that Realme of Ireland. and not onely the Common Law, but also the Statutes and Actes of Parliament, which were specially provided and intended for the onlie benefit thereof an en some then it in ion the some are a vince

Iren. I was about to have told you my reason therein, but that your felfe drewe me away with other questions of for I was shewing you by what meanes, and by what fort, the Politive Lawes were first brought in and established by the Norman Conquerour: which were not by him devised nor applyed unto the state of the Realmethen being nor as yet might best be (as should by Lawgivers principally be regarded) but were indeed the very Lawes of his owne Countrey of Normandie. The condition whereof how farre it differeth from this of England, is apparant to every least judgement. But to transferre the fame lawes for the governing of the Realme of Ireland, was much more inconvenient and unmeete, for he founda better advantage of the time, then was in the planting of them in Ireland, and followed th'execution of them with more feverity, and was also present in person to overlooke the Magistrates, and to overawe these subjects with the terrour of his Sword, and countenance of his Majesty. But not fo in Ireland for they were otherwise affected, and yet doe fo remaine, fo as the fame Lawes me feemes) can ill fit with their difposition or worke that reformation that is wished. For Lawes ought to be fashioned unto the manners & conditions of the people, to whom they are meant, and not to be imposed upon them according to the simple rule of right, for then (as I said) in stead of good they may worke ill, and pervert Iuffice to extreame injuffice. For hee that transferres the Lawes of the Lavedemonians to the people of Athens. should finde a great absurditie and inconvenience... For those Lawes of Lacedemon were devised by Licurgus as most proper and best agreeing with that people, whom hee knew to be enclined altogether to warres, and therefore wholly trained them up even from their Cradles in armes and military exercises, cleane contrary to the institution of Solon, who in his Lawes to the Athenians laboured by all meanes to temper their warlike courages with fweet delightes of learning and sciences, so that asmuch as the one excelled in armes, the other exceeded in knowledge. The like regard & moderation ought to be had in tempering and managing of this stubborne nation of the miss to bring them from their delight of licentious barbarisme unto the love of goodnes and civilitie. we reduce a semestil well entire

- Eudox: I cannot see how that may better beethen by the Discipline of the Lawes of England: for the English were at first, as stoute and warlike a people as ever the Irish; and yet you fee are now brought unto that civillity, that no nation in the world excelleth them in all goodly convertation, and all the studies of knowledge and humanitie.

Iren. What they now be, both you and I see very well, but by how many thornie and hard wayes they are come thereunto, by how many civill broiles, by how many tumultuous rebellions, that even hazzarded oftentimes the whole safety of the kingdome, may easily be confidered; all which they nevertheleffe fairely overcame, by reafon of the continual presence of their King, whose onely person is oftentimes in stead of an Army, to containe the unrulie people from a thousand evill occasions, which this wretched kingdome for want thereof is dayly carried into. The which whenfoever they make head, no lawes, no penalties, can restraine, but that they doe in the violence of that furie, tread downe and trample under foote all both divine and humane things, and the lawes themselves they doe specially rage at and rend in peeces, as most repugnant to their libertie and naturall freedome, which in their madnes they affect.

Eudox. It is then a very unfeafonable time to plead law, when Swords are in the hands of the vulgar, or to thinke to retaine them with feare of punishments, when they looke after liberty, and shake

offall governement.

Iren. Then fo it is with Ireland continually, Eudenus; for the fword was never yet out of their hand, but when they are weary of warres and brought downe to extreame wretchednesse, then they creepe a little perhaps and fue for grace, till they have gotten new breath and recovered their strength againe. So as it is in vaine to speake of planting lawes, and plotting pollicie, till they be altogether subdued.

Eudox. Were they not so at the first conquering of them by Strongbowe in the time of King Henry the second? was there not a thorough way then made by the fword, for the imposing of the lawes upon them ? and were they not then executed with fuch a mightie hand as you faid was used by the Norman Conquerour? What oddes is therethen in this case why should not the same lawes take as good effect in that people as they did here, being in like fort prepared by the fword, and brought under by extreamity and why should they not continue in as good force and vigour for the containing of the

people?

Tren. The case yet is not like, but there appeareth great oddes betweene them: for by the conquest of Henry the second, true it is that the Irish were utterly vanquished and subdued, so as no enemy was able to hold up head against his power, in which their weakenes hee brought in his lawes, and fettled them as now they there remaine; Like as William the Conquerour did, fo as in thus much they agree; but in the rest that is the cheifest, they varie : for to whom did King Henry the second impose those lawes, not to the Irish, for the most part of them fled from his power, into deferts and mountaines, leaving the wyde countrey to the Conquerour: who in their stead eftfoones placed English men, who possessed all their lands and did

quite shut out the Irish, or the most part of them. And to those new inhabitants and Colonies, he gave his lawes, to wit the same lawes, under which they were borne and bred, the which it was no difficultie to place amongst them, being formerly well inured thereunto, unto whom afterwards they repaired diverse of the poore distressed people of the Irish, for succour and reliefe of whom, such as they thought sit for labour and industriously disposed, as the most part of their baser fort are, they received unto them as their vasfalls, but scarcely vouchsafed to impart unto them the benefit of those lawes under which themselves lived, but every one made his will and commandement a law unto his owne vassall: Thus was not the Law of England ever properly applyed unto the Irish Nation, as by a purposed plot of government, but as they could infinuate and steale themselves under the same, by their humble carriage and submission.

Endox. How comes it then to passe; that having beene once so low brought, and thoroughly subjected; they afterwards lifted up themselves so strongly againe, and strhence doe stand so stiffely a-

gainst all rule and government?

Iren. They fay that they continued in that lowlinesse, untill the time that the division between the two houses of Lancaster and Torke. arose for the Crowne of England: at which time all the great English Lords and Gentlemen which had great possessions in Ireland, repaired over hither into England, some to succour their Friends here, and to strengthen their partie for to obtaine the Crowne, others to defend their lands and possessions here against such as hovered after the same upon hope of the alteration of the kingdome and successe of that fide which they favoured and affected. Then the triff whom before they had banished into the mountaines, where they lived onely upon whitt meates, as it is recorded, feeing now their lands fo difpeopled, and weakened, came downe into all the plaines adjoyning, and thence expelling those few English that remained, repossessed them againe, fince which they have remained in them, and growing greater, have brought under them many of the English, which were before their Lords. This was one of the occasions by which all those Countreves, which lying neere unto any Mountaines, or Irish desarts, had beene planted with English, were shortly displanted and lost. As namely in Mounster all the lands adjoyning unto Slewlogher, Arlo, and the bog of Allon. In Connaght all the Countries bordering upon the Curlues, Mointerolis, and Orourkes Countrey. In Leinster all the lands bordering unto the Mountaines of Glanmalour, unto Shillelab, unto the Brackenah, and Polmonte. In Viller all the Countreyes necreunto Tirconnel, Tyrone, and the Scottes.

Eudox. Surely this was a great violence: but yetby your speach it seemeth that onely the Countreyes and valleyes neere adjoyning unto those mountaines and desarts, were thus recovered by the Lish but how comes it now that we see almost all that Realme reposses fed of them? was there any more such evill occasions growing by

the troubles of England. Or did the Irish out of those places so by them gotten breake further and stretch themselves out thorough the whole land; for now, for ought that I can understand, there is no part but the bare English Pale, in which the Irish have now the greatest footing.

Iren. But out of these small beginnings by them gotten neare to the mountaines, did they spread themselves into the Inland, and also to their further advantage, there did other like unhappy accidents hap4 pen out of England; which gave heart and good opportunity to them to regaine their old possessions. For in the raigne of King Edward the fourth, things remained yet in the same state that they were after the late breaking out of the triff, which I spake of; and that noble Prince began to cast an Eye unto Ireland, and to minde the reformation of things there runne amisse: for he sent over his brother the worthy Duke of Clarence, who having married the heire of the Earle of Vifer, and by her having all the Earledome of Vifter and much in Meath and in Mounster, very carefully went about the redressing of all those late evills, and though he could not beate que the Irish againe, by reafon of his short continuance, yet hee did thut them up within those narrow corners and glynnes under the mountaines foote, in which they lurked, and so kept them from breaking any further, by building strong holdes upon every border; and fortifying all passages. Amongst the which hee repaired the Castle of Clare in Thomsand, of which Countrey he had the inheritance, and of entortimers lands adjoyning, which is now (by the triff) called will also. But the times of that good King growing also troublesome, shid lett the thorough reformation of all things. And thereunto foone after was added another farall mischeife, which wrought a greater calamity then all the former . For the faid Duke of Glarence then Lord Lieutenant of Ireland was by practife of evill persons, about the King his brother, called thence away: and foone after by finister meanes was cleane made away. Presently after whose death, all the North revolting, did fer up oneale for their Captaine, being before that of small power and regard; and there arose in that part of Thomand, one of the o-Briens, called Murrogh en-Ranagh, that is, Morrice of the Perne of walt wilde places, who gathering unto him all the reliques of the discontented trilb, eft foones surprised the faid Castle of Clare, burnt, and spoyled all the English theredwelling and in short space possessed all that countrey beyond the River of Shanan and neere adjoyning: Whence fhortly breaking forth like a fuddaine tempest he over-ran all Monnfler and Connaght; breaking downeall the holds and fortreffes of the English, defacing and utterly subverting all corporate Townes, that were not firongly walled for those, the had no meanes nor Engines to overthrow, neither indeed would hee stay at all about them, but speedily ran forward, counting his suddennesse his most advantage, that he might overtake the Bnglish before they could fortifie or gather themselves together . So in short space hee cleane wy ped out

12

many great Townes, as first inchequin, then Killalow, before called Clariford, also Thurles, Mourne, Buttevant, and many others, whose names I cannot remember; and of some of which there is now no memory nor figne remaining. Woon report whereof there flocked unto him all the scumme of the Irish out of all places, that ere long he had a mighty Army , and thence marched foorth into Leinster, where he wrought great out-rages; wasting all the Countrey where he went; for it was his policie to leave no hold behinde him, but to make all plaine and waste. In the which he soone after created himfelfe King, and was called King of all Ireland, which before him I doe not reade that any did so generally, but onely Edward le Bruce.

Endox. What was there ever any generall King of all treland? I never heard it before, but that it was alwayes (whilst it was under the Irib) divided into foure, and sometimes into five kingdomes or dominions. But this Edward le Bruce what was hee, that could make himselfe King of all Ireland? to amobas a float lib go frad collection.

Iren. I would tell you in cafe you would not challenge me anon for forgetting the matter which I had in hand, that is, the inconvenience and unfitnesse which I supposed to be in the lawes of the Land. Proceed a deliganger.

Eudox. No furely, I have no cause, for neither is this impertinent thereunto; for hithence you did fet your course (as I remember in your first part) to theate of the evils which hindered the peace and good ordering of that Land, amongst which that of the inconvenience in the lawes, was the first which you had in hand, this discourse of the over-running & wasting of the Realme, is very materiall thereunto, for that it was the begining of all the other evils, which fithence have afflicted that land, & opened a way unto the Irish to recover their possession. & to beat out the English which had formerly wonne the fame. And besides, it will give a great light both unto the second and third part, which is the redroffing of those evils, & planting of some good forme or policy therin, by renewing the remembrance of these occasios & accidents, by which those ruines hapned, & laying before us the ensamples of those times, to be copared to ours, & to be warned by those which shall have to doe in the like. Therefore I pray you tell them unto us, and as for the point where you left. I will not forget afterwards to call you backe again thereunto.

Iren. This Edw.le Bruce was brother of Robert le Bruce, who was King of Scotland, at such time as K. Edward the second raigned here in England, and bare a most malicious and spightfull minde against K. Edward, doing him all the scathe that hee could, and annoying his Territoryes of England; whilest hee was troubled with civill warres of his Barons athome. Hee also to worke him the more mischiefe, sent over his said brother Edward with a power of Scottes and Red-flankes into Ireland, where by the meanes of the Lucies, and of the Irifb, with whom they combined, they gave fooring, and gathering unto him all the scatterlings and out-lawes out of all

the woods and mountaines, in which they long had lurked, marched foorth into the English pale, which then was chiefly in the North from the point of Donluce and beyond unto Dublin: Having in the middest of her Knockfergus, Belfast, Armagh, and Carling. ford, which are now the most out-bounds and abandoned places in the English Pale, and indeede not counted of the English Pale stall: for it firetcheth now no further then Dundalke towardes the North. There the said Edward le Bruce spoyled and burnt all the olde English Pale Inhabitants, and sacked and rased all Citties and Corporate Townes, no lesse, then Murrough en Ranagh; of whom I earst tolde you : For hee wasted Belfast, Greene-Castle, Kelles, Bellturbut, Castletowne, Newton, and many other very good Townes and strong holdes, hee rooted out the noble Families of the Audlies, Talbotts, Tuchets, Chamberlaines, Ataundevills, and the Savages out of Ardes, though of the Lo: Savage there remaineth yet an heire, that is now a poore Gentleman of very meane condition, yet dwelling in the Ardes. And comming lastly to Dandalke, hee there made himselfe King, and raigned the space of one whole yeare, untill that Edward King of England having set some quiet in his affaires at home, sent over the Lord John Birmingham to bee Generall of the Warres against him, who incountering him neere to Dundalke, over-threw his Army, and slew him. Also hee presently followed the vistory fo horly upon the Scottes, that hee suffered them not to breathe, or gather themselves together againe, untill they came to the Sea-coast. Norwithstanding all the way that they stedde, for very rancor and despight, in their returne they atterly con-Sumed and wasted whatsoever they had before left unspoyled; Sonas of all Townes, Castles, Forts, Bridges, and Habitations, they left not any sticke standing, nor any people remayning, for those few which yet survived, stedde from their sury further into the English Pale that now is. Thus was all that goodly countrey utterly wasted. And sure it is yet a most beautifull and sweet Countrey as any is under Heaven, being stored throughout with many goodly Rivers, replenished with all forts of Fish most abundantly, fprinkled with many very fweet Hands and goodly Lakes, like little inland Seas, that will carry even thippes upon their waters, adorned with goodly woods even fit for building of houses & ships, fo commodiously, as that if some Princes in the world had them, they would soone hope to be Lords of all the Seas, and ere long of all the world: also full of very good Ports and Havens opening upon England, as inviting us to come unto them, to fee what excellent comodities that Countrey can afford, besides the soyle it selfe most fertile, fit to yeeld all kinde of fruit that shall be committed thereunto. And laftly, the Heavens most milde and temperate, though formwhat more moist then the parts towards the West.

Endox. Truly Iren. what with your praises of the countrey, and

14

what with your discourse of the lamentable desolation therof, made by those scottes, you have filled mee with a great compassion of their calamities, that I doe much pitty that sweet Land, to be subiect to so many evills as I see more and more to bee lavde upon her. and doe halfe beginne to thinke, that it is (as you faid at the beginn ning) her fatall miffortune above all other Countreyes that I know. to bee thus miserably tossed and turmoyled with these variable flormes of affliction. But fince wee are thus farre entred into the confideration of her milhaps, tell mee, have there been any more fuch tempests as you terme them, wherein she hath thus wretchedly whom I carll colide you a Nor had we beene wracked?

Iren. Many more God wor, have there beene, in which principall parts have beene rent and torne a funder, but none as I can remember) fo univerfall as this. And yet the rebellion of Thomas fitz Garret did well-nye firetch it selfe into all parts of ireland. But that which was in the time of the government of the Lord Grey, was finely no lesse generall then all those, for there was no partiree from the contagion, but all conspired in one, to cast off their subjection to the Crowne of England. Neverthelesse thorough the most wise and valiant handling of that right noble Lord, it got not the head which the former evills found; for in them the Realme was left like a thip in a storme, amidst all the raging surges, unruled, and undirected of any: for they to whom the was committed, either fainted in their labour, or forfooketheir charge. But hee (like a most wife Pilote,) kept her course catefully, and held her most strongly even against those out ring billowes, that he fafely brought her out of all, fo as long after, even by the space of 12.or 13 whole yeares, the roade at peace; thorough his onely paines and excellent indurance, how ever eavy lift to blatter against him. But of this wee shall have more occasioned speake in another place. Now (if you please) let us returne againeunto our first course.

Eudox. Truely I am very glad to heare your judgement of the government of that honorable man fo foundly, for I have heard it oftentimes maligned, and his doings depraved of fome, who (I perceive) did rather of malicious minde, or private grievance, feeke to detract from the honour of his decds and Counfels, then of any fulf cause, but hee was neverthelesse in the judgements of all good and wife men, defended and maintained. And now that hee is dead his immortall fame furviveth, and flourisherh in the mouther of all people, that even those which did backbite him, are checked with their owne venome, and breake their galls to heare his to honorable report. Burlet him reft in vedec, and turne we'to our more troublefome marters of discourse, of which I am right forry that you make fo short an end, and cover to passe over to your former purpofes, for there be many other parts of treland, which I have heard have bin no lesse vexed with the like stormes, then these which you have treated of as the Countries of the Birner & Tooles neere Dublin, with with the infolent our rages and spoyles of Feagh mac Hugh, the Countreves of Catherlagh, Wexford, and Waterford by the Cavenaghes. The Countreyes of Leix, Kilkenny, and Kildare by the OMoores. The Countreves of Ofaly and Longford by the Connors. The Countreyes of Westmeath, Cavan, and Lowth, by the o Relies, the Kellyes, and many others, fo as the discoursing of them, besides the pleasure which would redound out of their History, be alfo, very profitable for matters of policy.

Iren. All this which you have named, and many more befides Joften times have I right well knowne, and yet often doe kindle great fires of tumultuous broyles in the Countreyes bordering upon them. All which to rehearfe, should rather bee to Chronicle times, then to fearch into reformation of abuses in that Realme, and yet very needfull it will bee to confider them, and the evills which they have often stirred up, that some redresse thereof, and prevention of the evills to come, may thereby rather be devised. But I suppose wee shall have a fitter oportuni-

uses, and enormities of the government, which will bee next after these generall desects and inconveniences which I saide were in the Lawes, Customes, and Religion.

ty for the same, when wee shall speake of the particular ab-

Eudox! Goe to them a Gods name, and follow the course which you have promised to your selfe, for it sitteth best; I must confesse with the purpose of our discourse. Declare your opinionias you began about the Lawes of the Realmen what incommoditie you have conceived to bee in them, chiefly in the common Law, which I would have thought most free from all such difidoniries ber Eller essel, Lande sessingel, Vlardinings, Gail

mitren. The Common Law is (as I said before) of it selfe most rightfull and very convenient (I suppose) for the Kingdome, for which it was first devised : for this (I thinke) as it feeemes reasonable, that out of your manners of your people, and abuses of your Countrey, for which they were invented, they take their first beginning ; or else they should bee most unjust; for no Lawes of man (according to the straight rule of right) are just a but as in regard of the evills which they prevent, and the lafety of the Common-weale which they provide for. As for example, in your true ballancing of Iustice, it is a flat wrong to punish the thought or purpose of any before it bee enacted, for true Inflice punisheth nothing but the evill act or wicked word, that by the Lawes of all Kingdomes it is a capitall cryme to devise or purpose the death of your King: The reason is, for that when flich a purpose is effected, it should then bee too late to devise thereof, and should turne the Common-wealth to more losse by the death of their Prince then such punishment of the malefactors. And therefore the Law in that case punisheth the thought, for betteris a mischiefe, then an inconvenience. So that Im politicum, though

though it bee not of it selfe just, yet by application, or rather necessity it is made just, and this onely respect maketh all Lawes iust. Now then, if these Lawes of Ireland bee not likewise applyed and fitted for that Realme, they are fure very inconvenient.

Eudox. You reason strongly: but what unfitnesse doe you finde

in them for that Realme, shew us some particulars.

Iren. The Common Law appointeth, that all tryalls as well of Crimes, as Titles and Rights, shall bee made by verdict of a Iury, chosen out of the honest and most substantial! Freeholders. Now, most of the Free-holders of that Realme, are Irish, which when the cause shall fall betwixt an Englishman and an Irish, or betweene the Queene, and any Free-houlder of that Countrey, they make no more scruple to passe against an Englishman, and the Queene, though it bee to strayne their oathes, then to drinke milke unstrayned. So that before the Iury goe together, it is all to nothing what the verdict shall be. The tryall have I fo often feene that I dare confidently avouch the abuse thereof. Yet is the Law of it selfe, (as I said) good, and the first institution thereof being given to all Englishmen very rightfully, but now that the Irish have stepped into the very roomes of your English, wee are now to become heedfull and provident in Iurves.

Endox. In footh Iren. you have discoversed a point worthw the confideration; for heereby not onely the English subject findeth no indifferencie in deciding of his cause, bee it never so just: but the Queene aswell in all pleas of the Crowne, as also in inquiries for Escheates, Lands attainted, Wardshipps, Concealements, and all such like, is abused and exceedingly dam-

Iren. You say very true; for I dare undertake, that at this day there are more attainted Lands, concealed from her Maje. stie, then shee hath now possessions in all treland grand it is no small inconvenience: for besides that, shee looseth so much Land as should turne to her great profite, shee besides loofeth fo many good subjects; which might bee affured unto her , as those Landes would yeelde Inhabitants and living unto.

Eudex. But doth many of that people (fay you) make no more conscience to perjure themselves in their verdicts, and damne their Terimon a si al compoderna Dicto second du ve

Ires. Not onely fo in their verdicts to but also in all other their dealings respecially with the English they are most willfully bent : for though they will not feeme manifeftly to doe it, yet will some one or other subtle-headed fellow amongst them, put some quirke, or devise some evasion, whereof the rest will likely take hold, and fuffer themselves easily to be led by him to

that themselves desired. For in the most apparant matter that may bee, the least question or doubt that may bee mooved, will make a stoppe unto them, and put them quite out of the way. Besides, that of themselves (for the most part) they are so cautelous and wylie-headed, especially being men of so small experience, and practice in law matters; that you would wonder whence they borrow fuch fubtiltyes and flye shifts.

Eudox. But mee thinkes this inconvenience might bee much helped in the Judges and chiefe Magistrates which have the choofing and nominating of those Iurors, if they would have dared to appoint either most Englishmen, and such Irishmen as were of the foundest judgment and disposition; for no doubt but some there bee

incorruptible.

Iren. Somethere bee indeede as you fay, but then would the Irish partie crye out of partialitie, and complaine hee hath no Iustice, hee is not used as a subject, hee is not suffered to have the free benefite of the Law, and these our cryes the Magistrates there doe much thunne, as they have cause, fince they are readily hearkened unto heere, neither can it bee indeede, although the Irish party would bee so contented to be so compassed, that fuch English free-houlders which are but few, and such faithfull Irishmen, which are indeede as few, shall alwayes bee chofen for tryalls, for being fo few, they should bee made weary of their free-houldes. And therefore a good care is to bee had by all good occasions, to encrease their number, and to plant more by them. But were it fo , that the lurors could bee picked out of fuch choyce men as you defire, this would neverthelesse bee as bad a corruption in the tryall, for the evidence being brought in by the baser Irish people, will bee as deceiptfull as the verdict, for they care much lesse then the others, what they fweare, and fure their Lordes may compell them to fay any thing, for I my felfe have heard, when one of the baser fort (which they call Churles) being challenged and reprooved for his false oath, hath answered confidently, that his Lord commainded him, and it was the least thing that hee could doe for his Lord, to sweare for him; fo inconfcionable are these common people, and so little feeling have they of God, or their owne soules good.

Eudox. It is a most miserable case, but what helpe can: there then bee in this? for though the manner of the tryalls should bee altered, yet the proofe of every thing must needes bee by the testimony of such persons as the partyes shall produce, which if they shall bee corrupt; how can there ever any light of the truth appeare, what remedy is there for this evill but to make heavy Lawes and Penalties against Iurors.

Iren. I thinke fure that will doe small good, for when a people be inclined to any vice, or have no touch of Conscience, nor sence of their evill doings; it is bootelesse to thinke to restraine them by any penalties or feare of punishment, but either the occasion is to be taken away, or a more understanding of the right, and shame of the fault to be imprinted. For if that Licurgus should have made it death for the Lacedemonians to steale, they being a people which naturally delighted in stealth, or if it should bee made a capitall crime, for the Flemmings to be taken in drunkennesse, there should have beene sew Lacedemonians then lest, and sew Flemmings now. So unpossible it is, to remove any fault so generall in a people, with terrour of lawes or most sharpe restraints.

Eudex. What meanes may there be then to avoy de this inconve-

nience, for the case seemes very harde

Iren. We are not yet come to the point to devise remedies for the evils, but only have now to recount them, of the which, this which I have told you is one defect in the Common Law.

Endex. Tellus then (I pray you) further, have you any more of

this fort in the Common Laws

Iren. By rehearfall of this, I remember also of an other like, which I have often observed in trialls, to have wrought great hurt and hinderance, and that is the exceptions which the common law alloweth a Fellon in his tryall, for he may have (as you know) 56. exceptions pereptory against the Iurors, of which he shall shew no cause. By we shift there being (as I have shewed you) so small store of honest Iurymen, he will either put off his tryall, or drive it to such menus (perhaps) are not of the soundest fort, by whose meanes, if he can acquite himselfe of the crime, as he is likely, then will he plague such as were brought first to bee of his Iurie, and all such as made any party against him. And when he comes forth, he will make their Cowes and Garrons to walke, if he doe no other harme to their persons.

Endox. This is a flye devise, but I thinke might soone bee remedied, but we must leave it a while to the rest. In the meane-while doe

you goe forwards with others.

the tryall of accessaries to fellony, for by the common Law, the accessaries cannot be proceeded against, till the principall have received his tryall. Now to the case, how it often falleth out in treland, that a stealth being made by a rebell; or an outlawe, the stolne goods are conveyed to some hulbandman or Gentleman, which hath well to take to, and yet liveth most by the receipt of such stealthes, where they are found by the owner, and handled: whereupon the partie is perhaps apprehended and committed to Goale, or put upon sureties, till the Sessions, at which time the owner preferring a bill of Indictment, proveth sufficiently the stealth to have been committed upon him, by such an Outlaw, and to have been found in the possession of the prisoner, against whom, neverthelesse, no course of law can pro-

ceede, nor tryall can be had, for that the principal! Theife is not to be gotten, norwith standing that he likewise, standing perhaps indicted at once, with the Receiver, being in rebellion, or in the woods: where peradventure he is slaine before he can be gotten, and so the Receiver cleane acquitted and discharged of the crime. By which meanes the Theeves are greatly incouraged to steale, and their maintainers imboldened to receive their stealthes, knowing how hardly they can be brought to any tryall of Law.

Budox. Truely this is a great inconvenience, and a great cause (as you say) of the maintenance of Theeves, knowing their Receivers alwayes ready, for were there no receivers, there would be no theeves: but this (me seemes) might easily be provided for, by some act of Parliament, that the receiver being convicted by good proofes might re-

ceive his tryall without the principall.

tren. You say very true Endox. but that is almost impossible to be compassed: And herein also you discover another imperfection, in the course of the Common Law, and first ordinance of the Realmest for you know that the said Parliament must consist of the Peeres, Gentlemen, Free-holders, and Burgesses of that Realme it selfe. Now these being perhaps themselves, or the most part of them (as may seeme by their stiffe with-standing of this Act) culpable of this crime, or favourers of their freinds, which are such, by whom their Kitchins are sometimes amended, will not suffer any such Statute to passe. Yee hath it oftentimes been eattempted, and in the time of Sir some parrow very carnestly (I remember) laboured, but could by no meanes be effected. And not onely this, but many other like, which are as needefull for the reformation of that Realme.

Endox. This also is furely a great defect, but wee may not talke (you say) of the redressing of this, untill our second part come, which is purposely appointed thereunto. Therefore proceed to the recoun-

ting of more fuch evils, if at least, you have any more.

Iren. There is also a great inconvenience, which hath wrought great dammage, both to her Majesty, and to that common wealth, thorough close and colourable conveyances of the lands and goods. of Traytors, Fellons and Fugitives. As when one of them mindeth to goe into rebellion, hee will convey away all his lands and Lordthips to Feoffees in trust, wherby he reserveth to himselfe, but a state for terme of life, which being determined either by the fword or by the halter, their lands straight commeth to their heire, and the Queen is defrauded of the intent of the Law, which laide that grievous punishment upon Traytors, to forfeite all their lands to the Prince, to the end that men might the rather be terrified from committing treafons for many which would little esteeme of their owne lives, yet. for remorfe of their wives and children would bee with-held from that haynous crime. This appeared plainely in the late Earle of Defmond. For before his breaking forth into open Rebellion, hee had conveyed secretly all his lands to Feoffees of trust, in hope to have cut off her Maiestie from the escheate of his Lands.

Eudox. Yea, but that was well enough avoided, for the Act of Parliament which gave all his lands to the Queene, did (as I have, heard) cut off and frustrate all such conveyances, as had at any time by the space of twelve yeares before his rebellion, beene made. within the compasse whereof, the fraudulent Feoffement, and many the like of others his accomplices and fellow-traytors were contained.

Very true, but how hardly that Act of Parliament was wrought out of them, I can witnesse; and were it to be passed againe, I dare undertake it would never be compassed. But were it also that fuch Acts might be easily brought to passe against Traytors and Fellons, yet were it not an endlesse trouble, that no Traitour or Fellon should be attainted, but a Parliament must be called for bringing of his Lands to the Queene, which the Common-Law giveth her.

Eudox. Then this is no fault of the Common Law, but of the

persons which workethis fraud to her Majestie.

Iren. Yes marry; for the Common-Law hath left them this benefite, whereof they make advantage, and wrest it to their bad purposes. So as thereby they are the bolder to enter into evill actions, knowing that if the worst befall them, they shall lose nothing but themselves, whereof they seeme surely very carelesse.

Eudox. But what meant you of Fugitives hereing Or how doth

this concerne them #

Iren: Yes, very greatly, for you shall understand that there bee many ill disposed and undutifull persons of that Realme, like as in this point there are also in this Realme of England too many, which being men of good inheritance, are for dislike of Religion, or danger of the law, into which they are run, or discontent of the present government, fled beyond the feas, where they live under Princes, which are her Mties professed enemies, & converse, & are confederar with other traitors & fugitives, which are there abiding. The which neverthelesse have the benefits & profits of their lands here, by pretence of fuch colourable conveyances thereof, formerly made by them unto their privie Friends heere in trust, who privily doe send over unto them the faid Revenues wherwith they are there maintained and enabled against her Majestie.

Eudox. I doe not thinke that there be any fuch fugitives, which are relieved by the profite of their Lands in England, for there is a straighter order taken. And if there bee any such in Ireland, it were good it were, likewise looked unto, for this evill may easily be reme-

died. But proceede.

Iren. It is also inconvenient in the Realme of Ireland, that the Wards and Marriages of Gentlemens children should be in the difposition of any of those Irish Lords, as now they are, by reason that their Lands bee held by Knights service of those Lords. By which means it comes to passe that those Gentlemen being thus in the ward

of those Lords, are not onely thereby brought up lewdly, and Irishlike, but also for ever after so bound to their services, they will runne with them into any difloyall action.

Endox. This greivance Iren. is also complained of in England, but how can it be remedied fince the fervice must follow the tenure of the lands, and the lands were given away by the Kings of England to those Lords, when they first conquered that Realme, and to say troth, this also would be some prejudice to the Prince in her ward-

Thipps.

Iren. I doe not meane this by the Princes wards, but by fuch as fall into the hands of triff Lords, for I could wish, and this I could enforce that all those wardships were in the Princes disposition, for then it might be hoped, that the for the universall reformation of that Realme, would take better order for bringing up those wards in good nurture, and not suffer them to come into so bad hands. And although these things becalready passed away, by her Progenitours former grants unto those said Lords; yet I could finde a way to remedie a great part thereof, as hereafter, when fit time serves shall appeare. And fince we are entred into speech of such graunts of former. Princes, to fundry persons of this Realme of Ireland, I will mention unto you some other of like nature to this, and of like inconvenience. by which the former Kings of England, passed unto them a great part of their prerogatives, which though then it was well intended, and perhaps well deserved of them which received the same, yet now fuch a gapp of mischeife lyes open thereby, that I could wish it were well stopped. Of this fort are the graunts of Counses palatines in Ireland, which though at first were granted upon good consideration when they were first conquered, for that those lands lay then as a very border to the wild triff, subject to continual invasion, so as it was needfull to give them great priviledges for the defence of the Inhabitants thereof: yet now that it is no more a border, nor frontired with enemies, why should such priviledges becany more con, tinued?

Eudex. I would gladly know what you call a County palatine,

and whence it so called.

Tren. It was (I suppose) first named palatine of a pale, as it were a pale and defense to their inward lands, so as it is called the English Pale and therefore is a Paligrave, named an Earle Palatine. Others thinke of the Latine, palare, that is to forrage or out-run, because those marchers and borderers use commonly so to doe. So as to have a county palatine is, in effect, to have a priviledge to spoyle the encmies borders adjoyning. And surely so it is used at this day, as a priviledged place of spoiles and stealthes, for the country of Tipperary, which is now the onely countie palatine in Ireland, is by abuse of fome bad ones, made a receptacle to rob the rest of the Counties about it, by meanes of whose priviledges none will follow their frealthes, so as it being situate in the very lap of all the land, is made now a border, which how inconvenient it is, let every man judge. And though that right noble man, that is the Lord of the liberty do paine himselfe, all he may, to yeeld equall suffice unto all, yet can there not but great abuses lurke in so inward and absolute a priviledge, the confideration whereof is to be respected carefully for the next fuccession. And much like unto this graunt, there are other priviledges graunted unto most of the corporations there:that they shall not be bound to any other government then their owne, that they shall not be charged with garrisons, that they shall not bee travailed forth of their owne franchises, that they may buy and sell with theeves and rebels, that all amercements and fines that shal be imposed upon them, shall come unto themselves. All which, though at the time of their first graunt they were tollerable, and perhaps reafonable, yet now, are most unreasonable and inconvenient, but all these will easily be cut off with the superiour power of her Majesties prerogative, against which her owne grants are not to be pleaded or enforced.

there. Now truely Irenaus you have (me feemes) very well handled this point, touching inconveniences in the Common-Law there, by you observed; and it feemeth that you have had a mindefull regard unto the things that may concerne the good of that Realme. And if you can aswell goe thorough with the Statute laws of that land. I will thinke you have not dost all your time there. Therefore I pray you, now take them in hand, and tell us, what you thinke to bee amissein them.

Iren. The Statutes of that Realme are not many; and therefore we shall the sooner runne thorough them. And yet of those few there are impertinent and unnecessary: the which though perhaps at the time of the making of them, were very needfull, yet now thorough change of time are cleane antiquated, and altogether idle: As that which forbiddeth any to weare their beards allon the upper lippe, and none under the Chinne. And that which putteth away faffron shirts and smockes. And that which restraineth the use of guilt bridles and petronels. And that which is appointed for the Recorders and Clerks of Dublin and Tredagh, to take but ifid, for the coppy of a plainte. And that which commainds Bowes and Arrowes. And that which makes that all Irilhmen which shall converse among the English, shall be taken for spyes, and so punished. And that which forbids persons amesnable to Law to enter and distraine in the lands in which they have title, and many other the like, I could rehearfel of voil or experiment of the comments of the color of the colo

Endox. These truely; which yee have repeated heems very sinvolous and fruitelesse, for by the breach of them, little dammage or inconvenience, can come to the Common-wealth: Neither indeed, if any transgresse them, shall be seems worthy of punishment, scarce of blame, saving but for that they abide by that name of Lawes. But Lawes ought to be such, as that the keeping of them, should be great-

ly for the behoofe of the Common-weale, and the violating of them thould be very havnous, and than pely punishable. But tell us of fome more weighty dislikes in the Statutes then these, and that may more behoofefully import the reformation of them.

Iren. There is one or two Statutes which make the wrongfull di-Atavning of any mans goods, against the forme of Common Law, to bestellony. The which Statutes seeme surely to have beene as first meant for the good of that Realme, and for restraying of a foule at bufe, which then raigned commonly amongst that people, and yet is hor altogether laide afide. That when any one was indebted to and ther cherwould full demand his debt, and if he were not payed, hee would fraight goe and take a diffress of his goods of cartell, where he could finde them, to the value, which he would keepe till he were theiffied and this the simple Churle (as they call him I dort dommonly life to doc, yet thorough ignorance of his mildoing, or evill use that hath long settled amongst them. But this though it bee sure most unlawfull, yet surely (the seemes) too hard to make it death fince there is no purpole in the party to frealethe others goods or to concente the diffrester but doth is openly, for the most part, before winnelles. And againe, the lame Statutes are fo flackely penned the fides the later of them is fo unfenfibly contribed that it fearce carryethany reason init) that they are often and very rasily wrested to the fraude of the Subject as if one going to diffray he upon his own land or Tenement, where lawfully demay, yet if in doing the fof he transgreffe the least point of the Lommon Law, hee finish roomnittedi fellony. Or if one by any other occasion take any thing from and ther has Boyes uld fomerimes to cap one another, the fame is ftraight fellony. This is a very hard Lawn him the more secondary by mount.

Budon. Nevertheles that evil use of distrayning of another mans goods yee will not deny, but it is so be abolished and raken away.

men It is so but not by taking away the habjest withall, for that is the wielent's niedecine, specially this we being perinared and middellawfull to some; and to other some death . As to most of the corndrate Townes there, it is graunted by their Charler ! that they man every man by himfelfe, without an Officer (for that were more redievable for any debt, to diffraine the goods of any with being found within their liberty, or but passing thorough their rownes. And the first permission of this, was for that in those times when that graunt was made, the high were not ameliable to Law fo ac it was nor later for the Towner-manito goe to him forth to demand his debt nei possible to draw him into Law fo that he had leave to bee his owne Bayliffe, rolatreft his faid delivers goods, within his owne franchese. The which the Irish seeing, thought it as lawfull for them to diffravnothe Towner-mans goods in the Countrey where they foundit. And loby ensample of that graunt to Townellmen : they thought it lawfull, and made it aufe to distray ne on anothers goods for small debts. And to say much mee thinkes it hard for every wil-

fling

fling debt, of 2. or 3. shilto be driven to Law, which is so farre from them sometimes to be sought, for which me thinkerhit too heavy an ordinance to give death, especially to a rude man that is ignorant of law, and thinketh that a common use or graunt to other men, is a law for himfelfe.

Eudox. Yea, but the Iudge when it commeth before him to tryall, may easily decide this doubt, and lay open the intent of the Law, by his better discretion.

Iren. Yea, but it is dangerous to leave the lence of the Law unto the reason or will of the Judge, who are men and may bee miscaried by affections, and many other meanes. But the Lawes ought to bee like stony Tables, plaine, stedfast, and unmoveable. There is also fuch another Statute or two, which make Coigny and Livery to bee treason, no lesse inconvenient then thesormer, being as it is penned, how ever the first purpose thereof were expedient, for thereby now no man can goe into another mans house for lodging, nor to his owne Tennants house to take victuall by the way, notwithstanding that there is no other meanes for him to have lodging, nor horse meate, nor mans meate, there being no Innes, nor none otherwise to bee bought for money, but that he is endangered by that Statute for treason, when sever he shall happen to fall out with his Tennant, or that his faid hoste lift to complaine of greivance, as oftentimes I have seene them very malitiously doe, thorough the least provocation.

Eudox. I doe not well know, but by gheffe, what you doe meane by thefetermes of Goigny and Livery, therefore I pray you explaine them.

Iren. I know not whether the words bee English or Irish, but I suppose them to bee rather auncient English, for the Irishmen can make no derivation of them. What Livery is, wee by common use in England know well enough, namely, that it is allowance of horsemeate, as they commonly use the word in stabling as to keepe horses at Livery, the which word, I gueffe, is derived of livering of delivering forth their nightly foode: So in great houses, the livery is said to be served up for all night, that is their evenings allowance for drinke, And livery is also called, the upper weede which a ferving manweareth, so called (as I suppose) for that it was delivered and taken from him at pleasure: So it is apparant, that by the word Livery, is there meant horse meate, like as by the word Coigny, is understood mans meate. But whence the word is derived is hard to tell: Some fay of Coine, for that they used commonly in their Coignies, not onely to take meate, but coine also: and that taking of money was speciallie meant to be prohibited by that Statute but I thinke rather this word Coigny is derived of the Irish . The which is a common use amongst Land-lords of the Irifb, to have a common spending upon their Tennants: for all their Tennants, being commonly but Tennants at will, they use to take of them what victuals they lift: For of victuals they were wont to make small reckoning: neither in this was the Tennant wronged

wronged, for it was an ordinary and knownecustome, and his Lord commonly used so to covenant with him, which if at any time the tenant disliked, hee might freely depart at his pleasure. But now by this Statute, the laid Irish Lord is wronged, forthat hee is cut off from his customary services of the which this was one besides many other of the like as Cuddy Cofhery, Bonnaght, Shrab, Sorehin, and fuch others: the which (I thinke) were customes at first brought in by the English upon the trish, for they were never wont ; and yet are Joath to yeeld any certaine Rent, but only such spendings : for their common faying is, Spend me and defend me.

Eudox. Surely I take it as you fay , that therein the Irish

Lord hath wrong, fince it was an auncient custome, and nothing contrary to Law, for to the willing there is no wrong done. And this right well I wot, that even heere in England, there are in many places as large customes, as that of Coignie and Livery. But I suppose by your speach, that it was the first meaning of the stacute to forbid the violent taking of victualls upon other mens Tenants against their wills, which surely is a great out-rage, and yet not fo great (mee feemes) as that it should be made treasons for confidering that the nature of treason is concerning the Royall estate of Person of the Prince, or practizing with his enemies, to the derogation on and danger of his Crowne and dignitie, it is hardly wrested to make this treason. But (as you earft faid) Better a mischiefe then an inconvenience.

College. Another Statute I remember; which having beene an auncient with Custome, is now upon advisement made a Law, and that is called the Custome of Kin togish; which is & that every head of every Sept, and every chiefe of every kinred or family, should be answereable and bound to bring foorth every one of that fept and kinred under it, at all times to be justified, when hee should be required or charged with any treason, felony, or other haynous Inch ancesuld I sees, found howe in

Endox. Why? furely this feemes a very necessary Law. For confidering that many of them bee such Losells and scatterlings, as that they cannot eafily by any Sheriffe; Constable, Bayliffe, or other ordinary. Officer bee gotten , when they are challenged for any fuch fact, this is a very good meanes to get them to bee brought inby him, that is the head of that lept, or chiefe of that house, wherfore I wonder what just exception you can make against

Truely Endoxus, in the pretence of the good of this Stature, you have nothing erred, for it feemeth very expedient and necessary, but the hurt which commeth thereby is greater then, the good. For whilest every chiefe of a sept standeth to bound to the Law, for every man of his blood or fept that is under him, and. hee made great, by the commaunding of them all. For if hee may not commaund them, then that Law doth wrong, that bin-

deth him to bring them foorth to bee instified. And if hee may commaund them, then hee may commaund them aswell to ill as to good. Heereby the Lords and Captaines of Countreyes, the principall and heades of septs are made stronger, whome it should bee a most special care in policie to weaken, and to set up and strengthen diverse of his underlings against him, which whensoever hee shall offer to swarve from duty, may bee able to beard him; for it is very dangerous to leave the commaund of so many as some septs are, being five or fixe thousand persons, to the will of one man, who may leade them to what he will, as he himselfe shall be inclined.

Eudox. In very deede Iren. it is very dangerous, seeing the disposition of those people is not alwayes inclineable to the best. And therefore I holde it no wisedome to leave unto them too much commaund over their kinred, but rather to with-drawe their followers from them assuch as may bee, and to gather them under the commaund of Law, by some better means then this custome of Kin-cogist. The which word I would bee glad to know what it namely significant, for the meaning thereof I seeme to understand reasonably well.

Iren. It is a word mingled of English and Iresh together, so as I am partly ledde, to thinke, that the custome thereof was first English, and afterwardes made Irish: for such an other Law they had here in England, as I remember, made by King Alured, that every Gentleman should bring foorth his kinred and followers to the Law. So Kin is English, and Gongish Affinition Irish.

Eudox. Sub, then wee that have thus reasonably handled the inconveniences in the Lawes, let us now passe unto the second part, which was . I remember, of the abuses of customes; in which mee seemes, you have a faire champian layde open unto you, in which you may at large street hour your discourse into many sweeteremembrances of antiquities, from whence it seemeth that the customes of that nation proceeded.

Iren. Indeede Euden. you say very true; for all the cultiomes of the Irish which I have often noted and compared with that I have read; would minister occasion of a most ample discourse of the original of them, and the antiquity of that people; which in truth I thinke to bee more auncient then most that I know in this end of the world; so as if it were in the liandling of some man of sound judgement and plentifull reading, it would bee most pleasant and profitable. But it may bee were may at some other time of meeting; take occasion to treate thereof more at large. Heere onely it stall suffice to touch such customes of the Irish as seeme offensive and repugnant to the good government of that Realme.

Endox. Follow then your owne course, for I shall the better content my selfe to forbeare my desire now, in hope that

you will, as you say, some other time more aboundantly satisfie it.

Iren. Before we enter into the treatie of their customes, it is first needfull to consider from whence they first sprung; for from the sundry manners of the nations, from whence that people which now is called Irish, were derived, some of the customes which now remain amongst them, have been first fetcht, and sithence there continued amongst them; for not of one nation was it peopled, as it is, but of sundry people of different conditions and manners. But the chiefest which have first possessed and inhabited it, I suppose to bee Sequitions.

Endox. How commeth it then to passe, that the Irish doe

derive themselves from Gathelus the Spaniard?

Iren. They doe indeed, but (I conceive) without any good ground. For if there were any such notable transmission of a Colony hether out of Spaine, or any such famous conquest of this Kingdome by Gathelus a Spaniard, as they would faine believe, it is not unlikely, but that the very Chronicles of Spaine, (had spaine then beene in so high regard, as they now have it) would not have omitted fo memorable a thing, as the subduing of so noble a Realme to the Spaniard, no more then they doe now neglect to memorize their conquest of the Indians, specially in those times, in which the same was supposed, being nearer unto the flourishing age of learning and Writers under the Romanes. But the Irish doe heerein no otherwise, then our vaine Englishmen doe in the Tale of Brutus, whom they devise to have first conquered and inhabited this Land, it being as impossible to proove, that there was ever any such Brutus of England, as it is, that there was any such Gathelus of Spaine. But surely the Scythians (of whom I earst spoke) at such time as the Northerne nations over-flowed all Christendome, came downe to the sca-coast, where inquiring for other Countries abroad, & getting intelligence of this countrey of Ireland, finding shipping convenient, passed thither, and arrived in the North part thereof, which is now called Vifter, which first inhabiting, and afterwards stretching themselves forth into the Land, as their numbers increased, named it all of themselves Scuttenland, which more briefly is called Scutland, or Scotland.

for whilest wee talke of Ireland, mee thinkes you rippe up the original of Scotland, but what is that to this?

Iven. Surely very much, for scotland and ireland are all one and the fame.

Endex. That seemeth more strange; for we all know right well that they are distinguished with a great Sea running between them, or else there are two Scotlands.

Never the more are there two Scotlands, but two kindes of Scots were indeed (as you may gather out of Buchanan) the one Irin. or trifh Scots, the other Albin-Scots; for those Scots are Scythians, atrived (as I faid) in the North parts of Ireland, where some of them after passed into the next coast of Albine, now called Scotland, which (after much crouble) they possessed, & of themselves named Scotland; but in processe of time (as it is commonly seene) the dominion of the part prevaileth in the whole, for the willston putting away the name of Scots, were called onely Irifts, & the Albine Scots, leaving the name of Albine, were called only Scots. Therefore it commeth thence that of some writers, Ireland is called Scotia major, and that which now is called Scotland Scotia minor.

Eudox. I doe now well understand your distinguishing of the two forts of Scots, & two Scotlands, how that this which now is called treland, was anciently called Bron, and afterwards of some written Scot. land & that which now is called Scotland, was formerly ealled Albin. before the comming of the Soythes thither; but what other nation in

habited the other parts of Ireland?

Iren. After this people thus planted in the North for before 1 for the certaintie of times in things fo farte from all knowledge cannot be justly avouched) another nation comming out of Spaine, arrived in the West part of weland, & finding it waste, or weakely inhabited, possessed it, who whether they were native Spaniards, or Gaules, or Africans, or Gothes, or some other of those Northerne nations which did over-foresdall Christendome, it is impossible to affirme only forme naked conjectures may be gathered, but that out of spaint certainely they came, that doe all the Irilli Chronicles

Endex. You doe very boldly tren. adventure upon the Histories of auncient times, and leane too confidently on those wish Chronicles which are most fabulous and forged, in that out of them you dare take in hand to lay open the original of fuch a nation fo antique, as that no monument remaines of her beginning and first inhabiting especially having bin in those times without letters, but only bare traditions of times & remembrances of Bardes, which use to forge and fallifie every thing as they lift, to pleafe or displeafe any

man.

Iren. Truly I must confesse I doe so, but yet not so absolutely as you suppose. I do herein rely eupon those Burdes or Irish Chronickers, though the wish themselves through their ignorance in matters of learning and deepe judgement, doe most constantly beleeve and avouch them, but unto them belides I adde mine owne reading, and out of the both together, with comparison of times, likewise of manners & customes, affinity of words and names, properties of natures, & uses, refemblances of rives & ceremonies, monuments of Churches and Tombes, and many other like circumstances, I doe gather a likelyhood of truth, not certainely affirming any thing but by conferring

conferring of times, language, monuments, and fuch like, I doe hunt out a probability of things, which I leave to your judgement to believe or refuse. Neverthelesse there be some very auncient, Authors that make mention of these things, and some moderne, which by comparing them with present times, experience, and their owne reason, doe open a window of great light unto the rest that is yet unscene; as namely of the elder times, Casar, Strabo, Tacitus, Ptolomie, Pliny , Pomponius Mela, and Berofus: of the later , Vincentius, Eneas Sylvius, Luidus, Buchanan, for that hee himselfe being an Irish Scot or Pict by nation, and being very excellently learned and industrious to seeke out the truth of all things concerning the originall of his owne people, hath both fet downe the testimony of the auncients truely, and his owne opinion together withall very reasonably, though in some things he doth somewhat flatter. Besides the Bardes and Irish Chroniclers themselves, though through defire of pleafing perhappes too much, and ignorances of Arts, and purer learning they have clauded the truth of those lines, yet there appeares among them some reliques of the true antiquitie, though disguised, which a well eyed man may happily discover and finde out. CHA REAL COUNTY OF THE STATE OF

Endox. How can there be any truth in them at all, fince the ancient nations which first inhabited ireland, were altogether destitute of letters, much more of learning, by which they might leave the yerity of things written. And those Bardes comming also so many hundred yeares after, could not know what was done in former ages, nor deliver certainty of any thing; but what they fayned out of their unlearned heads! newspansing to the metal of the distance in the

Iren. Those Bardes indeed, Cafar writeth, delivered no certaine truth of any thing, neither is there any certaine hold to be taken of any antiquity which is received by tradition, fince all menbe lyars,& many lye when they wil yet for the antiquities of the weitten Chronicles of Ireland, give me leave to fay fomething, not to justific them, but to thew that some of them might say truth. For where you say the triff have alwayes bin without letters, you are therein much del ceived, for it is certaine, that Ireland hath had the use of letters very anciently, and long before England

Eudox. Is it possible? how comes it then that they are so unlearned ftill being fo old schollers. For learning (as the Poet faith) Emollit mores; nec finit effe feros: whence then (I pray you) could they

have those letters?

Iren. It is hard to fay, for whether they at their first comming itto the Land, or afterwards by trading with other nations which had letters, learned them of them, or devised them amongst themselves, is very doubtfull, but that they had letters aunciently, is nothing doubtfull, for the Saxons of England are said to have their letters; & learning, and learned men from the triff, and that also appeareth by the likenesse of the Character, for the Saxons Character,

is the fame with the Iris. Now the Softhians, never as I can reade of old had letters amongst them, therfore it seemeth that they had them from the nation which came out of Spaine, for in Spaine there was (as Strabo writeth) letters anciently used, whether brought unrothern by the Phenicians, or the Persians, which (as it appeareth by him) had fome footing there, or from Marfellis, which is faid to have bin inhabited by the Greekes, & from them to have had the Greeke Character, of which Marslians it is said, that the Gaules learned them first & u. fed them only for the furtherance of their trades & privat busines, for the Gaules (as is strongly to be proved by many ancient & authenticall writers) did first inhabite all the sea coast of spaine, even unto Cales. & the mouth of the straights, & peopled also a great part of Ha-17, which appeareth by fundry havens & cities in Spaine called from them, as Portugallia, Gallecia, Galdunum, & alfo by fundry harions there in dwelling, which yet have received their own names of the Gaules_ as the Rhegni, Prefamarei, Tamari, Cineri, and divers others. All which Pomponius Mela being himfelfea Spaniard, yet faith to have defeended from the Celts of France, whereby it is to be gathered, that that Nation which came out of Spaine into Ireland, were anciently Gaules, and that they brought with them those letters which they had anciently learned in Spaine, first into treland, which some also fay, doe much resemble the olde Phenician Character; being likewife distinguished with pricke and accent as theirs aunciently, but the further enquirie hereof needetha place of longer discourse then this our short confe-

Endix! Surely you have shewed a great probability of that which I had thought impossible to have bin proved, but that which you now say, that Ireland siould have bin peopled with the Gaules, seemeth much more strange, for all the Chronicles doe say, that the West & South was possessed seinhabited of Spaniards: and Cornelius Tusium dothals frongly assume the same, all which you must over-

throw and fallifie, or elle renounce your opinion.

being made by unlearned men & writing things according to the appearance of the truth, which they conceived doe erre in the circumstances, not in the matter. For all that came out of spained they being no diligent featchers into the differences of the nations) supposed to be spained as for called them, but the ground-work theroff is never-theselfs true & certain, however they through ignorance difference differences of the nations supposed to be spained as for called them, but the ground-work theroff is never-theselfs true & certain, however they through ignorance difference fame, or through vanity, whilst they would not seem to be ignorant, doe thereupon build & enlarge many forged Histories of their owne antiquity, which they deliver to fooles, and make them believe for true, as for example, That first of one gathetis the fonne of certain or many, who having married the King of Exypthis daughter, thence sailed with her into spaine, & there inhabited. Then that of Nemdus and his formes, who comming out of Scythia, peopled weland, and inhabited it with his formes 250. yeares, until he was over-come of the

Giants dwelling then in Ireland, and at the last quite banished and rooted out, after whom 200 yeares, the sonnes of one Dela, being Septimans arrived there againe, and possessed the whole land, of which the youngest called Sianius, in the end made himselfe Monarch. Lastly of the 4. sonnes of Milesian King of Spaine, which conquered the land from the Soythians, and inhabited it with Spaniards, and called it of the name of the yongest Hiberus; Hibernia: All which are in truth sables, and very Milesian lyes, as the later proverbe is: for never was there such a King of Spaine, called Milesian; nor any such Colonie seated with his sonnes as they faine, that can ever be proved, but yet under these tales you may in a manner see the truth lurke. For Sequinans here inhabiting, they name and put Spaniards; whereby appeareth that both these nations here inhabited, but whether very Spaniards, as the Irish greatly affect; is no wayes to be proved.

Eudox. Whence commeth it then that the triff doe so greatly coverto fetch themselves from the Spaniards, since the old Gaules are a

more auncient and much more honorable nation.

tien. Even of a very defire of new fanglenes and vanity, for they derive themselves from the spaniards, as seeing them to bee a very honourable people, and neere bordering unto them: bur all that is most vaine, for from the spanierds that now are gor that people that now inhabite spans, they no wayes can prove themselves to descend neither should rebe greatly glorious unto them, for the spaniate that now is is come from as rude and favagenations as they, there being! as theremay begathered by course of ages, and view of their owne History (though they therein labour much to enoble themselves) scarce any drop of the old Spanish blood left in them; for all spaint was first conquered by the Romans, and filled with colonies from them, which were kill increased, and the native's published still cut off. Afterwards the Carebaginians in all the long Punich warres (having fronted all spaine, and in the end subdued it wholly unto themselves) did as It is likely root out all that were affected to the Romans. And lastly the homans having against recovered that countrey, and beate out Hamibal, did doubtleffe cut off all that favored the Carshaginians fo that betwixt them both, to and fro, there was learne a native spamard left, but all inhabited of Romans. All which tempels of troubles being over-blowne; there long after arose a new storme, more dreadfull then all the former, which over-ran all spains, and made an infimite confusion of all things; that was, the comming downe of the Gother the Hunnes, and the Vandals: And lastly all the flations of Seq-This, which like a mountaine flood, did over flow all spaine, and quite drowned and washe away what loever teliques there was left of the land-bred people, yea, and of all the nomans too. The which Northerne nations finding the hature of the foyle; and the vehicle heat thereoffarre differing from their conflicucions, tooke no felicity in that Country, but from thence passed over, and did spread themselves into all Countryes of Christendome, of all which there is

Giants

none but hath some mixture or sprinckling, if not throughly peopleing of them. And yet after all these the Moores and the Barbarians
breaking over out of Asserbarians, did sinally possessed all spaine, or the
most part thereof, and did tread under their heathenish seete, what ever little they found yet there standing. The which though after they
were beaten out by Ferdinando of Arragon and Elizabeth his wise, yet
they were not so cleansed, but that through the marriages which they
had made, and mixture with the people of the land, during their long
continuance there, they had left no pure drop of Spanish blood, no
more then of Roman or of Scythian. So that of all nations under heaven (I suppose) the Spaniard is the most mingled, and most uncertaine,
where sore most so olishly doe the Irish thinke to enable themselves
by wresting their Auncientry from the Spaniard, who is unable to
derive himselse from any in certaine.

Eudox. You speake very sharpely Iren. in dispraise of the Spaniard, whom some others boust to be the onely brave nation under the Skie.

Iren. So furely he is a very brave man, neither is that any thing which I speake to his derogation, for in that I said he is a mingled people, it is no dispraise, for I thinke there is no nation now in Christendome, nor much further, but is mingled, and compounded with others for it was a singular providence of God, and a most admirall purpose of his wisedome, to draw those northerne heathen nations downe into those Christian parts, where they might receive Christianity, and to mingle nations so remote miraculously, to make as it were one blood and kindred of all people, and each to have knowledge of him.

Eudox. Neither have you sure any more dishonoured the Irish, for you have brought them from very great and ancient nations, as any were in the world, how ever fondly they affect the Spanish. For both Soythians and Gaules were two as mighty nations as ever the world brought forth. But is there any token, denomination or monument of the Gaules yet remaining in Ireland, as there is of the Scythians?

Iren. Yea furely very many words of the Gaules remaining, and yet dayly used in Common speech.

Eudox. What was the Gaulish speech, is there any part of it still used among any nation?

Iren. The Gaulish speech, is the very British, the which was very generally used here in all Brittaine, before the comming of the Saxons: and yet is retained of the Welshmen, Cornishmen, and the Brittaines of France, though time working the alteration of all things, and the trading and interdeale with other nations round about, have changed and greatly altered the dialect thereof, but yet the originall words appeare to be the same, as who hath list to read in Camden and Buchanan, may see at large, Besides there be many places, as havens, hills, townes and Castles, which yet beare the names from the Gaules, of the which, Buchanan telecarseth above 500 in Scotland, and I can

(I thinke) recount heare as many in Iridaid which rataine the old denomination of the Gaules, as the Memoris Cance Neurs, and others; by all which and many other reasonable probabilities (which this short course will not suffer to be laide forth) it appeareth that the cheise Inhabitants in Ireland were Gaules, comming thicher first out of Spain, and after from besides Tanais, where the Garbes, the Hunnes, and the Generate downe, they also being (as it is said of some) ancient Gaules, and lastly passing out of Gallis is selfe, from all the Sca-coast of Belgis and Colored into al the southerne coasts of Ireland, which they possified and inhabited, whereupon it is at this day, amongst the Irish a commonuse, to call any stranger Inhabitant there amongst them, Gald that is descended from the Gaules.

Endow. This is very likely, for even so did those Gaules anciently possessed the southerne coasts of our Brittaine, which yet remine their old names, as the Belga, in Sommer set five, Wilshipe, and part of transfere, Attrebaty in Bankeshire, Regnin Suffer and Surry, and many others. Now thus farrethen, I understand your opinion, that the Soythians planted in the north part of Ireland: the Spaniards (for so we call them, what ever they were that came from Spains) in the west, the Gaules in the south to that there now remaineth the east parts towards England, which I would be glad to understand from whence you do thinke them to be peopled.

Iren. Mary I thinke of the Britisher them felves, of which though shere be little footing now remaining, by redouthet the saver afderwards, and taftly the English, driving out the Inhabitants thereof. did possessed and people it themselves. The among the Todes, the Birms or Bring the Cavenaghes, and other riagions in Leinner, there is: formelmemory of the British remay ning. As the Tracks are called of the old British word Tolehatis, a hill Country, the Briss of the Brirish word Brin, that is, woods, and the Chaunspher of the word Caune, that is strong, so that in these three people the very denomination of the old grams doe full remaine. Befides when any freth under the frecom and protection of any against an enemie his civerhunco him. Comericke, that is in the British, helpe, for the Britishe is walled in their owne language Comercy. Furthermone to prove the fame ireland is by Diodorus Siculus, and by Strabo, called Britannia, and a part of erest Brittaine. Finally it appeareth by good record yet extant, that Kino Archar and after him Gurgum, hadiall that Iland under their alleagiance and subjection hereunto I could add many probabilities of the names of places, persons, and speeches, as I did in the former but they should be too long for this, and I reserve them for another And thus you have had my opinion, how albehat Realme of Ireland was first peopled, and by what nations. Afterall which the Saxon fucceeding fubdued it wholly to themselves of For first Extrid King of Northumberland, did utterly waste and subdue it as appeareth out of Beda's complaint against him, and after him, King Bloor brought it, under his obedience, as appeareth by an auricioni Ricord, in which it is found written, that he subdued all the Islands of the North, even

unto Norway, and brought them into his fubjection.

Eudox. This ripping of Auncestors, as very pleasing unto me and indeede favoureth of good conceipt, and some reading withall. I fee hereby how profitable travaile, and experience of forraine nations is to him that will apply them to good purpose. Neither indeed would I have thought that any fuch antiquities could have been avouched for the Irish, that maketh me the more to long to see some other of your observations, which you have gathered out of that country. and have earst halfe promised to put forth: And fore in this mingling of Nations appeareth (as you earst well noted) a wonderfull providence and purpose of Almighty God, that stirred up the people in the furthest parts of the world, to seeke out their regions so remote from them, and by that meanes, both to restore their decayed habitations, and to make himselfe knowne to the heathen. But was there I pray you no more generall employing of that Hand, then first by the Scrthians, which you say were the Scottes, and afterward by the Spaniards, besides the Gaules, Brittaines and Saxons

Iren. Yes, there was another, and that last and greatest, which was by the English, when the Earle Strangbowe having conquered that land delivered up the same into the hands of Henry the second then King, who fent over thither, great store of Gentlemen, and other warlike people amongst whom, he distributed the Land, and setled fuch a strong! Colonie therein, as never fince could with all the subtle practices of the Iriffibe rooted out, but abide still a mighty people, of

fo many as remaine English of them. made at the sea has a line of the sea has a line of

Endox. What is this that you fay, of formany as remaine English of them? Why are not they that were once English, English still?

Iren. No, for some of them are degenerated and growne almost meere Irish, yea and more malitious to the English then the Irish themfelves. acia casta pe**apie** clieveny dena

Eudox. What heare I? And is it possible that an Englishman brought up in such sweet civility as England affords, should find such liking in that barbarous rudenes, that he should forget his owne nature, and forgoe his owne nation, how may this bee, or what (I pray

Iren. Surely, nothing but the first evill ordinance and institution of that Common-wealth. But thereof here is no fit place to speake, least by the occasion thereof, offering matter of a long discourse, we might be drawne from this that we have in hand, namely the handleing of abuses in the Customes of Ireland.

Eudox. In truth then you doe well remember the plot of your first purpose; but yet from that (me seemes) yee have much swarved in all this long discourse, of the first inhabiting of Ireland, for what is

that to your purpose should be

Iren. Truely very materiall, for if you marked the course of all that speech well, it was to shew, by what meanes the customes, that

now arean treland, being some of them indeede very strange and almost heathenish, were first brought in: and that was, as I said, by those Nations from whom that Countrey was first peopled; for the difference in manners and outtomes; dorn follow the difference of nations and people. The which I have declared to you, to have beene three especially which seated themselves hereto wat first the Seythian then the Gaules, and laftly the English . Notwithstanding that I am not ignorant, that there were fundry Nations which got footing in that land, of the which there yet remaine divers great families and lepts, of whom I will also in their proper places make mention.

Endox. You bring your felfe tren. very well into the way againe, notwithstanding that it seemeth that you were never out of the way. but now that you have passed thorough those antiquities, which I could have wished not so soone ended, begin when you please, to declare what customes and manners have beene derived from those nations to the trifh, and which of them, you findefault withall.

iren. I will begin then to count their customes in the fame orderethat I counted their Nations, and first with the Styphian or Scoriff. manners. Of the which there is one use, among the there to keepe their cartle, and to live themselves the most pair of the yeare in Bookes, pafloring upon the mountaine, and wafte wilde places; and removing fill cofresh land, as they have depastured the former. The which appeareth plaine to be the manner of the symbiant, as you may read in Olan Magna and to Bohemia and yet is used among it all the Torrarimi and the people about the culpium son, which are namically seychiam; to live inheards as chey call them, being the very lattic, that the soil Bootter are, driving their carele continually with them, and feeding onely on their milks and white meates,

Ender. Whatfault carryou finde with this cultonie, for though irbean old soythim wie yer is it very behoofefull in this Country of Ireland, where there are great mountaines, and walke deferts full of graffe, that the same should becaren downe, and nourish many thoufands of carrie, for the good of the whole Realme, which cannot (me thinks) well be any other way, then by keeping those Boolies there, as

wee have hewed.

Tien: Burby this cultome of Boolying, there grow in the meanerime many great enormity es unro that Common-wealth! For first il there be any our-lawes or look people, (as they are never without fome) which hive upon fical thes and spoyles, they are eventore succoured and finde releife only in thele Boolies, being upon the walte places, whoreas elle they should be driven shortly to starve, or to come downe to the townes to leeke releife, whiere by one meanes or other, they would foone be caught. Belides fuch ftealthes of cattless they make, they bring commonly to those Boolies, being upon those waste places, where they are readily received, and the there har boured from danger of law, or luch Officers as might light upon him. Woreover the people that thus live in those Bullies, grow thereby the more

barbarous,

barbarous, and live more licentiously then they could in Townes, using what manners they lift, and practizing what mischeifes and villainies they will, either against the government there, by their combynations, or against private men, whom they maligne, by stealing their goods, or murdering themselves . For there they thinke themselves halfe exempted from law and obedience, and having once tafted freedome, doe like a steere, that hath beene long out of his voke, grudge and repyne ever after, to come under Rule againe.

Eudox. By your speech Iren. I perceive more evill come by this use of Boolies, then good by their grafing: and therefore it may well be reformed but that must be in his due course; doe you proceed to

the next.

They have another custome from the Scythians, that is the Iren. wearing of Mantles, and long Glibbes, which is a thicke curled bulh of haire, hanging downe over their eyes, and monstroully disguising

them, which are both very bad and hurtfull.

Eudox. Doeyouthinkethat the Mantle commeth from the Seythians? I would furely thinke otherwife, for by that which I have read, it appeareth that most Nations of the world aunciently used the Mantle. For the lewes used it, as you may read of Elyas Mantle, &c. The Chaldees also used it, as wee may read in Diodorus. The Egyptians likewise used it, as yee may read in Herodorius, and may bee gathered by the description of Berenice, in the Greeke Commentary upon Gallimachus. The Greekes also nsed it aunciently, as appeareth by Venus Mantle lyned with starrs, though afterwards they changed the formethereofinto their cloakes, called Pallia, as some of the Irishalso use. And the auncient Latines and Romans used it, as you may read in Virgil, who was a very great Antiquary. That Enander, when Aneas came to him at his Fealt, didentertaine and feast him, sitting on the ground, and lying on Mantles: Infomuch as he useth the very word Mantile for a Mantle. ee erearmouniaines.

- Humi mantilia flernunt. So that it feemeth that the Manthe was a generall habite to most Nations, and not proper to the Scythians, onely, as you suppose.

Iren. I cannot deny but that aunciently it was common to most. and yet sithence district and laide away. But in this laterage of the world, fince the decay of the Romane Empire, it was renewed and brought in againe by those Northerne nations, when breaking our of their cold caves and frozen habitations, into the sweet soyle of Europe, they brought with them their usuall weedes, fit to sheild the cold, and that continual frost to which they had at home beene inured: the which yet they left not off, by reason that they were in perpetuall warres, with the Nations whom they had invaded, but fill removing from place to place; carried alwayes with them that weed, as their house, their bed, and their garment, and comming lastly into Ireland, they found there more special buse thereof, by reason of the rawe cold climate, from whomit is now growneinto that generall

use, in which that people now have it. After whom the Gaules succees ding yet finding the like necessitie of that garment, continued the

Endox: Since then the necessity thereof is so commodious, as you alledge, that it is insteed of housing, bedding, & cloathing, what rea-

fon have you then to wish so necessarie a thing cast off?

Iren. Because the commoditie doth not countervaile the discomoditie: for the inconveniences which thereby doearife, are much more many. For it is a fit house for an Out-law, a meet bed for a Rebell, & an apt cloake for a thiefe. First the Out law being for his many crimes and villanyes, banished from the Townes & houses of honest men, & wandring in waste places, far from danger of law, maketh his Mantle his house, & under it covereth himselfe from the wrath of Heaven, fro the offence of the Earth, & from the fight of men. When it raineth it is his pent-house; when it bloweth it is tent, when it freezeth it is his Tabernacle. In sommer he can weare it loose, in winter he can wrap it close, at all times he can use it; never heavy, never cumbersome. Likewise for a Rebell it is as serviceable. For in his warre that he maketh (if at least it deserve the name of warre) when he still Hyerh from his foe, & lurketh in the thicke woods & straite passages, waiting for advantages, it is his bed, yea and almost as his houshold stuff. For the wood is his house against all weathers, & his Mantle is his couch to fleepe in. Therein he wrappeth himself round, & coucheth himselfe strongly against the gnats, which in that countrey doe more annoy the naked Rebels, whilst they keepe the woods, & doe more sharply wound them then all their enemies swords, or speares, which can seldome come nigh them: yea & oftentimes their Mantle serveth them, when they are neere driven, being wrapped about their left arme in fleed of a Target, for it is hard to cut thorough with a fword, besides it is light to beare, light to throw away; and being (as they commonly are) naked, it is to them all in all. Lastly for a Theife it is so handsome, as it may seeme it was first invented for him, for under it he may cleanly convey any fit pillage that commeth handsomly in his way, & when he goeth abroad in the night in free-booting, it is his best & surest friend; for lying as they often do 2.or 3.nights together abroad to watch for their booty, with that they can prettily shroud themselves under a bush or a banke side; till they may conveniently do their errand: & when all is over, he can in his mantle passe thorough anytown or company, being close hooded over his head, as he useth, from knowledge of any to whom he is indangered. Besides this, he or any man els that is disposed to mischief or villany, may under his mantle goe privily armed without suspition of any, carry his head-peece, his skean, or pistol if he please, to be alwayes in readines. Thus necessary & firting is a mantle for a bad man, & surely for a bad huswife it is no lesse convenient, for some of them that bee wandring woemen, called of them Mona-Shul, it is halfe a wardrobe: for in summer you shal find her arrayed commonly, but in her smook & mantle

38

to be more ready for her light services: in winter, and in her travaile. it is her cloake and safeguard, and also a coverlet for her lewde exert cife. And when she hath filled her vessell, under it she can hide borh her burden, and her blame; yea, and when her Bastard is borne it ferves initeed of fwadling clouts. And as for all other good women which love to doe but little worke, how handsome it is to lye in and fleepe, or to loufe themselves in the Sun-shine, they that have beene but a while in Ireland can well witnes. Sure Lamchat you will thinke it very unfit for a good hulwife to stirre in or to busie her selfeabout her hulwifry in such fort as she should. These be some of the abuses for which I would thinke it meet to forbid all Mantles.

Endox. O evill minded man, that having reckoned up so many uses of a Mantle, will yet wish it to be abandoned! Sure I thinke Diogenes dish did never serve his Master for more turnes anotwithstand ding that he made it his Dish, his Cup, his Cap, his Measure, his Was ter-pot, then a Mantle doth an Irish man. But I see they be most to bad intents, & therefore I will joyne with you in abolishing it. But what blame lay you to the glibber take heed (I pray you) that you be not too busie therewith for feare of your owne blame, seeing our Englishmen take it up in such a generall fashion to weare their haire so immeasurably long, that some of them exceed the longest Irish glibs.

Iren. I feare not the blame of any undeferved dislikes: but for the Irish glibbes, they are as firmaskes as a mantle is for a thiefe. For when soever he hath run himselfeinto that perill of Law, that he will not be knowne, he either cutteth off his glibbe quite, by which he becommeth nothing like himselfe, or pulleth it so low downe over his eyes, that it is very hard to discerne his theevish countenance. And therefore fit to be truffed up with the Mantle.

Eudox. Truly these three Scythian abuses, I hold most fit to bee taken away with sharpe penalties, and sure I wonder how they have beene kept thus long, notwithstanding so many good provisions and orders, as have beene devised for that people.

Iren. The cause thereof shall appeare to you hereafter; but let us now go forward with our Scythian customes. Of which the next that I have to treat of is the manner of raising the cry in their conflicts, & at other troublesome times of uproare: the which is very natural serthian, as you may read in Diodorus Siculus, & in Herodorus, describing the maner of the Scythians & Parthians comming to give the charge at battles: at which it is faid that they came running with a terrible yell as if heaven & earth would have gone together, which is the very Image of the Irifb Hubub, which their Kerne use at their first encounter. Besides, the same Herodatus writeth, that they used in their battles to call upon the names of their Captains or Generals, & forntimes upon their greatest Kings deceased, as in that battle of Thomyris against Cyrus: which custome to this day manifestly appeareth amongst the 1rish. For at their joyning of Battle, they likewise call upon their Captaines name, or the word of his Auncestours. As they under

Oneale cry Laundarg-abo, that is, the bloody hand, which is Oneales badge. They under o Brien call Laun laider, that is, the strong hand. And to their ensample, the old English also which there remayneth, have gottenup their cryes Scythian-like, as Crom-abo, and Butler-abo. And here also lyeth open an other manifest proofe; that the wish bee Soythes or Scots, for in all their incounters they use one very common word, crying Ferragh, Ferragh, which is a scottish word, to wit, the name of one of the first Kings of Scotland, called Feragus, or Fergus, which fought against the Pictes, as you may reade in Buchanan, de rebus Sibilis, but as others write, it was long before that, the name of their chiefe Captaine, under whom they fought against the Africans, the which was then to fortunate unto them, that ever fithence they have used to call upon his name in their bartailes.

Eudox. Believe me, this observation of yours Irenaus, is very good and delightfull; far beyond the blinde conceipt of some, who (I remember) have upon the same word Ferragh, made a very blunt conjecture, as namely M. Staniburst; who thogh he be the same countreyman borne; that should search more neerely into the secret of these things, yet hath strayed from the truth all the heavens wyde, (as they fay) for he thereupon groundeth a very groffe imagination, that the Irish should descend from the Egyptians which came into that Island, first under the leading of one Scota the daughter of Pharaoh, whereupon they use (saith he) in all their battailes, to call upon the name of Pharaoh, crying Ferragh, Ferragh. Surely he shootes wyde on the Bow hand, & very far from the marke. For I would first know of him what auncient ground of authority he hath for fuch a fenfeleffe fable, & if he have any of the rude Irill bookes, as it may be hee hath, yet (me feemes) that a man of his learning should not so lightly have bin carried away with old wives tales, from approvance of his owne reason, for whether it be a smack of any learned judgment, to say, that Scota is like an Egyptian word, let the learned judge. But his Scota rather comes of the Greeke entry that is, darknes, which hath not let him see the light of the truth.

inen: You know not Eudexus, how well M. Stan. could fee in the darke perhaps he hath Owles or Cars eyes: but well I wor he feeth not well the very light in matters of more weight. But as for Ferragh I have told my conjecture only , and yet thus much I have more to provea likelyhood, that there be yet at this day in Ireland, many Irish men (chiefly in the Northerne parts) called by the name of Ferragh. But let that now be this only for this place fuffileth, that it is a word used in their comon hububs, the which (with all the rest) is to be abolished, for that it discoveresh an affectatio to irish captainry, which in this platform I indevour specially to beat down. There be othersorts of seyes also used among the wish, which favour greatly of the Seyebian barbarifine, as their lamentarions at their buryals, with dispairfull out cryes, and immoderate waylings, the which Master staniburst might also have used for an Argument to proove them Egyptians.

the which (they fay) will sometimes beare off a good stroke, is meere

Scythian, as you may fee in the faid Images of the old Scythes or Scots.

For so in Scripture it is mentioned; that the Egyptians lamented for the death of Toseph. Others thinke this custome to come from the Spaniards; for that they doe immeasurably likewise bewayle their dead. But the same is not proper Spanish, but altogether Heathenish, brought in thither first either by the Scriptians, or the Moores that were Africans; and long possessed that Country. For it is the manner of all Pagans and Insides to be intemperate in their waylings of their dead, for that they had no faith nor hope offalvation. And this ill custome also is specially noted by Diodorius Siculus, to have been in the Scribians, and is yet amongst the Northerne Scots at this day, as you may reade in their Chronicles:

Eudox. This is sure an ill custome also, but yet doth not so much

concerne civill reformation, as abuse in Religion.

Iren. I did not rehearfeit as one of the abuses which I thought most worthie of reformation; but having made mention of trift cryes. I thought this manner of lewd crying and howling, not impertinent to be noted as uncivill and scythian-like: for by these old customes, and other like conjecturall circumstances, the descents of nations can only be proved, where other monuments of writings are not remayning.

Eudox. Then (I pray you) when sever in your discourse you meet with them by the way, doe not shun, but boldly touch them: for be-fides their great pleasure and delight for their antiquity, they bring

also great profit and helpeunto civility.

Iren. Then fith you will have it fo, I will heere take occasion. fince I lately spake of their manner of cryes in loyning of battaile to speake also somewhat of the manner of their Armes and array in Battell, with other customes perhappes worthy the noting. And first of their Armes and Weapons, amongst which their broad Swordes are proper Scythian, for fuch the Scythes used commonly, as you may read in Olaus Magnus. And the same also the old Scots used, as you may read in Buchanan, and in Solinus, where the pictures of them are in the same forme expressed. Also their short Bowes, and little Quivers with short bearded Arrowes, are very scythian, as you may reade in the same olaus. And the same fort both of Bowes, Quivers, and Arrowes', are at this day to bee seene commonly amongst the Northerne Irifh-Scots, whose Scottish Bowes are not past three quarters of a vard long, with a string of wreathed hempe flackely bent, and whose Arrowes are not much above halfe an ell long, tipped with steele heads, made like common broad Arrow heades, but much more sharpe and slender, that they enterinto a man or horse most cruelly, notwithstanding that they are shot foorth weakely. Moreover their long broad Shields, made but with wicker roddes, which are commonly used amongst the said Northerne with but especially of the Scots, are brought from the Southians, as you may read in olais Magnus, Solinus, & others: likwise their going to battle withoutarmor on their bodies or heads, but trusting to the thicknes of their glibbs,

fet foorth by Herodianus and others. Besides, their consused kinde of march in heapes without any order or array, their clashing of swords together, their fierce running upon their enemies, and their manner. of fight, resembleth altogether that which is read in histories to have beene used of the Scythians. By which it may almost infallibly be gathered together, with other circumstances, that the Infliance very Scots or Scythes originally, though fithence intermingled with many other Nations repairing and joyning unto them. And to these I may also adde another strong conjecture which commeth to my mind, that I have often observed there amongst them that is certain religious ceremonies, which are very superstitiously yet used amongst them, the which are also written by fundry authours, to have bin observed amongst the Scythians, by which it may very vehemently be presumed that the nations were anciently all one For Plutareh (as I remember) * Not he, but in his treatise of Homer, indeavouring to search out the truth, what Herodow, in. countryman Homer was, prooveth it most firongly (as he thinketh) the life of Hose howas an Haling horne for the indefinition of the mere that he was an Rollin borne, for that in describing a sacrifice of the Greekes, he omitted the loyne, the which all the other Grecians (faving the Lolians) use to burne in their facrifices: also for that he makes the intralls to be rosted on five spites; which was the proper manner of the Æolians, who onely of all the nations of Greciaitifed to facrifize in that fort, By which he inferreth necessarily that Homer was an A. olian. And by the same reason may I as reasonably conclude, that the Irishare descended from the Scythians, for that they use (even to this day) some of the same ceremonies which the Stytbians anciently uled. As for example, you may reade in Lucian in that sweet Dialogue, which is incitled Toxaris, or offriendship, that the common oath of the Scythians was by the sword, and by the fire, for that they accounted those two special divine powers , which should worke vengeance on the perjurers. So doe the Irish at this day when they goe to battalle lay certaine prayers or charmes to their fwords, making a crosse therewith upon the earth, and thrusting the points of their blades into the ground, thinking thereby to have the better fuccesse in fight. Also they use commonly to sweare by their swords. Also the Southians used when they would binde any solemne vow or combination amongst the to drink a Bowle of blood together vowing therby to spend their last blood in that quartell: & even so do the wild Scots as you may read in Buchanan: and some of the Northerne irih. Likewise at the kindling of the Fire; and lighting of Candles, they lay certaine prayers, & use some other superstitious rites, which shew that they honour the Fire and the light : for all those Northerne Nations having been eufed to be annoyed with much colde and darkenesse, are wont therefore to have the Fire and the Sunne in great veneration; like as contrary wife the Moores and Egyptians which are much offended and grieved with extreame heat of the

*The originall of the very name of Sephians feemeth to come from fhooting, wide Seden, annot, in Poly-olb. (es Gorop, Becan, Beccefel, es Aluvedi leg.) pag.

 D_3

Sunne.

Sunne doe every morning when the Sunne arifeth, fall to durling and banning of him as their plague. You may also reade in the lame booke, in the tale of carlacamas, that it was the manner of the serthians, when any one of them was heavily wronged, and would affemble unto him any forces of people to joyne with him in his revenge, to sit in some publicke place for certaine dayes upon an Oxe hide to which there would refort all fuch perfons as being difpofed to take Armes, would enter into his pay, or joyne, with him in his quarrell. And the same you may likewise reade to have beene the ancient manner of the wilde Scotts, which are indeed the very naturall Irilh. Moreover the Seythians used to sweare by their Kings hand, as olam sheweth. And so do the trish use now to sweare by their Lords hand, and to forsweare it, holde it more criminals then to sweare by God. Alfo the Soythians faid, that they were once a yeare turned into Wolves, and fo is it written of the triffee Though Mafter Camden in a berter sense doth suppose it was a disease, called Lycanthropia, so named of the Wolfe. And yet some of the wish docuse to make the Wolfe their Goffip. The Septhians wied also to feethe the flesh in the hide: & so doe the Northerne wish. The Scythians weed to draw the blood of the beaft living, & to make meat thereof & fo doe the Irish in the North still. Many such customes I could recount unto you, as of their old manner of marrying, of burying, of dancing, offinging, offeathing, of curfing, though Christians have wyped out the most part of them, by resemblance, whereof it might plainly appeare to you, that the Nations are the fame, but that by the reckoning of these few, which I have told unto you, I findemy speech drawne out to a greater length then I purposed. Thus much onely for this time I hope shall suffice you to thinke that the wift are anciently deduced from the Scythians and to property

Endox. Surely Iren. I have heard in these few words, that from you which I would have thought had bin impossible to have bin spoken of times so remote, and customes so ancient: with delight whereof I was all that while as it were intranced, and carried so faire from my selfe, as that I am now right sorry that you ended so some. But I marvaile much how it commeth to passe, that in so long continuation of time, and so many ages come betweene, yet any jot of those olderites and superstitious customes should remaine amongst them.

tions to be very superstitions, and diligent observers of old customes & antiquities, which they receive by continual tradition from their Parents, by recording of their Bards and Chronicles, in their folias, and by day lie use and ensample of their elders.

Audor. Buthave you (I pray you) observed any sich customes amongst them, brought likewise from the Spaniards or Gauler as these from the Scythians? that may fuse be very materiall to your first purpose.

Ien. Some perhaps I have, & who that will by this occasion more diligently

diligently marke and compare their customes, shall find many more. But there are fewer remayning of the Gaulet or Spanished, then of the Scythians, by reason that the partes, which they then possessed, lying aponthe coast of the Westerne and Southerne Sea, were sithence vifired wish strangers and forraine people, repayming thister for trafficke, and for filling, which is very plentifull upon those courts: for thetrade and interdeale of Sea-coast. Nations one with another, workedimore civiline and good fallions, (all Seamen being naturally defirous of new fashions,) then among strike Inland folke, which are feldome feene of forrainers; yet forne of fuch as I have noted, I will recommune you. And first I will for the better credit of the rest, thew you one our of their Statutes, among which it is enacted, that no main shall weare his beard onely on the upper lip, shaving all his Chinne. And this was the auncient manner of the spaniards, as yet it is of all the Mahometans to cur off all their beards close, fave onelie their Muscharbios, which they weare long. And the cause of this use, was for that they being bred in a hor countrey, found much haire on therefaces and other parts to be novous unto them; for which cause they did cut it most away, like as contrarily all other nations brought up in cold countryes, doe we to nourth their haire, to keepe them the warmer, which was the cause that the south and sooms wore Glibbes (as I shewed you) to keepe their heads warme, and long beards to defend their faces from cold. From them alfo (I'thinke) came laffron faires and smocks, which was devited by them in those hore Countryes, where laftron is very common and rife, for avoyding that evill which commeth by much free ing and long wearing of Linnen. Also the Woomen amongs the old spiniards had the charge of all houthold affaires, both at home and abroad, (as Bomms writeth) though now the spaniards use it quire otherwise. And so have the wife weomen the trust and care of all things, both ar home, and in the field. Likewife round learner Targets is the sounth fathion, whoused it (for the most pair) painted, which in reliable hey useals in many places; coloured after their rude fallion. Moreover the manner of their Woemens riding on the wrong fide of the horse, I meane with their faces towards the right fide, as the Iriff rife, is (as they fay) old Spanish, and Tome say refrican, for amongst them the wormen (they by) ine forovide. Afforhe deeperimocke fleive, which the wife Worken ale, they fay was old spanish, and is used yet in burbary, and yer that should feemerather to be an old English fashion, form Armory the fashion of the Manche, which is given in Armes, by many Being indeede nothing elfe but a fleive; is falhioned much like to that fleive. And that Knights in aunciene times used to weare their Mistresses or Loves sleive, upon their Armes, as appeareth by that which is written of Sir Launcelot, that he wore the flewe of the faire maide of Attelorh in a Tourney, whereat Queene Guenener was much difpleafed.

Endot. Your concelpt is good, and well fating for things to far growne

growne from certainty of knowledge and learning, onely upon likely-hoods and conjectures. But have you any customes remaining from the Gaules or Brittaines?

Iren. I have observed a few of either; and who will better search into them, may finde more. And first the profession of their Bardes was (as Cafar writeth) usual amongst the Gaules, and the same was alfo common amongst the Brittans, and is not yet altogether left off with the Welsh which are their posterity. For all the fashions of the Gaules and Brittaines, as he testifieth, were much like. The long darts came also from the Gaules, as you may read in the same Casar, and in Io: Boemus. Likewise the said Io: Boemus writeth, that the Gaules used Swords a handfull broad, and so doe the Irish now. Also they used long Wicker sheilds in Battaile that should cover their whole bodies, and so doe the Northerne Irish. But I have not seene such fashioned Targets used in the Southerne parts, but onely amongst the Northerne people, and Irish-Scottes, I doe thinke that they were brought in rather by the Scythians, then by the Gaules. Alfo the Gaules used to drinke their enemyes blood, and paintethemselves therewith So alfo they write, that the old Irish were wont, and so have I seene some of the Irish doe, but not their enemyes, but freinds blood. As namely at the execution of a notable Traytor at Limericke, called Murrogh O-Brien, I saw an old woman, which was his foster mother, take up his head, whilst he was quartered, and sucked up all the blood that runne thereout, faying, that the Earth was not worthy to drinke it, and therewith also steeped her face and breast, and tore her haire, crying out and shreeking most terribly.

Endox. You have very well runne thorough fuch customes as the Trish have derived from the first old Nations which inhabited the land:namely the Seythians, the Spaniards, the Gaules, & the Bristaines. It now remainerh that you take in hand the customes of the old English which are amongst the Irish: Of which I doe not thinke that you shall have much cause to finde fault with, considering that by the English, most of the old bad trish customes were abolished, and more civill

fashions brought in their stead.

Iren. You thinke otherwise Eudex, then I doe, for the cheifest abuses which are now in that Realme, are growne from the English, and some of them are now much more lawlesse and licentious then the very wilde Irish: so that as much care, as was then by them had to reforme the Irish, so and much more, must now bee used to reforme them, so much time doth alter the manners of men-

Eudex. That feemeth very strange, which you say, that men should fo much degenerate from their first natures, as to growe wilde.

🔰 😘 🖰 Qagai

Iren. So much can liberty and ill examples doe.

Endox. What liberty had the English there, more then they had here at home-were not the lawes planted amongst them at the first and had they not Covernours to curbe and keepe them still in awe and obedience?

tren. They had, but it was for the most part, such as did more hurt then good, for they had governours for the most part of themselves, and commonly out of the two families of the Geraldines and Builers, both adversaries and corrivales one against the other. Who though for the most partichey were but Deputies under some of the Kings of Englands Sonnes, Brethren, or other neare kinfmen, who were the Kings Lieutenants, yet they swayed somuch, as they had all the Rule, and the others, but the title . Of which Butlers and Geraldynes, albeit (I must confesse) there were very brave and worthy men, as al-To of other the Peeres of that Realme, made Lo: Deputies, and Lo: Justices at fundry times, yet thorough greatnes of their late conquests and seignories, they grew insolent, and bent both that regall authority, and also their private powers, one against another, to the utter subversion of themselves, and strengthning of the Irish againe. This you may read plainely discovered by a Letter written from the Cittizens of Corke out of Ireland, to the Earle of Shrewfbury then in England, and remaining yet upon record, both in the Towre of London, and also among the Chronicles of Ireland. Wherein it is by them complained, that the English Lords and Gentlemen, who then had great possessions in Ireland, began thorough pride and insolency, to make private warres one against another, and when either part was weak, they would wage & draw in the triffito take their part, by weak meanes they both greatly incouraged, and inabled the Irifb, which till that time, had beene shut up within the mountaines of slewlogher, and weakened and disabled themselves infomuch that their revenues were wonderfully impaired, and some of them which are there reckoned to have been able, to have spent 12.or 1300. pounds per anni. of old rent (that I may fay no more) besides their Commodities of Creekes and havens, were now scarce able to dispend the third part. From which diforder, and through otherhuge calamities, which have come upon them thereby, they are almost now growne like the Irish, I meane of fuch English, as were planted above towards the West, for the English pale hath preserved it selfe, thorogh nearenes of the state in reasonable civilitie, but the rest which dwelt in Connaght and in Mounfler, which is the sweerest soyle of treland, and some in Leinster and vifter, are degenerate, yea, and some of them have quite shaken off their English names, and put on trish that they might bee altogether Trifb.

Euder. Is it possible that any should so farregrowe out of frame that they should in so short space, quite forget their Countrey and their owne names: that is a most dangerous Lethargie, much worse then that of Messala Corninus, who being a most learned man, thorough fickeneffe forgat his owne name. But can you count us any miles or Mas and

tren: I cannot but by report of the wish themselves, who report, to be of the anthat the + Mac mahons in the north, were aunciently English, to wit, sient hip. delcended

46

w vide annos. pag.praced.

p42.7 ,8 edit.

descended from the Fitz Vrsula's, which was a noble family in England, and that the same appeareth by the signification of their will names: Likewise that the * Mac-swynes, now in Vister, were aunciently of the Veres in England, but that they themselves, for hatred of Enelifb. so disguised their names:

Eudox. Could they ever conceive any such dislike of their owne naturall Countryes, as that they would bee ashamed of their name,

and byte at the dugge from which they lucked life.

Iren. I wote well there should be none, but proud hearts doe oftentimes (like wanton Colts) kicke at their Mothers as we read Al-146 by (the command of) Earle of Woresister, then Lo: land, for exafting of Copue and Liverzwid Lundin.an 1607 or other fuch unhappy occasions, have degenerated from their aun-

cibiades and Themistocles did, who being banished out of Athens, fled unto the Kings of Asia, and there stirred them up to warre against their Country, in which warres they themselves were Chessetaines. So they fay did these Mac-swines and Mac-mahons, or rather Veres and Fitz Vrfulaes, for private despight, turne themselves against England. For at such time as Robert Vere Earle of Oxford, was in the Barons Warres against King Richard the second, through the mallice of the Peeres, banished the Realme and proseribed, he with his kinsman Fitz Vrsu.a fled into Ireland, where being prosecuted, and afterwards in England put to death, his kinfman there remaining behinde in Ireland rebelled, and conspiring with the Irish, did quite cast off both their English name and alleagiance, fince which time they have so remained still, and have fince beene counted meere Irish. The very like is also reported of the Mac-swines, Mac-mahones, and Mac-Shehies of Mounster, how they likewise were aunciently English, and old followers to the Earle of Desmand, untill the raigne of King Edward the fourth. At which time the Earle of Desmond that then was, called Thomas, being through falle subornation (as they say) of the Queene for some offence by her against him conceived, brought to his death *Others hould at * Tredach most unjustly, notwithstanding that he was a very good and found subject to the King: Thereupon all his Kinsemen of the Gedagb 15. Febr- raldines, which then was a mighty family in Mounter, in revenge of that huge wrong, rose into Armes against the King, and utterly renounced and for sooke all obedience to the Crowne of England, to whom the faid Mac fivines, Mac Shehies, and Mac-mahones, being then fervants and followers, did the like, and have ever fithence fo continued. And with them (they fay)all the people of Mounster went out. and many other of them which were meere English, thenceforth joy-Cauden Brisan. ned with the Irish against the King, and termed themselves very Irish, taking on them Irish habits and customes, which could never since be cleane wyped away, but the contagion hath remained fill amongst their posterityes. Of which fort (they say) be most of the surnames which end in an as Hernan, Shinan, Mungan, &c. the which now account themselves natural Irish. Other great houses there bee of the English in Ireland, which thorough licentious conversing with the Irilh, or marrying, or fostering with them, or lacke of meete nurture,

cient dignities, and are now growne as triff, as o Hanlons breech, as the provetbethere is a protect and and and

Eudox. In truth this which you tell is a most shamefull hearing, and to be reformed with most sharpe censures: in so great personages to the terrour of the meaner: for if the Lords and cheife men degenerfite, what shall be hoped of the pealants, and baler people . And hereby fure you have made a faire way unto your felfe, to lay open the abuses of their evill customes, which you have now next to declare, the which no doubt, but are very bad being borrowed, from the irifly, as their apparell, their language, their riding, and many other the like.

Hen. You cannot but hold them fure to be very uncivill, for were they at the best that they were of old, when they were brought in, they thould in fo long an alteration of time feeme very uncouth and Arange For it is to be thought, that the use of all England, (was in the raigne of Henry the second, when Ireland was planted with English) very rude and barbarous, fo as if the fame flould be now used in Eng. land by any, it would freme worthy of sharpe correction, and of new lawes for reformation, for it is but even the other day, fince England grew civill: Therefore in counting the evill customes of the English there, I will not have regard, whether the beginning thereof were English or wish, but will have respect onely to the inconvenience thereof. And fift! have to finde fault with the abuse of language, that is, for the freaking of will among the English, which as it is unnaturall that any people should love anothers language more then their owne, fo it is very inconvenient, and the cause of many other evills.

Endox. It feetherh frange come that the English should take more delight to speake that language, then their owne, whereas they should (mee thinkes) rather take scorne to acquaint their tongues thereto. For it hath ever beene the use of the Conquerour, to despite the language of the conquered, and to force him by all meanes to learne his. So did the Romans allwayes ule, infomuch that there is almon no Nation in the world, but is sprinckled with their language. It were good therefore (me feemes) to fearth out the originall cause of this evill, for the same being discovered, a redresse thereof will the more casily be provided: for (I thinke) it very strange, that the English being so many, and the Irish so few, as they then were left, the fewer should draw the more unto their use.

Iren. I suppose that the cheife cause of bringing in the wishlanguage, amongst them; was specially their fostering; and marrying with the Irifh, the which are two most dangerous infections, for first the childe that fucketh the milke of the nurfe, must of necessity learne his first speach ofher, the which being the first inured to his tongue, is ever after most pleasing unto him, insomuch as though hee afterwards be taught English, yet the smacke of the first will allwayes a bide with him, and not onely of the speach, but also of the manners

4.8

and conditions. For befides that, yong Children be like Apes, which will affect and imitate what they see done before them especially by their nurses whom they love so well, they moreover drawe into themselves, together with their sucke, even the nature and disposition of their nurles: for the minde followeth much the temperature of the body: and also the words are the image of the minde, so as they proceeding from the minde, the minde must needes be affected with the words. So that the speach being Irish, the heart must needes bee Irish for out of the abundance of the heart; the tongue speaketh. The next is the marrying with the triff, which how dangerous a thing it is in all common-wealthes, appeareth to every simplest sence, and though some great ones have perhaps used such matches with their Vassals, and have of them neverthelesseraised worthy issue, as Telamon did with Termesa, Alexander the Great with Roxane, and Iulius Cafar with Cleopatra, yet the example is fo perillous, as it is not to be adventured: for in stead of those few good, I could count unto them infinite many evill. And indeed how can fuch matching succeede well, feeing that commonly the childe taketh most of his nature of the Mother, besides speach, manners, and inclynation, which are for the most part)agreeable to the conditions of their mothers: for by them they are first framed and fashioned fo as what they receive once from them, they will hardly ever after forgoe. Therefore are these evill customes of fostering and marrying with the Irish, most carefully to be restrayned for of them two, the third evill that is the custome of language, (which I spake of,) cheifly proceedeth.

Endex. But are there not lawes already provided, for avoyding of this eville

Iren. Yes I thinke there be, but as good never a whit as never the better for what doe Statutes availe without penalties, or lawes without charge of execution? for fo there is another like law enacted against wearing of the Irish apparell, but neverthemore is it observed by any, or executed by them that have the charge: for they in their private discretions thinke it not fit to bee forced upon the poore wretches of that Country, which are not worth the price of English apparell, nor expedient to be practifed against the abler fort, by reafon that the country (fay they) doth yeeld no better, and were there better to be had, yet these were fitter to be used, as namely the mantle in travailing, because there be no Innes where meete bedding may be had, so that his mantle serves him then for a bed. The leather quilted lacke in journeying and in camping, for that it is fittest to be under his shirt of Male, and for any occasion of suddaine service, as there happen many, to cover his trouse on horsebacke. The great linnen Roll, which the Women weare, to keepetheir heads warme, after cutting their haire, which they use in any sickenesse. Besides their thicke folded linnen shirts, their long sleived smocks, their halfe sleived coates, their filken fillets, and all the rest: they will devise some colour for either of necessity, or of antiquity, or of comelynesse.

Eudox. But

Eudox. But what colour soever they alledge, mee thinkes it not expedient, that the execution of a Law once ordayned; should be left to the discretion of the Judge, or Officer, but that without partialitie, or regard, it should be fulfilled aswell on English;

of the state of IRELAND.

tren. But they thinke this precisenes in reformation of apparell;

nor to be so materiall, or greatly pertinent.

Eudox. Yes surely but it is: for mens apparell is commonly made according to their conditions, & their conditions are oftentimes governed by their garments: for the person that is gowned, is by his gowne put in minde of gravitie, and also restrained from lightnes, by the very unaptnesse of his weed. Therefore it is written by Aristosle, That when Gyrus had overcome the Lydians that were a warlike nation, and devised to bring them to a more peaceable life, hee changed their apparell & musick, and in stead of their short warlike coat, cloathed them in long garments like women, and in stead of their warlike musick, appointed to their certaine lascivious layes, and loose liggs, by which in short space their mindes were so mollified and abated, that they forgot their former fiercenesse, & became most tender & effeminate, whereby it appeareth, that there is not a little in the garment to the fashioning of the minde and conditions. But be these which you have described, the fashions of the Irish weedes.

Iren. No: all these which I have rehearsed to you, bee not Irish garments, but English; for the quilted leather lack is old English: for it was the proper weed of the horseman, as you may read in Chancer, when he describeth Sir Thopas apparell and Armour, as hee went to fight against the Gyant, in his robe of Shecklaton, which is that kind of guilded leather with which they use to imbroyder their Irish Iackets. And there likewise by all that description, you may see the very fashion and manner of the irish horseman most truely set forth in his long hose, his ryding shooes of costly Cordwaine, his hacqueton, & his haberion, with all the rest thereunto belonging.

Eudox. I furely thought that the manner had beene Irilh, for it. is farre differing from that we have now, as also all the furniture of his horse, his strong brasse bit, his slyding reynes, his shanke pillion without flirruppes, his manner of mounting, his fashion of ryding, his charging of his speare aloft above head, the forme of his

Iren. No fure; they be native English, and brought in by the Englishmen first into treland: neither is the same accounted an uncomely manner of ryding: for I have heard some great warriours say, that in all the services which they had seene abroad in forraine Countreyes, they never faw a more comely man then the Irish man, nor that commeth on more bravely in his charge, neither is his manner of mounting unfeemely, though hee lacke stirruppes, but more ready then with stirruppes; for in his getting up, his horse is still going, whereby hee gayneth way. And therefore the

ftirrup'

stirrup was called so in scorne, as it were a stay to get up, being derived of the olde English word Sty, which is, to get up, or mounte.

Endox. It seemeth then that you finde no fault with this manner of ryding, why then would you have the quilted lacke

laide away?

Iren. I doe not wish it to be laide away; but the abuse thereof to be put away; for being used to the end that it was framed, that is to be worne in warre under a shirt of Mayle, it is allowable, as also the thirt of Mayle, and all his other furniture: but to be worne daylie at home, and in townes and civile places, it is a rude habite and most uncomely feeming like a players painted coate.

Endox. But it is worne (they fay) likewise of Irish Footmen, how doe you allow of that ? for I should thinke it very un-

feemely.

Iren. No, not as it is used in warre, for it is worne then likewise of footmen under their shirts of mayle, the which footmen they call Galloglasses, the which name doth discover them also to be auncient English: for Gall-ogla fignifies an English serviciour or yeoman. And he being fo armed in a long thirt of Mayle downe to the calfe of his leg, with a long broad Axe in his hand, was then Pedes gravis are matura, (and was insteed of the armed footeman that now weareth a Corslet,) before the Corslet was used, or almost invenred.

Endox. Then him belike you likewife allow in your straite refor-

mation of old cultomes.

Iren. Both him and the Kernealfo, (whom onely I take to bee the proper Irish Souldier) can I allow, fo that they use that habite and custome of theirs in the warres onely, when they are led forth to the fervice of their Prince, and not usually at home, and in civile places, and befides doe laye afide the evill and wilde uses which the Galloglasse and Kerne doe use in their common trade of life.

Endox. What be those?

Marrie those bee the most barbarous and loathly conditions of any people (I thinke) under heaven; for from the time that they enter into that courfe, they doe use all the beastly behaviour that may bee, they oppresse all men, they spoile as well the Subject, as the enemy; they steale, they are cruell and bloodic, full of revenge, and delighting in deadly execution, licentious, fwearers, and blasphemers, common ravishers of woemen, and murtherers of children.

Eudox. These bee most villainous conditions, I marvaile then that they be ever used or imployed, or almost suffered to live; what good can there then be in them?

tren. Yet fure they are very valiaunt, and hardie, for the most part great indurers of colde, labour, hunger, and all hardnesse, hardnesse, very active and strong of hand, very swift of foot, very vigilant and circumspect in their enterprises, very present in perils, very great scorners of death.

Eudox. Truely by this that you fay, it seemes that the Irishman is

avery brave Souldier.

Iren. Yea furely, in that rude kinde of service, hee beareth himselfevery couragiously. But when hee commeth to experience ofservice abroad, or is put to a peece, or a pike, hee maketh as worthie a Souldiour as any Nation hee meeterh with. But let us (I pray you) turne againe to our discourse of evill customes amongst the Irilh.

Eudox. Me thinkes, all this which you speake of, concerneth the customes of the trifb very materially, for their uses in warre are of no fmall importance to bee confidered, as well to reforme those which are evill, as to confirme and continue those which are good. Bur follow you your owne course, and shew what other their customes you

Tres. There is among st the Irish a certaine kind of people, called Bardes, which are to them in fleed of Poets, whose profession is to set foorth the praises or dispraises of men in their Poems or Rymes, the which are had in so high regard and estimation amongst them, that none dare displease them for feare to runne into reproach thorough their offence, and to bee made infamous in the mouthes of all men. For their verses are taken up with a generall applause, and usually sung at all Feasts and meetings, by certaine other persons, whose proper function that is, who also receive for the fame, great rewards and reputation amongst them.

Eudox. Doe you blame this in them which I would otherwise have thought to have beene worthy of good accompt, and rather to have beene maintained and augmented amongst them, then to have beene disliked, for I have reade that in all ages, Poets have beene had in special reputation, and that (mee thinkes) not without great cause; for besides their sweete inventions; and most wittie laics; they have alwayes used to set foorth the praises of the good and vertuous, and to beate downe and difference the bad and vitious. So that many brave yong mindes, have oftentimes. thorough hearing the praises and famous Eulogies of worthie men fung and reported unto them , beene stirred up to affect the like commendations, and so to strive to the like deserts. So they say that the Lacedemonians were more excited to desire of honour, with the excellent verses of the Poet Tirtaus, then with all the exhortations of their Captaines, or authority of their Rulers and Magistrates:

Iren. It is most true, that such Poets as in their writings doe labour to better the manners of men, and thorough the sweete baite of their numbers, to steale into the young Spirits a defire of honour and vertue, are worthy to bee had in great respect.

But these Irish Bardes are for the most part of another minde, and so farre from instructing yong men in morall discipline, that they themselves doe more deserve to bee sharpely disciplined, for they seldome use to choose unto themselves the doings of good men for the Arguments of their Poems, but whomsoever they finde to be most licentious of life, most bolde and lawlesse in his doings, most dangerous and desperate in all parts of disobedience and rebellious disposition, him they set up and glorisie in their Rithmes, him they praise to the people, & to yong men make an example to follow

Eudox. I marvaile what kinde of speeches they can finde, or what face they can put on, to praise such bad persons as live so lawlessie and licentiouslie upon stealthes and spoyles, as most of them doe, or how can they thinke that any good mind will applaude

or approve the same.

52

Iren. There is none so bad Eudoxus, but shall finde some to favour his doings, but such licentious partes as these, tending for the most part to the hurt of the English, or maintenance of their ownelewde libertie, they themselves being most desirous therof, doe most allow. Besides this, evill things being decked and attired with the gay attire of goodly words, may eafily deceive, & carry away the affection of a yong mind, that is not well stayed, but desirous by some bolde adventures to make proofe of himselfe, for being (as they all be broght up)idlely, without awe of Parents, without precepts of mafters, and without feare of offence, not being directed, nor imployed in any course of life, which may carry them to vertue, will easily be drawne to follow such as any shall set before them, for a your minde cannot rest, if he be not still busied in some goodnesse, he will finde himselfe fuch bufinesse, as shall soone busie all about him. In which, if he shall find any to praise him, & to give him encouragement, as those Bardes and Rythmers doe for little reward, or a share of a stolne Cow, then waxeth he most insolent and halfe madde with the love of himselfe. & his owne lewed deeds. And as for words to fer forth fuch lewdnes, it is not hard for them to give a goodly and painted shew thereunto. borrowed even from the praises which are proper to vertue it selfe. As of a most notorious thiefe & wicked out-law, which had lived all his life-time of spoyles & robberies, one of their Bardes in his praise will fay, that he was none of the idle milke-fops that was brought up by the fire fide, but that most of his dayes he spent in armes & valiant enterprises, that he did never eat his meat, before he had won it with his fword, that he lay not all night flugging in a cabbin under his mantle, but used commonly to keepe others waking to defend their lives, and did light his candle at the flames of their houses, to leade him in the darkenesse: That the Day was his Night, and the Night his Day, that he loved not to be long woing of wenches to yeeld to him, but where he came, he tooke by force the footle of other mens love, and left but lamentation to their lovers; that his mulick was not the harpe, nor layes of love, but the cryes of people, and classing of Armour:

Armor: & finally, that he died not bewayled of many, but made many waile when he died, that dearely bought his death. Doe you not thinke (Eudowus) that many of these praises might be applyed to men of best deserts yet are they all yeelded to a most notable Traytor, & amongst some of the Irish not smally accounted of. For the song, when it was first made and sung to a person of high degree there, was bought (as their manner is) for forty crownes.

of the state of IRELAND.

Eudox. And well worthy fure. But tell me (I pray you) have they any Art in their compositions; or bee they any thing wittie or well

favoured as Poemes should be

Iren. Yea truely, I have caused divers of them to be translated unto me, that I might understand them, & surely they savoured offweet wit and good invention, but skilled not of the goodly ornaments of Poetry: yet were they sprinkled with some pretty slowres of their naturall device, which gave good grace & comline fie unto them, the which it is great pitty to fee to abused to the gracing of wickednes & vice, which with good usage would serve to adorne & beautisie verzue. This evill custome therfore needeth reformation. And now next after the Irish Kerne, me thinks the Irish horf-boyes would come well in order, the use of which, though necessity (astimes now be) doenforce; yet in the thorough reformation of that Realme they should be cut off. For the cause why they are now to be permitted, is want of convenient Innes for lodging of travailers on horfback, & of hofflers to tend their horses by the way. But when things shallbe reduced to a better palle, this needeth specially to be reformed. For out of the fry of the ferake-hell horse-boyes, growing up in knowery and villainy, are their Kerne continually supplied & maintained. For having been once brought up an idle horse boyshe will never after fall to labour, but is only made fit for the halter. And these also (the which is one foule over-fight) are for the most part bred up amongst the Englishmen, of whom learning to shoote in a piece, and being made acquainted with all the trades of the English, they are afterwards when they become Kerne, made more fit to cut their throats. Next to this there is another much like; but much more lewde and diffioneft, and that is, of their Carrows, which is a kinde of people that wander up and downe to Gentle-mens houses, living onely upon Cardes and Dice, the which, though they have little or nothing of their owne, yet will they play for much money, which if they winne, they wafte most lightly, and if they lose, they pay as slenderly, but make recompence with one stealth or another, whose onely hurt is not that they themselves are idle Lossells, but that thorough gaming, they draw others to like lewdnesse and idlenesse. And to these may bee added another fort of like loofe fellowes, which doe passe up and downe amongst Gentlemen, by the name of Iesters, but are (indeed) notable rogues, & partakers not onely of many stealthes, by setting forth other mens goods to be stolne, but also privy to many traitrous practices, and common carryers of newes, with defire whereof you would

would wonder how much the Irish are fed, for they use commonly to fend up and downe to know newes, and if any meet with another. his second word is, what newes ? Infomuch that hereof is tolde a prettie jest of a Frenchman, who having beene sometimes in Ireland, where he marked their great inquirie for newes, and meeting afterwards in France an Irishman, whom hee knew in Ireland, first faluted him, and afterwards faid thus merrily: O Sir, I pray you tell me of curtesie, have you heard any thing of the newes, that you so much inquired for in your Countrey?

Eudox. This argueth fure in them a great defire of innovation, l& therfore these occasions which nourish the same, must be taken away, as namely those Iesters, Carrowes, Mona-shutes, & all such straglers, for whom (me thinkes) the short riddance of a Marshall, were meeter then an ordinance or prohibitio to restrain the. Therfore(I pray you) leave all this rabblement of Runnagates, & passe to other customes.

Iren. There is a great use amongst the trish, to make great assemblies together upon a rath or hill, there to parlie (as they fay) about matters and wrongs betweene Township & Township, or one private person and another. But well I wot, and true it hath beene oftentimes proved, that in their meetings many mischiefes have beene both prachifed & wrought; for to them doe commonly refort all the scumme of the people, where they may meete and conferre of what they lift. which elfe they could not doe without fuspition, or knowledge of others. Besides at these meetings I have knowne divers times, that many Englishmen, & good Irish subjects, have bin villainously murdered by moving one quarell or another against them. For the trilh neuer, come to those Raths, but armed, whether on horse or on foot, which the English nothing suspecting, are then commonly taken at advantage like sheep in the pin-folde.

Eudox. It may be (Irenaus) that abuse may be in those meetings. But these round hills and square Bawnes which you see so strongly trenched and throwneup, were (they fay) at first ordained for the same purpose, that people might assemble themselves therein, and therefore aunciently they were called Talk-mates, that is, a place of people, to meete or talke of any thing that concerned any difference betweene parties and Towneships, which seemeth yet to me very requisite.

Iren. You say very true Eudoxus, the first making of these high hils, were at first indeed to very good purpose for people to meet, but howfoever the times when they were first made, might well ferve to good occasions, as perhaps they did then in England, yet things being fince altered, & now Ireland much differing from the state of England, the good use that then was of them, is now turned to abuse; for those hills wherof you speak, were (as you may gather by reading) appointed for 2 special uses, & built by 2 several nations. The one is that web you call Talk motes, which were built by the Saxons, as the word bewraieth, for it fignifieth in Saxon, a meeting of folk, & these gre for the

most part in forme foure square, well intrenched, the others that were round, were cast up by the Danes, as the name of them doth betoken, for they are called Danes-Rathes, that is hills of the Danes, the which were! by them devised, not for treaties and parlies, but appointed as fortes for them to gather unto, in trouble some time, when any trouble arose, for the Danes being but a few in comparison of the * Saxons (in England) used this for their safety, they made those small * The like rearound hills, so strongly fenced, in every quarter of the hundred, to the end that if in the night, or any other time, any troublous cry or making of uproare should happen, they might repaire with all speed unto their such Raibes owne fort, which was appointed for their quarter, and there remaine the Danet or fafe, till they could affemble themselves in greater strength, for they Norwegians, vid. were made fo strong with one small entrance, that who soever came pog Hib diffins. thither first, were he one or two, or like few, he or they might there 3.49.37. rest safe, and defend themselves against many till more succour came unto them: and when they were gathered to a sufficient number, they marched to the next fort, and so forward till they met with the perill, or knew the occasions thereof. But besides these two sorts of hills, there were anciently divers others, for some were raised, where there had been a great battle fought, as a memory or Trophie thereof others, as monuments of burialls, of the carcaffes of all those that were flaine in any field, upon whom they did throwe fuch round mounts, as memorialls of them, and fometimes did cast up great heapes of stones, (as you may read the like in many places of the Scripture) and other whiles, they did throw up many round heapes of earth in a circle, like a garland, or pitch many long stones on end in compasse, every of which (they say) betokened some person of Note, there flaine and buried, for this was their auncient custome, before Christianity came in amongst them, that Church-yards were inclosed. realist to be seen as

Euden. You have very well declared the original of their mounts and great stones incompassed; which some vainely terme, the ould Gyants Trevests, and thinke that those huge stones, would not else be brought into order or reared up, without the strength of Gyants. And others as vainely thinke that they were never placed there by mans hand or Art, but onely remained there to fince the beginning, and were afterwards discovered by the deluge, and laide open as then by the washing of the waters, or other like casualty. But let them dreame their owne Imaginations to please themselves, you have satisfied me much better, both for that I fee some confirmation thereof in the holy writt, and also remember that I have read in many Historyes and Chronicles, the like mounts and stones, oftentimes mentioned.

Iren. There be many great authorities (I affure you) to prove the fame but as for these meetings on hills, whereof we were speaking, it is very inconvenient that any fuch should be permitted.

Eudox. But yet it is very needefull (me thinkes) for many other purpoles, as for the countryes to gather together, when there is any

imposition to be laide upon them, to the which they then may all agree at such meetings, to devide upon themselves, according to their holdings and abilities. So as if at these assemblies, there be any Officers, as Constables, Bay liftes, or such like amongst them, there can be no perill; or doubt of such bad practises.

Iren: Neverthelesse, dangerous are such assemblies, whether for Cesse or ought else, the Constables and Officers, being also of the Irish, and if any of the English happen to be there, even to them they may prove perillous. Therefore for avoyding of all such evill occasions, they were best to be abolished.

Eudox. But what is that which you call Cesse, it is a word sure unused amongst us heere, therefore (I pray you) expound the

fame?

Iren. Cesse is none other then that which your selfe called impofition; but it is in a kinde unacquainted perhaps unto you. For there are Cesses of fundry forts, one is the cessing of Souldiours upon the Countrey: For Ireland being a Countrey of warre (as it is handled) and allwayes full of Souldiours, they which have the government. whether they finde it the most ease to the Queenes purse, or the most ready meanes at hand, for victualing of the Souldiour, or that necesfity inforceth them thereunto, doe scatter the Army abroad in the Countrey, and place them in Villages to take their victuals of them. at such vacant times as they lye not in Campe, nor are otherwise imployed in service. Another kinde of Cesse, is the imposing of provifion for the Governors house-keeping, which though it be most neceffary, and be also (for avoyding of all the evills formerly therein used) lately brought to a composition, yet it is not without great inconveniences, no lesse then here in England, or rather much more. The like Cesse is also charged upon the Countrey sometimes for victual ling of the Souldiours, when they lye in Garrison, at such times as there is none remayning in the Queenes store, or that the same cannot be conveniently conveyed to their place of Garrison: But these two are not easily to be redressed when necessity thereto compelleth, but as for the former, as it is not necessary, so is it most hurtfull and offensive to the poore country, and nothing convenient for the Souldiours themselves, who during their lying at Cesse, use all kinde of outragious disorder and villany, both towards the poore men, which victualland lodge them, as also to all the Country round about them, whom they abuse, oppresse, spoyle, & afflict by all the meanes they can invent, for they will not onely, not content themselves with fuch victuals as their hoftes nor yet as the place perhaps affords but they will have other meate provided for them, and Aqua vita fent for, yea and money befides laide at their trenchers, which if they want, then about the house they walke with the wretched poore man and his filly wife, who are glad to purchase their peace with any thing. By which vile manner of abuse, the countrey people, yea and the very English which dwell abroad and see, and sometimes feels

this outrage, growe into great detestation of the Souldiours, and thereby into harred of the very government, which draweth upon them such evills: And therefore this you may also iowne unto the former evill customes, which we have to reprove in *Ireland*.

whom it is used, be of better note then the former roguish fort, which you reckoned, yet the fault (me thinkes) is no lesse worthy of a mar-

shall.

Iren. That were a harder course Eudoxus, to redresse every abuse by a marshall it would seeme to you very evill surgery to cut off every unfound or ficke part of the body, which being by other due meanes recovered, might afterwards doe very good ferwice to the body againe, and haply helpe to fave the whole: Therefore I thinke better that some good salve for the redresse of the evill bee sought forth then the least part suffered to perish: but hereof wee have to speake in another place. Now we will proceede to other like defects. amongst which there is one generall inconvenience, which raignesh almost throughout all Ireland: that is, the Lords of land and free-holders doe not there use to set out their land in farme, or for tearme of yeares to their Tennants, but onely from yeare to yeare, and some during pleasure, neither indeede will the Irish Tennant or husband. man other wife take his land, then lo long as he lift himselfe. The reafon hereof in the Tennant is, for that the Land-lords there, use most Thamefully to racke their Tennants, laying upon them Coices and Livery at pleasure, & exacting of them (besides his Covenants) what he pleafeth. So that the poore hulbandman either dare not binde himfelfe to him for longer tearme, or thinketh by his continual liberty of change, to keepe his Land-lord the rather in awe from wronging of him. And the reason why the Land-lord will no longer covenant with him, as, for that he dayly looketh after change and alteration. and hovereth in expediation of new worlds.

Endox. But what evill commeth hereby to the Common-wealth or what reafon is it that any Land-lord hould not fet, nor any Ten-

nant takehis land as himselfe liste

meanes, both the Land lord thinketh that he hath his Tennant more at commaunid, to follow him into what action foever hee shall enter, and also the Tennant being left at his liberty is fit for every occasion of change that shall be offered by time; and so much also the more ready and willing is he to runne into the same, for that hee hath no such state in any his houlding, no such building upon any farme, no such coste imployed in sensing or husbanding the same, as might with hold him from any such willfull course, as his Lords cause, or his ownelewde disposition may carry him unto. All which hee hath forborne, and spared so much expence, for that he had no sirme estate in his Tenement, but was onely a Tennant at will or little more, and so at will may leave it. And this inconvenience may be reason enough.

to ground any ordinance for the good of the Common-wealth, against the private behoofe or will of any Landlord that shall refuse to graunt any such terme or estate unto his Tennant, as may tende to

the good of the whole Realme.

Eudox. Indeede (me thinkes) it is a great willfullnes in any fuch Land-lord to refuse to make any longer farmes unto their Tennants, as may, besides the generall good of the Realme, be also greatly for their owne profit and availe: For what reasonable man will not thinke that the Tenement shalbe made much better for the Lords behoofe, if the Tennant may by such good meanes bee drawne to build himselfe some handsome habitation thereon, to ditch and inclose his ground, to manure and husband it as good Farmours use. For when his Tennants terme shalbe expired: it will yeeld him in the renewing his lease, both a good fine, and also a better rent. And also it shall be for the good of the Tennant likewise, who by such buildings and inclosures shall receive many benefits: first by the handsomenesse of his house, he shall take more comfort of his life, more safe dwelling, and a delight to keepe his faid house neate and cleanely, which now being as they commonly are, rather fwyne-styes, then houses; is the cheifest cause of his so beastly manner of life, and savage condition, lying and living together with his beaft in one house, in one roome, in one bed, that is, cleane strawe, or rather a foule dunghill. And to all these other commodities, hee shall in sort time finde a greater added, that is his owne wealth and riches increased, and wonderfully inlarged, by keeping his Cattle in inclosures, where they shall allwayes have fresh pasture, that now is all trampled and over-runne, warme covert, that now lyeth open to all weather, safe being, that now are continually filched and stolne.

Iren. You have Endoxus well accompted the commodities of this one good ordinance, amongst which, this that you named last is not the least, for all the other being most beneficiall to the Land lord and Tennant. This cheifly redoundeth to the good of the Commonwealth, to have the land thus inclosed, and well fenced. For it is both a principall barre and impeachment unto theeves from stealing of cattle in the night, and also a gaule against all Rebels, and Outlawes, that shall rife up in any numbers against the government, for the theifethereby shall have much adoe, first to bring forth, and afterwards to drive away his stolne prey, but thorough the common high wayes, where he shall soone bee descryed and met withall: And the Rebell or open enemy, if any fuch shall happen, either ar home, or from abroad, shall easily be found when he commeth forth, and also be well incountred withall by a few, in fo ftraight passages and strong inclosures. This therefore when wee come to the reforming of all those evill customes before mentioned, is needefull to be remembred but now by this time (methinkes) that I have well run thorough the evilluses which I have observed in Ireland . Neverthelesse I well note that there be many more, and infinitely many more in the privare abuses of men. Bur these that are most generall, and tending to the hurt of the Common-weale, (as they have come to my remembrance) I have as breisty as I could rehearsed unto you. And therefore now I thinke best that we passe unto our third part, in which we noted inconveniences that are in Religion.

Endox. Surely you have very well handled these two former, and if yee shall as well goe thorough the third likewise, you shall merit a

very good meed.

Iren. Little have I to say of Religion, both because the parts thereof be not many, (it selfe being but one) and my selfe have not much beene conversant in that calling: but as lightly passing by I have seene or heard: Therefore the fault which I finde in Religion is but one, but the fame is univerfall, thoroughout all that country, that is, that they be all Papists by their profession, but in the same so blindly and brutishly informed, (for the most part) that not one amongst a hundred knoweth any ground of Religion, or any Article of his faith, but can perhaps fay his Pater nofter or his Ave Maria, without any knowledge or understanding what one word thereof meaneth.

Endox. Is it not then a little blot to them that now hold the place of government, that they which now are in the light themselves, suffer a people under their charge, to wallow in fuch deadly darke-

nesse.

tren. That which you blame Endox. is not (I suppose) any fault of will in those godly fathers which have charge thereof, but the inconvenience of the time and troublous occasions, wherewith that wretched Realme hath continually beene turmoyled; For instruction in Religion needeth quiet times, and crewe seeke to settle a sound discipline in the Clergy, we must purchase peace unto the Laity, for it is ill time to preach among fwords, and most hard or rather imposfibleit is to fettle a good opinion in the mindes of men, for matters of Religion doubtfull, which have doubtlesse an evill opinion of us. For erea new be brought in the old must be removed.

Endox. Then belike it is meete that some fitter time be attended, that God fend peace and quietnesse there in civill matters, before it be attempted in Ecclefiafficall. I would rather have thought that fas it is faid correction must first begin at the house of God, and that the care of the Soule; should have beene preferred before the care of

the Body.

iren. Most true Eudorus, the care of the foule, and foule marters is to be preferred, before the care of the body, in confideration of the worthynesse thereof, but not till the time of reformation, for if you should know a wicked person dangerously sicke, having now both soule and body greatly diseased, yet both recoverable, would you not thinke it evill advertizement to bring the Preacher before the Phisitian, for if his body were neglected, it is like that his languishing foule being difquieted by his difeafefull body, would urterly refufe

and loath all spirituall comfort, but if his body were first recured & brocht to good frame, should there not then be found best time to recover the soule also. So it is in the state of a Realme: Therefore (as I faid) it is expedient, first to settle such a course of government there. as thereby both civill disorders, and ecclesiasticall abuses may be reformed and amended, wherero needeth not any fuch great distance oftimes as (you suppose) I require, but one joynt resolution for both, that each might fecond and confirme the other.

Eudox. That we shall see when we come thereunto, in the meane time. I conceive thus much, as you have delivered, touching the generall fault, which you suppose in Religion, to wit, that it is Popish, but doe you finde no particular abuses therein, nor in the ministers

thereof?

Iren: Yes verily, for what ever diforders you fee in the Church of England, yee may finde there, and many more: Namely, groffe Symo. ny, greedy coverousnesse, fleibly incontinency, carelesse sloath, and generally all disordered life in the common Clergy men: And befides all these, they have their particular enormityes; For all Irish Priests, which now injoy the Church livings, they are in a manner meere lay men faving that they have taken holy orders, but otherwise they doe goe, and live like lay men, follow all kinde of husbandry, and other worldly affaires, as other Irish men doe. They neither read Scriptures, nor preach to the people, nor administer the Communion but Baptisme they doe: for they Christen yet after the Popish fashion, onely they take the tithes and offerings, and gather what fruite else they may of their livings, the which they convert as badly and some of them (they say) pay as due tributes and shares of their livings to their Bishops, (I speake of those which are trish) as they receive them duely.

Eudox. But is that suffered amongst them . It is wonder but that

the Governours doe redresse such shamefull abuses.

Iren. How can they, fince they know them not? for the Irish Bishops have their Clergy in such awe and subjection under them, that they dare not complaine of them, fo as they may doe to them what they please, for they knowing their owne unworthynesse and incapacity, and that they are therefore still removeable at their Bissiops will, yeeld what pleafeth him, and he taketh what he lifteth: yea, and some of them whose Diocesses are in remote parts, somewhat out of the worlds eye, doe not at all bestow the Benefices, which are in their owne donation, upon any, but keepe them in their owne hands. and fer their owne fervants and horse-boyes to take up the Tithes and fruites of them, with the which some of them purchase great Lands, and build faire Castles upon the same. Of which abuse if any question be moved they have a very seemely colour and excuse that they have no worthy Ministers to bestow them upon, but keepe them so bestowed for any such sufficient person, as any shall bring unto them.

Eudox. But

Eudox. But is there no law nor ordinance to meet with this mifchiefee nor hath it never before beene looked into

Iren. Yes, it seemes it hath, for there is a Statute there enacted in Ireland, which seemes to have beene grounded upon a good meaning, That what soever Englishman of good conversation and sufficiencie, shall bee brought unto any of the Bishoppes, and nominated unto any living, within their Diocesse that is presently voyde, that he shall (without contradiction) be admitted thereunto before

Eudox. This is furely a very good Law, and well provided for this evill, whereof you speake, but why is not the same obser-

Iren. I think it is well observed, and that none of the Bishops transgresse the same, but yet it worketh no reformation thereof, for many defects. First there are no such sufficient English Ministers sent over as might be presented to any Bishop for any living, but the most part of such English as come over thither of themselves, are either unlearned, or men of some bad note, for which they have for saken England. So as the Bishop to whom they stalbe presented, may justly reject them as incapable and insufficient. Secondly, the Bishop himselfe is perhappes an Irish man, who being made Judge by that Law, of the sufficiencie of the Ministers, may at his owne will, dislike of The Englishman ; as unworthy in his opinion; and admit of any Jrifh, whom hee shall thinke more for his turne. And if hee shall at the instance of any Englishman of countenance there; whom hee will not displease; accept of any such English Minister as shall bee rendered unto him gryet hee will under hand ; carry fuch a hard hand over him ; or by his Officers wring him forfore, that hee will foone make him weary of his poore living the Laftly bethe Benefices themselves are do meane, and of so small profite in those with Countreyes, thorough the ill husbandrie of the with people which doe inhabite them , that they will not yeelde any competent maintainance for any honest Minister von live lupon, scarcely to buy him a gowner And were all this redressed was happily it might bee) yet what good should any English Minifer doe among others, by teaching or preaching to them, which ei ther cannot understand him, or will not heare him a Ori what comfort of life shall he have , where his Parishioners are fo infatiable, So intractable, so ill affected to thim, as they usuall beesto all the English; or finally, how dare almost any homest Minister suthat are peaceable civile men; commit his fafetie to the handes of fuch Neighbours, as the boldest Captaines dare scarcely dwell Iren. But how can the Covernous length

Endox. Little good then (Hee) was by that Statute wrought, how ever well intended, but the reformation therofinust grow higher, and be brought from a stronger ordinance, then the commandement, or penáltie of a Law, which none dare informe or complain of

Students,

& Trinity Colledge by Dublin,

which was founded by Queens

Eliz 3 Marsij 1591. The 13.

when it is broken; but have you any more of those abuses in the Clergy?

Iren. I would perhappes reckon more, but I perceive my speech to grow too long, and these may suffise to judge of the generall disorders which raigne amongst them; as for the particulars. they are too many to be reckoned. For the Clergy there (excepting the grave Fathers which are in high place about the State, and some

few others which are lately planted in their * new Colledge) are generally bad, licentious, and most dif-

ordered.

of the same moneth, its first Eudox. You have then (as I suppose) gone tho-Stone was laide by Thomas Smyth rough those three first parts which you proposed unto then Mayor of Dublin, and the your felfe to wit. The Inconveniences which you ob-9. of lan 1593. it first admitted ferved in the lawes, in the customes, and in the Religion

of that land. The which (methinkes) you have so thoroughly tou-

ched, as that nothing more remaineth to be spoken thereof.

Iren. Not so thoroughly as you suppose, that nothing can remaine, but so generally as I purposed, that is, to lay open the generally rall evills of that Realme, which doe hinder the good reformation thereof, for to count the particular faults of private men, should be a worke too infinite, yet some there be of that nature, that though they be in private men, yet their evill reacheth to a generall hurt, as theextortion of Sheriffs, and their Sub-theriffs & Bayliffes, the corruption of Victuallers, Ceffors, and Purveyors, the diforders of Seneschalls. Captaines, and their Souldiers, and many such like: All which I will onely name here that their reformation may bee mended in place where it most concerneth. But there is one very foule abuse which by the way I may not omit, and that is in Captaines, who not withstanding that they are specially imployed to make peace thorough strong execution of warre, yet they doe so dandle their doings, & dallie in the service to them committed, as if they would not have the enemy subdued, or utterly beaten downe, for feare lest afterwardes they should need imployment, & so be discharged of pay: For which cause some of them that are layde in garrison, doe so handle the matter, that they will doe no great hurr to the enemyes, yet for colour fake, some men they will kill, even halfe with the consent of the enemy, being persons either of base regard, or enemies to the enemy. whose heads eftsoones they send to the Governor for a commendation of their great indevour, telling how weighty a dervice they performed, by curting off fuch and fuch dangerous Rebells. : Eudox. Truely this is a prettie mockerie, and not to be permitted by the Governours. and man Or Asia and adding a sauce

Iren. But how can the Governour know readily what persons those were, & what the purpose of their killing was, yea & what will you say if the Captaines doe justifie this their course by ensample of some of their Governours which funder Benedicite of doc tell it to you) doe practife the like fleight in their governments?

Eudox. Is it possibles take heed what you say Ireneus. tren. To you onely Eudonis, I doe tell it, and that even with great hearts griefe, and inward trouble of mind to fee her Majestie so much abused by some who are put in speciall trust of those great affaires: Of which, some being martiall men, will not doe alwayes what they may for quieting of things, but will rather winke at some faults, and suffer them unpunished, lest they (having purall things in that assurance of peace that they might) they should seeme afterwards not to be needed from continued in their governments with fo great a charge to her Maiestie. And therefore they doe cunningly carry their course of government, and from one hand to another doe bandie the fervice like a Tennis-Ball, which they will never strike quite away, for

Endox. Doe you speake of under Magistrates Irenaus, or princi-

pall Governours?

feare left afterwards they should want.

Iren. I doe speake of no particulars, but the truth may be found out by tryall and reasonable insight into some of their doings. And if I should say, there is some blame thereof in the principall Governours. I thinke I might also shew some reasonable proofe of my speech. As for example, some of them seeing the end of their government to draw nigh, and some mischiefes and troublous practice growing up, which afterwardes may worke trouble to the next succeeding Governour, will not attempt the redresse or cutting off thereof, either for feare they should leave the Realme unquier ar the end of their government, or that the next that commeth, should receive the same too quiet, and so happily winnemore prayle thereof, then they before. And therefore they will not (as I said) seeke at all to represse that evill, but will either by graunting protection for a time, or holding some emparlance with the Rebell, or by treatie of Commissioners, or by other like devices, onely fm other and keepe downe the flame of the mifchiefe fo as it may not breake out in their time of government, what comes afterwards they care not, or rather wish the world. This course hath beene noted in some Governors.

Eudox. Surely (Irenaus) This if it were true, should bee worthy of an heavy judgment: But it is hardly to bee thought, that any Governour should so much either envie the good of that Realme which is put into his hand, or defraude her Maiestie who trusteth him so much or maligne his successour which shall possesse his place, as to fuffer an evill to grow up, which he might timely have kept under, or perhaps to nourish it with coloured countenance or fuch finister meanes.

Iren. I doe not certainely avouch so much (Eudokus) but the fequele of things doth in a manner proove, and plainly speake so much, that the Governours usually are envious one of anothers greater glory, which if they would feeke to excell by better governing, it should been most laudable emulation. But they doe quite

Endox.

other-

otherwise. For this (as you may marke) is the common order of them, that who commeth next in place, will not follow that courfe of government, how ever good, which his predecessors held, either for disdaine of himselfe, or doubt to have his doings drowned in an other mans praise, but will straight take a way quite contrary to the former: As if the former thought (by keeping under the Irifb) to reforme them: the next by discountenancing the English, will curry favour with the Irifb, and so make his government seeme plausible. as having all the Irish at his commaund: But he that comes after will perhappes follow neither the one nor the other, but will dandle the the one and the other in such fort, as hee will sucke sweete out of them both, and leave bitternesse to the poore Countrey, which if he that comes after shall seeke to redresse, he shall perhappes finde fuch croffes, as hee shall hardly beeable to beare, or doe any good that might worke the difgrace of his predecessors. Examples you may see hereof in the governours of late times sufficiently, and in others of former times more manifeltly, wen the government of that Realme, was committed sometimes to the Geraldines, as when the house of Yorke had the Crowne of England, sometimes to the Butlers, as when the house of Lancaster got the same. And other whiles, when an English Governour was appointed, hee perhaps found enemies of both.

Endox. I am forry to heare so much as you report, and now I begin to conceive somewhat more of the cause of her continuals wretchednes then heeretofore I found, and wish that this inconvenience were well looked into, for fure (me thinkes) it is more weightie then all the former, and more hardly to be redressed in the governor, then in the governed, as a malady in a vitall part is more incurable then in

an externall.

Iren. You fay very true; but now that we have thus ended all the abuses and inconveniences of that government, which was our first part. It followeth now that we passe unto the second part, which was of the meanes to cure and redresse the same, which wee must labour

to reduce to the first beginning thereof.

Eudox. Right so Irenam: for by that which I have noted in all this your discourse, you suppose, that the whole ordinance and institution of that Realmes government, was both at first when it was placed, evill plotted, and also fithence thorough other over-fights. came more out of square to that disorder which it is now come unto. like as two indirect lines, the further that they are drawne out, the further they goe afunder.

Iren. I doe fee Eudoxus; and as you fay, so thinke, that the longer that government thus continueth, in the worse course will the Realmebe for it is all in vaine that they now strive and endeavour by faire meanes and peaceable plotts to redreffe the same, without first remmooving all those inconveniences, and new framing (25 it were) in the forge, all that is worne out of fashion : For all other meanes will be but as lost labour, by patching up one hole to make many, for the Irish doe strongly hate and abhorre all reformation and subjection to the English, by reason that having beene once Subdued by them, they were thrust out of all their possessions. So as now they feare, that if they were againe brought under they should bee likewise expelled out of all, which is the cause that they hate the English government, according to the faying, Quent meruunt oderunt: Therefore the reformation must now beethe strength of a

greater power.

Eudox. But me thinkes that might be by making of good lawes, and establishing of new Statutes, with sharpe penalties and punishments, for amending of all that is prefently amisse, and not (as you Suppose) to beginne all as it were anew, and to alter the whole forme of the governement, which how dangerous a thing it is to attempt, vou your selfe must needes confesse, and they which have the managing of the Realmes whole policy, cannot without great cause, feare and refraine, for all ingovation is perillous, infomuch as though it bee meant for the better, yet so many accidents and fearefull events may come betweene; as that it may hazard the losse of the whole.

Iven. Very true Eudoxus, all change is to be shunned, where the affaires stand in such fortsas that they may continue in quietnes, or be affured at all to abide as they are. But that in the Realme of Ireland we feemuch otherwise, for every day wee perceive the troubles growing more upon us, and one evill growing upon another, infomuch as there is no part now found or afcertained, but all have their cares upright, wayting when the watch-word shall come, that they should all arise generally into rebellion, and cast away the English Subjection. To which there now little wanteth for I thinke the word be already given, and there wanteth nothing but oportunitie, which truely is the death of one noble person, who being himselfe most fledfast to his foveraigne Queene, and his Countrey, coasting ubon the South Sea, stoppeth the ingate of all that evill which is looked for, and holdeth in all those which are at his becke, with the terrour of his greatnesse, and the assurance of his most immoveable loyaltie: And therefore where you thinke, that good and found lawes might amend, and reforme things there amisse; you think sure-Iv amisse. For it is vaine to prescribe Lawes, where no man careth for keeping of them, nor feareth the daunger for breaking of them. But all the Realme is first to be reformed, and lawes are afterwards to bee made for keeping and continuing it in that reformed

Eudox. How then doe you think is the reformation thereof to be begunne, if not by lawes and ordinances

Iren. Even by the sword, for all these evills must first be cut at

way by a strong hand, before any good can bee planted, like as the corrupt braunches, and unwholesome boughes are first to bee pruned pruned, and the foule mosse cleanfed and scraped away, before the

tree can bring forth any good fruite.

Eudox. Did you blame mee even now, for wishing of Kerne. Horse-boyes, and Carrowes, to be cleane cut off, as too violent a meanes, and doe you your selfe now prescribe the same medicine? Is not the Sword the most violent redresse that may beeused for any evill ?

Iren. It is so, but where no other remedie may bee devised. nor hope of recovery had, there must needes this violent meanes bee used. As for the loose kinde of people which you would have cut off, I blamed it, for that they might otherwise perhaps bee brought to good, as namely by this way which I fet before you.

Eudox. Is not your way all one with the former in effect, which you found fault with, fave onely this oddes, that I faid by the halter.

and you fay by the fword what difference is there?

Iren. There is furely great, when you shall understand it, for by the fword which I named, I did not meane the cutting offall that nation with the fword, which farre bee it from mee, that I should ever thinke so desperately, or wish so uncharitably, but by the Sword I meane the royall power of the Prince, which ought to stretch it selfe forth in the chiefest strength to the redressing and cutting offthoseevills, which I before blamed, and not of the people which are evill. For evill people, by good ordinances and government, may be made good; but the evill that is of it felfe evill, will never become good.

Eudex. I pray you then declare your minde at large, how you would wish that sword which you meane to be used to the reforma-

tion of all those evills.

Iren. The first thing must be to send over into that Realme, such a strong power of mensas should perforce bring in all that rebellious route and loofe people, which either doe now stand out in open Armes, or in wandring companies doe keepe the woods, spoyling the

good subjects.

Eudex. You speake now Irenaus of an infinite charge to her Majestie, to send over such an Army, as should tread downeall that standeth before them on foot, and lay on the ground all the stiff-necked people of that land, for there is now but one Out-law of any great reckoning, to wit, the Earle of Tyrone abroad in armes, against whom you see what huge charges shee hath beene at this last yeare; in fending of men, providing of victualls, and making head against him, yet there is little or nothing at all done, but the Queenes treasure spent, her people wasted, the poore Countrey troubled, and the enemy neverthelesse brought into no more subjection then he was a or lift outwardly to shew, which in effect is none, but rather a scorne of her power, and emboldening of a proud rebell, and an incouragement to all like lewdlie disposed Traytors, that shall dare to

lift up their heele, against their soveralgne Lady: Therefore it were hard counsell to drawe such an exceeding great charge upon her, whose event should be so uncertaine.

hen. True indeede, if the event should bee uncertaine, but the certainty of the effect hereof shall be so infallible, as that no reason can gainefay it, neither shall the charge of all this Army (the which I demaund) be much greater, then so much as in these last two yeares warres, hath vainely beene expended . For I dare undertake, that it hath coste the Queene above 200000 pounds already, and for the present charge, that she is now at there; amounteth to very neere 12000. pounds a moneth, whereof cast you the accompt: yet nothing is done. The which summe had it beene imployed as it should bee, would have effected all this which now I goe about.

Eudox. How meane you to have it imployed? but to bee spent in

the pay of Souldiours, and provision of victualls.

Tren. Right fo, but it is now not difburfed at once, as it might be, but drawne out into a long length; by fending over now 20000 pounds, and next halfe yeare 10000. pounds, fo as the Souldiour in the meane time for want of due provision of victuall, and good payment of his due, is starved and confumed, that of a 1000. which came over lufty able men, in halfe a yeare there are not left 500. And yes is the Queenes charge never a whit the leffe, but what is not payd in present money, is accounted in debt, which will not be long unpayd, for the Captaine, halfe of whole Souldiours are dead, and the other quarter never mustered, nor seene, comes shortly to demand payment of his whole accompt, where by good meanes of some great ones, and privy shareings with the Officers and servants of other some, hee receiveth his debt; much lesse perhaps then was due, yet much more indeede then he justly deserved.

Endox. I take this fure to be no good husbandry, for what must needes be fpent, as good fpend it at once, where is enough, as to have it drawne out into long delayes, feeing that thereby both the fervice is much hindred, and yet nothing faved but it may be trenaus that the Queenes treasure in fogrear occasions of disbursements (as it is well knowne she harly beene at larely,) is not alwayes so ready, nor for plentifull, as a can spare so great a summe together, but being payed as it is now forme, and then forme; it is no great burthen unto her, nor any great impoverishment to her Coffers, seeing by such delay of

time, it day lie commeth in, as fast as the parters it out.

tren: It may be as you fay, but for the going thorough of lo honorable a course (I doubt not) but if the Queenes Coffers be not so well fored (which we are not to looke into) but that the whole Realme which now as things are used, doe feele a continual burthen of that wretched Realme, hanging upon their backes, would for a small riddance of all that trouble, be once troubled for all and put to all their shoulders, and helping hands, and hearts also, to the defraying of that charge, most gladfully and willingly, and furely the

charge in effect, is nothing to the infinite great good, which should come thereby, both to the Queene, and all this Realme generally, as when time serveth shall be shewed.

Endox. How many men would you require to the furnishing of this which yee take in hand and how long space would you have thementertained?

Iren. Verily not above 10000. footemen, and a 1000. horse, and all these not above the space of a yeare and a halfe, for I would still as the heate of the service abateth, abate the number in pay, and make other provision for them, as I will shew.

Endox. Surely it seemeth not much which you require, nor no long time, but how would you have them used would you leade forth your Army against the Enemy, and seeke him where he is, to

fighte

Iren. No Eudoxus; That would not be, for it is well knowne that he is a flying enemie, hiding himselfe in woodes and bogges, from whence he will not drawe forth, but into some flraight passage or perillous foord, where he knowes the Army must needes passage: There will he lye in waite, and if hee finde advantage fit, will dangerously hazard the troubled Souldiour. Therefore to seeke him out that still flitteth, and follow him that can hardly bee found, were vaine and bootelesse, but I would devide my men in garrison upon his Countrey, in such places as I should thinke might most annoy him.

Eudox. But how can that be Irenam with so few ment for the enemie as you now see, is not all in one Country, but some in Vister, some in Connaght, and others in Leinster. So as to plant strong garrisons in all those places should neede many more menthen you speake of, or to plant all in one, and to leave the rest naked, should be but to leave

them to the spoyle.

Iren. I would wish the cheife power of the Army to be garrisond in one Countrey that is strongest, and the other upon the rest that is weakest: As for example, the Earle of Typone is now accompted the strongest, upon him would I lay 8000 men in garrison, 1000 upon Pheagh Mac Hugh and the Cavanaghes, and 1000 upon some parts of Connaght, to be at the direction of the Governour.

Eudox. I fee now all your men bestowed, but what places would you fet their garrison that they might rise out most conveniently to service? and though perhaps I am ignorant of the places, yet I will take the Mappe of Ireland, and lay it before me, and make mine eyes (in the meane time) my Schoole-masters, to guide my understanding to

judge of your plot.

Then. Those eight thousand in Visier, I would devide likewise into foure parts, so as there should be 2000. Footemen in every garrison: The which I would thus place. Vpon the Black water, in some convenient place, as high upon the River as might be I would lay one garrison. Another would I put at Castle-liffer, or there-abouts, so as they should have all the passages upon the River to Logh-soyle. The third

third I would place about Fermanagh or Bundroife, fo as they might lye betweene Connaght and Vifter, to ferve upon both fides, as occasion shall be offered, and this therefore would I have stronger then any of the rest, because it should be most inforced, and most imployed. and that they might put wardes at Balls-shanon; and Belick; and all those passages. The last would I set about Monoghan or Balturbut, so as it should fronte both upon the Enemie that way, and also keepe the Countyes of Cavan and Meath in awe, from passage of straglers from those parts, whence they use to come forth, and oftentimes use to worke much mischeite. And to every of these garrisons of 2000. Footemen, I would have 200 horsemen added; for the one without the other, can doe but little service. The 4. Garrisons thus being placed, I would have to bee victualled before hand for halfe a yeare; which you will say to be hard, considering the corruption and usuall waste of victualls. But why should not they be aswell victualled for fo long time, as the ships are usually for a yeare, and sometimes two. feeling it is easier to keepe victuall on land then water. Their bread I would have in flower, fo as it might be baked still to serve their neceffary want. Their Beere there also brewed within them, from time to time, and their Beefe before hand barelled; the which may bee used, but as it is needed: For I make no doubt but fresh victualls, they will sometimes purvay for themselves, amongst their Enemies. Hereunto likewise would I have them, have a store of hose and shooes, with such other necessaries as may be needefull for Souldiours, so as they should have no occasion to looke for releife from abroad, or occasion of such trouble, for their continuall supply, as I see and have often proved in Ireland to bee more cumberous to the Deputy, and dangerous to them that releive them, then halfe the leading of an Army; for the Enemy knowing the ordinary wayes thorough the which their releife must be brought them, useth commonly to draw himselfe into the straight passages thither ward, and oftentimes doth dangeroully distresse them, besides the pay of such force as should besent for their convoy, the charge of the carriages, the exactions of the Countrey shall be spared. But onely every halfe yeare the supply brought by the Deputy himselfe, and his power s, who shall then vifite and overlookeall those Garrisons, to see what is needefull to change, what is expedient, and to direct what hee shall best advise. PAnd those 4. Garrisons issuing forth, at such convenient times as they shall have intelligence or espiall upon the enemy, will so drive him from one side to another and Tennis him amongst them that he shall finde no where fafe to keepe his Creete in nor hide himfelfe; but flying from the fire shall fall into the water; and out of one danger into another; that in short space his Creete, which is his cheife sustenance, ihall be wasted with preying, or killed with driving, or starved for want of passure in the woods, and he himselfe brought so lowe, that ble shall have no heart nor abillity, to indure his wretchednesse, the which will furely come to passe in very short time, for one Winter distinction

well followed upon him will fo plucke him on his knees, that he will never be able to stand up againe.

Eudox. Doe you then thinke the Winter time fittest for theservices of Ireland, how falls it then that our most imployments bee in Summer, and the Armies then led commonly forthe

Iren. It is surely misconceived, for it is not with Ireland as it is with other Countryes, where the warres flame most in Summer, and the Helmets glifter brightest in the fairest Sunshine: But in Ireland, the Winter yeeldeth best services, for then the trees are bare and naked, which use both to cloath and house the Kerne, the ground is cold and wet, which useth to be his bedding, the aire is sharpe and bitter, to blowe thorough his naked fides and legges, the kyne are barren and without milke, which useth to be his onely foode, neither if hee kill them, will they yeeld him flesh, nor if he keepe them, will they give him foode, besides being all with Calfe (for the most part) they will thorough much chasing and driving, cast all their Calves, and loose their milke, which should releive him the next Summer.

Eudox. I doe well understand your reason, but by your leave, I have heard it otherwise said, of some that were Outlawes: That in Summer they kept themselves quiet, but in Winter they would play their parts, and when the nights were longest, then burne and spoyle

most, so that they might safely returne before day.

Iren. I have likewise heard, and also seene proofe thereof true: But that was of such Outlawes as were either abiding in well inhabited Countryes, as in Mounster, or bordering on the English pale, as Feagh Mac Hugh, the Cavanaghes, the Moores, the Dempfies, or fuch like: For for them the winter indeede is the fittest time for spoyling and robbing, because the nights are then (as you said) longest and darkest, and also the Countryes round about are then most full of Corne, and good provision to be gotten every where by them, but it is farre otherwise with a strong peopled enemy, that possesse a whole countrey, for the other being but a few, and indeede privily lodged, and kept in out villages, and corners nigh to the woodes and mountaines, by some of their privy friends, to whom they bring their spoyles and stealthes, and of whom they continually receive secret releife: But the open enemy having all his Countrey wasted, what by himfelfe, and what by the Souldrours, finderh then fuccour in no place: Townes there are none, of which hee may get spoyle, they are all burnt:bread he hath none, he ploweth not in Summer: Flesh he hath, but if he kill it in Winter, he shall want milke in Summer, and shortly want life. Therefore if they bee well followed, but one Winter, you shall have little worke with them the next Summer.

Eudox. I doe now well perceive the difference, and doe verily thinke that the Winter time is there fittelf for service, withall I conceive the manner of your handling of the fervice, by drawing fuddaine draughts upon the Enemy, when he looketh not for you, and to watch advantages upon him, as hee doth upon you. By which

Araight

Araight keeping of them in, and not suffering them at any time long to rest. I must needes thinke that they will some bee brought lowe, and driven to great extreamities. All which when you have performed and brought them to the very last cast, suppose that they will offer either to come to you and submit themselves, or that some of them will seeke to withdraw themselves, what is your advice to doe, will you have them received?

Iren. No, but at the beginning of those warres, and when the Garrisons are well planted, and fortified, I would wish a Proclamation were made generally, to come to their knowledge : That what persons soever, would within twenty dayes absolutely submit themfelves, (excepting onely the very Principalls and Ring leaders) should finde grace: I doubt not, but upon the settling of these Garrifons, such a terrour and neere consideration of their perillous state, would be strucken into most of them, that they will cover to drawe away from their Leaders. And againe I well know that the Rebells themselves (as I saw by proofe in Desmands warres.) will turne away all their rascall people, whom they thinke unserviceable, as old men. women, children, and hyndes (which they call Churles,) which would onely waste their victualls, and yeeld them no ayde, but their Cattle they will furely keepe away: These therefore though policy would turne them backe againe, that they might the rather confume and afflict the other Rebells, yet in a pittyfull commiseration I would wish them to be received. The rather for that this fortofbase people doth not for the most part rebell of themselves, having no heart thereunto; but are by force drawne by the grand Rebells into their action, and carryed away with the violence of the streame, else they should be sure to loose all that they have, and perhaps their lives too. The which they now carry unto them, in hope to enjoy them there but they are there by the strong Rebells themselves of soone turned out of all, so that the constrainte hereof, may in them deserve bardon. Likewife if any of their able men or Gentlemen shall then offer to comeaway; and to bring their Cattle with them, as some no doubt may Acale them away privily, I wish them also to be received, for the dilabling of the enemy, but withall, that good assurance may be taken for their true behaviour and absolute submission , and that then they be not fuffered to remaine any longer in those parts ino nor about the Garrisons, but sent away into the inner parts of the Realme, and differfed in fuch fort as they may not come together, 'nor easily returne if they would: For if they might bee suffered to remaine about the Garrifons, and there inhabite, as they will offer to tille the ground; and yeeld a great part of the profit thereof, and of their Cattle, to the Coronell, wherewith they have heretofore tempted many they would (as I have by experience knowne) becever after fuch a gaule, and inconvenience to them, as that their profit shall not recompence their hurt, for they will privily releive their friends that are forth, they will fend the Enemy feoret advertizements of all their purpofes

purposes and journeyes, which they meane to make upon them, they will not also sticke to drawe the enemy privily upon them, yea and to betray the fort it selfe, by discovery of all her defects and disadvantages (if any be) to the cutting of all their throates. For avoiding whereof and many other inconveniences, I wish that they should be carried farre from thence into some other parts, so that (as I say) they come in and submit themselves, upon the first summons: But afterwards I would have none received but left to their fortune and miserable ending reason is, for that those which will afterwards remaine without, are stout and obstinate Rebells, such as will never be made dutifull and obedient, nor brought to labour or civill conversation, having once tasted that licentious life, and being acquainted with spoyle and out-rages, will ever after be ready for the like occasions, so as there is no hope of their amendment or recovery, and therefore needefull to be cut off.

Eudox. Surely of such desperate persons, as will follow the course of their owne folly, there is no compassion to bee had, and for others you have proposed a mercifull meanes, much more than they have described but what then shall be the conclusion of this warres

For you have prefixed a short time of its continuances

Iren. The end will (I affüre me) beevery short and much sooner then can be in so great a trouble; as it seemeth hoped for, although there should none of them fall by the sword, nor bee slaine by the Souldiour, yet thus being kept from manurance, and their Cattle from running abroad, by this hard restraint they would quickly confume themselves, and devoure one another. The proofe whereof, I faw fufficiently exampled in these late wartes of Mounster, for notwithstanding that the same was a most rich and plentifull countrey. full of corne and cattle, that you would have thought they should have beene able to stand long, yet ere one yeare and a halfe they were brought to fuch wretchednesse; as that any stony heart would have rued the same. Our of every corner, of the woods and glynnes they came creeping forth upon their hands, for their legges could not beare them, they looked like anatomies of death sithey spake like Ghosts crying out of their graves, they did earothe dead Carrions. happy were they could finde thein; yea, and one another foone after, infomuch as the very cardaffes they spared nor to scrape out of their graves, and if they found a plot of water-creffes or Shamrocks; there they flocked as to a feast for the time, yet not able long to cominue therewithall, that in short space there were none almost left, and a most populous and plentifull countrey suddainely left woyde of man and beaft, yen fure in all that warre, there perifhed not many by the Sword but all by the extremitie of famine, which they themselves would (as I have by experience knowne at the word to be worth

Endex. It is a wonder that you tell jound more to bee wondred how in should so shortly come to passe it not that wondered

tren. It is most true, and the reason also very ready, for you must conceive

conceive that the strength of all that Nation, is the Kerne, Galloglaffe, Stocah, Horseman and Horseboy, the which having been never used to have any thing of their owned, and now being upon spoyle. of wothers make no spare of any thing, but havocke and confusion of all they meet with, whether it bee their owne Friends goods, or their Foes! And if they happen to get never to great spoyle at any time. the same they waste and consume in a tryce ; as maturally delighting in spoyle though it doe themselves no good! On the other fide, whatfoever they leave unspent, the Souldier when hee commeth there, spoyleth and havocketh likewise , for that betweene both, nothing is very shortly left. And yet this is vety recessary to bee done for the some finishing of the warre, and nor oriely this in this wife, but also those subjects which doe border upon those parts pare either to bee removed and drawne away, or likewise to bee spoyled, that the Enemy may find no succourthereby. For what the Souldier spares, the Rebell will surely spoyle.

Eudox. I doe now well understand you. But now when all things are brought to this passe, and all filled with these ruefull spe-Ctacles of fo many wretched Carcales flarving, goodly Countreyes wasted, fo hige desolation and confusion, that even it that doe but heare it from you, and doe picture it in my minde; doe greatly pitkie and commiserate it. If it shall happen that the state of this miferie and lamentable image of things fluil bee tolde, and feelingly prefented to her facred Maierie, being by nature full of mercy and clemency who is most inclinable to such pittifull complaints, and will not endure to heare fuch Tragedies made of herpoore people and subjects, as some about her may infinuate. Then flice perhappes for very compassion of such calamities, will not onely floppe the streame of such violence, and returne to her womed mildenesse, but also conne them little thankes which have beene the authours and Councellours of fuch bloodie platformes a So I remember that in the late government of that good Lord Grey, when after long travell, and many perillous affayes, he had brought things almost to this passe, that you speake of, that it was even made ready for reformation, and might have beene brought to what her Maiestie would , like complaint was made against him, that he was a bloodie man, and regarded not the life of her subjects no more then dogges, but had wasted and consumed all; To as now the had nothing almost left?, but to raigne in their Ashes, eare was foon lent therunto, & all fuddenly turned topfide-turvy the Noble Lord eft soones was blamed, the wretched people pittied & new counsells plotted, in which it was concluded that a generall pardon should be sent over to all that would accept of it, upon which all former purposes were blancked, the Governour at a bay, and not only all that great and long charge which shee had before beene at quite lost and cancelled, but also all that hope of good which was

G

even

even at the doore put back and eleans frustrated. All which whether it be true or no your selfs can well tell, would not be a most off decay.

Iren. Too arue Endoxus, the more the pitty of for I may not forpet somemorable a thing: Meither can I bee ignorant of that peril lous device, and of the whole meanes by which it was compassed & vervicunningly contrived by fowing first diffention betweene him & an other noble personage wherein they both at length found how notably they had beene abuled, and how thereby under hand this univerfall alteration of things mas brought about but then too late to flav the fame, for in the meane time all that was formerly done with long labor, & greation lower (as you lay) in a moment undone. and that good Lord blotted with the hante of a bloody man, whom. who that well knew knew to be most gentle, affable doving and reme perate. But that the necessitie of that present state of things, inforced him to that violence, and almost changed bis naturall disposition. Bur otherwise he was so farre from delighting in blood, that oftentimes he suffered not just vengeance to fall where it was described: and even fome of them which were afterwardes his accusers had rafted too much of his marcy, and were from the gallowes brought to bed his accusers. But his courle indeederwas this what hee frared not the heades and principalls of any mischievous bractifesor rebellion, but showed sharpe judgement on them, chiefly for enfamples dake that all the mouner fort, which also were generally then infected with that evill, might by terrour thereof bee reclavmedl and faved if it were possible. For in the dash conspirate of * fome of the English Pale, thinks you not that there were many more guiltie then they thanfeld the punishment is ver heer touchedionely a few of specials note; and in the tryall of them also even to prevent the blame of cruelty and partial proceeding and feeking their Blood, which he, as in his great wifedome Casir feemeth) did force for would bee objected against him; hee for avoyding thereof, did use a singular discretion and regard. For the Jury that went upon their tryall, hee made to bee chosen our of their nearest kinfmen, and their Judges he made of fome of their owne Fathers of others their Vincles and dearest friends, who when they could not but justly condemne them, yet he uttered their judgment in aboundance of teares, and yet her even herein was called bloody and cruell. to build a rational case to be able a saver of tally

Endow. Indeed so have I heard it heere often spoken; but I perceive (as I alwayes verily thought), that it was most unjustly, for hee was alwayes knowne to bee a most inster sincere; godly, and right noble man, farre from such sternenesse; faire from such unrighteousnesse. But in that sharpe execution of the spaniards, at the fort of Simerwick, I heard it specially noted, and if it were true as some reported, surely it was a great outlier of hee did put them in hope thereof.

tren. Both the one and the other is most untrue; for this I can affure you, my felfe being as neare them as any, that hee was fo farre either from promiting, or putting them in hope that when first their Secretarie (called as I remember) Signior Jeffrey an Italian lian, being sent to treate with the Lord Deputie for grace, was flatly refused : And afterwards their Coronell named Don, selfq flian, came forth to intrease that they might part with their Armes like Souldiers, at the least with their lives according to the custome of Warre, and Law of Nations, it was strongly denyed him and tolde him by, the Lord Deputie himfelfe, that they could not justly pleade either custome of Warre, or Law of Nations for that they were not, any lawfull Enemies, , and if they were hee willed them to thew by what committion they came thither into another Princes Dominions to warre, whether from the Pope or the King of Spaine, or any other, the which when they faid they had not but were onely adventurers that came to feeke fortime is broad, and to serve in warres amongst the trifly, who desired to entertaine them. It was then tolde them, that the wife themselves, as the Earle and Iohn of Delmand, with the rest, were no lawfull Enemies 2 but Rebells and Traytours, and therefore they that came to fuccour them, no better then Rogues and Runnagates, specially comming with no licence, nor commission from their owne King. So as it should bee dishonougable for him in the name of his Queene, to condition or make any tenemes, with high Raicalls, but left them to their choyce , to yeeld and submit themselves, or no whereupon the faid Coronell did absolutely yeeld himselfe and the Fort, with all therein, and craved onely mercy; which it being not thought good to hew them, for daunger of them, if being faved, they should afterwardes joyne with the Irif, and also for terrour to the trib, who are much imboldened by those forraigne fuccours, and also put in hope of more ere long, there was no other way but to make that short end of them as was made. Therefore most untruely and maliciously doe these evill tongues backbite and flander the facred ashes of that most just and honourable personage, whose least virtue of many most excellent that abounded in his Heroicke spirit, they were never able to aspire

gudax. Truely trenews, I am right glad to be thus fatisfied by you, in that I have often heard questioned, and yet was never able till now; to choake the mouth of such detractours, with the certaine knowledge of their slanderous untruthes, neither is the knowledge hereof impertinent to that which wee formerly had in hand, I meane for the thorough prosecuting of that sharpe course which you have set downe for the bringing under of those Rebells of vister and Connaght, and preparing a way for their perpetual reformation, least happily by any such sinister suggestions of cruckie and too much blood-shed, all the plot might be over-throwne.

Confulas

(fi placeo)

Camden. annal, rerum Anglic. & Hiber.
ad an. 1520

74

and all the coste and labour therein imployed, Bee utterly lost and

caftaway.

tren. You fay most true, for after that Lords calling away from thence, the two Lords Iustices continued but a while: of which the one was of minde (as it seemed) to have continued in the footing of his predecessors, but that he was curbed and restrayned. But the on ther was more mildly disposed, as was meete for his profession, and willing to have all the wounds of that Common-wealth healed and recured, but not with that heede as they should bee. After when Sir lohn Perrot succeeding (as it were) into another mans harvest, found an open way to what course hee list, the which hee bent not to that point which the former Governours intended Bus rather quite contrary, as it were in scorne of the former, and in value vaunt of his owne Councells, with the which hee was too willfully carryed; for hee did treade downe and diffrace all the English, and set up and countenance the trish all that hee could, whether thinking thereby to make them more tractable and buxome to his government, (wherein hee thought much amisse) or privily plotting some other purposes of his owne, as it partly afterwards appeared, but furely his manner of governement, could not be found nor wholesome for that Realme, it being To contrary to the former. For it was even as two Phylicians should take one ficke body in hand, at two fundry times : Of which the former would minister all things meete to purge and keepe under the Bodies the other to pumper and drengthen it suddenly agame, whereof what is to bee looked for but a most danneerous relable ? That which wee now fee thorough his rule, and the next after him, happened thereunto, being how more damage. roully licke then ever before. Therefore by all meanes is mult bee fore-feene and afflured, that after once entering into this course of reformation, there bee afterwardes no remorfe nor drawing backe for the fight of any fuch ruefull objects as must thereupon followe, nor for compassion of their callsmities, seeing that by no other meanes it is possible to cure them, and that these are not of will, but of very ungent neces-

Eudox. Thus farre then you have now proceeded to plant your garrifons, and to direct their fervices, of the which neverthelesse I must needes conceive that there cannot be any certaine direction set downe, so that they must follow the occasions which shall bee daylie offered, and diligently awayted. But by your leave (Irenam) motwithlunding all this your carefull fore-sight and provision (mee thinkes) Thee an evill little unespyed, and that may chance to hazard all the hope of this great service, if it bee not very well-looked into, and that is, the corruption of their Captaines, for though they be placed never so carefully, and their Companies filled never so sufficiently, yet may they, if

they lift, discarde whom they please, and send away such as will perhappes willingly bee ridde of that dangerous and hard service, the which (well I wote) is their common custome to doe, when they are layde in garrison, for then they may better hide their defaults, then when they are in Campe, when they are continually eyed and noted of all men. Besides, when their pay commeth, they will (as they say) detaine the greatest portions thereof at their pleasure, by a hundred shifts that need not here be named, through which they oftentimes deceive the Souldier, and abuse the Queene, and greatly hinder the service. So that let the Queene pay never so fully, let the Muster-Master view then never so diligently, let the Deputy or Generall looke to them never so exactly, yet they can cozen them all. Therefore me thinkes it were good, if it be possible, to make provision for this inconvenience:

Iren. It will furely be very hard; but the chiefest helpe for prevention hereof must be the care of the Coronell that hath the government of all his garrison, to have an eye to their alterations, to know the numbers and names of the fick Souldiers, and the flaine, to marke and observe their rankes in their daylie rising forth to service, by which he cannot eafily bee abused, so that hee himselfe bee a man of speciallassurance and integritie. And therefore great regard is to bee had in the choosing and appointing of them. Besides, I would not by any meanes, that the Captaines should have the paying of their Souldiers; but that there should bee a Pay-master appointed, of speciall trust; which should pay every man according to his Captaines Ticket, and the accompt of the Clerke of his Band, for by this meanes the Captaine will never seeke to falsisse his alterations, nor to diminish his Company, nor to deceive his Souldiers, when nothing thereof shalbe sure to come unto himselfe; but what is his owne bare pay. And this is the manner of the Spaniards Captaine, who never hath to meddle with his Souldiers pay, and indeed fcorneth the name as base to be counted his Souldiers. Pagadore, whereas the contrary amongst us hath brought things to so bad a passe, that shere is no Gaptaine but thinkes his Band very sufficient, if hee can muster 60: and stickes not to say openly, that he is unworthy to have a Captainship , that cannot make it worth 5001, by the years, the which they right well verifie by the proofe.

Endox. Truely I thinke this a very good meanes to avoid that inconvenience of Captaines abuses. But what say you to the Coronell's what authority thinke you meete to be given him; whether will you allow him to protect or safe conduct, and to have marrial lawes as

they are accustomed ?

fren. Yea verily, but all these to be elimited with very straite instructions. As first for protections, that heesshall have authority after the first Proclamation, for the space of twentie dayes, to protect all that shall come in, and them to send to the Lord Deputie, with their safe conduct or passe, to bee at his disposition,

 \mathbf{G}_3

bùt

78

but so as none of them returne backe againe, being once come in but be presently sent away out of the Countrey, to the next She riffe, and so conveyed in safetie. And likewise for marriall. Lawe, that to the Souldier it bee not extended, but by trvall formerly of his cryme, by a Iury of his fellow Souldiers as it ought to bee, and not rashly at the will or displeasure of the Coronell, as I have fometimes feene too lightly. And as for other of the Rebells that shall light into their handes, that they bee well aware of what condition they bee, and what holding they have. For in the last generall warres there, I knew many good Free-holders executed by martiall law, whose landes were thereby faved to their Heires, which should have otherwise escheated to her Majestie. In all which the great discretion and uprigntnesse of the Coronell himselfe is to bee the chiefest stay both for all those doubts, and for many other difficulties that may in the service happen.

Eudox. Your caution is very good; but now touching the Arch-Rebell himselfe. I meane the Earle of Tyrone, if he in all the time of these warres, should offer to come in and submit himselfe to her Majestie, would you not have him received, giving good hostages. and fusficient assurance of himselfe?

Iren. No marrie, for there is no doubt, but hee will offer to come in, as hee hath done diverse times already, bue it is without any intent of true submission, as the effect hath well shewed, neither indeed can bee now if hee would, come in at all, nor give that affurance of himselfe that should bee meete: for being as hee is very subtle headed a seeing himselfe now so farre ingaged in this bad action, can you thinke that by his submission, hee can purchase to himselfe any safetie, but that heereafter, when things shall be quieted, these his villanies will be ever remembred, and whenfoever hee shall treade awry (as needes the most righteous must fometimes) advantage will bee taken thereof, as a breach of his pardon, and hee brought to a reckoning for all former matters; besides, how hard it is now for him to frame himfelfe to subjection, that having once fet before his Eyes the hope of a Kingdome hath therunto not onely found incouragement from the greatest King in Christendome, but also found great faintnes in her Maiesties withstanding him, wherby he is animated to think that his power is able to defend him; & offend further then he hath done, whenfoever he pleafe, let every reasonable man judge. But if hee himselfe should come and leave all other, his accomplices without, as O Donel, Mac Mahone, Maguire, & the rest, he must needs thinke that then even they will ere long cut his throate, which having drawne them all into this occasion, now in the midst of their trouble give the them the flip, whereby hee must needes perceive how impossible it is for him to submit himselfer Bur yet if hee would so doe can he give any good affurance of his obedience & For how weake hould is there by hostages, hath too often beene proved, and that which is spoken of taking Shane O-Neales sonnes from him, and setting them up against him is a very perillous counsaile, and not by any meanes to be put in proofe, for were they let forth and could overthrowe him, who should afterwards overthrow them, or what affurance can be had of theme It will be like the tale in Elop, of the wild horse, who having enmity with the Stagg, came to a man to desire his avde against his foe, who yeelding therevato mounted upon his backe, and so following the stagge, ere long slew him, but then when the horse would have him alight he refused, but ever after kept him in his subjection and service. Such I doubt would bee the proofe of Shane O-Neales sonnes . Therefore it is most dangerous to arrempt any fuch plot, for even that very manner of plot, was the meanes by which this trayterous Earle is now made great: For when the last o-Neale, called Terlagh Leinagh, began to stand upon some tickle termes, this fellow then, called Baron of Dunganon, was fet up as it were to beard him, and countenanced and strengthened by the Queene so far, as that he is now able to keepe her selfe play:much like unto a Gamester that having lost all, borroweth of his next fellow-Gamester somewhat to maintaine play, which he setting unto him againe, shortly thereby winnethall from the winner.

Endox. Was this Rebell then fet up at first by the Queene (as

you fay) and now become fo undurifull?

tren. He was (Lassure you) the most outcast of all the O-Neales then, and lifted up by her Majesty out of the dust to that he hath now wrought himselfe unto, and now hee playeth like the frozen snake, who being for compassion releived by the husbandman, soone after he was warme began to hille, and threaten danger even to him and

Endox. He surely then deserveth the punishment of that shake, & should worthily be hewed to peeces. But if you like not the fetting forth of Shane O' Neales formes against him, what fay you then of that advice which (I heard) was given by fome, to draw in scotts to ferve

against him show like you that advices

Iren. Much worse then the former, for who that is experienced in those parts knoweth not that the O-Neales are neerely allyed unto the Muc-Neiles of Sporland; and to the Earle of Argyle, from whence they use to have all their fliccours of those Scottes and Redbanckes: The causes Besides all these scories are through long continuance intermingled of these feares and allyed to all the inhabitants of the north: So as there is no hope bave been amthat they will ever be wrought to serve faithfully against their old putated, since the happy unifriends and kinfmen. And though they would, how when they have on of England overthrowne him and the warres are finished, shall they themselves and secund, be por out doe we not all know, that the Scottes were the first inhabit his late Maje. tants of all the north, and that those which now are called the north by. wift, are indeed very * Stottes, which challenge the ancient inheritance cufuit ub.10 and dominion of that Counties, to be their owneaunciently: This viinumada.

then were but to leap out of the pan into the fire: For the cheifest cavear and provision in reformation of the north, must be to keep out those Scottes.

Eudox. Indeede I remember, that in your discourse of the first peopling of Ireland, you shewed that the Scythians or Scottes were the first that sate downe in the north whereby it seemes that they may challenge some right therein. How comes it then that O-Neales claimes the dominion thereof, and this Earle of Tyrone faith that the right is in hime I pray you refolve me hereine for it is very needefull to be knowne, and maketh unto the right of the warre against him, whose successe useth commonly to be according to the justnes of the cause, for which it is made: For if Tyrone have any right in that Seigniory (me thinkes) it should be wrong to thrust him out: Or if (as I remember) you faid in the beginning that o-Neale when he acknowledged the King of England for his LeigeLord and Soveraigne, did(as he alleadgeth) reserve in the same submission, his Seigniories and rights unto himselfe, what should it be accounted to thrust him out of the same?

Iren. For the right of o-Neale in the seigniory of the north, it is furely noneatall: For besides that the Kings of England conquered all the Realme, and thereby assumed and invested all the right of that land to themselves and their heires and successours for ever: So as nothing was left in O-Neale but what he received backe from them, O-Neale himselfe never had any ancient Seigniory over that country, but what by usurpation and incroachment after the death of the Duke of Clarence, he got upon the English, whose lands and possessions being formerly wasted by the Scottes, under the leading of Edward le Bruces (as I formerly declared unto you)he eft-soones entred into, and fithence hath wrongfully detained, through the other occupations and great affaires which the Kings of England (foone after) fell into here at home, fo as they could not intend to the recovery of that Countrey of the north, nor restraine the insolency of o-Neale, who finding none now to withstand him, raigned in that desolation, and made himselfe Lord of those few people that remained there, upon whom ever fithence he hath continued his first usurped power, and now exacteth and extorteth upon all men what he lift; So that now to subdue or expell an usurper, should bee no unjust enterprise or wrongfull warre, but a restitution of auncient right unto the Crowne of England, from whence they were most unjustly expelled and long kept out.

Endox. I am very glad herein to be thus fatisfied by you, that I may the better latissie them, whom I have often heard to object these doubts, and flaunderoufly to barke at the courses which are held against that trayterous Earle and his adherents . But now that you have thus fertled your fervice for Vifter and Connaght: I would bee glad to heare your opinion for the profecuting of Feagh Mac Hugh, who being but a base villaine, and of himselfe of no power, yet so continually

continually troubleth the State, notwithstanding that he lyeth under their nose, that I disdaine his bold arrogancy, and thinke it to be the greatest indignity to the Queene that may be, to suffer such a caytiffe to play such Rex, and by his ensample not onely to give heart and incouragement to all such bad Rebells, but also to yeeld them succour and refuge against her Majesty, whensoever they sty unto his Comericke, whereof I would first wish before you enter into your plot of fervice against him, that you should lay open by what meanes, he being so base, first lifted himselfe up to this dangerous greatnes, and how he maintaineth his part against the Queene and her power, notwithstanding all that hath beene done and attempted against him. And whether also hee have any pretence of right in the lands which he houldeth, or in the warres that he maketh for the same?

Iren. I will fo, at your pleasure, and will further declare, not only the first beginning of his private house-but also the originall of the fept of the Birnes and Tooles, to farre as I have learned the lame from fome of themselves, and gathered the rest by reading: The people of the Eirnes and Tooles (as before I shewed unto you my conjecture) descended from the auncient Brittaines; which first inhabited all those easterne parts of Ireland, as their names doe betoken, for

* Brin in the Bristish language signifieth wooddy, and Toole hilly, which names it feemeth they tooke of the Countryes which they inhabited, which is all very mountainous and woody. In the which it feemeth that ever fince the comming in of the English with * Dermot ni-Gall, they have continued; Whether that their countrey being forude and mountainous was of them despifed, and thought unworthy the inhabiting, or that, that they were received to grace by them, and fuffered to enjoy their lands as unfit for any other, yet informeth that in some places of the same they have put foote, and fortified with fundry Gastles, of which the ruines onely doe there now remaine, fince which time they are growne so that firength, that they are able to lift up

conquest of Ireland, hand against all that state; and now lately through the boldnes and late good successe of of this Feagh Mac Hugh, they are so fatre inboldened, that they threaten perill even to Dublin, over whose necke they continually hang. But touching your demand of this Feaghes right unto that Countrey which he claimes, or the feigniory therein, it is most vaine and arrogant. For this you cannot be ignorant, that lit was part of that which was given in inhenitance by Dirmot Mac Morrough King of Leinster, unto Stronghome wish his daughter, and which Strongbowe gave over unto the King and his heires, fo as the right is absolutely now in her Majesty, and if it were not, yet could it not be in this Feagh; but in " O Brin, which is the ancient Lord of all or O-Bine that Countrey, for he and his auncestours were but followers unto b-Bringand his grandfather Shane Mac Terlagh , was a man of mea-

*In Richard Creagh's booke de Lingua Hibernica, there is a very plentifull collection of Irifh words, derived from the Britwhich tongue, which doch much flrengthen the Authors opinion, in houlding that the Birnes, Tooles, and Canenaghe, with other the ancient inhabitants of the cafterne parts, were originally Brittish Colonyes. pid peg. 32 @ 33.
** Dermet Mac Marregh King of Leinster, who was furnamed alfo ni-Gall, as being a friend to

the English, and a cheife inftru-

ment in inciting them to the

annales, sub &-

nem anni 1594.

nest regard amongst them neither having wealth nor power. But his Sonne Hugh Mac Shane, the father of this Feagh, first began to lift up his head, and through the strength and great fastnes of Glan-Malor, which adjoyneth unto his house of Ballinetor, drew unto him many theeves and out-lawes, which sted unto the succour of that glynne, as to a fanctuary and brought unto him part of the spoyle of all the Countrey, through which he grew strong, and in short spacegot unto himselfe a great name thereby amongst the Irish, in whose sooting this his sonne continuing, hath through many unhappy occasions, increased his said name, and the opinion of his greatnes, insomuch that now he is become a dangerous Enemy to deale withall.

Endox. Surely I can commend him, that being of himselfe of to meane condition; hath through his owne hardinesse listed himselfe up to the height, that he dare now front Princes, and make tearmes with great potentates; the which as it is to him honourable, so it is to them most disgracefull, to be bearded of such a base variet; that he ing but of late growne out of the dunghill, beginneth now to overcrow so high mountaines; and make himselfe great protectour of all Outlawes and Rebells that will repaire unto him. But doe you thinke he is now so dangerous an enemy as he is counted; or that it is so hard

to take him downe as some suppose?

Iren. No verily, there is no great reckoning to bee made of him, for had he ever beene taken in hand, when the rest of the Realme (of at least the parts adjoyning) had been quiet, as the honourable Gent. that now governeth there, (I meane Sir William Rusell) gave a notable * attempt thereunto; and had worthily performed it, if his course had not been crossed unhappily, he could not have stood a. moneths nor ever have looked up against a very meane power : but now all the parts about him being up in a madding moode was the Moores in Leix, the Cavenaghes in the country of Wexford, and some of the Butlers in the county of Kilkenny, they all flocke unto him, and drawe into his country; as to a firong hould where they thinke to be fafe, from all that profecute them. And from thence they doe at their pleasures breake out into all the borders adjoining which are well peopled countryes, as the counties of Dublin, of Kildare, of Catherlanh, of Kilkenny, of Wexford, with the spoiles whereof they victuall and ftrengthen themselves, which otherwise should in shorttime be starved, and fore pyned, fo that what he is of himfelfe, you may hereby perceive oir อาปากสา ro somisla อย่าก่อเปลง ของแบบ โรงเล่น อาทิน เสียก็

Endox. Then by formuch as I gather our of your speech, then ext way to end the warres with him; and to roote him out quite, should be to keepe him from invading of those country es adjoying; which (as I suppose) is to be done, either by drawing all the inhabitants of those next borders away, and leaving the nutterly waster or by planting garrisons upon all those stongers about him; that when he shall breake forth, may set upon him and shorten his returne.

Iren. You conceive very rightly Eudowns, but for that the difpeopling peopling and driving away all the inhabitants from the countrey about him, which you speake of should bee a great consulting and trouble, as well for the unwilling nesses of them, to leave their possess, ones, as also for placing and providing for them in other. Countryes, one thinkes, the better course should be by planting of Garrisons abdurbin, which when sover he shall looke forth, for be drawing out with the desire of the spoyle of those borders, or for necessity of victually shall be alwayes ready to intercept his going or comming.

Where then doe you wish those Garrisons to be planted that they may serve best against him, and how many in every Garrisons.

Imp felfe by reason that (as I told you) I am no martialliman, will not take upon me to direct fo dangerous affaires, but onely as I understood by the purposes and plots, which the Lord Gray who was well experienced in that fervice against him did lay downe: To the performance whereof he onely required 1000, men to be laid in 6, garrifons, that is, at Ballinecor 200. footemen and, 50 thorsemen, which thould thur him out of his great glynne, whereto he to much truffeth; at Knockelough 200 footemen and 50 horsemen to answere the county of Catherlagh; at Arelo or Wicklew 200. footemen and 50. horsemen to defend all that fide towards the Sea. In Shillelaeh 100, footemen which should cut him from the Cavanaghes, and the county of Wexford; and about the three Castles 50, horsemen, which should defendall the county of Dublin, and 100 footemen at Talbots towne, which should keepe him from breaking out into the County of Kildire, and be alwayes on his neckeon that side: The which Garrisons fo laide, will for busie him, that he shall never rest at home, nor stirre forth abroad but he shall be had; as for his Creete they cannot be above ground, but they must needes fall into their hands or starve, for he hath no faltnes nor refuge for them. And as for his partakers of the Moores, Burlers, and Cavanaghes, they will foone leave him, when they fee his fastnes and strong places thus taken from him.

Eudox. Surely this feemeth a plot of great reason, and small difficulty, which promise those of a short end. But what special directions will you set downe for the services and risings out of these Garrisons.

then. None other then the present occasions shall minister unto them, and as by good espialls, whereof there they cannot want store, they shall be drawne continually upon bim, so as one of them shall be still upon shim, and some times all at one instant, bayting him. And this (Fasture my selfe) will demand no long time, but will be all fin nished in the space of one yeare, which how small athing it is, unto the termall quietnesse which shall thereby be purchased to that, Realme, and the great good which should growe to her Majesty, should (me thinkes) readily drawe on her Highnesse to the undertaking of the enterprise.

Endow. You have very well (me thinkes) Irenam plotted a course.

for

for the archeiving of those warres now in Ireland, which seemes to aske no long time, nor great charge, so as the effecting thereof bee committed to men of sure trust, and sound experience, as well in that Country, as in the manner of those services, for is it bee left in the hands of such rawe Captaines, as are usually sent out of England, being thereunto onely preferred by friendship, and nor chosen by sufficiency, it will soone fall to the ground.

Iren. Therefore it were meete (me thinkes) that such Captaines onely were thereunto employed, as have formerly served in that Country, and been at least Leivtenants unto other Captaines there. For otherwise being brought and transferred from other services abroad, as in France, in Spaine, and in the Low-Countryes, though they be of good experience in those, and have never so well deserved, yet in these they will be new to seeke, and before they have gathered experience, they shall buy it with great losse to her Majesty, either by hazarding of their companies, through ignorance of the places, and manner of the Irish services, or by loosing a great part of the time which is required hereunto, being but short, in which it might be similarly almost before they have taken out a new lesson, or can tell what is to be done.

Eudox. You are no good friend to new Captaines, It seemes Iren. that you barre them from the credit of this fervice: but (to fay truth) me thinkes it were meete, that any one before he came to bee a Capcaine, should have beene a Souldiour, for parere qui nescit, nescit imperare. And besides there is great wrong done to the old Souldiour, from whom all meanes of advancement which is due unto him, is cut off by shuffling in these new cutting Captaines, into the place for which he hath long served, and perhaps better deserved. But now that you have thus (as I suppose) finished all the warre, and brought all things to that lowe cbbe which you speake of, what course will you take for the bringing in of that reformation which you intend. and recovering all things from this desolate estate a in which (mee thinkes) I behold them now left, unto that perfect establishment and new common-wealth which you have conceived of, by which fo great good may redound unto her Majesty, and an assured peace bee confirmed, for that is it whereunto wee are now to looke, and doe greatly long for, being long fithence made weary with the huge charge which you have laide upon us, and with the strong indurance of so many complaints, so many delayes, so many doubts and dangers, as will hereof(I know well) arise, unto the which before wee come, it were meete (me thinkes) that you should take some order for the Souldiour, which is now first to bee discharged and disposed of fome way: the which if you doe not well fore-fee, may growe to as great inconvenience as all this that I suppose you have quit us from, by the loofe leaving of so many thousand Souldiours, which from thence forth will be unfit for any labour or other trade, but must either feeke fervice and imployment abroad, which may be dangerous,

or else perhaps imploy themselves heere at home, as may bee

Iren. You say very true, and it is a thing much mislyked in this our Common-wealth, that no better course is taken for such as have beene imployed in service, but that returning whether mayined and so unable to labour, or otherwise whole and sound; yet afterwards unwilling to worke, or rather willing to fet the hang-man on worke. But that needeth another consideration; but to this which wee have now in hand; it is farre from my meaning to leave the Souldier so at randome, or to leave that waste Realme so weake and destitute of strength, which may both defend it against others that might feeke then to set upon it, and also to keepe it from that relapse which I before did fore-cast. For it is one speciall good of this plot, which I would devise, that 6000. Souldiers of these whom I have now imployed in this service, and made thoroughly acquainted both with the state of the Countrey, and manners of the people, should henceforth beestill continued, and for ever maintayned of the Countrey, without any charge to her Majestie, and the rest that cither are olde, and unable to ferve any longer, or willing to fall to thrift; as I have seene many Souldiers after the service, to prove very good husbands, should bee placed in part of the landes by them wonne, at such rate, or rather better then others, to whom the same

Endow. Islit possible Ireneus e can there be any such meanes devised; that so many men should be kept still in her. Majesties service, without any charge to her at all. Surely this were an exceeding great good both to her Highnes to have so many olde Souldiers alwayes ready at call, to what purpose soever she list to imploy them, and also to have that land thereby so strengthened; that it shall neither seare any forraine Invasion, nor practise, which the Irish shall ever extrempts, but shall keepe them under in continual lawe and firme obedience;

Iren. It is so indeed. And yet this truely I doe not take to be any matter of great difficultie, as I thinke it will also soone appeare unto you. And first we will speake of the North part; for that the same abatthe Enemy is brought downe, and the stout Rebell either out off, or driven to that wretchednesse, that hee is no longer able to holde up his head; but will come in to any conditions, which I affure my selfe will bee before the end of the second Winter. I wish that there bee a general Proclamation made, that whatsoever that grace they desire, or have leave to return againe in safety, upon which it is likely that so many as survive, will come in to and fir to be brought to good, may be received, or else all of them;

.

for

quicke

(for I thinke that all wilbe but a very few) upon condition and affurance that they will submit themselves absolutely to her Maiesties ordinance for them, by which they shall be assured of life and libertie, and be onely tyed to such conditions as shall bee thought by her meet for containing them ever after in due obedience. To the which conditions I nothing doubt, but that they will all most readily, and upon their knees submit themselves, by the proofe of that which I have seene in Mounster. For upon the like Proclamation there, they all came in both tagg and ragg, and when as afterwardes many of them were denyed to be received, they bade them doe with them what they would, for they would not by any meanes returne againe, nor goe forth. For in that case who will not accept almost of any conditions, rather then dye of hunger and miserie.

Eudox. It is very likely fo. But what then is the Ordinance. and what bee the conditions which you will propose unto them, which shall reserve unto them an assurance of life and li-

berty.

86

So soone then as they have given the best assurance of themselves which may be required, which must be (I suppose) some of their principall men to remaine in hostage one for another, and some other for the rest, for other surety I reckon of none that may binde them, neither of wife, nor of children, fince then perhappes they would gladly be ridde of both from the famine, I would have them first unarmed utterly, and stripped quite of all their warrelike weapons, & then these conditions set downe, & made knowne unto them, that they shall bee placed in Leinster, and have land given them to occupy and to live upon, in such fort as shall become good subjects, to labour thenceforth for their living, and to apply themselves to honest trades of civility as they shall every one be found meete and able for.

Eudox. Where then a gods name will you place them in Leinster? or will you finde out any new land there for them that is yet un-

knownes

Iren. No, I will place them all in the Countrey of the Birnes and Tooles, which Pheagh man Hugh hath, and in all the lands of the Cavanaghes, which are now in rebellion, and all the lands which will fall to her Maiestie there-abouts, which I know to be very spacious * This carrieth and large enough to containe them, being very *neere twenty or thirty miles wyde. no fit proporti-

Eudox. But then what will you doe with all the Birnes, the Tooles, on intended by and the Cavanaghes, and all those that now are joyned with

them.

on for the

the Author,

confidering

thelargeextent

of Visier, and

bounds heere

the narrow

Limited.

Iren. At the same very time, and in the same very manner that I make that Proclamation to them of Vifter, will I have it also made to these and upon their submission thereunto, I will take like assurance of them as of the other. After which I will translate all that remaine of them, unto the places of the other in Vifter, with all their Creete,

& what elsethey have left them, the which I will cause to be divided amongst them in some meete fort, as each may thereby have somewhat to sustaine himselfea while withall, untill by his further travaile and labour of the Earth, hee shalbe able to provide himselfe

of trestate of IRELAND.

. Budox. But will you give the land then freely unto them, and make them heires of the former Rebells? so may you perhaps make them also heires of all their former villainies and disorders, or how

else will you dispose of them?

Iren. Not so: But all the lands will I give unto Englishmen, whom I will have drawne thither, who shall have the same with such estates as shall bee thought meete, and for such Rent, as shall estsoones bee rated; under every of those Englishmen will I place some of those trish to bee Tennants, for a certaine Rent according to the quantity of such Land, as every man shall have allotted unto him, and shalbe found able to wield, wherein this speciall regard shall be had, that in no place under any Land-lord, there shall bee many of them placed together, but dispersed wide from their acquaintance, and scattered farreabroad thorough all the Country. For that is the evill which now I finde in all Ireland, that the Irish dwell altogether by their septs, and severall nations, so as they may practife or conspire what they will, whereas if there were English well placed among them, they should not bee able once to stirre or to murmure, but that it should be knowne, and they shortened according to their

Eudox. You have good reason, but what rating of rents meane you, to what end doe you purpose the same? violren: My purpose is to rate the rent of all those lands of her Maie-Ries, in such fort unto those Englishmen which shall take them, as they shall be well able to live thereupon, to yeeld her Maiesty reasonable Chiefrie, and also give a competent maintenance unto the garrisons, which shall be there left amongst them; for those Souldiiours (as I tolde you) remaining of the former garrifons at L cast to maintaine upon the rent of those landes, which shall bee escheated, andro have them divided thorough all Ireland, in such places, as shalbe thought most convenient, and occasion may require. And this was the course which the Romanes observed in the Conquest of England for they planted some of their Legions in all places convenient, the which they caused the Countrey to maintaine, cutting upon every portion of land a reasonable rent, which they realled Romescot; the which might not surcharge the Tennant or Free holders and might defray the pay of the Garrison and this hath beene alwayes observed by all Princes in all Countries to them newly subdued to set Garrisons amongst them, to containe them in dutie, whose burthen they made them to beare, and the want of this ordinance in the first conquest of Ireland by Henry the Second, was the cause of the so short decay of that government, and the

quicke recovery againe of the Irish. Therefore by all meanes it is to bee provided for. And this is that I would blame, if it should not misbecome mee, in the late planting of Mounster, that no care was had of this Ordinance, nor any strength of garrison provided for, by a certaine allowance out of all the saide Landes, but onely the present profite looked into, and the safe continuance thereof for ever heereafter neglected.

Endox. But there is a Band of Souldiours layde in Mounster, to the maintenance of which, what oddes is there whether the Queene receiving the rent of the Country, doe give pay at her pleasure, or that there be a settled allowance appointed unto them out of her lands there.

tren. There is great oddes: For now that faid rent of the Countrey is not appointed to the pay of the Souldiers, but it is by every other occasion comming betweene, converted to other uses, and the Souldiours in time of peace discharged and neglected as unnecessary, whereas if the said rent were appointed and ordained by an establishment to this end only, it should not be turned to any other, nor in troublous times upon every occasion, her Majestie, bee so troubled with sending over new Souldiours as shee is now, nor the Countrie ever should dare to mutinie, having still the Souldiour in their necke, nor any forraine enemic dare to invade knowing there so strong and great a Garrison, allwayes ready to receive them.

Euden: Sith then you thinke that this Romefcot of the pay of the Souldiours upon the land, to be both the readiest way to the Souldiers, and least trouble some to hor Majestie; tell us (I pray you) how would you have the said lands rated, that both a rent may rise thereout unto the Quebhe; and also the Souldiers receive pay, which (mee thinkes) wilbe hard.

Iren. First we are to consider, how much land there is in all Fifter. that according to the quantity thereof we may ceffethe faid rent and allowace issuing therout. Vister (as the ancient records of that Realme doe testifie) doth containe 9000 Plow-lands, every of which Plowlands containerh 120. Acres, after the rate of 21. footeto every perch of the Acre every of which Plow-lands I will rate at 20f by the yeare, the which yearely rent amounteth in the whole to 18000! besides 6.84. chiefrie our of every Plow-land. But because the countie of Louth, being a part of Vifter, & containing init 712. Plow-lands is not wholly to escheate to her Majestie, as the rest, they having in all their warres continued for the most part dutifull, though otherwife a great part thereof is now under the Rebells, there is an abarement to be made thereout of 400 or 500. Plow-lands as I estimarthe same, the which are not to pay the whole yearly rent of 40s, our ofevery Plow-land, like as the eleheated lands doe but yet shall pay for their composition of celle towards the keeping of Soldiers, 20 Sour of every Plow-land; so as there is to bee deducted out of the former fumme 200.07300 yearely, the which may neverthelesse be supplibly the rent of the Fishings, which are exceeding great in vister, and also by an increase of rent in the best lands, and those that lye in the best places neere the Searcoast. The which eighteene thousand pounds will defray the entertainment of 1500. Souldiers, with some over-plus towardes the pay of the victuallers, which are to bee imployed in the victualling of these garrisons:

garrifon for vifter; to bee payde principally out of the rent of those lands, which shall be there escheared unto her Majestie. The which, where (I pray you) will you have them earrisoned?

- Iren. I I will have them divided into three parts, that is, 500 in every garrison, the which I will have to remaine in three of the same places, where they were before appointed, to wit, 500, at Strabane, and about Longhfoile; fo as they may holde all the passages of that part of the Countrey, and some of them bee put in wardes, upon all the firaights thereabouts, which I know to be fuch, as may stoppe all passages into the Countrey on that side, and some of them also upon the Ban, up towardes Lough Sidney, as I formerly directed. Also other 500; at the Fort upon Lough-Earne, and wardes taken out of them, which shall bee layde at Fermannagh, at Bealick, at Ballyshannon, and all the streightes towardes Connaght, the which I know doe fo strongly command all the passages that way as that none can passe from vister into Counaght, without their leaves. The last 5001 shall also remaine in their Fort at Monoghan, and fome of them bee drawne into wardes , to keepe the Kaies of all that Countrey, both downwards, and also rowardes @ Relies Countrey, and the Pale, and fome at Eniskillin, fome at Belturbut, fome at the blacke Fort, and so along that River; as I formerly shewed in the first planting of them And moreover at every of these Forts, I would have the feate of a Towne layde forth and incompassed, in the which I would wish that there should inhabitants of all fortes, as Merchants Artificers ; and Husbandmen ; bee placed ; to whom there should Charters, and Fraunchises bee graunted to imcorporate them. The which as it wilbe no matter of difficultie to draw out of England, persons which would very gladly be so placed, lo would it in thost space turne those parts to great commodity, and bring eredong to her Majestie much profit, for those places are so fit for trade and trafficke, having most convenient out-gates by divers rivers to the Sea, and In-gates to the richest parts of the land, that they would some be enriched, and mightily enlarged, for the very feating of the garrifons by them, besides the safetie and assurance which they shall worke unto them, will also draw thither store of people and trade, as I have feene ensample at Mariborogh and Philipstowne in Leinster, where by reason of those two Fortes;

though there were but small wardes left in them, there are two good Townes now growne, which are the greatest stay of both those two Countries.

Endox. Indeed (me thinkes) three such Townes as you say would doe very well in those places with the Garrisons, and in short space would be so augmented as they would be able with little to in-wall themselves strongly, but for the planting of all the rest of the

Countrey, what order would you take?

What other then (as I faid) to bring people out of England, which should inhabite the same, whereunto though I doubt not but great troopes would be readic to runne, yet for that in fuch cases, the worst and most decayed men are most ready roremove. I would wish them rather to bee chosen out of all partes of this Realme, either by discretion of wise men thereunto appointed, or by lot, or by the drumme as was the olde use in sending forth of Colonies, or such other good meanes as shall in their wisedome bee thought meetest. Amongst the chiefe of which, I would have the land fert into Seigniories, in such fort as it is now in Mounster, and divided into Hundreds and Parishes, or Wardes, as it is in England, and lavde out into Shires, as it was aunciently, viz. The Counties of Downe, the Countie of Antrim, the Countie of Louth, the Countie of Armaghe the Countie of Cavan the Countie of * Colerane the Countie of Monoghan, the Countie of Tirone, the Countie of Permannagh, the Countie of Donnegall ; being in all tennes. Over all which I wish a Lord President and a Councell to bee placed which may keepe them afterwards in awe and obedience, and minifter unto them Inflice and equity bein , and panetre, on the regreta of

Eudox. Thus I feethe whole purpose of your plot for Vilter, and

now I defire to heare your like opinion for Connaght.

Iren. By that which I have already faid of vifter, you may gather my opinion for Connaght, being very answereable to the former. But for that the lands which shal therein escheat unto her Maiesty are not fo intirely together, as that they can be accopted in one summe, it need deth that they be condered severally. The Province of Connaght in the whole containerh (as appeareth by the records of Dublin) 7200 plow lands of the former measure, and is of late divided into fixe Shires or Counties. The Countie of * Chare the Countie of Levening the Countie of whence it hath Roscoman, the countie of Galway, the countie of Maio or the Countie of Shao. Of the which all the Countre of slice, all the Countie of Maio the most part of the Countie of Roscoman, the most part of the Countie of fignificth north Letrima great part of the county of Galway & fome of the county of Clare, is like to escheat to her Maiesty for the rebellio of their present day its peculiar possessors. The which two counties of sligo & Mairare supposed to containe almost 3000 plow-lands, the rent whereof rateably to the former. I valew almost at 6000 per annum: The countie of Rolcoman, Presidencies of saving that which pertainer to the house of Roscoman, & some few of ther English there lately seated is all one, and therefore it is Wholly

* The County of Clare Was anciently accounted part of the Province of Mounfter, the name of Tuabmuan or Thomond, which Mountter, and hath at this Governour, as being exempted from the Mounster and Connaghes

* This is now

part of the

London-derry.

likewise to escheare to her Majesty, saving those portions of English inhabitants, and even those English doe (as I understand by them) pay as much rent to her Majetty, as is fet upon those in Vister, counting their composition money therewithall, so as it may all run into one reckoning with the former two counties: So that this county of Rofcoman containing 1200. Plow-lands, as it is accompted, amounteth to 2400 ii. by the yeare, which with the former two counties rent, -makethrabout 8300, for the former wanted somewhat. But what the escheated lands of the county of Gallway and Letrim will riseunto, is yet uncertaine to define, till survey thereof be made, for that those lands are intermingled with the Earle of Clarricardes, and others lands, but it is thought they be the one halfe of both those counties, fo as they may be counted to the value of one whole county, which containeth above 1000 plough-lands, for so many the least county of them all comprehenderh, which maketh 2000 is more, that is in all ten or eleven thousand pounds. The other 2. counties must remaine, till their Escheates appeare, the which letting passe yet, as unknowne, yet this much is knowne to be accompted for certaine, that the composition of these two counties, being rared at 20 shikevery plowland, will amount to above 2000 pounds more, all which being laide together to the former, may be reasonably estimated to rise unto 13000 pounds, the which summe, together with the rent of the escheated lands in the two last countyes, which cannot yet be valued (being as I doubt not) no lesse then a thousand pounds more, will yeeld pay largely unto 1000 men and their victuallers, and 1000, pounds over

Endow. You have (methinkes) made but an estimate of those lands of commachinevenara very vehicure, fo as it should be hard to build any certainty of charge, to be raifed upon the fame.

Towards the Governour and and

iven. Novalrogether yet upon uncertainties, for this much may easily appeared no you to be certaine, as the composition money of every plowland amountethunto, for this I would have you principally to understand, that my purpose is to rate all the lands in in trefundat 200shill every plowland, for their composition towards the Garrifon. The which I know in regard of being freed from all other. charges whatfoever, will be readily and most gladly yeelded unto. So that there being in all Ireland (as appeareth by their old records) 43926 plowlands, the fame shall amount to the summe likewise of 43520 pounds, and the referobe reared of the escheated lands which fall to het Majesty in the faid Provinces of Vister, Connaght, and that part of Leinster under the Rebells, for Mounfler wee deale not yet

Endox. Buttell me this by the way, doe you then lay compositiconupon the escheated lands as you doe upon the rest . for so mee thinkes) you reckon all together. And that fure were too much to pay 7. Nobles out of every plowland, and composition money befides, that is 20 fill:out of every plowland!

Iren. No, you mistakeme, I doe put onely 7. Nobles rent and composition both upon every plowlandescheated, that is 40 shil: for composition, and 6. shil: 8. pence for Cheiferie to her Maje-

Eudox. I doe now conceive you, proceede then (I pray you) to the appointing of your Garrisons in Connaght, and shew us both

how many and where you would have them placed?

Iren. I would have 1000 laide in Connaght, in 2. Garrisons, namely 500 in the county of Mayo, about Clan Mac Costilagh, which shall keepe all Mayo and the Bourkes of Mac William Eighter: The other 500 in the county of Galway, about Garrandough, that they may containe the Conhors and the Bourkes there the Kellies and Murries, with all them there-abouts, for that Garrison which I formerly placed at Loughearne will serve for all occasions in the County of Sligo, being neere adjoyning thereunto, fo as in one nights march, they may bee almost in any place thereof, when neede shall require them. And like as in the former places of Garrisons in Vister. I wished three corporate townes to be planted, which under the safeguard of that strength should dwell and trade safely with all the Countrey about them; so would I also wish to be in this of Connaght: and that besides, there were another established at Athlone, with a convenient ward in the Castle there for their defence. man all marketing in

Iren. What should that neede, seeingthe Governour of Connaght useth to lyethere alwayes, whose presence will been defence to all

that Towneship?

Iren. I know he doth so, but that is much to be disliked that the Governour should lye so farre of in the remotest place of all the province whereas it were meeter that he should be continually abiding in the middest of the charge, that he might both looke out alike, unto all places of his government, and also be soone at hand in any place, where occasion shall demand him, for the presence of the Governour is (as you faid) a great stay and bridle unto those that are ill disposed: like as I fee it is well observed in Mounster, where the dayly good thereof is continually apparant: and for this cause also, doe I greatly mislike the Lord Deputies seating at Dublin, being the outest corner of the Realme, and least needing the awe of his presence, whereas (me thinkes) it were fitter, fince his proper care is of Leinster, though he have care of all besides generally, that he should seate himselfe at Ashie, or there-abouts, upon the skirt of that unquiet countrey, so that he might fit as it were at the very maine mafte of his Ship, whence he might eafily overlooke and sometimes over-reach the Moores, the Demplies, the Connors, O-Carroll, O-Molloy, and all that heape of Iriffinations which there lye hudled together, without any to over-awe them, or containe them in dutie. For the Irishman (Lassure you) feares the governement no longer, then he is within fight or reach.

Eudox. Surely (methinkes) herein you observe a matter of much importance more then I have heard ever noted, but fure that feemes

To expedient, as that I wonder that heretofore it hath beene overseene or omitted, but I suppose the instance of the Citizens of Dublin is the greatest lett thereof.

Iren. Truely then it ought not so to be, for no cause have they to feare that it will be any hinderance to them, for Dublin will bee still as it is the key of all passages and transportations out of England thitherto, no lesse profit of those Cittizens, then it now is, and besides other places will hereby receive some benefit: But let us now (I pray vou)come to Leinster, in the which I would wish the same course to be observed that was in Vister.

Endex. You meane for the leaving of the Garrisons in their forts, and for planting of English in all those Countryes, betweene the county of Dublin and the county of Wexford, but those waste wilde places I thinke when they are won unto her Majesty a that there is

none which will be hafty to feeke to inhabite.

Iren: Yes enough, (I warrant you) for though the whole tracke of the Countrey be mountainous and woody, yet there are many good-Iv valleyes amongst them, fit for faire habitations, to which those mountaines adjoyned will be a great increase of pasturage, for that Countrey is a great soyle of cattle, and very fit for breed: as for come it is nothing naturall, fave onely for Barly and Oares, and some places for Rye, and therefore the larger penny-worthes may be allowed to them though otherwise the widenes of the mountaine pasturage doe recompence the badnes of the foyle, fo as I doubt not, but it will find inhabitants and undertakers enough.

Eudox. How much doe you thinke that all those lands which Feach Mar Hugh houldeth under him, may amount unto, and what rent may be realed thereout, to the maintenance of the Garrisons.

that shall be laide there?

Frence Truely it is impossible by ayme to tell it, and for experience and knowledge thereof, I doe not thinke that there was every any of the particulars thereof, but yet I will (if it please you) guesse thereat, upon ground onely of their judgement which have formerly devided all that country into 2 theires or countryes. Namely the country of Wieklow, and the country of Fernes, the which 2. I fee no caufe but * This is part that they should wholly escheate to her Majesty, all fave the Barony of the county of Which is the Earle of ormand's auncient inheritance; and of Wexford. hatheverbeen in his possession, for all the whole land is the Queenes, unlessethere be some grant of any part thereof, to bee shewed from her Majeffy: As I thinke there is onely of New Caftle to Sir Henry Harringion, and of the Cafile of Fernes to Sir Thomas Master fon, the rolf being almost 30 miles over, I doe suppose, can containe no lesse then 2000 plowlands, which I will estimate at 4000 pounds rent, by the veare. The rest of Leinster being 7. Counties, to with the County of Dublin, Kildare, Catherlagh, Wexford, Kilkonny, the Kings & the Queenes county, doe containe in them 7400. plowlands, which amounteth to fo many pounds for composition to the Garrison, that makes in the

whole 11400 pounds, which summe will yeeld pay unto 1000. Souldiours, little wanting, which may be supplied out of other lands of the Cavenaghes, which are to be escheated to her Majesty, for the Rebellion of their possessions, though otherwise indeede they bee of her owne ancient demeasne.

Eudox. It is great reason. But tell us now where you will wish those Garrisons to be laide, whether altogether, or to bee dispersed

in fundry places of the country?

Iren. Marry in fundry places, viz in this fort, or much the like as may be better advised, for 200. in a place, I doe thinke to bee enough, for the safeguard of that country, and keeping under all suddaine upstarts, that shall seeke to trouble the peace thereof, therefore I wish 200. to be laide at Ballinecor, for the keeping of all bad persons from Glan-malo, and all the fastnes there-abouts, and also to containe all that shall be planted in those lands thenceforth. Another 200.at Knockelough in their former place of Garrison, to keepe the Bracknagh and all those mountaines of the Cavenaghes, 200 more to lie at Fernes and upwards, inward upon the Siane, 200 to be placed at the fort of Leix, to restraine the Moores, upper-Osory, and O-Carrol, other 200. at the fort of of aly, to curbe the O-Connors, O-Molloyes, Mac Coghlan, Mageoghegan, and all those Irish Nations bordering there-abouts.

Endox. Thus I see all your men bestowed in Leinster, what say

you then of Meath?

Iren. Meath which containeth both East Meath, and West Meath, and of late the Annaly, now called the country of Longford, is counted therunto: But Meath it selfe according to the old records, containeth 4320. plowlands, & the county of Longford 947. which in the whole makes 5267 plowlands, of which the composition money will amount likewise to 5267. pounds, to the maintenance of the Garrison: But because all Meath lying in the bosome of that kingdome is allwayes quiet enough, it is needeleffe to put any Garrison there, so as all that charge may be spared. But in the county of Long ford I wish 200. footemen and 50. horsemen to bee placed in some convenient feate betweene the *Annaly* and the *Breny*, as about *Lough Sillon*, or fome like place of that River, fo as they might keepe both the O-Relies, and also the O-Ferrals, and all that out-skirt of Meath in awe, the which use upon every light occasion to be stirring, and having continuall enmity amongst themselves I doe thereby oftentimes trouble all those parts, the charge whereof being 3400, and odde pounds is to be cut out of that composition money for Meath and Longford, the over-plus being almost 2000 pounds by the yeare, will come in clearly to he Majesty with and along and and I ravo willim of themis parties

Endox. It is worth the hearkening unto: Bue now that you have done with Meath, proceede (I pray you) to Mounfter, that wee may fee how it will rife there for the maintenance of the Garrison.

Iren. Mounster containeth by record at Dublin 16000 plowlands the composition whereof as the rest will make 16000, pounds by the yeare, out of the which I would have 1000. Souldiours to be maintained for the defence of that Province, the charge whereof with the victuallers wages, will amount to 12000. pounds by the yeare, the other 4000 pounds will defray the charge of the Presidency and the Councell of that Province.

Hudox. The reckoning is easie, but in this accompt, by your leave, (me thinkes) you are deceived, for in this summe of the composition money, you accompt the lands of the undertakers of that Province, who are by their graunt from the Queene, to bee free from all such impositions whatsoever, excepting their onelie Rent, which is surely

enough.

Iren. You say true, did so, but the same 20. shil: for every plowland, I meant to have deducted out of that rent due upon them to her Majesty, which is no hinderance, nor charge at all more to her Maje-By then it now is, for all that rent which thee receives of them, thee putteth forth againe to the maintenance of the Presidency there, the charge wherof, it doth scarcely defray, whereas in this accompt both that charge of the Presidency, and also of a thousand Souldiours more, shall be maintained.

Eudox. It should be well if it could be brought to that: But now

where will you have your thousand men garrisond?

Iren. I would have a hundred of them placed at the Bantry where is a most fit place, not onely to defend all that side of the west part from forraine invasion, but also to answere all occasions of troubles, to which that Countrey being fo remote is very subject : And furely there also would be planted a good towne, having both a good haven and a plentifull fifhing, and the land being already escheated to her Majesty, but being forcibly kept from her, by one that proclaimes himselfe the Bastard Son of the Earle of Clantar, being called Donell Mac Carty, whom it is meete to foresee to. For whensoever the Earle shall die, all those lands (after him) are to come unto her Majefly, he is like to make a foule stirre there, though of himselse no. power, yet through supportance of some others who lye in the wind, and looke after the fall of that inheritance. Another hundred I would, have placedar Cafile Mayne, which should keepe all Defmond and Kerry, for it answereth them both most conveniently: Also about Kilmore in the county of corke would I have 2. hundred placed, the which should breake that nest of theires there, and answere equally both to the country of Limericke and also the country of Corke . Another hundred would I have lyear Corke, as well to command the rowne, as alto to be ready for any forraine occasion: Likewise at waterford, would I place 2 hundred, for the fame reasons, and also for other privy causes, that are no lesse important: Moreover on this side of carlo, neere to Muskery quirke, which is the Countrey of the Burkes, about Kill-Patricke, I would have two hundred more to be garrifond, which . should skoure both the white Knights country and Arlo, and Muskery quirk, by which places all the passages of Theires doe lye, which

convey their stealth from all Mounster downewards towards Tipperary, and the English pale, and from the English pale also up unto Mounster, whereof they use to make a common trade : Besides that, ere long I doubt that the county of Tipperary it selfe, will neede such a strengthinit, which were good to be there ready before the evill fall, that is dayly of some expected: And thus you fee all your Garrifons placed.

Eudox. I fee it right well, but let me (I pray you) by the way aske you the reason, why in those Citties of Mounster, namely Waserford and Corke, you rather placed Garrisons, then in all others in Ireland. For they may thinke themselves to have great wrong to bee so char-

ged above all the reft.

Iren. I will tell you, those two Citties, above all the rest, doe offer an in-gate to the Spaniard most fitly: But yet because they shall not take exceptions to this, that they are charged above all the rest, I will also lay a charge upon the others likewise, for indeed it is no reason that the corporate townes enjoying great tranchizes and priviledges from her Majesty, and living thereby not onely safe, but drawing to them the wealth of all the land, should live so free, as not to be partakers of the burthen of this Garrison, for their owne safety, specially in this time of trouble, and seeing all the rest burthened (and therefore) I will thus charge them all ratably, according to their abilities towards their maintenance, the which her Majesty may (if she please) spare out of the charge of the rest, and reserve towards her other costes, or elseadde to the charge of the presidency in the North.

Waterford C.	Clonmell X.	Dundalke X.
Corke L.	Cashell X.	Mollingare X.
Limericke L.	Fedard X:	Newrie X.
Galway L. Dinglecush X.	Kilkenny XXV.	Trim X.
Dinglecush X. Kinsale X.	Wexford XXV.	Ardee, X.
Yoghall X.	Tredagh XXV.	Kells X.
Kilmallock X.	1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	Dwolin C.

In all 580.

Eudex. It is casie Ireneus to lay a charge upon any towne, but to foresee how the same may be answered and defrayed, is the cheife

part of good advisement.

Surely this charge which I put upon them, I know to bee so reasonable, is that it will not much be felt, for the port Townes that have benefit of shipping, may cut it easily offtheir trading; and in land townes of their corne and cattle, neither doe I fee, but fince to them especially the benefit of peace doth redound, that they especially should beare the burthen of their safeguard and defence, as wee lee all the townes of the Low-Countryes, doc cut upon themfelyes an excise of all things towards the maintenance of the warre that is made in their behalfe, to which though these are not to be compared

in richesse, yet are they to bee charged according to their povertie.

Eudox. But now that you have thus fet up these forces of Soldiers, and provided well (as you suppose) for their pay, yet there remaineth to fore-cast how they may bee victualled, and where purveyance thereof may bee made, for in Ireland it selfe, I cannot see almost how any thing is to bee had for them, being already so

pittifully wasted, as it is with this short time of warre.

wen. For the first two yeares, it is needefull indeede that they bee victualled out of England thoroughly, from halfe yeare to halfe yeare, afore hand. All which time the English Pale shall not bee burdened at all, but shall have time to recover themselves, and Mounster also being reasonably well stored, will by that time, (if God fend feafonable weather) bee thoroughly well furnished to supply a great part of that charge, for I knowe there is great plenty of Corne, sent over Sea from thence, the which, if they might have fale for at home, they would bee glad to have money so neere hand, specially if they were streightly restrayned from transporting of it. Thereunto also there will bee a great helpe and furtherance given, in the putting forward of husbandrie, in all meete places, as heereafter shall in due place appeare. But heereafter when things shall growe unto a better strength, and the Countrey bee replenished with Corne, as in short space it will, if it bee well followed, for the Countrey people themselves are great plowers, and small spenders of Corne, then would I wish that there should bee good store of Houses and Magazins erected in all those great places of garrison, and in all great townes, as well for the victualling of Souldiers, and Shippes, as for all Occasions of suddaine services, as also for preventing of all times of dearth and scarcitie; and this want is much to bee complayned of in England, above all-other Countreyes, who trufting too much to the usuall bleffing of the Earth, doe never fore-cast any fuch hard feafons, nor any fuch fuddaine occasions as these troublous times may every day bring foorth, when it will bee 200 late to gather provision from abroad, and to bring it perhappes from farre, for the furnishing of Shippes or Souldiers, which peradventure may neede to bee presently imployed, and whose want may (which GOD forbid) hap to hazard a Kingdome.

Eudox. Indeede the want of those Magazins of victualis, I have oftentimes complayned of in England, and wondered at in other Countreyes, but that is nothing now to our purpole; but as for these garrisons which you have now so strongly planted throghout all Ireland, and every place swarming with Souldiers, shall there bee no end of them? For now thus being (me thinkes) I doe see rather a Countrey of warre, then of peace & quiet, which you

earst pretended to worke in Ireland, for if you bring all things to that quietnesse that you faid, what then needeth to maintaine so great for-

ces, as you have charged upon it.

98

Iren. I will unto you Eudox, in privitie discover the drift of my purpose, I meane (as I tolde you) and doe well hope thereby both ro settle an eternall peace in that Countrey, and also to make it very profitable to her Majestie, the which I see must bee brought in with a strong hand, and so continued, till it runne in a steadfast course of governement, which in this fort will neither bee difficult nor dangerous, for the Souldier being once brought in for the service into Vister, and having subdued it and Connaght. I will not have him to lay downe his Armes any more, till hee have effected that which I purpose, that is, first to have this generall compofition for maintenance of these thoroughout all the Realme, in regard of the troublous times, and daylie danger which is threatned to this Realme by the King of Spaine. And thereupon to bestow all my Souldiers in fuch fort as I have done, that no part of all that Realme shall be able to dare to quinch: Then will I eftsoones bring in my reformation, and thereupon establish such a forme of government, as I may thinke meetest for the good of that Realme, which being once settled, and all things put into a right way, I doubt not but they will runne on fairely. And though they would ever feeke to swerve aside, yet shall they not bee able without forreine violence, once to remoove, as you your felfe shall soone (I hope) in your own reason readily conceive, which if it shall ever appeare, then may her Majestie at pleasure with-draw some of the garrisons. and turne their pay into her Purse, or if shee will never please so to doe (which I would rather wish) then shall shee have a number of brave olde Souldiers alwayes ready for any occasion that shee shee will imploy them unto, supplying their garrisons with fresh ones in their steed. The maintenance of whome, shall bee no more charge to her Majestie, then now that Realme is, for all the revenue thereof, and much more shee spendeth, even in the most peaceable times, that are there; as things now stand. And in time of warre, which is now surely every seventh yeare, shee spendeth infinite treasure besides, to small purpose.

Eudox. I perceive your purpose, but now that you have thus strongly made way unto your reformation, and that I see the people so humbled and prepared, that they will and must veeld to any Ordinance that shall bee given them. I doe much defire to understand the same; for in the beginning you promifed to shewe a meanes how to redresse all those inconveniences and abuses, which you shewed to bee in that stare of Government, which now stands there, as in the Lawes, Customes, and Religion, wherein I would gladly know first, whether in steed of those Lawes, you would have new lawes made, for now for ought that I see, you may doe what you please? . Homa late

Iren. I fee Eudox. That you well remember our first purpose, and doe rightly continue the course thereof. First therefore to speake of lawes, fince wee first beganne with them, I doe not thinke it now convenient, though it bee in the power of the Prince to change all the lawes, and make new; for that should breede a great trouble and confusion, as well in the English there dwelling, and to be planted, as also in the Irish. For the English having beene alwayes trayned up in the English government, will haidly bee inured to any other, and the Irish will better be drawne to the English, then the English to the Irish government. Therefore sithence wee cannot now apply lawes fit to the people, as in the first institutions of common-wealths it ought to bee ; wee will apply the people, and fit them unto the Lawes, as it most conveniently may bee. The Lawes therefore wee resolve shall abide in the same sort that they doe, both Common law and Statutes, onely such defects in the common-law, and inconveniences in the Statutes; as in the beginning wee noted, and as men of deeper infight shall advise, may be changed by some other new acts and ordinances to bee by a Parlament there confirmed. As those for tryalls of pleas of the Crowne, and private rights betweene parties, colourable conveyances and accessaries was and to with the war at 177

of the state of IRELAND.

Endox. But how will those be redressed by Parlament, when as the Irish which sway most in Parlament (as you said) shall oppose themselves against them would be hear falle.

Iren. . That may well now bee avoyded : For now that fo many Free-holders of English shall bee established, they together with Burgesses of Townes, and such other loyall triff men, as may bee preferred to bee Knights of the Shire, and such like, will bee able to beard, and to counter-poise the rest, who also being now more brought in awe, will the more easily submit to any such ordinances as shall bee for the good of themselves, and that Realme ge-.**nerally.**combaghale, stable of the body

Endox, Youlay well, for by the increase of Free-holders, for their numbers hereby will be greatly augmented, but how shall it passe thorough the higher house, which still must consiste all of

Iren. Marry that also may bee redressed by ensample of that which I have heard was done in the like case by King Edward the third (as I remember) who being greatly bearded and croffed by the Lords of the Cleargie, they being there by reason of the Lords Abbots, and others, roo many and roo ftrong for him, to as hee could not for their frowardnesse, order and reformethings as hee desired, was advised to direct out his Writts to certaine Gentle-men of the best ability and trust, entituling them therein Barons to ferve, and fitt as Barons in the next Parlament. By which meanes hee had fo many

I 2

Barons

Barons in his Parlament, as were able to weigh downe the Cleargy and their friends: The which Barons they fay, were not afterwardes Lords, but onely Baroners, as fundry of them doe yet retayne the name. And by the like device her Maiestie may now likewise curbe and cut short those Irish and unruly Lords, that hinder all good pro-

ceedings.

Eudox. It seemes no lesse then for reforming of all those inconvenient Statutes that you noted in the beginning, and redressing of all those evill customes: and lastly, for settling of sound Religion amongst them, me thinkes you shall not neede any more to over-goe those particulars againe, which you mentioned, nor any other which might besides be remembred, but to leave all to the reformation of fuch a Parlament, in which, by the good care of the Lord Deputie & Councell they may all be amended. Therfore now you may coinc unto that generali reformation which you spake of, and bringing in of that establishment, by which you said all men should be contained in duty ever after without the terror of warlike forces, or violent wre-

sting of things by sharpe punishments.

meanes be better plotted, then by ensample of such other Realmes as have been annoyed with like evills, that Ireland now is, and ufeth still to bee. And first in this our Realme of England, it is manifest by report of the Chronicles, and auncient Writers, that it was greatly infested with Robbers and Our-lawes, which lurking in Woods and fast places, used often to breake foorth into the high-wayes, and sometimes into small villages to robbe and spoyle. For redresse whereof it is written, that King Alured, or Aldred, did divide the Realme into * Shires , and the Shires into Hundreds. plura scire avet, and the Hundreds into Lathes or Wapentackes , and the Wapentackes into Tythings: So that tenne Tythings make an Hundred. and five made a Lathe or Wapentake, of which tenne, each one was bound for another, and the eldest or best of them whom they called ty for all the rest. So that if any one of them did start into any undutifull action, the Borfolder was bound to bring him forth, who joyning eft-soones with all his Tything, would follow that loose perfonthoroughall places, till they brought him in. And if all that Tything fayled, then all that Lathe was charged for that Tvthing, and if that Lathe fayled, then all that Hundred was demaunded for them; and if the Hundred, theh the Shire, who joyning eft-soones together, would not rest till they had found out and delivered in that undutifull tellow, which was not ameliable to Law. And heerein it seemes, that that good Saxon King followed the counsell of lethro to Mayles, who advised him to divide the people into Hundreds, and to set Captaines and wife men of trust over them, who should take the charge of them, and ease of that burthen. And so did Romulus (as you may read) divide the Romanes

Iren. I will so at your pleasure, the which (me thinkes) can by no the Tythingman or Borfolder, that is, the eldest pledge became fure-

into * Tribes, and the Tribes into Centuries or Hundreths. By this ordi- *Livie speaking nance, this King brought this Realme of England, (which before was of Remulus hath most troublesome) unto that quiet State, that no one bad person in curias 30,41could ftirre; but he was straight taken holde of by those of his owne visit, &c. Eddens Tything, and their Borsholder, who being his neighbor or next kinsman were privie to all his wayes, and looked narrowly into his life. sum conscipre The which inflitution (if it were observed in Ireland) would worke have it in Sexthat effect which it did in England, and keep all men within the com-

Eudox. This is contrary to that you faid before; for as I remem- urbis Rome. ber, you said; that there was a great disproportion betweene England Tree equitum and treland, to as the lawes, which were fitting for one, would not fit tue (faith he) the other. How comes it now then, that you would transferre a prin- Plebem in tri.

cipall institution from England to ireland?

Iren. This law was not made by the Norman Conqueror, but by a Saxon King, at what time England was very like to Ireland, as now it stands: for it was (as I tolde you) annoyed greatly with Robbers and Out-lawes, which troubled the whole state of the Realme, every corner having a Robin Hood in it, that kept the woods, and spoyled all passengers and Inhabitants, as Ireland now hath, so as me thinkes, this ordinance would fit very well, and bring them all into

Eudox. Then when you have thus tythed the Communalty, as you fay, and set Borsolders over them all, what would you doe, when you came to the Gentle-men, would you holde the fame

Iren. Yea marry most especially; for this you must know, that all the Irish almost boast themselves to be Gentlemen, no lesse then the Welsh; for if he can derive himselfe from the head of any Sept, (as most of them can, they are so expert by their Bardes) then hee holdeth himselfe a Gentleman, and thereupon scorneth to worke, or use any hard labour, which hee saith, is the life of a Peasant or Churle: But thenceforth becommeth either an horse-boy, or a Stocah to fome Kerne, inuring himselfe to his weapon, and to the gentlemanly trade of stealing (as they count it;) So that if a gentleman or any wealthy man Yeoman of them; have any Children, the eldest of them perhaps shall be kept in some order , but all the rest shall shift for themselves, and fall to this occupation. And moreover it is a common use amongst some of their Gentlemens sonnes, that so soone as they are able to use their Weapons; they fraight gather to themselves three or foure straglers, or Kearne, with whom wandring a while up and downe idlely the Countreys taking onely meate, hee at last falleth unto some bad occasion that shall be offered, which being once made knownes hee is thenceforth counted a man of worth, in whome there is courage, whereupon there draw to him many other like loofe young men, which ftirring him up with incouragement, provoke

for's booke, de viris illustribus ginta curtas di-Bribun,

gumsin Borfhol. der & Hundred.

De bis qui

confulat D. Hen

Spelmanni eq.

aur. Archeolo-

* This service was performed

by Sir Richard Edgecomb, being

appointed thereunto by a speci-

all commission from K. Henry

the feventh. There is yet extant

an exact diary of all his procee-

diags therein, from his firft

landing lat Kinfale the 27th of

Iune 1483, till his departure

from Dublin the 30th of July

nexe,

him shortly to flat Rebellion, and this happens not onely some. times in the formes of their Gentle men bur also of their Noble-men, specially of them who have base Sonnes. For they are not onely not ashamed to acknowledge them, but also boaste of them, and use them to such secret services, as they themselves will not be seene in, as to plague their Enemyes, to spoyle their Neighbours, to oppresse and crush some of their owne too stubburne Free-holders, which are not tractable to their

Eudox. Then it seemeth that this ordinance of tithing them by the pole is not onely fit for the Gentle-men, but also for the Noble. men, whom I would have thought to have beene of to honourable a minde, as that they should not neede such a kinde of being bound to their allegiance, who should rather have held in, and stayde all the other from undutifulnesse, then neede to bee forced thereum chemiclves.

Iren. Yet so it is Endoxus; but because that Noble-men cannor be tythed, there being not many tythings of them, and also because a Borfolder over them, should be not onely a great indignitie, but also a danger to adde more power to them then they have or to make one the commander of tenne . I holde it meeter that there were onely fureties taken of them, and one bound for another, whereby if any shall swerve, his sureries shall for safe-guard of their Bonds, either bring him in, or feeke to ferve upon him; and besides this, I would wish them all to bee sworne to her Majestie, which they never yet were, but at the first creation, and that Oath would fure containe them greatly or the breach of it bring them to shorter vengeance, for God useth to punish perjurie sharpely. So I reade, that there was a Richardshez, corporall Oath taken in the raignes of * Edward the Second, and of

* Henry the Seventh (when the times were very broken) of all the Lords and best Gentle-men, of Feattie to the Kings, which now is no leffe needfull, because many of them are suspected to have taken an other Oath privily to some bad purposes, and thereupon to have received the Sacrament, and beene sworne to a Priest. which they thinke bindeth them more , then their alleagiance to their Prince or love of their Coun-

This tything to the Common people, and taking fureties of Lords and Gentlemen, Llike very well, but that it wilbe very troublesome; should it not be as well forto have them all booked and the Lords & Gentle-men to take all the meaner fort upon themfelves, for they are best able to bring them in, when soever any of them starteth out.

Iren. This indeed (Eudoxus) hath beene hitherto, and yet is a common order amongst them, to have all the people booked by the Lords and Gentlemen: but yet the worst order that ever was devised. for by this booking of men, all the inferiour fort are brought under the command of their Lords, and forced to follow them into any action what loever. Now this you are to understand, that all the Rcbellions which you fee from time to time happen in Ireland, are not begin by the common people, but by the Lords and Captaines of Countries, upon pride or willfull obstinacy against the government, which whenfoever they will enter into, they drawe with them all their people and followers, which thinke themselves bound to goe with them, because they have booked them and undertaken for them. and chis is the reason that in England you have few such bad occasions by reason that the hoble men, however they should happen to be evill disposed, have no command at all over the Communalty, though dwelling under them, because that every man standeth upon himselfe, and buildeth his fortunes upon his owne faith and firme affurance: The which this manner of tithing the poles will worke alfo in Ireland. For by this the people are broken into many finall parts like little freames, what they cannot eafily come together into one head, which is the principall regard that is to be had in Ireland, to keepe them from growing unto fuch a head, and adhering unto great

Ender. But yet I cannot fee, how this can bee well brought withbut doing great wrong unto the noble men there, for at the first conquest of that Realme, those great Seigniories and Lordships were given them by the king, that they should beethe stronger against the triff, by the multitudes of followers and tennants under them: All which hold their tenements of them by fealty, and fuch fervices, whereby they are (by the first graunt of the King) made bounden unto them, and eyed to rife out with them into all occasions of fervice: And this I have often heard, that when the Lord Deputy hath railed any generall hostings of the Noble men have claimed the leading of them, by graunt from the Kings of England, under the great Sealer whibited, fo as the Deputies could not refuse them to have the leading of them, or if they did, they would fo worke, as none of their

followers should vile forth to the hostage.

trehi You fay very true, but will you fee the fruite of the fegrants, I have known when those Lords have had the leading of their owner followers under them to the generall hoftings, that they have for the fame our upon every plowland within their country 45 fail or more. whereby some of them have gathered above seven or eight hundred pounds, and other's much more into their purfe, in lieu whereof they have gathered unto themselves a number of loose Kearne out of all parts, which they have carried forth with them, to whom they never gave any penny of entertainement, allowed by the Countrey or forced by them but let them feede upon the Countryes a and extore upon all men where they come, for that people will never aske better entertainement then to have a colour of fervice or imployment given them, by which they will pole and spoyle so outragiously, as

* What Coigny

and Livery doc

fee pag. 34.

Sorehon was a

the Free-hol.

ders, for cer-

each quarter

finde victualls,

aud fopay cer-

taine flipends,

to the Kerne,

Galloglafles,

and horiemen.

and lodging,

of a yeare, to

taine dayes in

tax laide upon

the very enemy cannot doe much worse: And they also sometimes turne to the enemy.

Eudox. It seemes the first intent of those graunts was against the Irif, which now some of them use against the Queene her selfe: But now what remedy is there for this? or how can those graunts of the Kings be avoyded, without wronging of those Lords, which had

while till the same were settled, by the verdict of a sound and substantiall Iury, how every man houldeth his land, of whom, and by what tenure, to that every one should be admitted to shew and exhibite what right he hath, and by what fervices hee houldeth his land, whether in cheife or in foccage, or by Knights fervice, or how else soever. Thereupon would appeare, first how all those great English Lords doe claime those great services, what Seigniories they usurpe, what wardships they take from the Queene, what lands of hers they conceale and then how those trish Captaines of Countryes have incroached upon the Queenes Free-holders and Tennants, how they have translated the tenures of them from English houlding, unto Irish Tanifry, and defeated her Majesty of all her rights and dutyes which are to acrew to her thereout, as wardships, Liveries, marriages, fine of alienations, and many other Commodities, which now are kep and concealed from her Majesty, to the value of 40000. pounds pe

those lands and Lordships given them. Iren. Surely they may be well enough, for most of those Lords fince their first graunts, from the Kings by which those lands were given them, have fithence bestowed the most part of them amongst their Kinffolke, as every Lord perhaps hath given in his time one another of his principall Castles to his younger Sonne, and other to others, as largely and as amply as they were given to him, and others they have fold, and others they have bought, which were not in their first graunt, which now neverthelesse they bring within the compasse thereof, and take and exact upon them, as upon their first demeasnes all those kinde of services, yea and the very wilde exactions, Coienie, Livery, * Sorehon, and fuch like, by which they pole and utterly undoe fignifie, is for the poore Tennants and Free-houlders under them, which either thorough ignorance know not their tenures, or through greatnes of their new Lords dare not challenge them, yea, and some Lords of countryes also, as great ones as themselves, are now by strong hand brought under them, and made their Vassalls . As for example Arundell of the Stronde in the county of Corke, who was aunciently a great Lord, and was able to spend 3500. pounds by the yeare, as appeareth by good Recordes, is now become the Lord Barries man, and doth to him all those services, which are due unto her Majesty. For reformation of all which, I wish that there were a commission graunted forth under the great Scale, as I have seene one recorded in the old Councell Booke of Mounster, that was sent forth in the time of Sir Williams Drurie, unto persons of speciall trust and indgement to inquire thoroughout all ireland, beginning with one county first, and so resting a

สหหนาที่

annum, I dare undertake in all Ireland, by that which I know in one

Eudox. This Irenaus, would feeme a dangerous commission, and ready to stirre up all the Irish in Rebellion, who knowing that they have nothing to thew for all those lands which they hould, but their Swords, would rather drawe them, then suffer the lands to bee thus

drawne away from them.

Neither should their lands be taken away from them, nor the atmost advantages inforced against them: But this by discretion of the Commissioners should be made knowne unto them, that it is not her Majesties meaning to use any such extreamity, but onely to reduce things into order of English Law, and make them hould their lands of her, and to restore to her, her due services, which they detaine out of those lands, which were aunciently held of her. And that they should not onely, not be thrust out, but also have estates and grants of their lands new made to them from her Majesty, so as they should thence-forth hould them rightfully, which they now usurpe wrongfully, and yet withall I would wish, that in all those Irish countryes, there were some land reserved to her Majesties free disposition for the better containing of the rest, and intermingling them with English inhabitants and customes, that knowledge might still be had of them, and of all their doings, so as no manner of practise or conspiracy should be had in hand, amongst them, but notice should bee given thereof by one meanes or another, and their practifes prevented.

Eudox. Truely neither can the Irilh, nor yet the English Lords. thinke themselves wronged, nor hardly dealt withall herein, to have that which is indeede none of their owne at all, but her Majesties abfolutely given to them, with such equall conditions, as that both they may be affured thereof, better then they are, and also her Majesty not defrauded of her rightly utterly, for it is a great grace in a Prince, to take that with conditions, which is absolutely her owne. Thus shall the wife be well satisfied, and as for the great men which had fuch graunts made to them at first, by the Kings of England, it was in regard that they should keepe forth the triff, and defend the Kings right, and his Subjects: but now feeing that in flead of defending them, they robbe and spoyle them, and in stead of keeping out the Irish, they doe not onely make the Irish their tennants in those lands, and thrust out the English, but also some of themselves become meere Irifh, with marrying with them, with fostering with them, and combyning with them against the Queene. What reason is there but that those graunts and priviledges should beceither revoked, or at least reduced to the first intention for which they were graunted, for fureinmine opinion they are more sharpely to beechaftised and reformed, then the rude Irish, which being very wildear the first, are now become more civill, when as these from civillity are growne to be wilde and meere trifh. * (1.22 is)

Endox, In-

Iren. Indeede as you say Eudexus, these doe neede a sharper reformation then the Irish, for they are more stubborne, and disobedient to

law and governement, then the Irifh be.

Eudox. In truth Irenam, this is more then ever I heard, that any English there, should be worse then the trish : Lord how quickely doth that Countrey alter mens natures. It is not for nothing (I perceive) which I have heard, that the Councell of England thinke it no good policie, to have that Realme reformed, or planted with English least they should grow so undutifull as the Irish, and become much more dangerous: As appeareth by the ensamples of the Lacies in the time of Edward the Second, which you spake of, that shooke off their allegiance to their naturall Prince, and turned to Edward le Bruce, to

make him King of Ireland.

Iren. No times have bene without bad men: but as for that purpose of the Councell of England which you spake of, that they should keepe that Realme from reformation, I thinke they are most lewdly abused, for their great carefulnesse, and earnest endeavours doe witnesse the contrary. Neither is it the nature of the Countrey to alter mens manners, but the bad mindes of the men, who having beene brought up at home under a straight rule of duty and obedience, being alwayes restrayned by sharpe penalties from lewde behaviour, so foone as they come thither, where they fee lawes more flackely tended, and the hard restraint which they were used unto now slacked, they grow more loofe and carelesse of their duty, and as it is the nature of all men to love liberty, so they become flat libertines, and fall to all licentiousnes, more boldly daring to disobey the Law, thorough the presumption of favour and friendship, then any wife

Eudox. Then if that be so, (me thinkes) your late advisement was very evill, whereby you wished the Irish to be sowed and sprinckled with English, and in all the Irish Countryes to have English planted amongst them, for to bring them to English fashions, fince the English sooner drawe to the Irish, then the Irish to the English: for as you faid before, if they must runne with the streame, the greater number will carry away the leffe: Therefore (me thinkes) by this reason it should bee better to part the Irish and English, then to mingle them to-

Not so Eudoxus, but wherethere is no good stay of Government, and strong ordinances to hould them, there indeede the fewer will follow the more, but where there is due order of discipline and good rule; there the better shall goe foremost; and the worst shall follow. And therefore now, fince Ireland is full of her owne nation, that ought not to be rooted out, and somewhat stored with Engiish already, and more to be, I thinke it best by an union of manners and conformity of mindes, to bring them to be one people, and to put away the dislikefull conceipt both of the one, and the other, which will be by no meanes better, then by this intermingling of them: For neither all the Iriflomay dwell together, nor all the Englift, but by translating of them and scattering them amongst the English; not onely to bring them by dayly conversation, unto better liking of each other but also to make both of them lesse able to hurt. And therefore when I come to the tything of them, I will tithe them one with another, & for the most part will make an Irish man, the tythingman, whereby he shall take the lesse exception to partiality, and yet bethe more tyed thereby . But when I come to the Head Borough, which is the head of the Lathe, him will I make an English man, or an Irilh man of speciall affurance: As also when I come to appoint the Alderman, that is the head of the Hundreth, him will I furely choose to be an English man of speciall regard, that may be a stay and pillar of all the Borough under him.

Eudox. What doe you meane by your hundred, and what by your Borougheby that, that I have read in auncient records of England, an hundred did containe an hundreth villages, or as some say an hundreth Plough-lands, being the same which the saxons called

* Cantred, the which Cantred, as I finde it recorded in the Blacke Booke of [the Exchequer of] Ireland, did containe xxx. villatas terra, which some call quarters of land, and every villata can maintaine 400. Cowes in pasture, and the 400 cowes to be devided into 4. heards, so as none of them shall come neere other: every villata containing 18. Plowlands, as is there set downe: & by that which Thave read of a Borough it fignifieth a free towne, which had a principall Officer called a Head-

* Cantred is a Brittifli word, answering to the Saxon Humpleb How much land a Cantred containeth, is variously delivered. Some hould that it containes 100, townes. So Gir. Barry or Cambrenfis, in his itinerary of Wales, (bb.2.cap. 7.) Dicitur au. sem Cantredus (faith he) composito vocabulo sam Britannica quam Hibernica lingua, tanta terra portio, quanta 100. villas continera foles. The Author here cires a record which makes it contains but 30 towner lands and Iohn Clynna (if my copy therein be not miftaken) hath but 20. But another more auncient MS. fomctime belonging to the Friars Minors of Multifernan, hath 30. Qualibet cantreda (faith Clinne) contines xx. (al. xxx.) villatas serre, quelibet willata poteft (uffinere 300 vaccas in pafcuis , ita quod vacca in x. (al. 1111.)partes divifa, nulla alteri appropinguabis qualibes villata contines villo carneatas. We finde also there the Provinces of Ireland thus divided into Cantreds . Plionia consiner 3 5.cantredas, Conacia 30. Lagenia 31. Midia 18, & Momonia 70. See more concerning cantreds in Sir Hen, Spelman's excellent Gloffary. As captreds are diverfly estimated, fo are alfo carues or plowlands.

Borough, to become Ruler, and undertake for all the dwellers under him; having for the same franchises and priviledges graunted them by the King, whereof it was called a free Borough, and of the

Lawyers Franci plegium.

Iren. Both that which you faid Endoxus, is true, and yet that which I say not untrue, for that which you spake of deviding the Countrey into hundreds, was a devision of the lands of the Realme, but this which I tell, was of the people, which were thus devided by the pole: So that hundreth in this sense signifieth a 100. pledges, which were under the command and affurance of their Alderman, the which (as I suppose) was also called a Wapentake, so named of touching the weapon or speare of their Alderman, and swearing to follow him faithfully, and serve their Prince truly: But others thinke that a Wapentake was 10 hundreds or boroghs: Likewise a Borogh, as I here use it, and as the old lawes still use, is not a Borogh towne, as,

they now call it, that is a franchised towne: But a maine pledge of 100.free persons, therfore called a free borough or (as you say) Franci-plegium: For Borh in old Saxon fignifieth a pledge or furety, and yet is fo used with us in some speeches (as Chaucer faith) St John to Borroh, that is for affurance and warranty.

Endox. I conceive the difference: But now that you have thus devided the people into these Tythings and Hundreths, how will you have them so preserved and continued, for people doe often change their dwelling places, and some must die, whilst other some doe growe up into strength of yeares, and become men.

Iren. These Hundreds I would wish to affemble themselves once every yeare with their pledgés, and to present themselves before the Iustices of the peace, which shall bee thereunto appointed, to bee surveyed and numbred, to see what change hath happened fince the yeare before, and the defects to supplie, of young plants late growne up, the which are diligently to bee overlooked and viewed of what condition and demeanour they be, so as pledges may bee taken for them, and they put into order of some Tything, of all which alterations notes is to be taken, and Bookes made thereofaccordingly.

Endox. Now (mee thinkes) Irenaus, you are to bee warned to take heede lest unawares you fall into that inconvenience which you formerly found fault with in others: Namely, that by this booking of them, you doe not gather them into a new head, and having broken their former strength, doe not unite them more strongly againe: For every Alderman having all these free pledges of his Hundred under his commaund, may (methinkes) if hee be evill disposed drawe all his Companie into an evill action. And likewise by this affembling of them once a yeare unto their Alderman by their Weapentakes, take heede lest you also give them occasion and meanes to practife together in any conspiracyes.

Iren. Neither of both is to be doubted, for their Aldermen and Head Boroughes, will not be such men of power and countenance of themselves, being to be chosen thereunto, as neede to be feared: Neither if hee were, is his Hundred at his commaund, further then his Princes service, and also every Tything man, may controll him in such a case. And as for the assembling of the Hundred, much lesse is any danger thereof to be doubted, leeing it is before some Iustice of Peace, or some high Constable to bee thereunto appointed: So as of these Tythings there can no perill ensue, but a certaine affurance of peace and great good, for they are thereby withdrawne from their Lords, and subjected to the Prince: Moreover for the better breaking of these heads and septs, which (I tould you) was one of the greatest strengthes of the wish, me thinkes it should bee very well to renewe that ould Statute, which was made in the * raigne of Edward the fourth in Ireland, by which is

wis commanded, that whereas all men thereinfed to * The flattic referres onely to be called by the name of their fepts, according to the Teverall Nations, and had no furnames at alligithat from thenceforth each one should take upon himselfe in severall furname, either of his trade and facultie or of fome quality of his body or minde, or of the place " -where he dwelt, to as every one should be distinguished from the other, or from the most part, wherby they shall not onely, not depend upon the head of their lept, has now they do but also in time learne quite to forget Shis Wife Mation. And herewithall would Talfo with all the o's and The Mads, which the heads of lepts have taken to their names, to bee Lutterly forbidden and extinguished. For that the same being an ordimance fas some say) first made by * o Brien for the * The custome of prefixing the

asmuch infeeble them, Eudox: I like this ordinance very well; but now that Byou have thus divided & distinguished them, what other order will you take for their manner of life

Arrengthning of the Irish, the abrogating thereof will

Iren. The next that I will doe, shalbe to appoint to -every one that is notable to live of his Free-holde, a certaine Trade of life to which he shall finde himselfe fittest, and shalbe thought ablest, the which trade hee fliabe bound to follow, & live onely thereupon. All foone fully fertled in families.

rades therefore are to be understood to be of three kindes; Manuall. Intellettuall, & mixed. The first containing all such as needeth exercise of bodily labour, to the performance of their profession. The second confifting only of the exercise of wir & reason. The third fort, part of bodily labor, & part of the with but depending most of industrie and carefulnes. Of the first fort be all handy-crafts & husbandry labour. Of the second be all Sciences, and those which be called the liberall Arts. Of the third is Merchandize & Chafferie, that is, buying & felling & without all these three, there is no Common-wealth can almost consist, or at the least be perfect. But the Realme of ireland wan-Freth the most principall of them, that is, the intellectuall; therfore in Leeking to reforme her state, it is specially to be looked unto. But be-Acause by husbandry, which supplyeth unto us all things necessary for food, wherby we chiefly live. Therefore it is first to be provided for. The first thing therefore that wee are to draw these new tythed amen into, ought to be husbandry. First, because it is the most easie to be learned needing onely the labour of the Body. Next, because it is most generall and most needfull, then because it is most naturall; and . Laftly, because it is most enemy to warre, and most hateth singuiernes: As the Poet faith

bella execrata colonis. for husbandry being the nurse of thrift, & the daughter of industrie and labour, deteffeth all that may worke her scathe, and destroy the

the triff, dwelling among the English in the counties of Dublin, Mesh, Priel, and Kildare, Priel galled also Ergallia, did ancienty comprehend all that countrey which is now divided into the Counties of Louth and Monoghan although it may be conceived, that Louth was onely interided by the flature, because Monoghan was then (in a manner) wholly pessessed by the

vowell O to many of the chiefe Irifi furnames, began foon after the yeere M. in the raigne of Brien bojoins (the fon of Kenne. thy) King of Ireland, As for Mac in furnames, it beareth: no other fignification, then Firz doth among the French, and (from them) the English , and ap with the welfb. And although it were more anciently used then the other, yet it varied according to the fathers name, and became not fo

travaile

* Anno st

Hen.6.

travaile of her hands, whose hope is all her lives comfort unto the Plough, therefore are those Kearne, Stocaghes and Horseboves to bee driven and made to imploy that ablenesse of Bodie which they were wont to use to theft and villainy, hencefoorth to labour and industry. In the which by that time they have spene but a little paine, they will finde such fweetenesse and happy contentment, that they will afterwardes hardly bee haled away from it, or drawne to their wonted dewde life in theeverie and roquerie. And being once thus inured thereunto, they are not onely to bee countenanced and encouraged by all good meanes, but also provided that their children after them may be brought up likewise in the same, and succeede in the roomes of their Fathers. To which end there is a A Statute in Ireland already well provided, which commaundeth that all the formes of husbandmen shall be trained up in their Fathers trades, buriois (God wot) very flenderly executed.

Endox. But doe you not count in this trade of husbandny, pasturing of cattle, and keeping of their Cowes, for that is reckoned as a

part of husbandrie.

Iren. I know it is, and needefully to beenfed, but I doe not meane to allow any of those able bodies, which are able to use bodily labour, to follow a few Cowes grazeing. But such impotent persons, as being unable for strong travaile, are verable to drive Cattle to and fro to their patture, for this keeping of Cowes is of it selfe a very idle dife, and a fit nuclerie for a Thiefe. For which cause (you remember) I disliked the hish manner of keeping Boolies in Summer upon the mountaines, and living after that lavage fort. But if they will algares feede many Cattle, or keepe them on the Mountaines, let them make some townes neare to the Mountaines side, where they may dwell together with neighbours, and bee conversant in the view of the world. And to fay truth, though Ireland bee by nature counted a great soyle of passure, yer had I rather have fewer Cowes kept, and men better mannered, then to have such huge in-crease of Cattle, and no increase of good conditions. I would therefore wish that there were some ordinances made amongst them, that who oever keepeth twentie Kine, should keep a Plough going, for otherwife all men would fall to pasturage, and none to husbandry, which is a great cause of this dearth now in England, and a cause of the usuall stealthes in Ineland: for looke into all Countreves that live in fuch fort by keeping of Cattle, and you shall finde that they are both very barbarous and uncivill, and also greatly given to warre. The Tartarians, the Mulco. vites, the Norwegians, the Gother, the Armenians, and many other doc wirnesse the same. And therefore since now wee purpose to draw the Irish from desire of warreand tumults, to the love of peace and civility, it is expedient to abridge their great custome of hardening,

hardening, and augment their trade of tillage and husbandrie. As for other occupations and trades, they need not bee inforced to, but every man to bee bound onely to follow one that hee thinkes himselfe aptest for. For other trades of Artificers will be occupied for very necessitie, and constrayned use of them, and so likewise will merchandize for the gainethereof, but learning and bringing in liberall Sciences, will not come of it selfe, but must bee drawne on with streight Lawes and ordinances: And therefore it were meete that such an act were ordained, that all the Sonnes of Lords, Gentlemen, and such others as are able to bring them up in learning, thould be trayned up therein from their Child-hoods. And for that endevery Parish should be forced to keepe a pettie Schoole-master, adjoyning unto the Parish Church, to bee the more in view, which should bring up their children in the first Elements of Letters: And that in every Countrey or Baronie, they should keepe an other able Schoole-master, which should instruct them in Grammer, and in *che

Principles of Sciences, to whom they should be compelled to fend their youth to bee disciplined, whereby they will in short space grow up to that civile conversarion, that both the children will loath their former rudenesse in which they were bred, and also their Parents will even by the ensample of their young Children, perceive the foulenesse of their owne behaviour, compared to theirs; for Learning hath that wonderfull power in it selfe, that it can soften and temper the most fterne and fayage nature.

Eudox. Surely I am of your minde, that nothing will bring

them from their uncivile life sooner; then learning and discipline next after the knowledge and feare of GOD. And therefore I doe still expect; that you should come thereunto, and set some order for reformation of Religion, which is first to bee respected, according to the saying of CHRIST, Seeke first the Kingdome of Heaven, and the Righteousnelle thereof.

that which I had in hand, whereby all the ordinances which shall afterwardes bee set for Religion, may abide the more sirmely, and bee observed more diligently. Now that this people is thus tythed and ordered, and every one bound unto sonie honest trade of life, which shall bee particularly entered and set downe in the tything Booke, yet perhappes there will bee some

How requi-

the further growth in learning, the judicious well know. This happineffe we now enjoy, to the great benefit of this Land. And although former attempts have beene made for erecting and eftabliffling Vniversities in beland, yet through want of meanes, which should have beene allotted for their mainte. nance, they have foone aded So hapned it with that Acade my which Alexander de Bigner Archbishop of Dublin creded (in S. Passicks Church) in Bublin, and procured to be confirmed by Pope Jahn the vath. And no better fitcereded that which was afterwards creeted at Tredagh by Act of Parlament Anno 5. Edw. 4. (as appeares in the roll of that yeare in the Chauncery) whereby all the like Priviledges, as the Vniversity of Oxford (in England) enjoyed, were conserred uponit. Besides these wee finde mention of others, farre more ancient, as at Aimagh, and Roff Carbry, or Roff attishry, as it is called in the life of S. Faghnan the Founder, who lived in che yeare 390. Ipfe Sansins (faith the Author) in auftrali Hibernia plaça inzea mare, en suo Monasterio quod iffe fundavie , thi crevis civitat, in qua semper manet magnum Fludium fo. lavium, quod dicitur Rosailishry, habitabas. But a further fearth were fit to bee made touching those of the elder

Itragglers

Gods

stragglers and runnagates, which will not of themselves come in and veeld themselves to this order, and yet after the well finishing of the present warre, and establishing of the Garrisons in all strong places of the Countrey, where their wonted refuge was most, I supposethere will few stand out, or if they doe, they will shortly bee brought in by the Eares: But yet afterwardes, left any one of them should swerve, or any that is tyed to a trade, should afterwardes not follow the same, according to this institution, but should straggle up and downe the Countrey, or mich in Corners amongst their Friends idlely, as Carrowes, Bardes, Testers, and such like, I would wishe that a Provost Marshall should bee appointed in every Shire, which should continually walke about the Countrey, with halfe a dozen, or halfe a fcore horsemen. to take up such loose persons as they should finde thus wandering, whome hee should punish by his owne authority, with fuch paines as the person shall seeme to deserve; for if hee be but once so taken idlely roguing, hee may punish him more lightly, as with stockes, or such like; but if hee bee found againe fo loytering, hee may scourge him with whippes, or rodds, after which if hee bee againe taken, let him have the bitternesse of Marshall lawe. Likewise if any reliques of the olde rebellion bee found by any, that either have not come in and submitted themselves to the Law, or that having once come in, doe breake forth againe, and walke disorderly, let them taite of the same cuppe in Gods Name, for it was due to them for their first guilt, and now being revived by their later loofenesse, let them have their first desert, as now being found unfit to live in the Commons wealth.

Eudox. This were a good ordinance: but meethinkes it is an unnecessary charge, and also unfit to continue the name or forme of any Marshall-Law, when as there is a proper Officer already appointed for these turnes, to wit the Sheriffe of the Shire, whose peculiar Office it is to walke up and downehis Bayli-wicke, as you would have a Marshall to snatch up all those Runnagates and unprofitable members, and to bring them to his Gaole to bee punished for the same. Therefore this may well be spared.

tren. Not so (me thinkes) for though the Sheriffe have this authority of himselfe to take up all such stragglers, and imprison them, yet shall hee not doe so much good, nor worke that terrour in the hearts of them, that a Marshall will, whom they shall know to have power of life and death in such cases, and specially to bee appointed for them: Neither doth it hinder that, but that though it pertaine to the Sheriffe, the Sheriffe may doe therein what hee can, and yet the Marshall may walke his course besides, for both of them may doe the more good, and more terrific the idle Rogue, knowing that though he have a watch upon the one, yet hee may light upon the other: But this proviso is needefull to bee had in this case,

that the Sheriffe may not have the like power of life, as the Marshall hath, and as heretofore they have been accustomed; for it is dangerous to give power of life into the hands of him which may have benefit by the parties death, as if the said loose liver have any goods of owne, the Sheriffe is to seize thereupon, whereby it hath come to passe, that some who have not deserved judgement of death, though otherwise perhaps offending, have beene for their goods sake caught up, and carryed straight to the bough, a thing indeed very pittifull & horrible. Therefore by no meanes I would have the Sheriffe have such authority, nor yet to imprison that Lozell, till the Sessions, for soall Gaoles might soone be filled; but to fend him to the Marshall, and ridd him away forthwith.

Eudox. I doe now perceive your reason well: but come wee now to that whereof wee earst spake, I meane, to Religion and religious

men, what order will you fet amongst them? Iren. For Religion little have I to say, my selfe being (as I said) not professed therein, and it selfe being but one, so as there is but one way therein, for that which is true onely is, and the rest is not at all, yet in planting of Religion, thus much is needefull to bee observed, that it bee not fought forcibly to bee impressed into them with terrour and sharpe penalties, as now is the manner, but rather delivered and intimated with mildenesse and gentlenesse, so as it may not be hatedbefore it be understood, and their professors despised and rejected. And therefore it is expedient that some discreete Ministers of their owne Countrey-men, bee first sent over amongst them, which by their meeke perswasions and instructions, as also by their sober lives and conversations, may draw them first to understand, and afterwards to imbrace the doctrine of their falvation; for if that the auncient godly Fathers, which first converted them, when they were Infidells, to the Faith, were able ropull them from Idolatry and Paganisme, to the true Beliefe in CHRIST, as S. Patricke, and S. Columb, how much more eafily shall godly teachers bring them to the true understanding of that which they already professed, wherein it is great wonder to see the oddes which is betweene the zeale of Popish Priests, and the Ministers of the Gospell, for they spare not to come out of spaine, from Rome, and from Remes, by long toyle and daungerous travayling hither, where they know perill of death awayteth them, and no reward or richesse is to bee found, onely to draw the people unto the Church of Rome, whereas some of our idle Ministers, having a way for credite and estimation thereby opened unto them, and having the livings of the Countrey of fered unto them, without paines, and without perill, will neither for the same, nor any love of God, nor zeale of Religion, nor for all the good they may doe, by winning Soules to God, bee drawne foorth from their warme neastes, to looke out into

Gods harvest, which is even ready for the fickle, and all the Fields vellow long agoe, doubtlesse those good olde godly Fathers. will (I feare mee) rise up in the day of judgement to condemne them.

Endox. Surely, it is great pitty Iren. that there are none chosen out of the Ministers of England, good, sober, and discreet men, which might be fent over thither to teach and instruct them, and that there is not asmuch care had of their soules, as of their Bodies, for the care

of both lyeth upon the Prince.

Iren. Were there never so many sent over, they should doe small good till one enormity be taken from them, that is, that both they bee restrayned from sending their your men abroad to other Vniverfities beyond the Sea, as Remes, Doway, Lovaine, and the like, and others from abroad bee referayned for comming into them. for they lurking secretly in their houses, and in corners of the Countrey, doe more hurt and hinderance to Religion with their private perswasions, then all the others can doe good with their publique instructions, & though for these latter there be a good Sratute there ordained, yet the same is not executed; & as for the former there is no law, nor order for their restraint at all.

Eudox. I marvaile it is no better looked unto, and not only this. but that also which I remember you mentioned in your abuses concerning the profits and revenewes of the Lands of Fugitives in Ireland, which by pretende of certaine colourable conveyances are sene continually over unto them, to the comforting of them and others against her Majestie, for which here in England there is good order taken, and why not then aswell in Ireland? For though there be no Statute there yet enacted therefore, yet might her Majestie by her onely prerogative, seize the fruites and profites of those Fugirives Lands into her handes, till they come over to testifie their true alleagi-

ance.

Indeede shee might so doe, but the comberous times doe Irem. per happes hinder the regard thereof, and of many other good intentions.

Eudox. But why then did they not mend it in peaceable times ?

Iren. Leave we that to their grave confiderations; but proceed we forward. Next care in Religion is to build up and repayre all the ruined Churches, whereof the most part lye even with the ground, and some that have bin lately repayred, are so unhandsomely parched, and thatched, that men doe even shunne the places for the uncomelinesse thereof; therefore I would wishe that there were order taken to have them built in some better forme, according to the Churches of England; for the outward shewe (affure your felfe) doth greatly drawe the rude people to the reverencing and frequenting thereof. What ever some of our late too nice fooles fay, there is nothing in the feemely forme, and comely comely order of the Church. And for the keeping and continuing them. there should likewise Church wardens of the gravest men in the parish be appointed, as they beethere in England, which should rake the yearely charge both hereof, and also of the Schoole-Houses which I with to be built neere the faid Churches for maintenance of both which, it were meete that fome small portion of lands were allotted fith no more Mortmaines are to be looked for.

Fudox. Indeede me thinks sit would be so convenient, but when all is done how will you have your Churches ferved, and your Ministers maintained fince the livings (as you say) are not sufficient scarce to make them gownes, much leffe to yeeld meete maintenance

-according to the dignity of their degree.

Iren. There is no way to helpe that, but to lay 2.013. of them toigether untill such time as the Countrey grow more rich and better inhabited at which time the Tythes, and other obventions will also be more augmented and better valued: But now that we have thus cone through all the 3. forts of trades, and fet a courfe for their good establishment: let us (if it please you) goe next to some other needefull points of other publicke matters no leffe concerning the good of the Common-wealth, though but accidentally depending on the former. And first I wish that order were taken, for the cutting and opening of all places through woods, so that a wide way of the space. of 100 yards might be layde open in every of them, for the safety of travellers, which use often in such perillous places to be robbed, and sometimes murdered. Next that Bridges were built upon the Rivers, and all the fordes marred and spilt, so as none might passe any other way but by those Bridges, and every Bridge to have a gate and a gatehouse set thereon, whereof this good will come that no night stealths which are commonly driven in by-wayes, and by blinde fordes unused of any, but such like shall not be conveyed out of one country into another, as they use, but they must passe by those Bridges, where they may either be haply encountred, or eafily tracked, or not suffered to passe at all, by meanes of those gate-houses thereon: Also that in all fraights and narrow passages, as betweene 2. boggs, or through any deepe foord, or under any mountaine fide, there flould be fome little Fortilage, or wooden Castle set, which should keepe and commaund that straight, whereby any Rebells that should come into the country, might be stopped that way, or passe with great perill. Moreover that all High wayes should be fenced and shut up on both sides? leaving onely 40. foote breadth for passage, so as none should be able to passe but through the high wayes, whereby theeves and night Robbers might be the more easily pursued and encountred; when there shall be no other way to drive their stolne cartle, but therein, as I formerly declared. Further that there should bee in sundry convenient places, by the high wayes, townes appointed to bee built, the which should be free Burgesses, and incorporate under Baylisses, to be by their inhabitants well and strongly intrenched, or otherwise fenced

fenced, with gates on each fide thereof, to be flut nightly, like as there is in many places in the English pale, and all the wayes about it to be strongly shut up, so as none thould passe but through those townes: To some of which it were good that the priviledge of a market were given, the rather to strengthen and inable, them to their defence, for there is nothing doth sooner cause civility in any countrie then many Market townes, by reason that people, repairing often thither for their needes, will dayly secund lear socivill manners of the better fort: Besides, there is nothing dorlimore stay and strenghthen the Country, then such corporate towness, as by proofe in many Rebellions hath appeared, in which when all the countryes have swerved, the townes have stood fast, and yeelded good releife to the Souldiours in all occasions of services. And lastly there is nothing doth more enrich any country or Realme, then many townes, for to them will all the people drawe and bring the fruits of their trades, as well to make money of them, as to supply their needefull uses, and the Countrymen will also be more industrious in tillage, and rearing of all husbandry commodities, knowing that they shall have ready fale for them atthose townes, and in all those townes should there be convenient. Innes, erected for the lodging and harbouring of Travellers, which are now oftentimes spoyled by lodging abroad in weake thatched houses, for want of such safe places to shroude them in.

Eudox. But what profit shall your market townes reape of their market? when as each one may sell their corne and cattle abroad in the country, and make their secret bargaines amongst themselves as now I understand they use.

Iren. Indeede Eudoxus, they doe fo, and thereby no small inconvenience doth rise to the Common-wealth, for now when any one hath stolnea Cowe or a Garron, he may secretly sell it in the country without privity of any, wheras if he brought it to a market towne it would perhaps be knowne, and the theife discovered. Therefore it were good that a straight ordinance were made, that none should buy or fell any cattle, but in some open market, (there being now market townes every where at hand,) upon a great penalty, neither should they likewise buy any corne to sell the same againe, unlesse it were to make malt thereof, for by fuch ingrofing and regrating wee fee the dearth that now commonly raigneth here in England, to have beene caused. Hereunto also is to bee added that good ordinance, which I remember was once proclaimed throughout all Ireland. That all men should marke their cattle with an open severall marke upon their flanckes or Buttockes, fo as if they happened to be stolne, they might appeare whose they were, and they which should buy them, might thereby suspect the Owner, and be warned to abstaine from buying them of a suspected person, with such an unknowne

Eudox. Surely these ordinances seeme very expedient, but specially that of free townes, of which I wonder there is so small store

in Ireland, and that in the first peopling and planting thereof, they were neglected and omitted.

Iren. They were not omitted, for there were through all places of the Country convenient, many good townes feated, which thorough that inundation of the Irilh, which I first told you of, were utterly wasted and defaced, of which the ruines are yet in many places to be seene, and of some no signe at all remaining, save onely their bare names, but their seates are not to be found.

Eudox. But how then commeth it to passe, that they have never since been erecovered, nor their habitations reedified, as of the rest,

which have beene no leffe spoyled and wasted.

Iren. The cause thereof was, for that after their desolation, they were begged by Gentlemen, of the Kings, under colour to repaire them, and gather the poore reliques of the people againe together, of whom having obtained them, they were so farre from reedifying of them, as that by all meanes they have endeavoured to keepe them waste, least that being repaired, their Charters might be renewed, and their Burgesses restored to their lands, which they had now in their possession, much like as in those old monuments of Abbeyes, and religious houses, we see them likewise use to doe: For which cause it is judged that King Henry the eight, bestowed them upon them, conceiving that thereby they should never beeable to rise againe. And even so doe these Lords, in these poore old corporate townes, of which I could name divers, but for kindling of displeasure. Thereforeas I wished many corporate townes to be erected, so would I againe wish them to be free, not depending upon the service, nor under the commaund of any but the Governour. And being fo, they will both strengthen all the Country round about them, which by their meanes will be the better replenished and enriched, and also be as continuall houldes for her Majesty, if the people should revolt or breake out againe, for without such it is easie to forrage and over-run. the whole land. Let be for ensample all those Free-boroughes, in the Low-Countryes, which are now all the strength thereof. These and other like ordinances might be delivered for the good establishment of the Realme, after it is once subdued and reformed, in which is might afterwards be very eafily kept and maintained, with small care of the Governours and Councell there appointed, fo as it should in short space, yeeld a plentifull revenue to the Crowne of England: which now doth but sucke & consume the treasure thereof, through those unfound plots and changefull orders; which are dayly devised for her good, yet never effectually prosecuted or performed.

Eudox. But in all this your discourse I have not marked any thing by you spoken touching the appointment of the principall Officer, to whom you wish the charge and performance of all this to be committed: Onely I observed some fowle abuses by you noted in some of the late Governours, the reformation where-

of you left of, for this present place.

tren. I delight not to lay open the blames of great Magistrates to the rebuke of the world, and therefore their reformation I will not meddle with, but leave unto the wisedome of greater heads to be confidered, only thus much I will speake generally thereof, to satisfie your defire, that the government and cheife Magistracy, I wish to continue as it doth, to wit, that it be ruled by a Lord Deputy or Iustice, for that it is a very safe kinde of rule, but there with all I wish that over him there were placed also a Lord Lieutenant, of some of the greatest personages in England, such a one I could name, upon whom the eye of all England is fixed, and our last hopes now rest, who being intituled with that dignity, and being here alwayes resident, may backe and defend the good course of that government against all maligners, which else will through their cunning working under hand, deprave and pull backe what ever thing shallbe begun or intended there, as we commonly fee by experience at this day, to the utter ruine and desolation of that poore Realme, and this Leiutenancie should be no discountenancing of the Lord Deputy, but rather a strengthning of all his doings, for now the cheife evill in that government is, that no Governour is suffered to goe on with any one course, but upon the least information here, of this or that, hee is either stopped and crossed, or other courses appointed him from hence which he shall run, which how inconvenient it is, is at this houre too well felt: And therefore this should be one principall in the appointing of the Lord Deputies authority, that it should bee more ample and absolute then it is, and that he should have uncontrouled power. to doe any thing, that he with the advisement of the Councell should thinke meete to be done: For it is not possible for the Councell here, to direct a Governour there, who shall be forced oftentimes to follow the necessitie of present actions, and to take the suddaine advantage of time, which being once lost will not bee recovered, whilst through expecting direction from hence, the delayes whereof are oftentimes through other greater affaires most irkesome, the oportunityes there in the meane time passe away, and great danger often groweth, which by fuch timely prevention might eafily bee stopped: And this (I remember) is worthily observed by Atachiavel in his discourses upon Livie, where he commendeth the manner of the Romans government, in giving absolute power to all their Councellors and Governours, which if they abused, they should afterwards dearely answere: And the contrary thereof he reprehendeth in the States of Venice, of Florence, and many other principalityes of Italy: who use to limit their cheife Officers to strictly, as that thereby they have oftentimes lost fuch happy occasions, as they could never come unto againe: The like whereof, who so hath been conversant in that government of Ireland, hath too often seene to their great hinderance and hurt. Therefore this I could wish to be redressed; and yet not so but that in particular things he should be restrained, though not in

the generall government, as namely in this that no offices should bee fould by the Lord Deputy for money, nor no pardons, nor no protections bought for reward, nor no beoves taken for Captainries of Countryes, nor no shares of Bishopricks for nominating of Bishops, nor no forfeytures, nor dispensations with poenall Statutes given to their servants or friends, nor no selling of licences for transportation of prohibited wares, and specially of corne and flesh, with many the like, which neede some manner of restrainte, or else very great trust in

the honorable disposition of the Lord Deputy.

Thus I have Eudexus, as briefly as I could, and as my memorie would ferve me, run through the state of that whole Country, both to let you see, what it now is, and also what it may bee by good care and amendment: Not that I take upon me to change the policy of so great a kingdome, or prescribe rules to such wise men, as have the handling thereof, but onely to shew you the evills, which in my small experience I have observed, to be the cheife hinderance of the reformation, and by way of conference to declare my simple opinion for the redreffe thereof, and establishing a good courfe for government, which I doe not deliver as a perfect plot of mine owne invention to be onely followed, but as I have learned and understood the same by the confultations and actions of very wife Governours and Councellours, whom I have (fometimes) heard treate hereof: So have I thought good to fet downe a remembrance of them for my owne good, and your fatisfaction, that who fo lift to overlooke them, although perhaps much wifer then they which have thus advised of that State, yet at lest by comparison hereof, may perhaps better his owne judgment, and by the light of others fore-going him, may follow after with more ease, and haply finde a fairer way thereunto, then they which have gone before.

Eudex. I thanke you Irenaus, for this your gentle paines, withall not forgetting now in the flutting up, to put you in minde of that which you have formerly halfe promised, that hereafter when wee shall meete againe, upon the like good occasion, you will declare untous, those your observations which you have gathered of the anti-

quities of Ireland.

the

The end.





of congress of the court, the finite of toold by the field Depay for municipal สรุงแ<mark>ร bou</mark>gbetorsชพ์มณ์, มอกนา bei i Condayes, remainment of bithor. , krao **forfey**idaes**, ko**rdan i dama'r offuter เป็นเส้าเหมือน จักกระบบ เป็นเป colleis arbas, em la posidido esp.

out the accessing of Landau Calar Chas Lia cal Cwwq bibliotoly 2 act

ในแรก ของนัดในกระการหญิโดก อาจ

કે જ્યાં છેલ્લા**નું છ_{ે. . . સેંદુમાં** હેટ છે છુ}

loungist edatoki mendingig

or are now elimonsished residuos

DAg. 25.lin. 45. for and he, read he is. pag. 27.lin, 28. in some copies, for Albany, read cither Albionor England, pag 32 lin, 22, for admirall read admirable pag 53 lin, 38 for after, read before, pag, 48 lin, 14, for Termessa, read Tesmessa, 110, 14, for Termessa, read Tesmessa, 110, 14, for Telkmotes, read Folkmotes, and in the Margent add, wid, D. Hen, Spelmanni Glossariam, pag, 74, lin, 44, for Sinerwicke, read Smer-





ANNOTATIONS.

Pon review of that part which was printed, before I began to inserte any notes, these few animadversions are added.

Pag.6. lin. 30.

Eathe first originall of this word Tanist and Tanistry came. See whether it may not be more fitly derived from Thane, which word was commonly used among the Danes, and also among the Saxons in England, for a noble man, and a principall officer.

Pag. II.lin. 14. -duke of Clarence, who having married the heire of the Earle of Vister, &c. It was not George Duke of Clarence here spoken of by the author, but Lionell Duke of Clarence, third sonne of King Edw. the 3. who married the Earle of Visters daughter, and by her had the Earledome of pagas 6 on Vister. and although Edw. the 4. made his brother the Duke of Clarence, Lo. Lieutenant of Ireland, yet the place was still executed by his Deputyes (which were at severall times) Thomas Earle of Defmond, John Earle of Worcester, Tho. Earle of Kildare, and William Shirwood Bishop of Meth, the Duke himselfenever comming into Ireland to governe there in person.

2 De hac ve vida mal. Hib. ab es edis.ad an. 1361

Pag. 26. lin. 26. -- Kin is English, and Congish affinity in Irish. I conceive the word to be rather altogether Irish. Kin fignifying in Irish, theheads or chiefe of

The discourse from the word Soythians in the rr. line, unto the end of the parenthesis in the 30. line, is wholly to be crossed out, as being then agreeable to the best MS. Copie, onely after Scythians, add,

Touching the Scythians b or Scotts arrivall in Ireland, see Nennius an ancient Brittish author (who lived in the yeare of Christ 858.) where among other things we have the time of their arrivall. Brittones (saith he) venerunt in 3. atate mundi in Britanniam, Scytha autem in 4. obtinuerunt Hiberniam.

Pag. 28. lin. 35. --remembrances of Bards. Of the ancient Bards or Poets, Lucan makes this

A regione que dam qua dicitur Seythia: dicitar Scita, Sciticus, Scoticus, Scotus, Scotia, Tho. Walfingham. in Hy podigmate New Aria, ad 4m. 1185.

this mention in the first booke of his Pharsalia.

Vos quoque qui fortes animas, belloque peremptas, Lauaibus in longum vates dimittitis avum. Plurima securi fudistis carmina Bardi.

Concerning the Irish Bardes see pag. 51. The word signified among the Gaules a finger, as it is noted by Mr Camden, and Mr Selden, out of Festus Pompeius, and it had the same fignification among the Brittish. St. Iohn Price in the description of Wales, expounds it to bee one that had knowledge of things to come, and fo (faith he) it signifieth at this day taking his ground (amisse) out of Lucan's verses. Doctor Powell in his notes upon Caradoc of Lhancarvan faith, that in Wales they preferved Gentlemens armes and pedegrees. At this time in Ireland the Bard by common acceptation, is counted a rayling Rimer, and dia stinguished from the Poet.

Pag. 29. lin. 10.

- an Irish Scot or Piet by nation. Bede tells us that the Piets were a colony of Scythians, who first comming into Ireland, and being denved residence there by the Scots, were perswaded by them to inhabit the North parts of Britaine. But Mr Gamden, out of Dio, Herodian, Tacitus &c.and upon confideration of the customes, name and language of the Picts, conceives not improbably, that they were natural I Britons, although distinguished by name.

Pag.29. lin.28.

Those Bardes indeed Casar writeth---- Concerning them I finde no mention in Cafar's commentaryes, but much touching the Druides, which were the Priests and Philosophers, (or Magias * Pliny calls them) of the Gaules & British. Illirebus divinis intersunt, (*faith he) sacrificia publica ac privata procurant religiones interpretantur. Ad hos magnus adolescentium numerus disciplina caussa concurrit, magnoque ij funt apud eos honore. &c. The word Onco had anciently the same signification (as I am informed) among the Irish.

Pag. 30.lin.30.

-- and Cornelius Tacitus doth also strongly affirme the same. Cornelius Tacitus in the life of Iulius Agricola faith thus. Silurum colorati vultus, & torti plerumque crines, & positus contra Hispaniam, Iberos veteres trajecisse, easque sedes occupasse sidem faciunt. This he speaketh touching the Silures which inhabited that part of South-Wales, which now we call Herefordshire, Radnorshire, Brecknockshire, Monmouth shire, and Glamorganshire. And although the like reason may be given for that part of Ireland which lyeth next unto Spaine, yet in Tacitus we find no fuch inference; c Buchanan indeed upon the conje-Eture of Tacitus hath these words. Verisimile a. non est Hispanos relictà àtergo

à tergo Hibernik, terrà propiore, & cœli & soli mitioris, in Albium primum descendisse, sed primunin Hiberniam appulisse, atq; inde in Britannia colonos missos. Which was observed unto me by the most learned Bishop of Meth, Dr Anth Martin, upon conference with his Lordship about this point. One passage in Tacitus touching Ireland (in the same booke) I may not heere omit, although it be extra oleas. Quinto expedicionum anno (faith he) nave prima transgressus, ignotas ad tempus gentes crebris simul ac prosperis pralijs domuit, camque partem Britannia qua Hiberniam aspicit, copijs instruxit, in spem magis quam ob formidinem. Siquidem Hibernia medio inter Britanniam atque Hispaniam sita, & Gallico quoque mari opportuna valentisimam imperij partem magnis invicem usibus miscuerit. Spatium ejus si Britannia comparetur, angustius, nostri maris infulas superat. Solum cœlumque & ingenia, cultusq; hominum haut multum à Britannia differunt melius aditus portusq; per commercia & negotiatores cogniti. Agricola expulsum seditione domestica unum ex regulis gentis exceperat, ac specie amicitia in occasionem retinebat. Sape ex co audivi Legione una & modicis auxilijs debellari, obtineríque Hiberniam possc. idque adversus Britanviam profuturum, si Romana ubique arma, & velut e conspectu libertas tolleretur.

Pag.31. lin.4. ---- Slanius, in the end made himselfe Monarch. The Irish stories have a continued succession of the Kings of Ireland from this Slanius, untill the conquest by King Henry the second, but very uncertaine, especially untill the planting of Religion by S. Patrick, at which time Lagarius, or Lagirius was Monarch.

Pag.33. lin.35. Ireland is by Diedorus Siculus and by Strabo called Britannia. Iris is by Diodorus calleda part of Brittaine: but Ireland by neither of them Britannia.

Pag. 33. lin. 38.

----King Arthur, and before him Gurgunt. Concerning King Arthur's conquest of Ireland, see Geffry of Monmuch, and Matthew of Westminfter, at the yeare 525 where he is said to have landed in Ireland with a great army, and in a battle to have taken King Gilla-mury prifoner, and forced the other Princes to Subjection. In our Annals it appeares that Moriertach (the fonne of Erca) was at that time King of Ireland, of which name some reliques seeme to be in Gilla-Mury, Gilla being but an addition used with many names, as Gilla-Patrick, &c.But in the Country writers (which I have seene) I find not the least touch of this conquest.

Pag.34. lin.23. --- among ft whom he distributed the land. King Henry the 2. gave to dri- d'Gir. camb. chard Strong-bow Earle of Striguil or Penbroke, all Leinster, excepting Hib expugation

AHift. nat lib.

16. cap.44. De b. llo Galli.

E0 .16.Z.

" Wid. Rog.de Hoveden pag. 567 edit Franc. Pag.739. Rog. de Houeden ibid. & Chart. an. z. le in arce Lond.

the citty of Dublin, and the Cantreds adjoyning with the maritime townes and castles. Vnto e Robert fitz Stephen, and Miles de Cogan he granted the Kingdome of Corke, excepting the Citty of Corke, and & camd, Bris. the Ostmans Cantred. And unto f Philip de Bruse the Kingdome of Limericke. But in a confirmation of King John to William de Bruse (or Brass) Nephew to this Philip, wee finde that heegave to him onely 8 honorem de Limerick, retentis in dominico nostro (as the words of the Charter are) civitate de Limerick & donationibus episcopatuum de abbatiarum. & retentis in manu nostrà cantredo Ostmannorum & S. insula. Among other large graunts (remembred by Hoveden) which this King Henry gave to the first adventurers, that of Meth to Sr Hugh de Lacy is of special note. The grant was in these words.

> Enricus Dei gratia Rex Anglia. & Dux Normannia & Aquitania, & Comes Andegauia. Archiepiscopis, Episcopis, Abbatibus, Comitibus, Baronibus, Iustitiarijs, & omnibus ministris & fidelibus suis Francis, Anglis & Hiberniensibus totius terræ suæ, Salutem. Sciatis me dedisse & concessisse, & præsenti charta mea confirmâsse Hugoni de Lacy pro servitio suo, terram de Midia cum omnibus pertinentijs suis per servitium quinquaginta militum sibi & hæredibus suis, tenendű & habendű à me & hæredibus meis, sicut Murchardus Hu-melathlin eam tenuit, vel aliquis alius ante illum vel posteà. Et de incremento illi dono omnia feoda que præbuit, vel que præbebit circa D 10 veliniam, dum Balivus meus est, ad faciendum mihi servitium apud civitatem meam Duveliniæ. Quare volo & firmiter præcipio, ut ipse Hugo & hæredes sui post eum prædictam terram habeant, & teneant omnes libertates & liberas consuetudines qu' s'ibi habeo vel habere possum per prænominatum servitium, à me & hæredibus meis, benè & in pace, liberè, & quietè, & honorificè, in bosco & plano, in pratis & pascuis, in aquis & molédinis, in vivarijs & stagnis, & piscationibus & venationibus, in vijs, & semitis, & portubus maris, & in omnibus alijs locis, & alijs rebus ad eam pertinentibus cum omnibus libertatibus, quas ibi habeo, vel illi dare possum, & hâc meâ chartâ confirmare. Test. comite Richardo filio Gilberti, VV illielmo de Braosa, &c. VV eifford.

But above all other graunts made by K. Henry the 2. that to his fonne Ichn is most memorable. Deinde (faith h Hoveden) venit rex Oxenford, & in generali concilio ibidem celebrato constituit Iohannem filium suum Regem in Hibernia, concessione & confirmatione Alexandri fummi Pontificis. By vertue of this graunt both in the life time of his father, and in the raigne of his brother king Richard, he was stilled in all his charters Dominus Hibernia, and directed them thus, Ioannes Dominus Hibernia,& comes Morton. Archiepiscopis, episcopis, comitibus, baronibus, Iustitarijs, vicecomitibus, constabularijs, & omnibus ballivis & mimistris suis totius Hibernia, salutem. Thus we have it frequently (although sometimes with a little variation) in the Registers of Saint Mary Abbey, and Thomascourt by Dublin . How the Earlein Leinster, and Lacy in Meth, distributed their lands, (besides what they retained in their owne hands,) is delivered by Maurice Regar, (interpreter to Dermot Mac Murrough King of Leinster) who wrote the Historie of those times in French verse. The booke was tranflated into English by Sir George Carew Lo. President of Mounster, afterwards earle of Toines, and communicated to me, by our most reverend and excellently learned Primate. There wee finde that the Earle gave to Reymond le Grose in i marriage with his sister, Fotherd,0drone, and Glascarrig, unto Hervy de Mount-marish, hee gave Obarthy, unto Maurice de Prindergast, Fernegenall, which was afterwards conferredupon Robert fitz Godobert but by what meanes he obtained it (saith Regan) I know not Vnto Meiler Fitz Henry he gave Carbry, unto k Maurice Fitz Gerald the Naas Ofelin (which had beene possessed by Mackelan) and Wickloe, unto Walter de Ridelesford he gave the lands of Omorthy, unto Iohn de Clahul the marshalship of Leinster, and the land betweene Aghabo and Leghlin, unto Robert de Birmingham Ofaly, and unto Adam de Hereford large possessions. What these possessions were, are thus noted in the Register of Thomascourt abbey, where speaking of the Earle, Posteà Lagenià perquisità, erat quidam juvenis cum eo quem multum dilexit,& dedit eidem pro servitio suo terras & tenementa subscripta, viz. tenementum de saltu Salmonis, Cloncoury, Kill, Houterard, & tenementum de Donning cum omnibus suis pertinentis. Thus the Register. This Adam de Hereford was founder of Saint Wulftan's Priory neere Leixlip in the county of Kildarc. But we proceed with Regan. Vnto Miles Fitz David who was one of his cheife favorites, he gave Overkin Offery, to. Thomas le Flemming, Arde, to Gilbert de Borard, Ofelmith, to a knight called Reinand he gave 15. knights fees adiovning to the sea, and to one Robert in ros.com.placis (who was afterwards slains in Connaght) the Norragh . What partition Lacy made in Meth, he thus delivers. Vnto his speciall friend Hugh Tirrellhe gave Castleknock: and unto William Petit Castlebreck . I have scene an ancient deede made by Sir Hugh de Lacy to this William Petit wherein among other things he graunts unto him Matherethirnan cum omnibus pertinentijs suis, exceptis Lacu & villa qua dicitur Dissert, Go. Unto the valiant Meiler fitz Henry (layth Regan) he gaue Magherneran the lands of Rathkenin and the cantred of Athnorker. Vnto Gilbert

pag. 5669

Conful, Gir. Camb. Hib.expugn.lib.2, cap.4

* This Maurice foone after deceasing at Wexford, king Iohn then carle of Mereten confirmed to his fonne WilliamFitz Maurice cantredum were quem Makelanus tenuit, il. lum fc.in quo Willa de Maas Sita est, quam comers Richardus dedit Mauritio patrilpaus wil. lielmi. Thus the an-10.Hen,6 in surri Birmin.

127

Magn. regest. mon. B . Maria iorea Dublino fel 76.

de Nangle all Magherigallen, unto locelin the sonne of Gilbert de Nangle. the Navan and the land of Ardbraccan: unto Richard de Tuite he gave faire possessions, anto Robert de Lacy Rathwer, unto Richard de la Chappell be gauemuch land unto Geffry de Constantine Kilbisky and Rathmarthy: Vnto Adam de Feipo, Gilbert de Nugent, William de Misset, and Hugh de Hose he gaue large inheritances. In Lacyes graunt to Feipe, we finde that he gave him Skrine, et praterea (sayth the deede) feodum unius militis circa Duvelinam, scil. Clantorbt & Santref. &c. In his graunt to Gilbert de Nugent, (the originall whereof I have seene, with an impression upon the seale, of a knight armed and mounted,) he gave to him Delvin quam in tempore Hibernicorum tenuerunt O-Finelans, cum omnibus pertinentijs & villis, qua infra pradictam Delvin continentur, excepta quadam villà Abbatis Foura nomine Torrochelasch pro servitio 5. militum. Thus the Charter. To Millet hee gave Luin, and to Hulley or Hole Galtrim. Regan proceeds. Vnto Adam Dullard hee gave the lands of Dullenvarthy, unto one Thomas he gave Cramly, Timlath-began northeaft from Kenlis, Lathrachalim, and Sendevonath, and unto Richard le Flemming he gave Crandon at 20. Knights fees.

Pag. 36. 1.26.

----they changed the forme thereof into their cloakes called Pallia. As the Romans had their gowne called toga, so the ancient outward vestiment of the Grecians was called Pallium, by some translated a Mantle, although it be now commonly taken for a Cloake, which doth indeed somewhat resemble a Mantle. By these different kinds of habit, the one was so certainly distinguished from the other, that the word Togatus was often used to signifie a Roman, and Palliatus a Grecian, as it is observed by m Mr Tho. Godwin out of " Sigonius. To. rati faith he)pro Romanis dicti,ut Palliati pro Gracis. But that the ancient Latines and Romans used it, as the Author alledgeth, (out of I know not what place in Virgil) appeareth no way unto mee. That the Gowne was their usuall outward garment, is most certaine, and that commonly of wooll, finer or courfer, according to the dignity of the person that wore it. Whence Horace:

Satyr. 3 dib. 10

a Romana hiftor. antholog. lib. 2.

fect . 3. cap. 7.

De ind 6.3.

cap.19.

-Sit mihi men(a tripes, et Concha salis puri, et toga qua defendere frigus Quamvis crassa, queat ---

And from this difference betweene the ancient Roman and Grecian habit, grew the proverbs, modo palliatus, modo togatus, and de toga ad pallium, to denote an unconstant person.

Pag. 36. lin. 32.

----- Humi mantilia sternunt.

Euanders entertainment of Aneas, is set out in the 8. booke of Virgils Aneis, but there we have no fuch word as mantie. In his entertainment by Dido we have it, but in another sence. Iam pater Eneas, & jam Troiana inventus

Annotations.

Conveniunt, stratoque super discumbitur ostro. Dant famuli manibus lymphas Cereremque canistris Expediunt, tonsisq; ferunt mantilia villis.

AEneid. Ub. 17

Pag. 38. lin. 44. 5-- as in that battle of Thomyris against Cyrus. Herodotus in the description of that battle hath no fuch thing.

Pag.41.lin. 30. -- by the sword and by the fire. Lucian hath it, by the sword & by the wind. Somewhat may be gathered to this purpose out of the o Vister An. [An 478] nals, where Lagarius (or Lagerius)a heathen King of Ireland, being taken prisoner by the Leinster men, is said to have bin released upon an oath, which was per solem & ventum.



Out of the fourth Booke of the Faerie Queene, Canto X I. concerning the rivers of Ireland.

Ethence the Irish Rivers absent were,
Sith no lesse famous then the rest they be,
And joyne in neighbourhood of kingdome neere,
Why should they not likewise in love agree,
And joy likewise this solemne day to see?
They saw it all, and present were in place;
Though I them all according their degree,
Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race,
Nor read the salvage coutries, thorough which they pase.

There was the Liffie, rolling downe the lea,
The fandy Slane, the stony Aubrian,
The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea,
The pleasant Boyne, the sishy fruitfull Ban,
Swift Awniduste, which of the English man
Is call'd Blacke water, and the Listar deepe,
Sad Trowis, that once his people over-ran,
Strong Allo tombling from Slewlogher steep,
And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught to weep.

And there the three renowmed brethren were,
Which that great Giant Blomius begot
Of the faire Nymph Rhedfa wandring there,
One day, as the to thume the feafon hot,
Vnder Slewbloome in thady grove was got,
This Giant found her, and by force deflowr'd:
Whereof conceiving, the intime forth brought
These three faire sons, which being thence forth powrd.
In three great rivers ran, and many countries scowed.

The first, the gentle Shure, that making way
By sweet Clonmell adornes rich Waterford;
The next the stubburne Newre, whose waters gray
By faire Kilkenny, and Rosseponte boord;
The third, the goodly Barow, which doth hoord
Great heapes of Salmons in his deepe bosome:
All which long sundred doe at last accord
To joyne in one, are to the sea they come,
So slowing all from one, all one at last become,

Certaine verses of M' Edm. Spenser's.

There also was the wide embayed Mayre,
The pleasant Bandon crownd with many a wood,
The spreading Leestharlike an Hand saire
Encloseth Gorke with his divided flood;
And balefull Oure, late stay no with English bloud:
With many more, whose names no tongue can tell.
All which that day in order seemely good
Did on the Thamis attend, and waited well!
To doe their duefull service, as to them befolk.

Out of the seventh Booke of the Faerie Queene. Cant. VI.

Effoones the time and place appointed were,
Where all both heavenly Powers, and earthly wights,
Before great Natures presence should appeare,
For tryall of their Titles and best Rights,
That was, to weet, upon the highest hights
Of Arlo-hill (Who knowes not Arlo-hill?)
That is the highest head (mall mens sights)
Of my old father Mole, whom Shepheards quill
Renowmed hath with hymnes sit for a rurall skill.

And were it not ill fitting for this file,

To fing of hilles & woods, mongst warres & Knights,
I would abate the sternenesse of my stile,
Mongst these sterne stounds to mingle soft delights;
And tell how Arlothrough Dianaes spights
(Beeing of old the best and fairest Hill
That was in all this holy Islands highes)
Was made the most unpleasant, and most ill.
Meane while, O cliostend Callinge thy quill.

Whylome, when IRELAND florished in fame
Of wealth and goodnesse; sat above the rest
Of all that beare the British Islands name,
The Gods then used (for pleasure and for rest)
Oft to resort there-to, when seem dethem best:
But none of all there-in more pleasure found,
Then Cynthia; that is foverable Queene profest
Of woods and forrests which therein abound,
Sprinkled with wholesome waters, more then most on ground.

Certaine verses of M. Edm. Spenser's.

Butmongst themall, as sittest for her game,

Either for chace of beasts with hound or bowe,

Or for to shrowde in shade from Phabus stame,

Or bathe in fountaines that doe freshly flowe,

Or from high hilles, or from the dales belowe,

She chose this Arlo; where she did resort

With all her Nymphes enranged on a rowe,

With whom the woody gods did off consort:

For, with the Nymphes, the Satyres love to play & sport.

Amongst the which, there was a Nymph that hight Molanna; daughter of old father Mole,
And sister unto Mulla faire and bright:
Vnto whose bed false Bregog whylome stole,
That Shepheard Colin dearely did condole,
And made her lucklesse loves well knowne to be.
But this Molanna, were she not so shole,
Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee:
Yet as she is, a fairer flood may no man see.

For first she springs out of two marble Rocks,
On which, a grove of Oakes high mounted growes;
That as a girlond seemes to deck the locks
Of some faire Bride, brought forth with pompous showes
Out of her bowre, that many flowers strowes:
So, through the flowry Dales she rumbling downe,
Through many woods, and shady coverts slowes,
(That on each side her silver channel crowne)
Till to the Plaine she come, whose Valleyes she doth drowne.

In her sweet streames, Diana used oft
(After her sweaty chace and toylesome play)
To bathe her selfe; and after, on the soft
And downy grasse, her dainty limbes to lay
In covert shade, where none behold her may:
For, much shie hated sight of living eye.
Foolish God Famus, though full many a day
He saw her clad, yet longed soolishly
To see her naked mongst her Nymphes in privity.

No way he found to compasse his desire,
But to corrupt Molanna, this her maid,
Her to discover for some secret hire:
So, her with flattering words he first assaid,
And after, pleasing gifts for her purvaid,
Queene-apples, and red Cherries from the tree,
With which he her allured and betrayd,

Certaine verses of M' Edm. Spenser's.

To tell what time he might her Lady see When she her selfe did bathe, that he might secret bee.

There-to he promist, if she would him pleasure With this small boone, to quit her with a better; To weet, that where as she had out of measure Long lov'd the Fanchin, who by nought did fet her, That he would undertake, for this to get her To be his Love, and of him liked well: Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter For many moe good turnes then he would tell: The least of which, this little pleasure should excell.

The fimple mayd did yeeld to him anone; And eft him placed where he close might view That never any saw, save onely one; Who, for his hire to so foole-hardy dew, Was of his hounds devour'd in Hunters hew. Tho as her manner was on funny day, Diana, with her Nymphes about her drew To this fweet spring; where, dosfing her array, She bath'd her lovely limbes, for Iove a likely pray.

There Faunus faw that pleased much his eye, And made his heart to tickle in his breft. That for great joy of some-what he did spy: He could him not containe in filent rest: But, breaking forth in laughter, loud profest His foolish thought. A foolish Faune indeed, That couldst not hold thy selfe so hidden blest. But wouldest needs thine owne conceir areed. Babblers unworthy been of so divine a meed.

The Goddesse, all abashed with that noise, In haste forth started from the guilty brookes And running straight where as she heard his voyce. Enclos'd the bush about, and there him tooke. Like dared Larke; nor daring up to looke On her whose fight before so much hee sought: Thence, forth they drew him by the hornes, and shook Nigh all to peeces, that they left him nought; And then into the open light they forth him brought.

Like as an hufwife that with bufie care Thinks of her Dairy to make wondrous gaine, Finding where-as some wicked beast unware That breakes into her Dayr'house, there doth draine

Certaine verses of Mr Edm. Spenser's.

Her creaming pannes, and frustrate all her paine: Hath in some snare or gin set close behind, Entrapped him, and caught into her traine, Then thinkes what punishment were best affign'd, And thousand deathes deviseth in her vengefull mind:

delitigas esatjen ele u Telego senak suitan So did Diana and her may densall Vse filly Faunus, now within their bailes They mocke and scorne him, and him foule miscall; Some by the nose him pluckt, some by the taile, And by his goatish beard some did him haile: Yet he (poore soule) with patience all did beare: For nought against their wills might countervaile: Ne ought he faid what-ever he did heare, the But hanging downe his head, did like a Mouse appeare.

At length, when they had flouted him their fill, They gan to cast what penance him to give. Some would have gelt him, but that same would spill The Wood-gods breed, which must for ever live: Others would through the river him have drive, And ducked deepe: but that feem'd penance light; But most agreed and did this sentence give, Him in Deeres skin to clad; and in that plight, To hunthim with their hounds, him felfe fave how he might.

But Cynthia's selfe more angry then the rest.

Thought not enough to punish him in sport. And of her shame to make a game some jest; But gan examine him in straighter fort, Which of her Nymphes, or other close confort, Him thither brought, and her to him berraid. He, much affeard, to her confessed short, That't was Molanna which her fo bewrayd, Then all at once their hands upon Molanna laid.

But him (according as they had decreed)
With a Deeres skin they covered, and then chaft With all their hounds, that after him did speed; But he more speedy, from them fled more fast Then any Deere: so sore him dread aghast. They after follow'd all with shrill out-cry Shouting as they the heavens would have braft, That all the woods and dales where he did flie, Did ring againe, and loud reecho to the skie.

So they him follow'd till they weary were;

Certaine verses of M. Edm. Spenser's.

When, backe returning to Molann' againe,
They, by command'ment of Diana, there
Her whelm'd with stones. Yet Faunus (for her paine)
Of her beloved Fanchin did obtaine,
That her he would receive unto his bed.
So now her waves passe through a pleasant Plaine,
Till with the Fanchin she her selfe doe wed,
And (both combin'd) themselves in one faire river spred.

Nath'lesse, Diana, full of indignation,
Thence-forth abandond her delicious brooke;
In whose sweet streame, before that bad occasion,
So much delight to bathe her limbes she tooker
Ne onely her, but also quite forsooke
All those faire forrests about Arla hid,
And all that Mountaine, which doth over-looke
The richest champain that may else be rid,
And the faire Shure, in which are thousand Salmons bred.

Them all, and all that she so deare did way,
Thence-forth she left; and parting from the place,
Thereon an heavy haplesse curse did lay
To weet, that Wolves, where she was wont to space,
Should harbour'd be, and all those Woods deface,
And Thieves should rob and spoile that Coast around,
Since which, those Woods, and all that goodly Chase,
Doth to this day with Wolves and Thieves abound:
Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers since have found.

To the right honourable Thomas Earle of Ormand and Offery.

Lord Treafurer of Ireland.

Receive most noble Lord a simple taste,
Of the wild fruit, which savage soyle hath bred,
Which being through long warres left almost waste,
With brutish barbarisme is overspred:
And in so faire a Land, as may be red,
Not one Parnassia, nor one Helicon
Left for sweet Muses to be harboured,
But where thy selfe hast thy brave mansion;
There indeed dwell faire Graces many one,
And gentle Nymphes, delights of learned wits,
And in thy person without Paragone
All goodly bounty and true bonour sits.
Such therefore, as that wasted soyle doth yield,
Receive deare Lord in worth, the fruit of barren sield.

Certaine verses of M. Edm. Spenser's

To the most renowned & valiant Lord, Arthur Lord Deputy of Ireland.

Lord Grey of VVilton, Knight of the noble of Ireland.

Most noble Lord, the pillor of my life,
And Patron of my Muses pupillage,
Through whose large bountie poured on me rife.
In the first season of my feeble age,
Inow doe live, bound yours by vassalage,
Sith nothing ever may redeeme, or reave,
Out of your endlesse debt so sure a gage,
Vouchsase in worth this small gift to receive,
Which in your noble hands for pledge I leave
Of all the rest, that I am tyde t'account:
Ruderimes, the which a rustick Muse did weave
In savage soyle, far from Parnaso mount,
And roughly wrought in an unlearned Loome:
The which youchsase deare Lord, your favourable doome.

E. S

To the right noble Lord and most valiant Captaine, Sir Iohn Norris, Knight, Lord President of Mounster.

To the fweet Muse, then did the Martiall crew;
That their brave deeds she might immortalize
In her shrill tromp, and sound their praises dew.
Who then ought more to favour her, then you
Most noble Lord, the honour of this age,
And Precedent of all that Armes ensure.
Whose warlike prowess, and manly courage,
Tempred with reason and advizement sage,
Hath filld sad Belgick with victorious spoile,
In France and ireland left a famous gage,
And lately shak't the Lustanian soile.
Sith then each where thou hast disspred thy same,
Love him, that hath eternized your name.

Certaine verses of Mr Edm. Spenser's.

A translation made ex tempore by M' Edm.

Spenser upon this distich, written on a
Booke belonging to the right honorable

Richard Barle of Corke, &c.

Ne tu sic pereat, pereat pars nulla diet, Ne tu sic pereas, ut perière dies.

Left thou doe passe, as dayes doe passe away.

Verses upon the said Earles Lute.

WHilst vitall sapp did make me spring,
And leafe and bough did stourish brave,
I then was dumbe and could not sing,
Ne had the voice which now I have:
But when the axe my life did end,
The Muses nine this voice did send.

E. S.

Siduction and a where the a test differed the carry

Lorenticijanski betreenskiski politane.L

